A COURSE

OF

MANDARIN LESSONS,

BASED ON IDIOM,

BY

REV. C. W. MATEER, D.D., LL.D.

Revised Edition.

SHANGHAI:
AMERICAN PRESBYTERIAN MISSION PRESS.

1898.

G

Digitized by Google

Wason

PL 1111+
42
v. 1
W3763
TO 105

STUDENTS OF MANDARIN,

THIS EFFORT

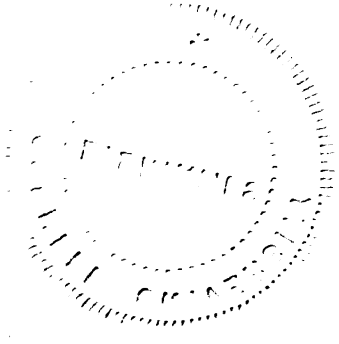
TO REMOVE THE DIFFICULTIES AND OPEN THE WAY TO A MORE THOROUGH ACQUISITION

OF THE

CHINESE SPOKEN LANGUAGE

IS

RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED.



Digitized by Google

The Introductory Lessons are not yet ready. When completed they will be printed and bound separately.

Digitized by Google

PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION.

IT is now twenty-five years since I began to make lessons for beginners in Mandarin. I had at that time little thought of ever printing them, or of the extent to which they would finally grow. At first I made only twenty lessons, but subsequently added a few at a time, until the number reached fifty. The plan originally adopted was substantially that which has now been wrought out to completion. These fifty lessons were copied out and used by beginners for about ten years, when, upon the arrival of a considerable number of new missionaries in Shantung, I revised the lessons already made and added others on the same plan, increasing the number to one hundred and seven. The extent to which these were copied and used, led me about five years ago, to take up the whole work with a view to preparing it for publication. I extended and perfected the plan, added new lessons and thoroughly revised and recast the lessons already made.

Plan. The plan of the course is its distinguishing feature. Each lesson is constructed to illustrate one or more idioms which constitute its "subject;" the word idiom being taken in a somewhat loose and comprehensive sense. The subjects were not evolved by the application to Chinese of Western grammatical principles and ideas, but were gathered directly from the mandarin colloquial by a careful observation of its peculiar forms and methods. They are somewhat heterogeneous, it is true, but not more so than the language they are intended to teach. The plan is believed to afford a number of important advantages, of which the following are the chief:—

1. It facilitates a thoroughly progressive arrangement by which the peculiarities of the language are set forth in a natural order, proceeding from the simpler to the more complex and difficult.

2. The student instead of groping his way through a maze of bewildering idioms, explained in a hap-hazard way in notes and vocabularies, and often falling a victim to hasty and false generalizations, has given to him in each lesson an intelligible idiom, which is fully explained in the subject, and strongly impressed by the abundant illustrations contained in the lesson. These idioms thus become to him so many land marks of progress, and by their acquisition he is made master of the whole structure of the language.

3. The subjects of the lessons, which embrace all the most difficult and important features of the language, being thus singled out and made prominent, are, on this account, much more carefully explained and illustrated than would be the case on a different system.

Digitized by Google

4. The fact that the lessons are composed of detached and independent sentences, gives opportunity for the introduction of a wider range of subject matter, of style and of idiom than could be secured on any other plan.

5. A large number of the lessons bring to view classes of particles and key words approximately synonymous, yet differing in use and in their shades of meaning. By the study of these lessons the student will acquire a range and variety of expression not easily acquired in any other way. The prime defect of many mandarin speakers is that having got hold of one such word or expression, they are content to ring the changes on it alone, all oblivious to the fact that there are various other cognate forms of similar import yet differing by varying uses and shades of meaning. The result is a monotonous style, wanting both in vigor and perspicuity.

That the plan incidentally involves some disadvantages, is freely admitted. All great gains involve minor losses. The chief disadvantages are the following:—

1. The arrangement according to idioms necessitates the keeping back of certain common and useful forms of expression for an inconveniently long time. This difficulty was frequently felt in arranging the order of the lessons. It drew from my Chinese assistant the remark, that each particular lesson seemed to be clamoring to get in first. The difficulty, however, will not be felt by the learner, and the disadvantage it might otherwise be to him, has been largely obviated by anticipating many such words and phrases, and will be further obviated by following the method of study recommended. (See Introduction: Directions to the student).

2. Lessons which introduce a considerable number of nearly synonymous words are liable to confuse the learner with distinctions for which he is not yet prepared, and which his memory cannot retain. This difficulty, which results from the richness of the language, may be largely obviated by a judicious method of study. While going over the whole lesson carefully, let the student fix in his memory one or two of the more important words for present use, not being too much disturbed that he is not able to retain the others. When subsequently they are heard in conversation or met with in books, they will seem like old acquaintances, and will in this way presently become familiar and their accurate use be acquired.

3. The sentences being disconnected, are harder to understand and more likely to be misunderstood than if they stood in connected discourse. While this is no doubt true, it is largely obviated by accurate translations and by suitable notes and explanations, and is more than compensated by the superior opportunity thus afforded for the ready introduction of every class of idiom and every style of expression.

Style. The prevalent style is colloquial, because the object of the book is to teach the spoken language as distinguished from the language of books; nevertheless there will be found, especially in the latter half, a considerable mixture

Digitized by Google

of high Mandarin and of expressions taken from books. I shall probably be criticised for introducing too much colloquial and too many localisms. To this criticism I would reply, that there is much misconception as to the extent to which many of these so called localisms prevail. It does not follow that every expression not commonly seen in Mandarin books, is necessarily local. I have found by investigation that many such expressions are practically general. Moreover, a useful expression that prevails throughout two or three provinces and has an authorized writing, is not to be rejected as local. A man may not himself desire to use all these colloquial forms, yet it is very important to understand them when used by others, as they constantly are by the Chinese. The chief advantage which the Chinaman has in conversation over the average foreigner is his ability to use and to understand these colloquialisms. It must not be supposed, however, that every sort of colloquialism known to the author or his assistants has been introduced. Care has been taken to exclude purely local expressions, especially such as have no authorized writing, as also to exclude, to a considerable extent, that useless colloquial verbiage which characterizes all dialects to a greater or less degree, and which is unnecessary and undesirable in one who would use Chinese to the best advantage.* As far as possible local peculiarities are noted as such and are not repeated.

A more important argument for the use of colloquial is, that general Mandarin, as it is called, is too narrow in its range to answer all the ends of speech, and has constantly to be reinforced from both the colloquial and the *Wên-li*. If the speaker of it attempts to go beyond the narrow range of thought which it covers, he will find himself at a loss for words, and will be compelled to resort to round-about forms and labored explanations, in striking contrast with the straightforward and expressive language of him who commands the abundant resources of the colloquial. He may indeed call in the assistance of the *Wên-li*, if his attainments are adequate, but it will be at the expense of speaking in a pedantic and pretentious style unintelligible to the great majority.

Another point worthy of attention, especially on the part of those who desire to persuade and impress others in public address, is that labored phraseology and paraphrastic expressions are fatal to oratory, which requires not only weighty and impressive thoughts, but also vivid and expressive language which fulfils its office as the arrow flies to the mark.

On the other hand it is not unlikely that I shall be criticised for having introduced too much book language. With reference to this criticism, I would say that very few learn Mandarin who do not at the same time wish to know something of the book style. Moreover, the line of demarcation between Mandarin and *Wên-li* is but vaguely defined. They pass into each other by insensible gradations. It will be found also that the book language of these lessons consists almost entirely of those ready-made and pithy book ex-

* By useless verbiage I mean the ever-recurring and superfluous use of such words as 了, 着, 的, 個, 嗎, 呢, 來, 去, etc

Digitized by Google

pressions, with which good Mandarin speakers and writers enrich and adorn their style, and which frequent use has made generally intelligible. With these expressions every one who aims to be a good Mandarin speaker, should be familiar.

Materials. The Chinese sentences which constitute the lessons have been gathered from all quarters. After the subjects were made out and arranged, Mandarin literature was searched for suitable illustrations, and what were found were copied under their appropriate lessons. All extant Mandarin literature was considered a legitimate field from which to gather. Much more might have been gathered from Chinese novels but for the difficulty of finding in them any full sentence fairly representing the language of common life. The result of this search was that under most lessons, much more material was gathered than was required, thus giving a choice of the best. Many sentences also were specially constructed by a number of different teachers, particularly in the case of lessons embracing colloquial idioms not often found in books.

The sentences have been chosen not only so as to illustrate the various idioms of the lessons, but pains was also taken to have them embrace as wide a range as possible of words and ideas. In them will be found the language of domestic, social, literary and official life; of art, science, commerce, business, history and religion. It should be remarked however, that there was no intention to *teach* history, science, religion or morals, but simply to exhibit and illustrate the Chinese language. That the lessons do in fact contain much useful information about China and the Chinese people, is an incidental advantage of no mean value.

The manner of their preparation implies that the sentences are truly Chinese in thought, style and idiom. With the exception of some of the short, simple sentences in the first twenty or thirty lessons, the author has scarcely composed a single sentence in the book. Not only so, but in the sentences made to order by teachers, or in emendations made in sentences taken from books, he has left the Chinese teachers to their own spontaneous judgment, *never in any case controlling or overruling them.* Of course the Chinese will not meet the approval of every teacher, for Chinese writers criticise and find fault with each other just as Western writers do.

Translation. The translations are, in the main, literal, being however less and less literal as the lessons advance. But the student must not expect that every word in the English will have its corresponding word in the Chinese The structure of the languages is too radically different to make this a possible thing Strict conformity to the meaning of the original has been more aimed at than elegance of language. Neglect of some of the less important words of the Chinese sentence would oftentimes have greatly enhanced the elegance of the translation. It was felt however that in order to learn the language accurately, the student ought to have a thoroughly faithful and accurate translation as a guide. As far as possible, very colloquial Chinese has

Digitized by Google

been rendered into colloquial English, and more stately Chinese into more elegant English.

Subjects. The statements and illustrations of the subjects have been wrought out with especial care, and contain the most useful and important matter in the book. In them are comprised all the important idioms of the language. They should be carefully noted and studied. The English headings are but brief approximations, and must be taken with some degree of allowance. The subjects were originally worked out in Chinese, and these English headings were an after-thought. In many cases it was found very difficult to give a brief English heading that fairly represented the subject.

Vocabularies. The definitions of words and phrases are brief, but are nevertheless intended to include all the common *Mandarin* uses of the words. The meaning appropriate to the lesson under which the word or phrase occurs, is italicised for the convenience of the learner. This method of giving a full definition, and italicising the one needed, has a number of important advantages which make it a decided improvement over the more common method of simply giving the definition required in the given case, (1) It prevents the student from learning a secondary meaning at the first without knowing it to be such. (2) While learning the one meaning of a character the student has constantly before his mind the fact that it has other meanings, and as he refers again and again to the meaning required, he will unconsciously become more or less familiar with the others. (3) It renders the student independent of a dictionary, thus saving much time and trouble in looking for words. (4) The vocabularies will be found to contain many definitions not given in any dictionary or vocabulary extant.

Notes. The notes are somewhat miscellaneous in their character. The larger number are given to the explanation of unusual idioms and difficult constructions. Phrases too long for convenient definition in the vocabularies, are explained in the notes. Questions concerning the proper characters to be used in particular cases, as also the probable analysis of abnormal phrases, are discussed in the notes. In order to elucidate the meaning of sentences, numerous explanations have been given of historical, political, social, literary, educational, religious and many other matters, so that the student, while learning the language, is also learning many other useful and important things about China and the Chinese. Much time and care have been bestowed on the preparation of the notes, and it is hoped they will prove not the least useful part of the book.

Dialects. In projecting and constructing the lessons the most difficult question that confronted the author was that of dialect. The lessons first made were confined to the Shantung dialects, and to have carried out and finished the course on that plan, would have very greatly lightened the labor involved, but it would have limited the usefulness of the book to a single Province. On the other hand, to have rejected everything, that savored of a difference of dialect, would have compelled a style far too

Digitized by Google

high for colloquial Mandarin, and would thus have defeated the main object in view. The only practicable alternative was to compare and combine a variety of dialects, which onerous task has accordingly been attempted. In order to exhibit the practical results, the plan of parallel readings has been introduced. (See Introduction: Explanations.) The lessons have been constructed with reference to the dialects of Peking, Chinanfu, Chefoo, Nanking and Kiukiang,—all that the circumstances of the author enabled him to compass. In order to compare these dialects, the lessons have been twice revised by the aid of Peking teachers, twice by the aid of Nanking teachers, once by the aid of Chinanfu teachers, and once by the aid of a Kiukiang teacher; in addition to which they have been revised, in whole or in part, by one or more of the best foreign speakers of Chinese in these several places. Pekingese has received a larger share of attention than any other dialect, partly because it is the court dialect, but chiefly because there were more published helps by which it may be known.

In carrying out this plan, a vigorous effort has been made to construct a course of lessons free from the predominant influence of any one dialect; although it is perhaps too much to expect that the author and his Chinese assistant should be able to free themselves from all partiality to their own dialect. It should be remembered, however, that those who are acquainted with only one dialect, are not altogether competent judges in the premises, for, missing many of the peculiarities of their own dialect and finding others instead, they naturally attribute the difference to the undue influence of the author's dialect, not knowing that those who speak the dialect of the author will equally miss many of its peculiarities and find others in their stead. It is hoped that the plan pursued will not only make the book useful to all students of Mandarin, but will at the same time afford many valuable hints as to the comparison of dialects.

System of Spelling. It was with great reluctance that I finally decided to propose a new system of spelling. The preparation of the lessons was well advanced before this step was decided upon, and the elaboration of the system has consumed much time and materially delayed the publication of the work. The most natural thing would seem to have been to use the system already most in vogue: viz., that of Sir Thomas Wade. I found, however, that this system would not spell my own dialect, nor in fact any other dialect than Pekingese, and that unless I left all the other dialects to shift for themselves some other system must be used. It was proposed for a time to give both Wade's and William's spellings, and a specimen page was so printed, but the more the subject was canvassed the more evident it became that such a plan would greatly encumber the book and serve no adequate purpose. Several other plans were canvassed but rejected as unsatisfactory. Inasmuch as in language and idiom the book represents several different Mandarin dialects, it was strongly felt that a system of spelling ought to be provided, adapted to the spelling of these dialects and comprehensive enough to embrace them all without violating its own consistency. As no system now

Digitized by Google

extant fulfilled, or even approximated, these requirements, the author felt constrained to propose a new system. In doing this he has not, however, done what would have been much more simple as well as satisfactory to himself; viz., proposed *de novo* an original system, but has followed strictly in the line of his predecessors, making only such changes as seemed to be demanded by the exigencies of the case. If the system wins its way, it may become an important step towards a general system comprehensive of all Mandarin dialects.

The spelling given in the vocabularies is that heard in Peking. This spelling is chosen, because Pekingese is the court dialect and more popular than any other. In order, however, to afford opportunity for the insertion of a second spelling, a space has, in all cases, been left either after or underneath the Peking spelling. This has considerably increased the space required for the vocabularies, but will, it is believed, be a very valuable feature to all who use another dialect than the Pekingese.

Arrangement. For the convenience of the student all that concerns each lesson,—Chinese, translation, subject, vocabulary and notes,—are brought together in one place. A convenient and practicable arrangement for accomplishing this end proved to be a matter of no small difficulty, especially as the lessons and their parts were not, and could not be made, of a uniform length. . . . The first twenty lessons are printed in a somewhat larger Chinese type. This was done because, at the first, students find it easier to distinguish the characters when printed in large type.

Indexes. A full syllabic index has been prepared, including all the words and phrases defined in the vocabularies, subjects and notes. This will enable the learner to find any word or phrase at any time. It is also proposed to prepare and print as soon as practicable, indexes according to the other dialects to which the lessons are specially adapted; viz., Nanking, Kiukiang, Weihien and Têngchow, which will be furnished and bound with the book at a small additional charge. An index of the single characters by radicals, is also added, by means of which characters may be found when the Peking spelling is unknown. Having the single character the phrases under it may also be found.

Acknowledgments. My first and chiefest acknowledgments are due to my Chinese assistant, Rev. Tso Li Wên (鄭立文), who has given fully four years of constant and diligent labor to the collection and preparation of the Chinese text. He has also investigated with me dialectic differences and has given unstinted and enthusiastic labor to the work in all its details.

Hardly less are acknowledgments due to my wife, who has contributed much in every way to the perfection of the work,—much more than her modesty will allow me to acknowledge.

Special acknowledgments are due to Rev. C. Goodrich, D.D., Rev. J. Wherry, D.D. and Rev. S. E. Meech of Peking, who kindly acted as advisers in the application of

Digitized by Google

the new system of spelling to the Peking dialect. To them every question was referred, and in accordance with their verdict every point was decided.*

I wish also to acknowledge my indebtedness to Rev. C. Goodrich, D.D. of T'ungchow, Rev. J. Wherry, D.D. and Rev. J. L. Whiting of Peking, Rev. P. D. Bergen of Chinanfu, Rev. J. C. Ferguson of Nanking, Rev. F. W. Baller of Ganking and especially to Rev. J. R. Hykes of Kiukiang, for many important criticisms and suggestions, both in general and in particular. Thanks are due to Rev. J. A. Silsby and Mr. A. Kenmure for valuable assistance in correcting and revising the proofs.

Finally, thanks are due to the Board of Missions of the Presbyterian Church and to my own mission in Shantung, for their generous kindness in affording me the time and opportunity to carry forward and complete this undertaking, and see it safely through the Press.

With thankfulness to the kind providence of God which has guided and preserved me and my assistant to the end of this work, do I now send forth the book on its mission; earnestly desiring that it may be of great service to many who are preparing themselves to preach the Gospel to the Chinese. But for the hope that such would be the case, I should not have been willing to turn aside for so long a time from the more congenial work of teaching and preaching.

* See Preface to second edition.

C. W. MATEER.

July 1*st*, 1892.

Digitized by Google

PREFACE TO SECOND EDITION.

BEFORE the author was aware or had begun to make any preparation for a second edition, the announcement came that the first edition was nearly exhausted. The pressure of other engagements has rendered any extended revision impossible. The whole course, however, has been gone over very carefully, and many minor improvements made, and mistakes corrected. This is especially true of the first part of the course, which originally received less careful preparation for the press than did the latter part. The vocabularies in particular have been very carefully revised and corrected.

The system of spelling has not been changed. The author has felt more and more, however, that the application of the system to the Peking dialect did not fairly represent the system in that it was not consistently carried out. After further investigation and correspondence with various parties in the north in whose judgment I had confidence I concluded to go somewhat beyond the views of the Peking friends who gave me their advice for the first edition, and make the application of the system to Pekingese consistent with itself, and in harmony with its application to other dialects. The changes consist in putting *wei* for *ui*, *üen* for *üan*, *yiu* for *yu* and *yien* for *yen*. For discussion see remarks after the Peking sound table, page 43.

The criticism most frequently made on the lessons has been that they are too long and too difficult at the start, and that an introductory series of shorter and easier lessons is needed. In order to meet the requirements of the case a series of thirty primary lessons has been prepared embracing only three hundred characters in all. See Introduction to Primary Lessons.

The plan or order of printing the first twenty lessons has been changed so as to make them uniform with the other portion of the book. Though not wholly satisfactory no improvement on the general plan of arrangement seemed feasible.

Quite a number of additional dialogues and essays have been added in the supplement giving thereby much more exercise in reading Mandarin and introducing the student also to a wide range of special words and phrases.

C. W. MATEER.

Tungchow, April 20, 1898.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION.

Mandarin ... xiii
Characters ... xiv
Syllables ... xiv
Spelling ... xv
Powers of Letters—Vowels ... xvi
,, ,, Consonants ... xvii
,, ,, Remarks ... xviii
Syllabaries ... xix
Tones ... xx
Aspirates ... xxiii
Rhythm ... xxiv
Radicals ... xxiv
Double Readings ... xxv
Writing ... xxvi
Advice to Student ... xxvi
Explanations ... xxviii
General Remarks ... xxix
Table of Radicals ... xxx
Radical Ode ... xxxiii
Tone Exercises ... xxxvii
Aspirate Exercises ... xl
Peking Sound Table ... xli
Nanking ,, ,, ... xliv
Kiukiang ,, ,, ... xlvii
Tèngchow ,, ,, ... xlix
Weihien ,, ,, ... li
Chungking ,, ,, ... liii

LESSONS.

Les. 1. The General Classifier 個 ... 2
,, 2. Demonstrative Pronouns 這, 那 ... 5
,, 3. Personal Pronouns ... 7
,, 4. The Possessive Particle 的 ... 10
,, 5. The Enclitics 子 and 兒 ... 12
,, 6. The Common Preposition of Place 在 ... 15
,, 7. Sign of the Past Tense 了, 已經 ... 17
,, 8. The Direct Interrogative Particle 嗎 ... 20
,, 9. Here and There, 這裡, 那裡 ... 22
,, 10. The Auxiliary Verbs 來 and 去 ... 25
,, 11. The Instrumental Verb 拿 ... 27
,, 12. Common Connectives 和, 也, 又, 再 ... 29
,, 13. Common Future Forms, 就, 必, 要 ... 32
,, 14. Common Sign of the Subjunctive 若 ... 35
,, 15. Intensives, 最, 頂, 挺, 很, 至, 怪得 ... 37
,, 16. Common Time Particles ... 40
,, 17. Compound Relative and Indefinite Interrogative Particles 甚麼, 呢 ... 43
,, 18. 的 Joined to Adjectives ... 46
,, 19. Adjectives reduplicated for Emphasis ... 48
,, 20. The Auxiliary Verbs 着 and 之 ... 50
,, 21. The Reflexive Pronoun 自己 ... 53
,, 22. Affirmative-Negative Question ... 55
,, 23. 的 Joined to Verbs ... 57
,, 24. Intensives of Excess, 太, 忒, 過於, etc ... 59
,, 25. The Dative, 給, 替, 把, 與 ... 62
,, 26. Special Postpositions, 前, 後, 左, 右, etc. ... 64
,, 27. Four Common Classifiers, 把, 塊, 件, 位 ... 66
,, 28. The Instrumental Verbs 把 and 將 ... 68
,, 29. The Auxiliary Verb 起 ... 70
,, 30. 上 and 下, as Auxiliary Verbs ... 72
,, 31. Negation and Affirmation with Auxiliaries ... 74
,, 32. Definite Locatives, 這頭, 那頭, etc. ... 76
,, 33. Reduplication of Verbs ... 78
,, 34. The Interrogative Personal Pronoun 誰 ... 80
,, 35. Indefinite Pronouns, 都, 凡, 彙, etc. ... 82
,, 36. Modal Particles, 這麼, 那麼, 怎麼, etc. ... 85
,, 37. Interrogatives of Manner and Place 怎麼, 那麼, 那裏, 那兒 ... 87
,, 38. Four Common Classifiers, 條, 隻, 頭, 匹. ... 89
,, 39. 的 Denoting the Agent and the Material ... 92
,, 40. The Auxiliary Verbs 出 and 過, ... 94
,, 41. The Auxiliary Verbs 過 and 回 ... 96
,, 42. Classifiers, 本, 行, 部, 張, 管, 套, 句, 釘 ... 99
,, 43. The Auxiliary Verb 得 ... 101
,, 44. The Various Uses of 就 ... 104
,, 45. 那, with the Classifiers ... 107
,, 46. The Compound Relative 所 ... 109
,, 47. The Specific Suffix 頭 ... 112
,, 48. Numeral Adjectives, 幾個, 多少, etc. ... 114
,, 49. Restrictive Particles, 只, 光, 單, 單, 但 ... 117
,, 50. Quality by Opposites ... 119
,, 51. Definitive Combinations ... 122
Les. 52. 人, as a Personal Suffix ... 125
,, 53. Passive Forms, 被, 教, 叫 ... 128
,, 54. The Instrumental Verbs, 使 and 用 ... 130
,, 55. Futurity, 將, 待 and 得 ... 133
,, 56. The Disjunctive Conjunction 或 ... 135
,, 57. Approximation, 差不多, 幾乎 etc. ... 138
,, 58. The Comparative Degree, 更, 强, 似, 如, etc. 142
,, 59. Assent and Dissent, 願, 愛, 甘心, etc. ... 145
,, 60. The Final Particle 罷 ... 148
,, 61. Euphonic Endings, 咧, 咯, 啊, 哪, etc. ... 151
,, 62. The Auxiliary of Reciprocity 相 ... 153
,, 63. The Pronominal of Reciprocity 彼此 ... 156
,, 64. Adverbial Numerals, 一回, 一次, 一遭, etc. 158
,, 65. The Immediate Past, Limited by the Present 161
,, 66. Distributive Pronouns, 各, 每, 逢 ... 164
,, 67. Distribution by Repetition ... 167
,, 68. Classifiers, 棵, 科, 乘, 雙, 口, 副, 劑, 間, 根, 墩, 正 169
,, 69. Miscellaneous Uses of 好 ... 173
,, 70. Yes and No, 是, 嗐, 好, 中, 可以, etc. ... 176
,, 71. Causative Verbs, 教, 使, 令 and 給 ... 179
,, 72. The Enclitic 家 ... 183
,, 73. 着, Expressing Development ... 186
,, 74. The Auxiliary Verb 開 ... 190
,, 75. ,, ,, ,, 住 ... 192
,, 76. ,, ,, ,, 到 ... 195
,, 77. Causal Particles, 因, 爲 ... 198
,, 78. Illative ,, 所以, 因此, 故此 ... 201
,, 79. Receptive Verbs, 受, 挨, etc. ... 204
,, 80. Thus, 這麼着, etc. ... 207
,, 81. The Exceptive Conjunction 卻 ... 212
,, 82. Forbidding, 別, 休, 莫 ... 214
,, 83. Concessives, 任, 憑, 管, etc. ... 218
,, 84. Colloquial Pronouns, 咱, 俺, 您 ... 222
,, 85. 多 as an Interrogative ... 225
,, 86. Totality, 滿, 合, 渾, etc. ... 228
,, 87. When, 幾時, 多會, etc. ... 231
,, 88. 了 as an Auxiliary ... 234
,, 89. Miscellaneous Uses of 呢 ... 237
,, 90. Various Uses of 當 ... 240
,, 91. The Auxiliary Verbs 動, 倒 and 犯 ... 244
,, 92. ,, ,, ,, 及, 着 and 掉 ... 247
,, 93. Initial Interjections, 阿, 嗎, 吓, etc. ... 249
,, 94. Corresponding Conjunctions, 雖...却, etc. ... 254
,, 95. Disjunctives, 但, 然, etc. ... 257
,, 96. Approximation, 大半, 大概, etc. ... 260
,, 97. Still, 仍, 仍然, 照舊, etc. ... 263
,, 98. The Auxiliary 處 ... 265
,, 99. Comparison, 比, 似, 像, etc. ... 269
,, 100. Classifiers, 陣, 座, 場, 枝, 鋪, 根, etc. ... 272
,, 101. The Auxiliary Verbs, 盡, 定, 完, 成 ... 275
,, 102. ,, ,, ,, 見, 透, 破 ... 279
,, 103. The Modal Affix 法 ... 282
,, 104. Necessity, 務, 必, 須, 總, etc. ... 285

Digitized by Google

Les.105. Aggregation by the Use of "one" 288
,, 106. One, Expressing Sameness 292
,, 107. Emphatic Reduplication 295
,, 108. Repeated Action 屢次, 時刻, etc. 298
,, 109. Double Auxiliaries, 明白, 完全, etc. 302
,, 110. Connectives, 與, 同, 連, etc. 305
,, 111. Sign of the Perfect Participle, 既 309
,, 112. Antithetical Particles, 倒, 反, etc. 312
,, 113. Special Uses of 來 316
,, 114. Reduplication of Compound Verbs 319
,, 115. Suddenness, 忽然, 猛然, etc. 322
,, 116. Certainty, 定, 准, 斷, etc. 326
,, 117. Specific Time 330
,, 118. Present Time,—General 334
,, 119. Past ,, ,, ... 337
,, 120. Future ,, ,, ... 341
,, 121. Strong Negation, 無, 非, 並非, etc. 344
,, 122. Special Uses of 見 347
,, 123. The Progressive Degree, 纔 350
,, 124. Various Uses of 打 353
,, 125. Classifiers, 朵, 文, 軸, 角, 封, etc. 356
,, 126. Beginning, 原, 起, 本, etc. 360
,, 127. Ending, 到底, 竟, 歸期, etc. 364
,, 128. One—in Composition 368
,, 129. Correlative Particles 371
,, 130. Probability, 許料, 敢, etc. 374
,, 131. Apprehensiveness, 恐, 怕, etc. 377
,, 132. Conditional Particles, 倘, 如, 設, etc. ... 381
,, 133. Correlatives with If 384
,, 134. Optative Forms, 願, 巴不得, etc. 387
,, 135. Exceptive Phrases, 非, 除, 除了, etc. 390
,, 136. Phrases of Assurance, 果然, 當眞, etc. ... 393
,, 137. General Intensives, 極, 甚, 儘, etc. 396
,, 138. Transitional Conjunctions, 而 and 且 ... 400
,, 139. Conjunctive Phrases, 還帶着, 再加上, etc.... 403
,, 140. Classifiers, 尊, 班, 眼, 帶, 包, 力, etc. ... 407
,, 141. Special Intensives, 希, 縝, 透, 迸, 剛, etc. ... 410
,, 142. ,, ,, 撾, 老, 溜, 怪, 爭, etc. ... 414
,, 143. 頭, with Verbs and Adjectives 418
,, 144. Prepositional Phrases, 至於, 論到, 及至, etc. 421
,, 145. The Instrumental Verb 以. 424
,, 146. Mandarin Uses of 其. 427
,, 147. Significant Classifiers 430
,, 148. Special Intensives, 絕, 皎, 活, 喬, 齁, etc. ... 434
,, 149. ,, ,, 雪, 漚, 褒, 蹩, etc. 437
,, 150. Restrictive Particles, 惟, 獨, 眞, etc. ... 441
,, 151. Special Interrogatives, 豈, 難道, 焉 444
,, 152. Uncertainty, 未必, 不一定, etc. 448
,, 153. The Interrogative Pronoun 何. 451
Les.154. Special Duplicate Adjuncts, 慢, 巴, 生, 糊, etc. 454
,, 155. ,, ,, ,, ,驟, 漬, 滋, etc. ... 458
,, 156. Correlative Particles, 已經..... 該來, etc. ... 461
,, 157. ,, ,, 但凡.....諸肯, etc. ... 465
,, 158. Indefinite Pronouns, 全, 共, 俱, 盡, etc. ... 468
,, 159. Special Intent, 特, 故, 偏, etc. 472
,, 160. Hypothetical Words and Phrases, 即便, 縱然, etc. 475
,, 161. Recurrent Time, 間或, 輕易, etc. 478
,, 162. Instantaneity, 立時, 立刻, etc 482
,, 163. Adversatives of Surprise, 誰知, 不料, etc. ... 484
,, 164. Correlative Particles, 只要.....無論 etc. ... 488
,, 165. ,, ,, 綫.....又, etc. 492
,, 166. Special Duplicate Adjuncts, 騰, 蠻, 拉, etc. 495
,, 167. ,, ,, ,, 499
,, 168. Intensives of Unpleasant Excess, 的慌, 布剌 的 503
,, 169. The Comparative Conjunction 况 506
,, 170. Enumeration of Particulars 509
,, 171. Special Terms of Polite Address 512
,, 172. Overplus, 以外, 格外, 分外, etc. 518
,, 173. Emphatic Assent, 赶自, 可不是, etc.... ... 521
,, 174. Final Negative Intensives 525
,, 175. Correlative Particles, 就是.....還能 527
,, 176. ,, ,, 不是.....乃是 ... 531
,, 177. Adverbial Diminutives, 些微, 稍微, etc. ... 535
,, 178. Phrases of Inference 538
,, 179. Impracticability, 奈何, 無奈, etc. 541
,, 180. 可, As a Verbal Prefix 545
,, 181. Correlative Particles, in sets of three 548
,, 182. ,, ,, in double sets... ... 552
,, 183. The Auxiliary Verbs 死 and 煞 555
,, 184. Quadruplet Phrases 558
,, 185. ,, ,, ... 562
,, 186. Numerical Quadruplets 566
,, 187. Inferential Phrases, 總而言之, etc. 569
,, 188. Special Uses of, 們, 甚, 怎, 昨, 等, ... 573
,, 189. Male and Female, 男女, 公母, etc. 577
,, 190. 便, As the Equivalent of 就 581
,, 191. Sequential Phrases, 甚至, 至於, etc. 584
,, 192. Special Forms for Past Time, 曾, 嘗 ... 587
,, 193. Correlative Particles, 寧可.....也不, etc. ... 591
,, 194. ,, ,, 寧肯.....也是, etc.... 594
,, 195. Quadruplet Phrases 597
,, 196. ,, ,, ... 600
,, 197. Pithy Metaphors 605
,, 198. Witticisms 609
,, 199. Puns.... 612
,, 200. Riddles and Epigrammatic Distichs... ... 617
Supplemental Vocabulary 624

SUPPLEMENT.

LIST OF SUPPLEMENTARY WORDS AND PHRASES.

Les. 27, 38, 40 626-7
,, 41, 42, 47, 51 628-9
,, 52, 68, 72 630-1
,, 73, 74, 75, 76 632
,, 85, 91, 92, 98 633-4
,, 100, 101, 102 635-6
Les. 103, 107, 114, 122, 124 637-8
,, 128, 140, 141 639-41
,, 142, 143, 147, 148, 149 642-4
,, 154, 155, 166, 167, 168 645
,, 183, 184, 185, 186, 195 646-7
,, 196 648

DIALOGUES AND ORATIONS.

Inquiry into Western Affairs 649
Preparations for Building a Foreign House 656
Domestic Conversation 664
A Go-between Arranging a Marriage Engagement ... 672
Collecting Accounts 684
A Specimen of Litigation 690
Wind and Water 699
Making Bargains in Business 707
Candidates Attending Examinations 718
Essay—Mutual Relationships 733
T'ai Chia's Repentance 736
King Wu Charging his Generals 737
Eulogy on Mencius 739

INDEXES.

Syllabic Index 742
Radical Index 806

Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTION.

MANDARIN.

MANDARIN, or official language as it is called by the Chinese, is in its essential features the language of the people in all the eighteen provinces, except the coast provinces south of the Yang-tsï.* It may be divided into Northern, Southern and Western Mandarin; and is often further distinguished by provinces, as Honan Mandarin, Shantung Mandarin, etc. Northern Mandarin is largely dominated by Pekingese which, being the court dialect, is the most fashionable, and is the accredited language of officials throughout the empire. Southern Mandarin is more widely used and is spoken by a larger number of people than Northern Mandarin. It is not, however, as homogeneous and includes more words and phrases which have no settled writing, being more or less allied to the non-Mandarin dialects of the South. Shantung lies between the two extremes, and its Mandarin may be approximately characterized as Central. The western part of the province is much influenced by Pekingese, with which it has its chief affinities. The eastern portion has hard initial consonants and is in other ways related to Southern Mandarin. The people of this part of the province are the descendants of a large migration from Hupeh and southern Honan.† Being quite off the track of emigration from the North, the dialect has remained comparatively unchanged, not having been affected by the tide which has been flowing from the North for several hundred years. It has fewer words and phrases which cannot be written by significant characters than any other dialect with which I am acquainted, and represents the purest hard sounds now heard in China.

An attempt has been made to adapt the present course of lessons to both Northern and Southern Mandarin. With this end in view they have been repeatedly revised by the aid of teachers from Peking, Chinanfu, Nanking and Kiukiang. No opportunity has been found to make any satisfactory comparison with the Mandarin of Western China. In some cases two or more forms of expression have been found necessary, which have been inserted in parallel lines, the Northern form being on the right and the Southern on the left. These parallel readings generally represent forms of expression, for which there is no equivalent that is everywhere current. For a full explanation of these readings, see Explanations at the end of this Introduction. The student can adopt whichever reading his teacher approves. This method, besides accomplishing the special end in view, has this incidental advantage, that while the student need not learn the forms not current in his

* The term 官話, as applied by the Chinese to their own language, seems to imply that originally it sprang up when the people spoke a language different from that of the official class; that is to say, it probably took its rise when a large proportion of the people were not Chinese proper, but aborigines,—subdued and governed by Chinese rulers. It is well known that the Chinese came into China from the North and West. This led to their gradually driving the aborigines southward and eastward—a process which has been going on for at least four thousand years. During this process, and especially in its earlier stages, when the aborigines were many and the Chinese few, there was much commingling of races and admixture of language, the conquered learning the language of the conquerors (which they would naturally call "*officer talk*"), yet at the same time modifying it to a large extent, as has ever been the case in similar circumstances. This amalgamation of language prevailed along the head of the wave of conquest, which gradually pushed its way southward and eastward, and as different aboriginal languages were encountered, gave rise to different dialects, resulting finally in what are now the non-Mandarin coast dialects of the South. In the meantime the body of the wave was behind, and being continually reinforced by fresh immigration from the North, it maintained a relatively pure Chinese. This supposition, as to the relation of the southern coast dialects to Mandarin, is strengthened by the fact that these coast dialects depart much more from the written language (which was purely Chinese) than does the Mandarin. All this is quite independent of the numerous changes which during these ages Mandarin has undergone within itself.

† It is related in the Topography of P'êng-lai that at the close of the Yüen dynasty a man named Chang Liang Pi (張良弼), then governor of Hupeh, raised a force of over thirty thousand men, having his head-quarters near 襄陽府. Being left without support, he gathered together the families of his soldiers and gradually retreated to the promontory of Shantung, where he took possession of the country and maintained his independence for a time, but by and by submitted to the new dynasty. Tradition gives the whole number who came with him as about 200,000, and reports that he drove out or killed many of the original inhabitants. The general truth of these statements is attested by tradition pervading the whole people, by the use of pure, hard sounds, and by the different character of the people.

Digitized by Google

own locality, the fact that they have passed under his eye, will broaden his knowledge of the language and give him an advantage in communicating with persons using a different dialect.

Mandarin is usually distinguished as general or *t'ung-hsing*, local, colloquial and book Mandarin.* *T'ung-hsing* Mandarin consists of all such words and phrases as are everywhere current, and are capable of being written by authorized characters. Local Mandarin consists of all such words and phrases as are local in their use, not commonly found in books, nor capable of being written by authorized characters. Colloquial Mandarin includes all the words and phrases, both *t'ung-hsing* and local, which are in common use in any given locality. Book Mandarin consists of words and phrases taken from the literary style, which are not ordinarily used in speaking but are found in Mandarin books, being used to supplement the deficiencies of the *t'ung-hsing* Mandarin, as well as to add to its dignity and elegance. There are no definite lines of demarcation between these classes of Mandarin. Every man has his own standard.

CHARACTERS.

CHINESE writing is ideographic, and derived, no doubt, from a hieroglyphic original. Its origin, however, is not certainly known, dating back as it does into the obscurity of prehistoric times. The meaning of each character is fixed, but the sound given varies greatly in different places. The great standard dictionary of the Chinese language, prepared under the patronage of the Emperor Kanghi, contains upwards of 41,000 characters, but the greater part of them are either duplicates or obsolete. Dr Williams' dictionary contains over twelve thousand characters, but of these some are duplicates and many are very rarely used. The whole text of the Chinese classics contains 4,754 different characters. There are probably not much over six thousand characters in general use at the present day. Of these many are used only in the literary style. Of characters used in Mandarin there are not over four, or at most five thousand. An average educated Chinese speaker will not use over about two thousand five hundred to three thousand, and the best speakers not over three thousand five hundred to four thousand.

Chinese characters were primarily intended to write the literary style, with is in a sense a language by itself. It is only written, and is incapable of being used as a means of oral communication, except in ready made phrases, for reasons which the student will see as he proceeds. Using these characters to write Mandarin is, to some extent, an adaptation. This adaptation is, however, quite natural and has in turn given new meanings to many characters, while it has also given rise to not a few new characters. The study of Mandarin serves as an invaluable introduction to the study of the literary style or Wên-li 文理.

Many characters have two or more meanings according to the connection in which they are used. These changes of meaning are not more numerous nor more difficult to follow than the same kind of changes in the meaning of words in Western languages. Many characters also have two or more pronunciations or readings. (See Double Readings.)

Chinese characters are concreted symbols, which are never modified for the purpose of inflection or conjugation; hence there is no interdependence of words in respect to case, number, person, mood or tense. The syntax of the language depends entirely upon the order or arrangement of the words. Not only are the characters without any inflection but they are not modified to express related or derivative ideas, as are so many of our primitive nouns and verbs in English. Ideas expressed in English by such terminal syllables as ness, able, ure, ion, ling, er, etc., are expressed in Chinese by the use of two or more independent characters, each preserving its own individuality and joined together by no closer bond than mere juxtaposition.

SYLLABLES.

THE most remarkable thing about Mandarin sounds is the smallness of their number. In the various Mandarin dialects there are on an average only *about* four hundred separate syllables or sounds. The use of tones increases these sounds to about twelve hundred. The words in use are of course many more, say three or four times as many. Hence arises the necessity of repeating the same sound in several

* *T'ung-hsing* (通行) means *everywhere current*, and is so much more expressive and convenient than any corresponding English term that I shall take the liberty of using it.

Digitized by Google

senses. These several senses are distinguished *to the eye* by different characters, as the words *heir* and *air*, or *pair*, *pear* and *pare* in English. If the words were distributed uniformly to the several syllables and their tones, the difficulty arising from so much repetition of the same sound, would be much less than it is, seeing they are in fact very unevenly distributed. Many syllables are wanting in one or more tones, and one or two characters in one tone are often mated by a score or more in another tone. Some syllables have only two or three characters in all, while others have several score. In practice the difficulty is overcome by various devices, the chief of which consists in joining the words in pairs, so that they may mutually designate each other. See Lesson 52.

Mandarin is distinguished by the fact that nearly all its syllables end with a vowel. Its only consonant endings are *n* and *ng*. The Southern non-Mandarin dialects have in addition syllables ending in *k*, *m*, *p* and *t*.

The Chinese language is commonly regarded as monosyllabic, yet many of its syllables have an intermedial vowel and are in fact dissyllables. The Chinese, however, take no account of this fact, and foreigners have followed them in regarding all words as single syllables.

For the purpose of analysis and spelling, the syllables are separated into *initials* and *finals*. The initial consists of the consonant sound or sounds which form the first part of the syllable, and the final, of the vowel or vowel combined with *n* or *ng*, which forms the second part of the syllable. Syllables beginning with a vowel have no initial. The intermedial vowel is regarded as a part of the final. The use of initials and finals offers the best means of analyzing and classifying the sounds of any given dialect, as also of comparing one dialect with another. In native dictionaries the pronunciation of words is indicated by initials and finals. The initial of one character and final of another are taken and joined together to spell the syllable required; thus *ma* and *kên* spell *mên*, *kwei* and *lang* spell *kwang*, etc. This is not an original Chinese idea but was derived from foreigners. Several native dictionaries have also been arranged according to initials and finals as being more convenient for reference than that according to radicals.

SPELLING.

ENGLISH letters cannot be made to represent Chinese sounds perfectly, so that spelling is at best but an approximation. Its use, however, if not a necessity, is at least a very great convenience. A good system of spelling, well adapted to his own dialect, will save the learner much labor and many mistakes. For reasons given in the preface, the author has not used any of the systems of spelling now in vogue, but has constructed a modified system better adapted to the requirements of the case.

The system of spelling used in Dr. Williams' dictionary fails, partly because it is inconsistent with itself, and partly because it adopts a standard, the *Wu Fang Yüen Yin*, which, so far as the spoken language is concerned, is obsolete, not being correct at the present time anywhere in China.

The most popular system, that of Sir Thomas Wade, is inconsistent with itself, quite ignores the relationship of Pekingese to other dialects, and seems to be constructed as if to preclude its application to any dialect except the Pekingese. The most notable characteristic of the system is its want of system.

The system of the China Inland Mission is consistent with itself, and is, in many respects, an excellent one. It is, however, only a system of initials and finals adapted to Southern Mandarin—the power of particular letters being left undefined so that they may be varied according as the key characters vary in different dialects. This plan, while it serves a certain purpose, is but an approximation and is quite inadequate as a general system of spelling.

The system now proposed is based chiefly on the systems of Sir Thomas Wade and the China Inland Mission, and, while supplementing them largely, only departs from them so far as is necessary to secure the end in view. The chief points of superiority claimed for this system are the following, viz.:—

1. It is simple. The powers of the letters are defined almost entirely by referring to their use in English, and as few diacritic marks are used as is possible in the circumstances.

2. It is self-consistent. The spelling of the English language is conspicuously *inconsistent*, but no *system* of spelling, made to order, should deliberately embody in it such a radical defect as this. Consistency is absolutely essential to the intelligent application of the same system of spelling to several dialects, and as a guide to the spelling of all new sounds.

3. It is comprehensive. The system in its present form has a range of initials and finals sufficient to

Digitized by Google

include at least the dialects of Peking, Weihien, Chefoo, Nanking and Kiukiang, and is capable of easy extension on the same lines.

4. It is discriminating. It brings a number of dialects into accurate comparison, giving to each a complete system of its own, without violating the rights of others. In this way it affords a decided advantage to those who may wish to change their dialect or to learn several dialects.

The following are the principle changes that have been made in the systems of Sir Thos. Wade and the China Inland Mission, with the reasons for making them.

1. Final *o* is made long *o*, and Wade's final *o* is changed to *oŏ*. Long *o* final is required in Southern and Central Mandarin. The sound indicated by Wade's final *o*, is not really *ō*, but *oŏ*, as he himself defines it.

2. Final *ï* of the C. I. M. system has been adopted rather than Wade's *ü*, because the sound is more nearly allied to *i* than to *u*; moreover, this was the writing originally used for this sound by Edkins, Medhurst and others.

3. *Ss* is changed to *s*, and *tz* is changed to *ts*. *Ss* has simply the power of a single *s* and nothing more, and is therefore superfluous. *Tz* might do for the unaspirated sound, but *z* is by its nature incapable of combining with an aspirate, so that *tz'* is by necessity pronounced *ts'*, which fact is recognized by Sir Thos. Wade when he defines *tz'* as "like *ts'*." Analogy also requires *ts*, because the difference between the two initials now in question is simply and solely in the initial letter *t*, and this fact should be indicated in the spelling.

4. The final *h* of Wade's system is discarded in all cases, because it is required in Southern Mandarin as the distinctive mark of the fifth tone. It has been assigned to this office ever since Chinese sounds began to be spelled with foreign letters.

5. *W* is substituted for *u* in the Northern dialects as it generally represents the sound more accurately, and is more in accordance with the English usage of the letters *u* and *w*. *U* is retained in Nanking, where it marks a pronunciation distinctly different from that heard in the North and West.*

6. The C. I. M. initial *u* and *i* have been replaced by *w* and *y*. It is contrary to the usage of the English letters to use *u* and *i* as initials with the consonantal powers of *w* and *y*.

The following key to the powers of the letters will serve to define the system :—

Vowels.

a, Final or followed by *ng*, as *a* in far, star. In certain syllables of some dialects, when *a* is followed by *n* final, it has the sound of *a* in man as pronounced by Americans. In nearly all dialects *a*, preceded by *w* and followed by *ng*, is broadened to the sound of *a* in fall. The Chinese do not appreciate these variations, but regard the sound as the same. On this account foreign systems of spelling have not felt it necessary to indicate the difference.

â, As *a* in ask, last, as pronounced by Americans.

e, As *e* in met, pen. When standing alone as a final, it is pronounced as if doubled, thus che is pronounced che-e.

ê, As *e* in her, perch. When standing alone as a final, it is also prolonged as if doubled.

i, Final or followed by a vowel, as *i* in machine, ravine. When followed by *n* or *ng*, it is shortened to *i* in chin, pin.

ĭ, Final, as *i* in chin, pin.

ï, The final vowel sound heard in such words as table, noble, etc. when separated from the preceding bl.†

o, As *o* in go, so.

u, As *u* in rule, or *oo* in fool. When followed by *n* or *ng*, it is shortened to the sound of *u* in pull, or *oo* in good. When followed by a vowel, it combines with it and approximates the sound of *w*.

ü, Commonly called French *ü*, is not found in the English language. It is the French rather than the German *ü*, that is, it does not incline so much to long *e* as does the German *ü*.

ae, As *ae* in aerial, save that the accent falls on *a*, and the sounds of the two letters are more nearly joined together. This sound can scarcely be considered Mandarin. It is only heard in the region of Chinkiang and Yangchow, and is probably imported from Soochow. The writing of this sound by the present system would be *eii*, which is a very undesirable combination. *Æ* is adopted because it is

* Before making this change, I addressed a circular to all the missionaries of over five years' residence in Chili, Manchuria and Shantung, asking their opinion as to which letter best represented the sound. Over nine-tenths of the replies were to the effect that *w* was preferable.

† Prof. Bell, the well-known author of "Visible Speech or Universal Alphabetics," says the final *vowel* sound in the words able, noble, etc., corresponds with this sound as he heard it from the lips of several Peking speakers in the Chinese embassy in Washington City.

Digitized by Google

already in use in Soochow and Shanghai. It is often written *œ*.

ai, As *ai* in aisle or as *i* in mine. In some sections the two vowels are heard separately to a greater or less extent.

ao, As *ou* in loud, proud. Occasionally the vowels are heard slightly separated.

au or *ą*, As *a* in fall, or as *au* in haul. In Mandarin this sound is only heard in the South, where it takes the place of *a* final in the North. It is heard in Soochow and Shanghai, and is there always spelled *au*.

ei, As *ei* in weight, or as *ey* in grey.

êi, With *ê* and *i* distinct, and with the powers given above. Strike out *n* from money and you have the syllable *mêi*.

êei, With *ê* and *ei* distinct and with the powers given above. Omit *nd* and *ne* from mundane and you have the sound mêei.

êo, With the powers given above, *o* being somewhat more distinct than *ê*; or, the vowel sounds in burrow when all the consonants are withdrawn. The circumflex is sometimes omitted on the ground that the combination sufficiently distinguishes the sound. It is better, however, to write *êo*.

ia, With *i* and *a* distinct, and with the powers given above, the accent being on *a*.

iai, With *i* and *ai* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ai* being accented.

iao, With *i* and *ao* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ao* being accented.

ie, As *ee* in re-enter, re-enroll. When preceded by *y* the *i* is partially occluded and *ie* approximates *e*.

iei, With *i* and *ei* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ei* being accented.

io, As *eo* in re-open.

iu, As *eu* in Peru when the *r* is dropped. In some dialects the accent inclines to the *i* and in some to the *u*. There is, in some dialects, much confusion between *io* and *iu* as finals. They are probably the same final modified by tone and by accidental circumstances.

oă, As *oa* in Gilboâ, or in coalesce. The *a* is very short and it is to mark this fact that it is written *ă*. Some hear the final sound as short *ŭ* (*u* in hut) and it might perhaps with equal propriety be so written. The sounds of the two letters are not perfectly distinct, but coalesce to some extent, approximating the sound of *ê*. The departure from full *oă* is greater or less in different places, and according to different ears. In case of doubt it is better to give the preference to *ê*, leaving *oă* as a distinct double sound.

ou, With the vowels distinct, and with the powers given above, or, as *ou* in volute when the *l* is dropped, and the accent thrown on the first syllable. The sound of *u* is comparatively slight, *o* being much the stronger of the two sounds.*

ua, As *ua* in dual with the accent thrown on the *a*.

uai, With *u* and *ai* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ai* being accented.

uei, With *u* and *ei* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ei* being accented.

uê, With *u* and *ê* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ê* being accented.

ui, With the vowels distinct, and with the powers given above—the vowel sounds in gluey.

üa, The *ü* as above, and the *a* flattened to *a* in man, antic. The combination only occurs in final *üan*.

üe, With *ü* and *e* distinct, and with the powers given above. When used as a final the *ü* is accented, and when followed by *n* or *ng*, the *e* is accented.

üei, With *ü* and *ei* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ei* being accented.

Consonants.

The initials *ch*, *k*, *p*, *t* and *ts*, are somewhat softened from their sounds as heard in Great Britain, and much softened from their sounds as heard in America, yet not so much as to quite pass into the corresponding, *j*, *g*, *b*, *d* and *dz*. In some words and in some localities they do, however, become very nearly equivalent to these sounds.

In the initials *ch'*, k', *p'*, *t'* and *ts'*, the aspiration is somewhat stronger than is usual with these letters in America, and very much stronger than is usual in Great Britain. Their force will be obtained approximately by first vocalizing the English letter, and then following at once with the final with an *h* prefixed; thus ch-ha for 茶, or t-ha for 他. An Irishman ought to give these aspirates to perfection.

* Sir Thos. Wade defines the sound of *ou* as, "In reality *êŏ*, the vowel sounds of burrow when all the consonants are withdrawn." This identifies the sound with that of *êo* in Southern Mandarin, as given above, which is certainly not correct for Pekingese, in which alone the sound is heard. Elsewhere in Northern and Central Mandarin the corresponding sound is either *êo*, or simply *ê*. In this case, as in several others, Sir Thos. Wade seems to have been misled in his description of Peking sounds by the Nanking sounds which he had previously learned. It is a question whether after all the final *u* is really anything more than the imperfect *u* necessarily formed by the vocal organs in falling back to their normal position after a full final *ô*.

Digitized by Google

h, Is aspirated a little more strongly than is usual in English. When followed by *i* or *ü* it includes the sound of *y*, making it equivalent to *h* in hue or hew, that is, the Greek χ. *h* final is used as the distinctive mark of the fifth or entering tone.

hs, Sir Thos. Wade defines: "A slight aspirate preceding and modifying the sibilant, which, however, is the stronger of the two consonants." A more accurate definition would be, a distinct sibilant preceding and modifying, or obscuring the aspirate. To pronounce it correctly requires that the teeth be somewhat more separated and the tongue brought more to the front than in pronouncing *sh*.* It is *always* followed by *i* or by *ü* in the final. In Pekingese *sh* is never followed by *i* or *ü*.

j, is approximately *s* in fusion, or *z* in brazier. It is only used in Pekingese. The corresponding sound in Southern Mandarin is more guttural and therefore more allied to the untrilled English *r*.

jr, Is a combination of *j* and *r*, which more nearly represents this peculiar initial as heard in Central Mandarin than either *j* or *r* alone †

k, When followed by *i* or *ü*, includes the sound of *y*, being like *k* in kindness, as formerly pronounced in English, viz., kyindness.

ng, Has the same power as in English, and is used both as a final and as an initial.

r, Not trilled, but as usually spoken in America.

sh, Is in some dialects pronounced just as in English, in others the tongue is somewhat retracted from its normal position in giving *sh* in English.

sr, Place the tongue as if to utter initial *r*, and then, without changing its position, say *s*, followed by the faintest possible *r*.

tsh, As *tsh* in potsherd,—a combination representing the transition sound from *ch* in the North to *ts* in the south, being neither *ch* nor *ts*, but an amalgamation of the two sounds.

tsr, Place the tongue as if to utter initial *r*, and then, without changing its position, say *ts*, followed by the faintest possible *r*.

Both analogy and consistency would require that the syllables 希, hi or hsi, 欣, hin or hsin, 行, hing or hsing, also 機, ki, 斤 kin, and 經, king, should be spelled hyi or hsyi, kyi, etc., but the general custom in all systems has been to drop the *y*, assuming that it is included in the initials *h* and *k*, as provided above. The student should take special note of this provision, with regard to the power of *h* and *k* before *i* and *ü*.

Remarks.

The above letters and combinations are supposed to provide a consistent spelling for all the sounds found in the dialects of Peking, Chefoo, Weihien, Nanking and Kiukiang. Other Mandarin dialects may contain sounds not provided for, in which case it will be necessary to make new combinations, and perhaps add new diacritic marks Any additions made should be strictly consistent with the system as already defined.

The sound of many syllables is considerably modified by the tone. Thus in Peking, words ending in *wei* are, in the first and second tones *wi*, and in the third and fourth *wei*. In Tèngchow words ending in *ien* are, in the second and third tones *ien*, and in the first and fourth, *ian*. These tonal variations differ greatly in different dialects. It is agreed on all hands that in such cases, it is neither necessary nor desirable to have two spellings. The student will presently learn by experience to make the necessary allowance for such variations. That spelling should be chosen which analogy or history indicates as the fundamental sound. It is a great pity that the usage in this respect is not more uniform and consistent than it is. The fifth tone makes a still more decided change on the fundamental syllable, insomuch that in many cases it is quite dissociated from it; on this account, as well as because this tone is already distinguished by a special terminal letter *(h)*, it is doubtless best to conform the spelling to the sound.

No combinations of English letters can completely represent all the minor distinctions of even one dialect, much less those of a number of dialects. A

* The accuracy of the definition of this sound given by Sir Thos. Wade and followed by Giles is open to question. A careful analysis of the sound will show that the sibilant precedes the aspirate rather than follows it, not however combining with it to form the sound represented by *sh* but retaining its own separate force and followed by the *h* as a distinct sound. The original sound in most cases was *hy* (that is, *h* in hew) and is such still in many places. Within the last two or three hundred years it has been modified by prefixing an *s* without however essentially changing the *hy*; thus, 戏 was originally hying (written hing) and has now come to be s-hing. The sound represented by *sh* in English is not a simple joining of *s* and *h* but a new elementary sound, which is also expressed in English by *c* as in emaciate, by *s* as in nauseate and by *t* as in negotiate. The sound now in question differs from it in that *s* and *h* each retains its own special sound following in order. It is doubtless better, however, to *write* the sound *hs* and so avoid confounding it with *sh*. It may be regarded as similar to *wh* in the English words when, what, etc. which are pronounced as if written hwen, hwat, etc.

† Much breath has been spent, both North and South, in discussing whether this initial is *j* or *r*. It is in fact a combination of the two sounds. It begins with *j* and ends with *r*, and *jr* is the best way to represent it, both North and South.

Digitized by Google

certain margin or suppleness must be given to the spelling of each syllable, especially for the many minor modifications made by change of tone. In every dialect also, there are occasional stray sounds which may be regarded as accidental variations, and need not be provided for in a syllabary of the dialect.

SYLLABARIES.

A SYLLABARY is an alphabetic arrangement of all the syllables in a given dialect, with all the characters ordinarily used in writing that dialect, distributed under these syllables. In some cases the characters are arranged in columns according to their tones, and in others they are simply given in order, the tones being indicated by figures. A good syllabary is a great help in acquiring a correct knowledge of a given dialect. It shows clearly what sounds are in the dialect with the correct spelling of each, which is a very important matter to a beginner, whose ear is not yet trained to distinguish sounds. It also shows the tone of every character, and thus enables the student to verify his own hearing of the sound, and serves also to prompt his memory in the absence of his teacher. It further serves as a valuable *vade mecum* to all who essay to write Chinese, giving so readily the character you want and *know*, but cannot quite recall.

In the nature of the case a syllabary can only include one homogeneous dialect. To attempt more than this is to invite difficulties and defeat the end in view. Every city or district, having a dialect peculiar to itself, should have its own syllabary. It is well worth the while of older residents to prepare a syllabary for the use of beginners, albeit its usefulness is very far from being limited to beginners. The analysis of syllables and tones which its preparation requires, will very likely bring to light some previous mistakes and misapprehensions, and lead to a more consistent and accurate pronunciation of the dialect. For the guidance and help of any who may undertake to make a syllabary, I offer the following suggestions:—

1. Canvass the dialect and gather out as far as possible all the different syllables it contains, choosing a key character for each.

2. Spell these sounds *provisionally* and arrange them in a table by means of the key characters, bringing like initials into the same line, and like finals into the same column.

3. Go carefully over the several initials and finals, and compare all those in the same line or column, and examine closely whether in each case they are really the same. In respect to the finals be especially careful that you are not misled by tonal variations. As far as possible compare characters in the same tone, changing the key characters for this purpose if necessary.

4. Train your teacher to understand what you are doing, especially teach him to understand the idea of comparing sounds by finals, so as to get his assistance in classifying.

5. Having arranged your syllables in alphabetic order with ample spaces, get your teacher to classify by the guidance of the key characters, all the common characters in your dialect,—arranging them by tones under each syllable. If your teacher is able to distinguish clearly the tone from the other elements of the sound, he will do this work without difficulty; if not, you will have to check over his work very carefully.

6. In arranging the characters under the tones, especial care will be required to see that your teacher does not simply follow the Wu Fang Yüen Yin, instead of the real tone of his dialect. A man of moderate scholarship, especially if he be familiar with light literature, will probably do this work better than a literary graduate, because he will more easily free himself from the theoretical tones, and because he will not be so impervious to a new idea.

Until your teacher is really able to throw away the tone-book and trust simply to his *ear*, he will be but a broken reed in the making of a syllabary. The fact that he *says* he understands the distinction between the book tone and the spoken tone, does not prove that he really does do so, or that he is in fact able to depend upon his ear and ignore the book. It is of course understood that purely *wên-li* characters have no established tone in colloquial. For such the teacher will of course refer to the book.

7. This classification of all the common characters of the dialect, will probably elicit the fact that a few rare sounds have been omitted—perhaps that some sounds which are different have been confused, or *vice versâ*. After these corrections are made, make a careful review of the whole work, comparing and testing by means of the initials and finals, to see whether the whole work is at the same time consistent and exhaustive.

Digitized by Google

8. Only after you have made this thorough analysis and classification of the sounds of your dialect are you ready to settle the final spelling of the several syllables. In doing this, attend to the following points: (1). Use all the English letters *consistently* and according to the powers given them in the table of vowels and consonants. (2). If these sounds are not enough for the emergency, then use new combinations or additional diacritic marks, defining them carefully and making them consistent with the system as it already exists. (3). In spelling words which end in *n*, preceded by an intermedial vowel, note that these endings have a relationship to vowel endings of the same class, thus *tien*, *mien*, *lien*, etc., are related to tie, mie, lie, etc.; yüen, shüen, chüen, etc., are related to yüe, shüe, chüe, etc. Now these syllables, viz., those with intermedial vowels, are the ones which chiefly develope tonal variations by changing *en* to *an*. In such cases, if there be any doubt whether the ending be *en* or *an*, the existence of the corresponding vowel endings in *e* or *a* should determine which is the normal sound and mark the other as a tonal variation. (4). The intermedial *i* in such sounds as lien, liu, etc., should not be dropped when *y* becomes the initial. It is indeed occluded by the cognate sound *y*, but the *final* is still the same as in *lien*, *liu*, etc., and should be so written, retaining the *i*. It will be found that the Chinese consider the final the same, whether it be preceded by *y* or by *l* or by any other initial.

9. Let your syllabary make just as many distinctions of sound as the Chinese make and *no more*. The only exception that I would make to this rule is in the case of the confusion of final *n* and *ng* and initial *n* and *l* in Southern Mandarin. For the sake of facility in consulting dictionaries, and of understanding other dialects in case of removal, it would be well to keep up these distinctions, although they do not exist in your own dialect.

10. A complete syllabary should include double readings. Such double readings as are mere accidental variations unattended by a change of meaning, may be indicated by a star—the character having the same mark under both its readings. Double readings, attended by a change of meaning, should be indicated by numbers at the upper right hand corner of the character, *one* indicating the primary reading and *two* the secondary.

TONES.

TO give a clear and satisfactory exposition of Chinese tones, is a task of no small difficulty. The fact that they differ so greatly in different localities, and are so wholly foreign to the distinctions we are accustomed to make in sounds, coupled with the fact that ears differ as much perhaps as tones, will account, to some extent, for the multifarious and contradictory things which have been written about them. Whether the present attempt to elucidate Mandarin tones, will succeed any better than those which have preceded it, remains to be seen. I shall treat the subject entirely from the practical standpoint.

1. Tones are not musical notes, but are rather intonations or inflections of the voice. There is nothing in Western languages corresponding to them, and they can only be acquired by close attention to, and imitation of, a Chinese teacher. In Southern Mandarin there are five tones, as follows, viz:—1. *Shang p'ing shêng*, or upper level tone; 2. *Hsia p'ing shêng*, or lower level tone; 3. *Shang shêng*, or rising tone; 4. *Ch'u shêng*, or vanishing tone; 5. *Ju shêng*, or entering tone. From Northern Mandarin the fifth tone has disappeared, the characters originally under it being distributed to the other four—chiefly to the second, or lower level tone.* In one or other of these tones all Mandarin words are spoken. Tones are not something added to the sound, but are an original and integral part of it. They do not *modify* the sense in any particular way, nor convey any *special* meaning of any kind. They rather serve to distinguish one word from another, showing that they are two and not one.

* It is a question whether tones were originally an element of the Chinese language proper. It seems not unlikely that they were acquired from the languages spoken by the aborigines who dwelt in the land before the Chinese entered it. This hypothesis is favored by the fact that the aboriginal languages, still extant in China, all have tones, as also the language of the Shan tribes bordering on Burmah. It is also favored by the fact that the non-Mandarin dialects of the South, which are probably the result of admixtures of Chinese with aboriginal dialects, all have *more* tones and lay more *stress* on tones than does the Mandarin. Mandarin shows a disposition to throw off tones, as if they were really foreign to it. Thus within the last four hundred years the fifth or entering tone has entirely disappeared from Northern and Central Mandarin, where it formerly prevailed. The indications are that it will ultimately disappear from Southern Mandarin.

Digitized by Google

2. It is worthy of special remark that the relationship of tones as such, is not known or recognized by the mass of the Chinese people. They learn the tones as they learn the other characteristics of their sounds—by imitation of their elders; and to their apprehension the different tones of a given syllable are simply different words. Having different sounds and different meanings, and being represented by different characters, their tonal relationship is a thing not thought of. The theoretical knowledge of tones is confined to scholars, and with them it is not a knowledge based on their own spoken language, but is acquired as a theory laid down in their books.

3. Tones have been indicated in various ways by writers on the Chinese language. When indicated on the Chinese character, the most common plan is that adopted by Dr. Williams in imitation of the Chinese method, viz.,—by small semicircles at the four corners of the character. When indicated on the Romanized spelling, the most convenient plan is that adopted by Sir Thos. Wade, viz.,—by the use of numbers at the upper right hand of the spelling. The fifth or entering tone is indicated in the spelling by a final *h*. The following example shows the tones marked in both ways:—

1st tone or	上平聲	*Shang p'ing shêng*	夫	Fu[1].
2nd „ „	下平聲	*Hsia* „ „	符	Fu[2].
3rd „ „	上聲	*Shang shêng*	府	Fu[3].
4th „ „	去聲	*Ch'u* „	父	Fu[4].
5th „ „	入聲	*Ju* „	福	Fuh.

The tones are usually given by Chinese teachers in the above order, and form a sort of chime, which every learner should acquire, as it will enable him to recognize and locate the tone of any word he may hear.

4. The names of the tones do not truly describe their characters. This is especially true of the two level tones. In a large part of Shantung the 上平 or upper level, is in fact a lower level, and the 下平, or lower level, is an upper level. In Peking the 上平, or upper level, is not properly a level tone at all, nor is the 下平, the former being an upper quick falling tone, and the latter an upper quick rising tone. The term 入, entering, is not a correct description of the fifth tone, which is an abrupt aspirated ending. Dr. Edkins says that the terms 平, 上, 去, 入, "do not in the majority of cases represent the actual effect of the sound on the ear. When first adopted they must have represented the tones of the dialect spoken by the writer who selected them, but when applied according to universal practice, to the sounds given to the same characters in other parts of the empire, they convey no idea of the actual pronunciation." This is perhaps a little strong for Mandarin. In Eastern Shantung, aside from the inversion of the *upper* and *lower* levels, the names are fairly descriptive of the fact.

5. Tones are of two kinds, viz.,—practical and theoretical. The practical tones are those which are actually used by the people in speaking, and differ widely in different localities. The theoretical tones are those which are given in the 五方元音 *Wu Fang Yüen Yin*, or, "Original Tones of the Five Regions." The compiler of this work was from Southern Chili, yet he professes to give the syllables and tones of the Southern Mandarin, which then no doubt extended well to the north. Exactly what he made his standard in fixing the tones, it is not easy to see. At the present time they are not correct anywhere in China, albeit the book is the authorized standard for determining tones throughout the whole empire. Every Chinese scholar is familiar with the tones as given in this book, and when a teacher, who is not specially trained, is asked the tone of a word, he will generally reply according to the book, and not according to the tone that he himself actually uses in speaking. This latter, in fact, he does not generally know, or rather he does not *recognize* it as such. To be of service in teaching a foreigner, a Chinese teacher must be trained to distinguish tones by his ear, rejecting and ignoring the artificial standard of the books. Unless thus trained he will very likely mislead the learner by giving the theoretical instead of the practical tones.*

6. For the purpose of rhyming, tones are divided by the Chinese into two classes, called *p'ing* (平), level, and *tsê* (仄), deflected. The former includes the *shang p'ing shêng* and the *hsia p'ing shêng;* and the latter, the *shang shêng, ch'u shêng* and *ju shêng.* With this distinction every Chinese scholar is familiar. He will readily tell to which class any given word

* I once heard a lady in North China complimenting her teacher on the accuracy of his tones, adducing as proof the fact that they invariably agreed with the tones given in Williams' Dictionary. I asked her how about the Ju shêng; she replied that he gave her these as readily as the others. He was in fact giving the theoretical tones, including the Ju shêng, to which he gave a theoretical pronunciation, which he imagined was the Ju shêng. He was thoroughly misleading his pupil as to the real pronunciation of his dialect.

Digitized by Google

belongs, his standard being not the actual spoken tones, but the *Wu Fang Yüen Yin* and sundry rhyme books based upon it. In writing poetry it is only allowed to rhyme a *p'ing* with a *p'ing* and a *tsê* with a *tsê*. This is in fact the principal, if not the only, purpose that this distinction serves.

7. The tones of words vary in different localities; that is, any given character may be one tone in one place, and another tone in another place. The most frequent change perhaps is from the first tone to the second, and *vice versâ*. The second and fourth tones also often exchange places. These changes of tone are very numerous, and often occur within very short distances, such as would show very little, if any, perceptible change in syllables. The number of these changes is far greater than any one would suppose, who has not made the matter a subject of special inquiry.

8. The manner of rendering the tones differs in different localities; that is, a given tone is not the same sound in one locality that it is in another, *though called by the same name.* It is, so to speak, intoned in a different way. For example, the third tone in Peking, is made by depressing the voice below its natural key and ending with a strong rising inflection. In Eastern Shantung, the same tone is made by beginning in a natural key and ending with a rising inflection. In Chinanfu, the same tone begins high and rises still higher. In fact the four tones, as given in Peking, are all rendered differently in Eastern Shantung; not only so, but in Chinanfu they are rendered still differently from those heard in either place. Each new locality has a new rendering of the tones. These variations know no law, and seem to be practically endless. There is, in many cases, a certain degree of similarity in the rendering of the same tone in different places, yet not such as to make it certainly recognizable, or prevent its being confounded with other tones.

9. The normal tone of a word is often changed by its position in a compound word or phrase, as also by its position in a sentence. Thus the words 東 *tung*^{1} east, and 西 *hsi*^{1} west, are both in the first tone, but when combined in the word 東西, a thing, they are not spoken *tung*^{1} *hsi*^{1}, according to the proper tones, but *tung*^{1} *hsi*^{2}, the tone of *hsi* changing from the first to the second. So also 慈悲, merciful, is not spoken *ts'i*^{2} *pei*^{1}, according to the original tones, but rather *ts'i*^{2} *pei*^{4}, the tone of *pei* changing from the first to the fourth. In like manner 伶巧, ingenious, is not spoken *ling*^{2} *ch'iao*^{3}, according to the normal tones, but *ling*^{2} *ch'iao*^{4}, the tone of *ch'iao*, changing from the third to the fourth. Again, take the expression 你要打我嗎, *Are you going to strike me?* Now 我 is normally in the third tone, but as spoken in this phrase, it changes to the fourth. If its proper tone be retained, the emphasis is thereby thrown on it, and the expression would mean, *Would you* [*dare to*] *strike* ME? Once more, take the sentence 爺有娘有不如己有, *To have a thing in your father and mother's possession is not so good as to have it in your own possession.* Here 娘 is normally *niang*^{2} and 己 is *chi*^{3}, but as spoken in this sentence they both change to the fourth tone. In general it may be said that there are few sentences of any length spoken, in which there are not, for one cause or another, changes in the normal tone of one or more of its words. These changes are complicated and subject to no known general law. The following hints embody as much as the author has learned by experience, and will, it is hoped, be of some service to the student.

(1.) Accented words, both in phrases and in sentences, retain their normal tones.

(2.) Strong emphasis on a word forming part of a clause, is likely to obscure the tone of the succeeding word,—generally changing it to the fourth tone.

(3.) In dual combinations, which include the vast majority of phrases, the first character *generally* takes the accent, and in this case the second character, if not already a fourth tone, generally changes to a fourth tone; that is, to the natural falling inflection

(4.) In case the meaning of the second character of a dual phrase predominates and takes the accent, then it retains its normal tone, and the tone of the first character generally changes, or is at least obscured, especially if it is a level tone.

10. How may an accurate knowledge of tones be acquired, is a question which confronts every student of Chinese. Two distinct methods have been followed, and each has its advocates. One method is to learn the tone of each character as a distinct act of memory in each case, so that the tone is as certainly known as the other elements of the sound. The other method is to regard the tone as an integral part of the sound, which need not be theoretically separated from it, and so proceed to learn both words and sentences by a direct and untrammelled imitation of a teacher, as a Chinese child imitates its parents. Each method has its advantages

Digitized by Google

and disadvantages. The first method will give greater confidence and accuracy in the use of isolated words, but it imposes a heavy burden on the memory, and its ultimate benefit is neutralized to a considerable extent by the changes required by composition and rhythm, and by the danger that the speaker will adhere too much to the fundamental tone, to the great injury of his speaking. The second method is easier to one who has a good ear, and will make a fluent and natural speaker. There is danger, however, that such a speaker will miss his bearings when he attempts to isolate or emphasize a particular word, especially if it is not a very common one.

On the whole, I would recommend a combination of the two methods. Let the student first practice the tone exercises faithfully with his teacher, until he has caught the chime and can distinguish with certainty the tone of any single word his teacher pronounces. The foundation is now securely laid, and he can go on with confidence to learn words and phrases. In memorizing single words, let the tone always be regarded as an integral part of the sound, so that the word is not regarded as properly heard at all until the tone is heard—for in point of fact *there is no Chinese word without a tone.* In case of uncertainty in catching a tone from a teacher, it is not best to ask him the tone, nor to suffer him to tell you, but have him repeat the word, telling *him* the tone as a check if necessary. In repeating phrases or clauses after the teacher, attention should not be directed chiefly to the tones of the words, but rather to a close and accurate imitation of the sounds, both in general and in particular. If this method is faithfully carried out, the student will come to think less and less about tones, while he will speak the language with greater and greater accuracy. He will in fact acquire the ear of a native, and both hear and speak the language in blissful forgetfulness of tones.

11. Opinions vary as to the relative importance of tones in learning and speaking Chinese. Since they are an integral part of all Chinese speech, their general importance may safely be assumed. Seeing, however, that they vary so much in different localities and yet the people of these several localities understand each other without serious difficulty, it may safely be assumed that their *relative* importance is not so great as is sometimes represented. In order, however, to be understood with readiness and precision, and not offend the ears of the hearers, an accurate rendering of the tones is essential. Even as a basis for acquiring such a style as may be understood in several cognate dialects, the very best thing is the thorough knowledge of the pronunciation of some *one* dialect. The Chinese understand, and can make allowance for, the differing tones of different dialects, but they do not understand Anglicised sounds that have *no tone.* He who neglects tones or other peculiarities of his own dialect, and attempts to acquire what some are pleased to call a "general dialect," will end by not speaking real Chinese at all; *for there is no spoken Chinese without tones, nor any that is free from dialectic peculiarities.*

ASPIRATES.

IN the non-Mandarin dialects of the South there are sounds beginning with *j*, *g*, *b*, *d* and *ds*, also *two* sets of sounds beginning with *ch*, *k*, *p*, *t* and *ts*, which are distinguished as unaspirated and aspirated, the latter being generally written with a reversed elevated comma following the letter. In Mandarin the initials *j*, *g*, *b*, *d* and *ds* are not found, but only the two classes of sounds represented by *ch*, *k*, *p*, *t* and *ts*, distinguished as unaspirated and aspirated. These English letters really represent neither sound correctly. In the one case the aspiration is weaker than Englishmen generally use with these letters, and much weaker than Americans (who aspirate more strongly than Englishmen) generally use. In the other case the aspiration is somewhat stronger than that given to these letters by Americans, and much stronger than that given by Englishmen.

The unaspirated sounds are not really *j*, *g*, *b*, *d* and *ds*, as beginners are apt to imagine, though they approximate these letters, and in a few cases become almost, if not quite, equivalent to them. If the learner has difficulty in properly softening *ch*, *k*, *p*, *t* and *ts*, it would be better to give them flat *j*, *g*, *b*, *d* and *ds*, than to run the risk of confusing them with the aspirates. There is this at least to be said in favor of such a pronunciation, that while the Chinese may not quite approve it, they will not misunderstand it.* It is very important that the

* Seeing that neither *j*, *g*, *b*, *d* and *ds*, nor *ch*, *k*, *p*, *t* and *ts*, *perfectly* represent the true sounds, it is a question whether in Mandarin it would not be better to write the unaspirated sounds with the former letters and simplify the system of spelling by abolishing that awkward '. It is as easy to vary from *j*, *g*, *b*, *d* and *ds*, as it is to vary from *ch*, *k*, *p*, *t* and *ts*.

Digitized by Google

student of Chinese should get this distinction clearly in mind at first, which he ought readily to do by practising the table of aspirates with a good teacher. Ridiculous and mortifying blunders sometimes result from mistakes in aspirating. I once heard the announcement made from the pulpit that there would be a rooster in the church on a certain evening instead of saying a prayer-meeting, as was intended.

The Chinese do not recognize the relationship existing between aspirated and unaspirated sounds—simply regarding them as independent sounds. They only learn to compare and classify them when taught to do so by foreigners. The aspirates in Mandarin do not vary with different dialects so much as do the tones, but are exceedingly uniform from North to South. When, however, Mandarin is compared with the Southern coast dialects the variations are very great, whole classes of sounds changing from aspirates to unaspirates or *vice versâ*.

RHYTHM.

A Chinese sentence may be constructed with faultless idiom, and each word be pronounced with perfect accuracy, and yet the sentence be almost or quite unintelligible, simply from want of proper rhythmical emphasis. By rhythmical emphasis is meant the relative amount of emphasis given to the several words, their distribution into groups, and the rapidity or slowness with which they are severally spoken. It is highly important to every speaker that he should acquire the art of speaking in correct rhythm, and by consequence, with proper emphasis. Such acquisition will be invaluable in making his speech easily intelligible and in making it sound natural to the Chinese ear. The same thing is true to a greater or less extent of all languages.

In addition to listening carefully to the spoken language heard every day and striving to imitate it, the best way to acquire a proper rhythm is to practice reading closely after a good teacher. Let the teacher read a short clause *in an easy, natural tone*, and the student follow, imitating faithfully both the pronunciation and the rhythmic cadence of the teacher. Then let the teacher read the next clause and the student follow, and so on. The teacher should not read too far at once, lest the student be unable to retain the rhythm in his mind. Special care should also be taken that the teacher does not read in a recitative or affected style. Chinese teachers have a strong proclivity to read in that measured sing-song in which they recite their classics; and oftentimes when told that this is not what is wanted, they become impressed with the difficulty of what is required, and resort at once to a loud pompous style which upsets all proper rhythmical emphasis, and is the farthest possible from the easy natural conversational style that is wanted. If the student has not a trained teacher, he should ask the assistance of a friend who speaks Chinese to explain to his teacher what is wanted, and give him a few lessons on natural reading. Half an hour's practice in reading each day will be a relief from the severer labor of memorizing, and will work wonders in enabling the student to speak Chinese, as the Chinese speak it. It should be remembered, however, that merely reading after a teacher will be useless, if not worse, unless the rhythmical emphasis of the teacher be really and faithfully imitated. This exercise may be profitably varied by reading in concert with the teacher.

RADICALS.

THE Chinese have analysed their numerous written characters so far as to arrange them in two hundred and fourteen classes, each class having a common part called its radical. The Chinese name is 字部, character class, or 字母, character mother. Many of the more complex ones are compounded of those which are simpler. It would be a distinct advantage if the number of the radicals were considerably reduced. The radical was chosen in each case because of its relationship to the meaning of the character, to which it generally gives more or less of a clue. The other part of the character has been named the phonetic by foreign sinologues, because in most cases it determines, or at least suggests, the sound. The Chinese have no special name for it. Nearly all modern characters are made up distinctly of a radical and a phonetic, the one indicating the meaning and the other the sound. The same is true of many ancient characters, but not by any means of all.

The meaning, form and order of these two hundred and fourteen radicals, should be memorized. It will be a hard task, but it will repay the student well. Over one hundred and sixty of them are

Digitized by Google

themselves characters in common use, and will require to be learned in any case. Moreover, all characters are built up from them, and the student will find that after learning them, Chinese characters will lose to a great extent their strange unmeaning look, and will become more familiar and intelligible. These radicals and their combinations will become so many hooks on which the memory can fasten, and so retain the characters in its keeping. The best time to learn the radicals is at the very outset, before attempting to learn other characters. The mind is then fresh and unoccupied, and will retain what it gets with a much firmer grasp than it will that which is crammed into it after it is already sated with five hundred or a thousand characters.

These radicals are, in a sense, the Chinese alphabet—the only one, at least, that they possess. Most native dictionaries are arranged in the order of these radicals, particularly the great standard imperial dictionary of Kanghi. Most foreign dictionaries of Chinese are syllabic, but in all cases of uncertainty as to the standard spelling of a character, recourse has still to be had to a radical index. In looking up characters by radicals, it will save much time and vexation to know either the order of these radicals or the number of each one. Many, perhaps most, students of Chinese have undertaken to learn the numbers. This is no light task in the first place, and it is a rare thing that the numbers are retained permanently in the memory, save in the case of comparatively few radicals which are in constant demand. The Chinese do not learn the radicals by number, but, having them arranged in groups according to the number of their strokes, they learn the order in which they stand. This is no doubt the better and more effective way,—being in fact the way we use our own alphabet in consulting a dictionary. In order to assist the memory and lighten the task of learning these radicals in their order, the Rev. J. A. Silsby of Shanghai has, at the request of the author, woven the 214 radicals into a mnemonic radical ode, which is appended at the end of the table of radicals.

How to recognize the radical of a character is a question of some importance to a beginner. Unfortunately no invariable rule can be given, but the following directions will be of some service:—

1. Consider whether the character itself is or is not a radical.

2. The great majority of characters consist more or less evidently of two parts, either right and left, or upper and lower, or inner and outer (a top and a side joined counts an outer). In case one of these parts is a radical and the other not, then that which is a radical, is the radical of the character; as, 站, 完, 固, etc.

3. If both parts be radicals, then:—

(*a*) The left hand part is the radical, except in the case of 刀, 力, 文, 斤, 殳, 彡, 欠, 戈, 斗, 邑, 見, which generally stand on the right.

(*b*) The lower part is the radical, except in the case of 艹, 灬, 亠, 穴, 日, 酉, 雨, 爪, 父, 山, 灬, which generally stand at the top.

(*c*) The outer part is the radical. This class is comparatively small.

4. It may be observed in general:—

(*a*) That the most prominent radical in a character is likely to be its governing radical.

(*b*) Some radicals almost always govern the character in which they appear; as, 艹, 灬, 見, 疒.

There are of course some exceptions to these rules, yet they are quite as true as such rules generally are. For characters to which no rule applies, reference may be had to the list of difficult characters usually given in both native and foreign dictionaries.

DOUBLE READINGS.

MANY Chinese characters have two readings, and a few have three readings. The most of these changes of reading are attended by a change of meaning. Those which are not attended by a change of meaning, are mere accidental variations, the remnants probably of dialectic admixtures. In some dialects there are many more of them than in others. I have tried in all cases to give the reading, which is most prevalent, favoring the colloquial rather than the book reading.*

Of readings which vary the meaning with the sound, the variation, in by far the greater number of cases, is tonal; in a comparatively few cases one character is read in two syllables. No general principle characterizes these changes, though a large number of those depending on tone, consist in the change from verb to

* On an average, about one character in five has a double reading, and of these double readings, about three-fourths are attended by a change of meaning, the other fourth being accidental variations.

Digitized by Google

noun, or from noun to verb or adjective, similar to such words as con'-flict and conflict' or gal'-lant and gallant' in English. It still remains true, however, in Chinese as in English, that by far the larger number of such changes of meaning are *not* attended by any change of pronunciation. I have not noted all the double readings given in Dr. Goodrich's Pocket Dictionary, because many of them are peculiar to Peking. I have noted all which seemed to prevail in as many as two dialects. In other cases, viz.,—those in which the distinction seemed local, or was inconsistent in different dialects, I have adhered to that reading which was judged to be the primary reading of the character. For the variations made in such cases by different dialects the student will have to depend on his teacher. It is very likely also that some of the distinctions which have been made, will be found to be incorrect in some dialects. In some cases also the subsequent use of a word will be found inconsistent with the general distinction of meaning as first made. This inconsistency generally arises from the effect of composition.*

The whole subject of double readings is surrounded with difficulties. If only one dialect be considered, it is *comparatively* easy to fix the readings, though even then there is more or less both of uncertainty and inconsistency. When, however, three or four or more dialects are considered together, there is no small amount of confusion and contradiction. If each dialect of Mandarin had such a carefully prepared vocabulary as Dr. Goodrich has given to the Pekingese, then an intelligent and valuable comparison might be made. As it is at present, only a general approximation is possible.

I have made no attempt whatever to conform the spelling of double words, or of phrases, to the tonal changes introduced by composition. For these the student will have to depend on his teacher and on his ear.

WRITING.

WRITING Chinese will be found a useful exercise for every student. It will be a grateful relief from the tedium of direct memorizing, while it will serve to give a more accurate knowledge of the characters and help to fix them in the mind. The Chinese consider that a character is not *really* learned until it can be, not only recognized, but also written. The best way to learn to write, is to get a teacher to write a copy of simple characters in large hand, place this underneath the *thin* Chinese paper and trace the characters as Chinese schoolboys do. Use a Chinese pen and write in regular Chinese order and style, taking lessons from your teacher's example. You will soon see that your teacher writes the left hand side before the right, and the top before the bottom, and that he makes the horizontal strokes before the perpendicular stroke which crosses them, etc. Having acquired the art of tracing characters in a fair hand and in proper order of strokes, proceed to copy out a part or all of the lesson for the day. All the while you are copying, you will be having an exercise in recalling and fixing the characters in your mind.

The difficulty in writing is not in learning to handle the pen properly and write neatly, but in knowing what character should be used in each case, and in recalling readily and accurately its form and composition. How much time it will pay the student to spend in writing Chinese, will depend on his special gifts, together with the requirements of the work in which he expects to engage. Every student can learn to write a fair Chinese hand, and will find it quite an advantage to be able to do so, but to be a *ready writer*—recalling all needed characters readily and using them accurately, requires natural aptitude, together with constant and long-continued practice.

ADVICE TO THE STUDENT.

READ over the Introduction carefully. You will not understand it all, but it will serve to give you a useful general idea of the work you are undertaking. Reading it over once or even twice is not sufficient. It should be carefully studied and re-read from time to time until it is fully understood. Give special attention to the system of spelling and to the powers of the letters as there defined. You cannot spell words properly or consistently until you are familiar with the powers to be given to the letters.

* This is one of the perplexing things that beset the path of one who undertakes to make a vocabulary. A Chinese scholar gives a clear and evident general distinction between the two readings of a character, and all seems plain. The trouble comes when it is discovered that the distinction will not carry out consistently, but is contradicted by usage. For instance see 樂 and 惡.

Digitized by Google

I wish to emphasize this point strongly. I have known students who, after one or even two months' study of Chinese, did not know the powers of the letters they were attempting to use. A student who imagines that he can spell Chinese words without any special system, will soon find himself involved in confusion and inconsistency, and will presently be unable to tell what sound he meant to express by his own writing.

2. Learn the radicals thoroughly according to the directions given with the Table of Radicals.

3. Practice the tone exercises until you have mastered the "chime" and can distinguish readily the tone of any character your teacher pronounces. At the same time also practice the aspirate exercises until you have mastered the difference between an aspirated and an unaspirated sound.

4. Having fitted yourself thus far, begin with the lessons proper and learn them carefully until the Chinese can be given readily by looking at the English. Review frequently, and so continue until about sixty lessons have been well mastered, which will require six or eight months of steady work.

5. Having laid this foundation, strike out with more boldness. Take a new lesson each day and get it as well as you can, and so go on without halting or turning back, till you have gone over one hundred and ninety-six lessons. I give this advice for several reasons :—

(*a*). It will relieve the tedium, perhaps discouragement, of bald, hard, committing to memory, and will bring something fresh each day.

(*b*). The same characters and phrases will be turning up again and again, so that by the time you are through, you will be gratified to find that though imperfectly learned at their first appearance, many of them have nevertheless "stuck."

(*c*). This plan will give you a comprehensive view of all the important idioms in the language and avoid the danger of missing some entirely by stopping short of the end.

6. Having reached the end, return to the sixtieth lesson and review *thoroughly*, which you can now do with ease and with a fuller comprehension of the various idioms brought to view.

7. As soon as you can put two words together, begin to talk, not only with your teacher during hours of study, but at other times, with all the Chinese about you. Be sure that the more you talk, making the best use you can of the phrases you have learned, and picking up others, the faster you will learn Chinese. Talking will take the place of exercises in translating English into Chinese, and your key will be the fact of your being understood.

8. Cultivate assiduously the art of hearing how the Chinese around you speak. Have an interrogation point permanently attached to your ears. When your mind is alert to hear how the Chinese speak their language, and to compare what you hear with what you yourself say, then and then only will you have acquired the art of learning Chinese. He who unconsciously continues to say a thing *one way*, when he is constantly hearing the Chinese say it *another way* will never learn Chinese well. I would urge on every one the *extreme importance* of keeping his ears wide open so as to hear, to imitate, and to appropriate.

9. Do not assume that the English spelling really represents the true pronunciation of your dialect. *He who does this will certainly speak with a marked foreign brogue.* The true pronunciation of each syllable should be learned from your Chinese teacher. The spelling, being approximately correct, will serve to *recall* the sounds, but should never be allowed to *determine* them. He who depends on the spelling for the pronunciation of the words will certainly not pronounce accurately.

10. Speak distinctly and not too fast. Foreigners are often better understood than the Chinese themselves, chiefly because they enunciate more distinctly and speak more slowly.

11. Try to avoid long and involved sentences. Break up your thoughts into short sentences. This is the chief secret of perspicuity in Chinese.

12. Be content to turn your thoughts around and split them up, and do them over into Chinese style. They may seem to you to have lost much in the process, but they will be far more forcible to the Chinese than in the foreign form in which you would prefer to have them. He who would use the Chinese language effectively, must learn to think as well as to talk in Chinese.

13. Do not fail to learn to read, as well as to speak, Mandarin. The two things naturally go hand in hand and mutually help each other. The additional labor involved in learning to read whilst learning to speak, is not great. Even ladies whose time is limited, will not find the task nearly so great as is often imagined. It is needless to say that ability to read will be a great power in the hands of its possessor. It is worthy of remark that one who does not learn to read, scarcely ever learns to speak *well*.

Digitized by Google

14. Learn as much colloquial as you can and do not be afraid to use it. It is a mistake to suppose that colloquial is necessarily inelegant, or unacceptable to the ears of the people. There are times when a stately literary style is becoming, as in conversation with officials or with educated men, but for the varied wants of everyday life, it is far from being the most useful or effective. In preaching, a certain amount of dignity is no doubt important, but this is not in the least inconsistent with a free use of colloquial. The freshness, directness and pithiness which the colloquial adds to "general Mandarin," are almost, if not quite, essential to really effective public address. In preaching especially, an elegant classical style with its high-sounding book phraseology, is worth but little as compared with an attractive colloquial style, which will catch the ears and win the hearts of the people.

15. Unless for special reasons, always learn the dialect of the place in which you reside. You will learn it more easily, as every one you meet will be your teacher, and you will avoid the confusion and discouragement of trying to learn one dialect while you are hearing another. The very best foundation on which to build a knowledge of several dialects, or of "general Mandarin," is an accurate knowledge of some one dialect.

16. Remember that the chief thing in learning a language is memory. The Western mind is given to reasoning and philosophizing, but the exercise of this faculty is largely thrown away in learning a new language, especially such an unscientific language as the Chinese. Don't begin, therefore, by attempting to investigate the logical principles that underlie the structure of the language, but take it on faith, and make it your chief business to *cram* the words and phrases of the lessons as fast as possible. This is the shortest and surest road to success.

17. Do not stop learning Chinese at the end of one or two years. Cultivate the habit of *listening* to the language of the Chinese whom you hear speaking. Seize every *new* expression and appropriate it, investigating it with your teacher if necessary. If you allow yourself to fall into the habit of passing new words and expressions by, simply gathering the speaker's meaning in a general way from the words you already know, you will presently cease to hear any new words at all, and your knowledge of Chinese will remain practically stationary.

EXPLANATIONS.

ALL *single* characters are defined in the vocabularies, but *phrases* which first occur and are defined in the subject, are not afterwards repeated in the vocabulary.

2. As a rule all the leading Mandarin meanings of characters and phrases are given, but meanings confined to the *Wên-li*, are not generally given. The more primitive meaning is usually given first, and the others in order.

3. Many Chinese characters are used with almost equal facility as nouns and as verbs, as adjectives and as adverbs. In such cases the vocabulary has not detailed the meaning in the several parts of speech, but gives only that one which is most normal to the character, leaving the others to be inferred from the connection in each case.

4. *That meaning of a word or phrase which occurs in the given lesson, is printed in italics.* Sometimes on account of the structure of the sentence, the translation contains none of the meanings in exact form. In such cases none are italicized. When a character is used in a phrase which greatly modifies its proper meaning, so as to make it doubtful on which of its meanings the phrase is founded, then none is italicized. When two or three meanings given to a character are practical equivalents, none is italicized.

5. When a character has two readings attended by a difference of meaning, the second reading is noted at the end of the definition. The word *also* indicates that the other reading has not yet appeared, and the word *see*, that the other reading has already appeared and been defined.

6. When a character has two readings not attended by any change of meaning, they are both noted in the vocabulary when it is first defined, but when it subsequently occurs in phrases, only one reading, the most common or suitable one, is given.

7. The spellings in the vocabularies are in accordance with the Peking sounds, but a space is left after or underneath each spelling for the writing in of a second spelling to suit the student's particular dialect. The student should not write in these spellings hap-hazard, but *first master the system of spelling as applied to his own dialect* and then write them in carefully, going to a syllabary in cases of doubt (if he is so fortunate as to have a syllabary of his dialect). If he has an index for his dialect, this will afford a guide in all cases. It will be found that a large proportion of Pekingese spellings apply equally to

Digitized by Google

other dialects. The best and most labor-saving plan is to underscore the Peking spellings which prove to be correct, and erase the others, writing in the correct spelling. If this is done with the learning of each lesson, it will save much time and confusion on review.

8. In the subjects and vocabularies (N.) stands for Northern Mandarin; that is, that which is spoken in Peking and vicinity; (C.) stands for Central Mandarin which, in this case, is limited to that spoken in Eastern Shantung; (S.) stands for Southern Mandarin, which means, in this case, that spoken on the lower Yangtze, especially that of Nanking. These indications are only approximate, and being in some cases given on the authority of one teacher, are not always to be depended on. When a phrase is local, but the limits of its use are unknown to the author, it is marked (L.); that is, local. Words and phrases the use of which is confined to classical or book style, are marked (W.); that is, *Wên-li*. All words and phrases which are unmarked, are supposed to be *t'ung-hsing*, or at least approximately so. A wider examination will no doubt show that some of these are also more or less local.

9. In the duplicate readings in the Chinese text, the one on the right hand is the Northern form, and the one on the left, the Southern. In some cases three readings are given, which are arranged in order with the Northern one on the right. In some cases a duplicate reading consists of a Northern and Central, or a Central and Southern—the other section not being represented, for want of information. In all such cases the more northerly reading is to the right. In a few cases both forms are *t'ung-hsing*, but are not equally applicable in the given connection. In such cases attention is called to the matter in the notes. These parallel readings are *supposed* to be synonymous. That they differ slightly in many cases, is unavoidable. The translation conforms to the right hand reading. When the difference is considerable, a second translation, conforming to the other reading, is given in parenthesis.

11. Duplicate readings, especially in the case of common phrases, are not generally repeated in full. One reading is used alone and then the other, preference being given to that which is supposed to have the wider range of use.

GENERAL REMARKS.

GRAMMATICAL science has never been applied to the Chinese language. There are of course principles of construction embedded in it, but they have never been developed and systematized. Educated Chinese have no guide in writing or speaking their language save their own ear and the particular precedents established by usage. As a consequence *the language, as at present spoken, has in it many anomalous forms and usages which are really at variance with the underlying principles of the language.*

2. In China, literary taste and skill have thus far expended themselves almost entirely on the *Wên-li*. Elegance in speaking is neither taught nor cultivated. Teachers correct and criticize with great pains the *Wên-li* essays of their pupils, but allow them to speak any way they choose. In talking, every man is a law unto himself, and individual peculiarities abound to a phenomenal extent.

3. The introduction of Christianity and of Western thought into China is giving a marked stimulus to Mandarin literature; and mission schools cultivate care and correctness in speaking as well as in writing. These things are a beginning, and will certainly increase and develope in the future, and they will tend gradually to elevate and purify the Mandarin. The tendency of the times also is towards a lower and more diffusive style of *Wên-li*, approximating, in some measure, the model of the spoken language. There is little doubt that ultimately Mandarin, enriched, corrected and dignified, will come to be the written, as well as the spoken, language of China.

4. Chinese has generally been regarded as a very difficult language to learn. The difficulty chiefly concerns the writing. The spoken language is of course more difficult to an English speaker than a cognate European language, but not more difficult than other Asiatic languages.

5. To pick up a limited knowledge of colloquial, which will answer for household or business purposes, is quite easy; but to acquire a fluent, idiomatic and comprehensive knowledge of the language, answering to all the departments of life, requires diligent and persevering study.

6. Four things are important in order to speak good Chinese:—

(*a*). To put the words and clauses in their proper idiomatic order.

(*b*). To give to the words and phrases their proper rhythmical emphasis.

(*c*). To give to the words their correct syllabic pronunciation.

(*d*). To give the aspirates and tones correctly.

These things I regard as important in the order in which they have just been enumerated.

Digitized by Google

TABLE OF RADICALS.

IN the following table the radicals are arranged in classes according to the number of strokes in each, and in the order in which they usually stand in dictionaries. They are numbered in order from one upwards—albeit the Chinese never number them. Each radical is spelled according to the Peking sound, and space is left for writing in a second spelling. The meanings given are brief and suggestive, rather than exhaustive. A considerable number of the radicals are contracted or modified in composition. The modified form is given in each case at the side of the full form. Some forty six or seven of the radicals are obsolete as independent characters, being now only used as radicals in composition. They are indicated in the table by an asterisk (*).

The best way to learn the radicals is *first* to learn the shape and meaning, associating these things together; then proceed to learn the sound and the order. If the student uses another dialect than Pekingese, he should get a competent person to write in the spelling according to his own dialect. The radical ode which follows the table will, no doubt, furnish the easiest method of learning the order. If however any one is inclined to learn the order direct, he will find that the easiest way is to sing the radicals over and over until he is familiar with the names and order. Then have them written out on a sheet of paper and sing them over, guided by the characters alone. Finally sing them over entirely from memory. They will need frequent rehearsing in order to keep from forgetting them.

1 Stroke.

1	*I*[1]	(一 橫) 一	One, unity. [upright.
2	*Kun*[3]	(一 豎) 丨	* to pass through, an
3	*Chu*[3]	(一 點) 丶	* a point, a dot.
4	*P'ie*[3]	(一 撇) 丿	* a stroke to the left.
5	*I*[1,4]	乙	a curve, one.
6	*Chüe*[2]	亅	* a barb, a crook.

2 Strokes.

7	*Êr*[4]	(兩 橫) 二	two.
8	*T'ou*[2]	亠	* a cover, a hat.
9	*Jên*[2]	(單 立 人) 人 亻	a man. [a man.
10	*Jên*[2]	儿	* a man, the legs of
11	*Ju*[3,4]	入	to enter, into.
12	*Pa*[1,2]	八	eight.
13	*Chiung*[3]	(三 道 框) 冂	* a limit.
14	*Mi*[4]	(禿 寶 蓋) 冖	* to cover, a cover.
15	*Ping*[1]	(兩 點 水) 冫	* ice, icicle.
16	*Chi*[1,3]	几	a bench.
17	*K'an*[3]	凵	* a receptacle, a box.
18	*Tao*[1]	(立 刀) 刀 刂	a knife, a sword.
19	*Li*[4]	力	strength.
20	*Pao*[1]	勹	* to wrap.
21	*Pi*[3]	匕	a spoon, a ladle.
22	*Fang*[1]	(三 道 框) 匚	* a chest, a case.
23	*Hsi*[3]	(三 道 框) 匸	to conceal.
24	*Shi*[2]	十	ten.
25	*Pu*[3]	卜	to divine.
26	*Chie*[2]	(硬 耳 刀) 卩 *巳	a seal, a joint.
27	*Han*[4]	(禿 偏 上) 厂	* a ledge, a cliff.
28	*Si*[1]	厶	* selfish, perverse.
29	*Yiu*[4]	又	and, again.

3 Strokes.

30	*K'ou*[3]	口	a mouth.
31	*Wei*[2]	(四 道 框) 口	* an enclosure.
32	*T'u*[3]	(土 堆) 土	earth.
33	*Shi*[4]	士	a scholar, a sage.
34	*Chi*[3]	夂	* a step, to follow.
35	*Ts'wei*[1]	夂	* walking slowly.
36	*Hsi*[1,2]	夕	evening.
37	*Ta*[4]	大	great.
38	*Nü*[3]	女	woman, daughter.
39	*Tsi*[3]	子	son, child.
40	*Mien*[2]	(寶 蓋) 宀	* a roof.
41	*Ts'un*[4]	寸	an inch.
42	*Hsiao*[3]	小	small, little.
43	*Wang*[1]	尢	* 尢 兀 weak, lame.
44	*Shi*[1]	尸	a corpse.
45	*Ch'ê*[4]	(半 草) 屮	* a sprout.

Digitized by Google

46 *Shan*[1] 山 a hill, a mountain.
47 *Ch'wan*[1] (三 臥 人) 巛 川 mountain streams.
48 *Kung*[1] 工 labor, a workman.
49 *Chi*[3] 己 self.
50 *Chin*[1] (大 巾 旁) 巾 a napkin.
51 *Kan*[1] 干 to oppose, a shield.
52 *Yao*[1] 幺* small, tender.
53 *Yien*[3] (偏 上) 广* a roof, a shelter.
54 *Yin*[3] 廴* moving on.
55 *Kung*[3] 廾* joined hands.
56 *I*[4] 弋 a dart.
57 *Kung*[1] 弓 a bow, archery.
58 *Ch'i*[4] (横 山) 彐 彑 a pig's head, pointed.
59 *Shan*[1] (三 撇) 彡 hair, plumage.
60 *Ch'i*[4] (雙 立 人) 彳* a step.

4 Strokes.

61 *Hsin*[1] 心 忄 the heart.
„ (竪 心) 忄
62 *Kê*[1] 戈 a spear.
63 *Hu*[4] 戶 a door.
64 *Shou*[3] 手 the hand.
„ (提 手) 扌
65 *Chi*[1] 支 a branch, a prop.
66 *P'u*[1] (反 文) 攴 攵* to rap, to tap.
67 *Wên*[2] 文 literature, ornament.
68 *Tou*[3] 斗 a peck, a bushel.
69 *Chin*[1] 斤 an axe, a catty.
70 *Fang*[1] 方 square.
71 *Wu*[2] 无 旡 without, not.
72 *Ji*[4] 日 the sun, a day.
73 *Yüe*[1,4] 曰 to speak.
74 *Yüe*[4] 月 the moon, a month.
75 *Mu*[4] 木 wood, a tree.
76 *Ch'ien*[4] 欠 to owe, to be deficient
77 *Chi*[3] 止 to stop.
78 *Tai*[3] 歹 歺 bad, vicious.
79 *Shu*[1] 殳 a pole ; to kill.
80 *Wu*[2,4] 毋 to deny; do not!
81 *Pi*[3] 比 to compare.
82 *Mao*[2] 毛 hair, wool.
83 *Shi*[4] 氏 family name.
84 *Ch'i*[4] 气 breath, vapour.
85 *Shwei*[3] 水 氺 water.
„ (三 點 水) 氵
86 *Hwoă*[3] 火 fire.
„ (四 點 火) 灬
87 *Chao*[3] 爪 爫 claws.
88 *Fu*[4] 父 father.
89 *Yao*[2] 爻 crosswise.
90 *Ch'iang*[2] 爿* a bed, a frame.
91 *P'ien*[4] 片 a slice, a splint.
92 *Ya*[2] 牙 a tooth.
93 *Niu*[2] (提 牛 旁) 牛 a cow, an ox.
94 *Ch'üen*[3] 犬 a dog.
„ (反 犬 or 犬 猶) 犭

5 Strokes.

95 *Hsüen*[2] 玄 sombre, black.
96 *Yü*[4] 玉 a gem, a precious [stone.
„ (斜 玉) 王
97 *Kwa*[1] 瓜 a melon, a gourd.
98 *Wa*[3] 瓦 a tile.
99 *Kan*[1] 甘 sweet.
100 *Shêng*[1] 生 to live, to produce.
101 *Yung*[4] 用 to use.
102 *T'ien*[2] 田 a field.
103 *P'i*[3] 疋 a roll of cloth.
104 *Ni*[1,4] (病 字 旁) 疒* disease.
105 *Poă*[1,4] 癶* back to back.
106 *Pai*[2] 白 white.
107 *P'i*[2] 皮 skin, bark.
108 *Min*[3] (皿 堆) 皿 a dish, a platter.
109 *Mu*[4] 目 皿 an eye.
110 *Mao*[2] 矛 a halberd, a lance.
111 *Shi*[3] 矢 an arrow, a dart.
112 *Shi*[2] 石 a stone.
113 *Shi*[4] 示* 礻 a divine omen, [a revelation
114 *Jou*[3] 内* a footprint.
115 *Hê*[2] (禾 木) 禾 grain of any kind.
116 *Hsüe*[2,4] (穴 字 頭) 穴 a cave, a den.
117 *Li*[4] 立 to set up, to erect.

6 Strokes.

118 *Chu*[2] (竹 字 頭) 竹 the bamboo.
119 *Mi*[3] 米 rice.
120 *Si*[1] (絞 絲) 糸 糹 raw silk.
121 *Fou*[3] 缶 crockery.

Digitized by Google

122 *Wang*[3] 网*罒罓 a net.
123 *Yang*[2] 羊 a sheep.
124 *Yü*[3] 羽 wings, feathers.
125 *Lao*[3] 老 old.
126 *Êr*[2] 而 still, yet.
127 *Lei*[3] 耒 a plow.
128 *Êr*[3] 耳 the ear.
129 *Yü*[4] 聿 a pen, a pencil.
130 *Jou*[4] 肉月 flesh, meat.
131 *Ch'ên*[2] 臣 a statesman.
132 *Tsï*[4] 自 self.
133 *Chï*[4] 至 to, to arrive.
134 *Chiu*[4] 臼 a mortar.
135 *Shê*[2] 舌 the tongue.
136 *Ch'uan*[3] 舛 to oppose, error.
137 *Chou*[1] 舟 a boat, a ship.
138 *Kên*[4] 艮 perverse, limited.
139 *Sê*[4] 色 color.
140 *Ts'ao*[3] 艸*艹 grass, herbs.
141 *Hu*[1] 虍*a tiger.
142 *Ch'ung*[2] 虫 an insect.
143 *Hsüe*[3,4] 血 blood.
144 *Hsing*[2] 行 to go, to travel.
145 *I*[1] 衣衤 clothes.
146 *Hsi*[1] 襾西 to cover, west.

7 Strokes.

147 *Chien*[4] 見 to see, to perceive.
148 *Chüe*[3] 角 a horn, a corner.
149 *Yien*[2] 言 words, to speak.
150 *Ku*[1,3] 谷 a valley.
151 *Tou*[4] 豆 beans, pulse.
152 *Shï*[3] 豕 a pig, swine.
153 *Chai*[4] 豸 a reptile.
154 *Pei*[4] 貝 a shell, precious.
155 *Ch'ï*[3,4] 赤 flesh color, naked.
156 *Tsou*[3] 走 to go, to walk.
157 *Tsu*[2] 足 the feet, enough.
158 *Shên*[1] 身 the body.
159 *Ch'ê*[1] 車 a cart, a coach.
160 *Hsin*[1] 辛 bitter.
161 *Ch'ên*[2] 辰 time.
162 *Chou*[4] 辵*辶 to go, to run.
163 *I*[4] 邑 a region, a city.
„ (右耳刀) 阝
164 *Yiu*[3] 酉 ripe, must, wine.
165 *Pien*[4] 釆 to pluck, to sort out.
166 *Li*[3] 里 a Chinese mile.

8 Strokes.

167 *Chin*[1] 金 metal, gold.
168 *Ch'ang*[3] 長镸 long.
169 *Mên*[2] 門 a door, gate.
170 *Fou*[4] 阜 a mound, plenty.
„ (左耳刀) 阝
171 *Tai*[4] 隶* to reach to, to attain.
172 *Chwei*[1] 隹 birds.
173 *Yü*[3] 雨雩 rain.
174 *Ch'ing*[1] 青 blue sky.
175 *Fei*[1] 非 no, wrong.

9 Strokes.

176 *Mien*[4] 面 the face.
177 *Kê*[2] 革 raw-hide.
178 *Wei*[2] 韋 leather.
179 *Chiu*[3] 韭 leeks.
180 *Yin*[1] 音 sound.
181 *Yie*[4] 頁 a leaf, the head.
182 *Fêng*[1] 風 wind.
183 *Fei*[1] 飛 to fly.
184 *Shi*[2] 食 to eat.
185 *Shou*[3] 首 the head, first.
186 *Hsiang*[1] 香 incense.

10 Strokes.

187 *Ma*[3] 馬 a horse.
188 *Ku*[3] 骨 a bone.
189 *Kao*[1] 高 high.
190 *Piao*[1] 髟* hair.
191 *Tou*[4] 鬥 to quarrel, to fight.
192 *Ch'ang*[4] 鬯* herbs, essences.
193 *Li*[4] 鬲 a tripod, an urn.
194 *Kwei*[3] 鬼 a demon, a ghost.

11 Strokes.

195 *Yü*[2] 魚 a fish.
196 *Niao*[3] 鳥 a bird.
197 *Lu*[3] 鹵 crude salt.
198 *Lu*[4] 鹿 a deer.

Digitized by Google

199	*Mo⁴*	麥 wheat.		**14 Strokes.**	
200	*Ma²*	麻 hemp.	209	*Pi²*	鼻 the nose.
	12 Strokes.		210	*Ch'i²*	齊 regular, even.
201	*Hwang²*	黃 yellow.		**15 Strokes.**	
202	*Shu³*	黍 millet.	211	*Ch'i³*	齒 front teeth.
203	*Hē⁴*	黑 black.		**16 Strokes.**	
204	*Chi⁴*	黹 embroidery.	212	*Lung³*	龍 a dragon.
	13 Strokes.		213	*Kwei¹*	龜 a tortoise, a turtle.
205	*Min³*	黽 frogs.		**17 Strokes.**	
206	*Ting³*	鼎 a tripod.	214	*Yo⁴*	龠 a flute, a pipe.
207	*Ku³*	鼓 a drum.			
208	*Shu³*	鼠 a rat, a mouse.			

THE RADICAL ODE.

BY REV. J. A. SILSBY.

THE following ode will relieve the student of much labor in learning the meaning and order of the radicals. It will serve as a continuous ladder, with suggestive and ever-varying rounds, which the student can mount with vastly greater ease than he can climb the bare pole of arithmetical numbers. Not only is the first acquirement made easier, but the memory will retain the ode more firmly and recall it more readily than it will the bare numbers.

HOW TO BEGIN.

One Stroke.

Beginning with *unity*,[1] just as you ought, 一

You next make an *upright*,[2] and then make a *dot*;[3] 丨 丶

Make a *stroke to the left*,[4] then a *curve*[5] and a *crook*,[6] 丿 乙 亅

And you've summed up the use of one stroke in a book.

A RIDDLE.

Two Strokes.

Two hats[7] on one *man*![8] *!* See, that *tramp*[9] walking fast, 二 亠 人 儿

Enters[11] slyly at *eight*,[12] ere the *limit*[13] is passed. 入 八 冂

A *cov'ring*[14] of *ice*[15] hides a *bench*[16] and a *box*,[17] 冖 冫 几 凵

A *sword*[18] of great *strength*[19] is *wrapped up*[20] in old socks, 刀 力 勹

A *spoon*[21] in a *case*[22] is *concealed*[23] with *ten*[24] knives; 匕 匚 匸 十

Divine[25] what this means, and then ask the old wives,— 卜

Why that *seal* on the *cliff*,[27] made by some *selfish*[28] hoax, 卩 厂 厶

Should let a *conjunction*[29] end up the two strokes. 又

Digitized by Google

CONSOLATION FOR AN UNFORTUNATE WIDOW.

Three Strokes.

Three smacks on the *mouth!* an *enclosure* how sweet! 口 口

Which *earth's* greatest *sage follows slowly* to greet. 土 士 夂 夊

This *evening great lady*, your *son* had a fall 夕 大 女 子

From a *roof* that was forty-one *inches* too *small*. 宀 寸 小

He is *lame*, not a *corpse*, and some *sprouts* from the *hill*, 尢 尸 屮 山

Washed in *streams* by the *workmen*, will keep him quite still 巛 工

Wrap *self* in a *napkin*; make *shields* for the *tender*; 己 巾 干 幺

Give *shelter* to orphans; *move* on, their defender! 广 廴

Joined hands follow Cupid's *dart*, shot from his *bow*: 廾 弋 弓

Eat *pig's head*; don *plumage*; his *footsteps* you know. 彐 彡 彳

SUNDRY REFLECTIONS.

Four Strokes.

If your *heart* be once pierced by a *spear* as you stand, 心 戈

Then the *door* of eternity's surely at *hand*. 戶 手

When you've mastered this *branch* of the language, be sure 支

You've but *tapped* at the portal of *literature*. 攴 文

Though we measure with *bushels* and *catties* and *squares*, 斗 斤 方

Yet *without* the *sun's* light we could not sell our wares. 无 日

Why *speak* of the *moon* with such rapture my dove? 曰 月

To the shade of the *wood* do we *owe* our first love. 木 欠

Stop, *vicious* man, *kill* not! *Deny* not my prayer; 止 歹 殳 毋

Can life be *compared* with those locks of red *hair*? 比 毛

One's *family name* is as dear as his *breath*; 氏 气

Through *water* and *fire* he'll defend it till death. 水 火

The *claws* of a kitten, my *father* once said, 爪 父

Should never scratch *crosswise*, nor climb on a *bed*; 爻 爿

And a *splint* twixt the *teeth*, puts an end to all jokes, 片 牙

While an *ox* and a *dog* will end up the four strokes. 牛 犬

Digitized by Google

SAD DEATH OF TWO JEWELERS.

Five Strokes.

Two *sombre* 95 *gem* 96 merchants once ate a *cucumber*: 97 — 95 玄 96 玉 97 瓜

They slept on some *tiles*, 98 and how *sweet* 99 was their slumber! — 98 瓦 99 甘

But *to* 100 *live* was no *use*; 101 in a *field* 102 at their ease, — 100 生 101 用 102 田

In *dry goods* 103 rolled up, they were killed by *disease*. 104 — 103 疋 104 疒

Back to back 105 they were laid, dressed in *white*; 106 —'twas their wish, — 105 癶 106 白

With the *skin* 107 of the cucumber placed in a *dish*! 108 — 107 皮 108 皿

Then an *eye*, 109 *lance* 110 and *dart* 111 were engraved on a *stone*, 112 — 109 目 110 矛 111 矢 112 石

As an *emblem* 113 *divine* of the *foot-prints* 114 now flown; — 113 示 114 内

This stone, midst the *grain* 115 in a *cavernous* 116 *den*, — 115 禾 116 穴

Was *erected* 117 to finish five strokes of the pen. — 117 立

AN ECCENTRIC OLD STATESMAN.

Six Strokes.

"Our *bamboo* 118 and *rice*, 119 *silk* 120 and *crocks*, 121 I am told, — 118 竹 119 米 120 糸 121 缶

Our *nets*, 122 *sheep* 123 and *quills* 124 must be taxed as of *old*. 125 — 122 网 123 羊 124 羽 125 老

And *yet* 126 we *plow* 127 on for this fool with long *ears*!" 128 — 126 而 127 耒 128 耳

"Stick a *pen* 129 in his *flesh*," 130 cried a boatman with jeers. — 129 聿 130 肉

The *statesman* 131 *himself* 132 now *arrived* 133 with a *mortar*, 134 — 131 臣 132 自 133 至 134 臼

The *tongue* 135 that *opposed* 136 him he'd smash and make shorter! — 135 舌 136 舛

The *boat's* 137 *perverse* 138 skipper, with red *colored* 139 face, — 137 舟 138 艮 139 色

He tied up with *grass*, 140 and dismissed in disgrace. — 140 艸

But when *tigers* 141 and *insects* 142 drew *blood*, 143 he thought best — 141 虍 142 虫 143 血

To *travel* 144 for *clothing* 145 and skip to the *west*. 146 — 144 行 145 衣 146 西

BEWARE OF THE SERPENT.

Seven Strokes.

Seven strokes we now *see*, 147 and a *horn*, 148 —fateful *word*! 149 — 147 見 148 角 149 言

In the *valley* 150 *beans* 151 grow, and of *pigs* 152 a whole herd; — 150 谷 151 豆 152 豕

Great *reptiles* 153 their *precious* 154 young offspring are feeding; — 153 豸 154 貝

With legs bare and *naked* 155 a lad *walks* 156 unheeding; — 155 赤 156 走

His *foot* 157 gets a sting and his *body* 158 soon dies; — 157 足 158 身

A *coach* 159 brings his mother: how *bitter* 160 her cries! — 159 車 160 辛

'Tis high *time* 161 to *run* 162 from a *region* 163 so vile, — 161 辰 162 辵 163 邑

Digitized by Google

Where 164 *wine* 165 *plucks* its victims for many a 166 *mile*. 164 酉 165 采 166 里

FLEETING RICHES.

Eight Strokes.

Eight strokes! and now 167 *gold*, after 168 *long* labor gained, 167 金 168 長
Doth open the 169 *doorway* of 170 *plenty* 171 *attained*. 169 門 170 阜 171 隶
But riches like 172 *birds*, when the 173 *rain* hides the 174 *blue*, 172 隹 173 雨 174 青
If I am not 175 *wrong*, will fly quickly from you. 175 非

FOOLISH ANGER.

Nine Strokes.

Nine strokes on the 176 *face* with a 177 *raw-hide* or 178 *leather*, 176 面 177 革 178 韋
Or e'en with a 179 *leek*, will raise 180 *sounds* in all weather. 179 韭 180 音
For 181 *leaves* in the 182 *wind*, when they 183 *fly* far away, 181 頁 182 風 183 飛
Don't 184 *eat* off your 185 *head*, nor burn 186 *incense* all day. 184 食 185 首 186 香

GOOD ADVICE.

Ten Strokes.

Ten strokes on a 187 *horse*, with a 188 *bone* raised on 189 *high*, 187 馬 188 骨 189 高
Will wear off his 190 *hair*, and soon cause him to shy. 190 髟
Don't 191 *fight* about 192 *essences* cooked in an 193 *urn*, 191 鬥 192 鬯 193 鬲
Or you'll find yourself doomed with the 194 *demons* to burn. 194 鬼

FISHING AND HUNTING.

Eleven Strokes.

Eleven fresh 195 *fish* and a 196 *bird* caught with 197 *salt*. 195 魚 196 鳥 197 鹵
A 198 *deer* which eats 199 *wheat*, tied with 200 *hemp*, calls a halt. 198 鹿 199 麥 200 麻

GOING TO MARKET.

Twelve Strokes.

Twelve 201 *yellow* 202 *millet* stalks next you will see, 201 黃 202 黍
A 203 *black* silk 204 *emdroidery* purchased by me. 203 黑 204 黹

EXPLOIT OF SOME FROGS.

Thirteen Strokes.

Thirteen little 205 *frogs* on a 206 *tripod* once sat, 205 黽 206 鼎
But jumped on a 207 *drum*, when they saw a big 208 *rat*. 207 鼓 208 鼠

RESULT OF A FIGHT.

[*Strokes.*
Fourteen and Fifteen

Fourteen were the 209 *noses* all 210 *even* in height, 209 鼻 210 齊
Fifteen were the 211 *teeth*, which were lost in a fight. 211 齒

THE DRAGONS END IT.

[*Strokes.*
Sixteen and Seventeen

Sixteen 212 *dragons* sat on a 213 *tortoise* last June, 212 龍 213 龜
Playing seventeen 214 *flutes*; and that winds up my tune. 214 龠

Digitized by Google

TONE EXERCISES.

THE following tone exercises are not intended as a means of learning the tone of particular words, but as a means of acquiring the special *intonation* peculiar to each tone, and of learning the chime formed by these tones when given in regular order. Two tables are given, one for Northern and one for Southern Mandarin. All the syllables are not represented in the table, because in some cases it was impossible to find characters agreeing in the different dialects. Many syllables are originally deficient in one or more tones. A few of these are given, but the majority are not. The number of syllables given are abundant for the purpose for which the table is intended. Some syllables seem to be repeated, which shows that in another dialect the given syllable divides into two. The student should go over these exercises carefully with his teacher a number of times, or until he can give and distinguish each tone with certainty, and can chime them together to the satisfaction of his teacher. This will soon be accomplished if he has an average ear, and will give strict attention to the business in hand. No phrases are given in illustration of the tones of the several syllables, because this is not considered to be the most profitable method of study. The tones of particular words are best learned in connection with the characters taken separately, as they occur in the course of the lessons, and the modifications made by composition and collocation are best learned from words and phrases as they stand together in sentences. Every lesson is, in this sense, a tone exercise.

NORTHERN TABLE.

嗷	渣	乂	彰	昌	招	遮	眞	琛	征	稱	雞	唧	欺	棲	加	槍	交	蹺	嗟	尖	千	牽	知
熬	閘	茶	纏	嘗	着	哲	枕	臣	整	成	吉	卽	旗	膂	甲	墻	絞	喬	捷	箭	錢	鉗	姪
襖		諂	鞘	廠	沼	者	震	紉	政	逞	己	擠	起		價	搶	叫	巧	姐	剪	淺	遣	
傲	乍	杈	韆	丈	唱	兆	浙	趁	政	秤	記	祭	氣	砌		嗆	竅		借	箭	倩	欠	智
癡	侵	驚	輕	揪	抽	居	區	捐	圈	嚇	諸	橈	初	穿	裝	窗	忠	充			翻	方	非
持	秦		擎		綢	局	渠		拳	決		除	雛	船		牀		蟲	兒	罰	煩	房	肥
尺	寢	景	頃	久	醜	舉	曲	捲	犬	蹶	煮	杵	楚	喘	奘	闖	腫	寵	爾	法	反	紡	匪
叱	嗖	敬	慶	救	臭	句	去	脊	勸	廢	住	處	音	串	壯	創	仲	銃	二	錢	飯	放	廢
紛	夫	咳	憨	蒿	劉	齁	忽	歡	荒	灰	昏	烘	西	希	鍛	箱	香	消	楞	些	先	掀	星
墳	扶	孩	含	毫	活	喉	胡	環	皇	回	魂	紅	席	鬯	匣	詳	降	小	曉	邪	癬	弦	
粉	府	海	罕	好	火	吼	虎	緩	謊	悔	渾	哄	璽	喜	下	想	响	笑	孝	寫	線	險	撩
忿	父	亥	汗	浩	禍	後	戶	患	滉	惠	捉	橫	細	戲		象	向			瀉		限	姓
興	須	暄	醫			剛	康	高	摳	姑	枯	光	詎	規	虧	空	鍋	鑑		勞	梨	了	撩
刑	徐	懸	移	人	儒	剛	扛	稿	口	古	苦	廣	狂	說	揆	孔	國	藍	狠	老	理	料	聊
		楦	以	忍	汝	堋	炕	告	叩	固	褲	逛	框	貴	愧	控	果	懶	朗	澇	利		
幸	序		意	刃	得	杠	沆					慣					過	爛	浪				

Digitized by Google

拋袍跑磕　梳孰菽數　簪偕攢贊
包雹飽抱　書熟暑恕　猜才彩菜
潘盤盼盼　詩時使試　通同統痛
般板半板　失十式式　吞屯褪褪
疤拔把罷　升繩省賸　端短斷斷
挪諾糯糯　身神審慎　督毒賭鍍
妞牛鈕拗　賒舌捨赦　偷投透透
年撚念念　燒韶少卻　拖駝庹橐
尼你膩膩　商賞尚尚　多奪朵剎
鐃惱鬧鬧　雖隨髓碎　廳亭梃聽
囔囊攮囔　蘇俗塑塑　天田餂餂
摸魔抹默　桑嗓喪喪　擯點店店
綿免面面　三傘散散　桃條眺糶　癱容永用
眯迷米密　膜葡普舖　梯題體替　憂油有右
濛蒙猛夢　坡婆笸破　低敵底地　暈雲允運
煤美昧昧　波駁播簸　燈等鐙鐙　寬原遠願
貓毛卯貌　兵秉病病　滔逃討套　迂魚禹欲
顢瞞滿慢　拼貧品牝　湯糖躺燙　英迎影硬
埋買賈賈　偏便諞片　彎頑蜿萬　音銀引印
媽麻馬罵　邊匾遍遍　齜瓷跐次　煙顏眼硯
龍隴弄弄　飄嫖漂票　宗總粽粽　腰遙咬要
嚕爐櫓路　標表鰾鰾　忖村存寸　爺野夜夜
羅捋洛洛　批皮劈庇　諏走奏奏　威惟委位
遛留柳六　鼻筆俾俾　操槽草糙　温文穩問
零領另另　烹朋捧碰　遭早造造　汪王枉旺
　　　　　餐殘慚儳　衰摔率率　央羊養樣
　　　　　　　　　　丫牙雅軋
　　　　　　　　　　烏無武物
　　　　　　　　　　窩我臥臥

SOUTHERN TABLE.

風馮棒鳳　堪砍勘勘
紛墳粉忿　甘敢幹幹
非肥匪肺　該改蓋蓋
方房訪放　衣移倚義益
番煩反飯　喧懸檀檀
而耳二二　昏魂渾混
川椽喘串　輝回毀惠
專囀篆篆　歡環緩宦
樞除杵處黜　荒皇幌晃
諸煮住住　花划化滑
充蟲寵銃　呼湖虎戶忽
忠腫衆衆　轟洪哄閧
癡馳恥滯赤　呵河火賀盒
之旨至姪姪　典形幸幸
抽紬丑臭　掀嫌顯限
稱呈逞秤　驍爻曉孝
眞診鎮鎮　香降响向
抄潮炒炒　餓遐下瞎
昭找兆兆　希喜係隙
昌腸倡唱　亨痕很恨
章掌丈丈　駒侯吼後
父茶岔察　蒿毫好浩
盥熬襖傲　憨寒罕旱
安昂唵暗　孩海害害
哀挨矮愛　敷扶釜富福

Digitized by Google

麝揆傀愧　迷米謎蜜
規鬼貴　蒙猛孟
筐狂況　梅美昧
官管貫　棉免面
誇胯跨　毛卯貌
瓜寡卦刮　蠻滿慢
區渠去屈　埋買賣
居舉句局　嗎麻馬罵抹
枯苦庫哭　鋪菩普鋪僕
姑古故骨　驢旅慮律
雷壘類　
爐魯路祿　
龍攏弄　
留柳溜　
靈領令　
涼兩亮　
犁理吏立　
樓簍陋　
拈年碾念　
連臉煉　
鐃腦鬧　
囊攮欐　
拿那那納　
圈權犬勸　
娟捲眷　
昆綑困　

搜叟嗽　
先涎鮮線　
些邪寫謝洩　
桑嗓喪　
薩灑鞡　
仁荏認　
瓤壞讓　
波簸薄　
貧品聘　
兵丙並　
飄嫖縹票　
批皮痞屁劈　
朋棒碰　
奔本笨　
鞭扁變　
拋袍跑砲　
包保抱　
潘盤泮　
邦榜棒　
班板扮　
疤靶霸拔　
摸魔麼磨末　
明敏命　

堍斗豆　
天田舔掭　
顛典店　
滔逃討套　
湯堂躺燙　
貪檀坦炭　
鐺擋蕩　
胎臺泰　
獃歹代　
宣旋選鏇　
打大達　
雖隨髓碎　
蘇數訴俗　
松竦宋　
心醒姓　
箱想象　
西洗細席　
衰摔帥　
詩時始市拾　
身神審甚　
收手受　
賒蛇捨赦　
燒韶少紹　
傷裳賞尚　
沙傻殺　

椒酒就　
青晴請親　
晶井靜　
槍牆搶嗆　
漿槳匠　
雌詞此次　
資子字　
妻臍砌戚　
躋擠祭疾　
撐層蹭　
千前淺倩　
姐借截　
操曹草糙　
糟早躁　
餐殘慘燦　
猜才彩菜　
通同桶痛　
東董洞　
拖駝妥脫　
多朵剁奪　
廳亭挺聽　
丁頂定　
佻條挑跳　
梯題體替剔　
低底地笛　

淵元遠願　
迂魚雨寓　
雍榮甬用　
憂由有右　
英迎影映　
音銀引印　
烟言眼厭　
耶爺野夜頁　
腰搖舀耀　
央羊癢樣　
牙衙啞訝鴨　
溫紋刎問　
威惟委味　
汪亡枉旺　
彎頑晚萬　
烏無五務屋　
推頹腿退　
端短斷　
圖土兎禿　
都覩杜篤　
村存忖寸　
趨徐取趣　
粗芻楚醋族　
租阻助足　
宗總粽　

Digitized by Google

ASPIRATE EXERCISES.

IN order to facilitate the acquisition of the distinction between aspirates and non-aspirates the following tables of exercises have been arranged. It was found impossible to make one table answer for both Northern and Southern Mandarin; hence one is given for each. Each table gives all the syllables to which the distinction applies. In all dialects a few syllables capable of making the distinction are deficient either in the aspirate or the unaspirate. These of course are not given. Some syllables seem to be repeated, which is caused by the splitting of the syllable by a different dialect. In all cases, except those which are specially marked, the tone of the two characters is the same, thus eliminating this complication, whilst the distinction of aspiration is being acquired.

The student should go over this table repeatedly with his teacher, carefully imitating his pronunciation. In general the greater danger lies in not aspirating strongly enough the aspirated sound. It should be specially noted by the student, that mere stress or force of voice is not necessarily aspiration. It is the position of the tongue, not the amount of breath, that makes the difference. Let the student get a clear apprehension of what aspiration means and the whole difficulty vanishes.

NORTHERN TABLE.

2	3	1	1	1	4	1	2	1	1	1	3	2	4	2	1	1	1	1	1	
闢	展	張	招	遮	振	爭	疾	機	家	江	矯	深	見	直	金	精	京	揪	究	迴[3]
茶	諂	昌	超	車	趁	撐	齊	欺	掐	腔	巧	茄	欠	遲	欽	清	輕	秋	丘	窮[2]

1	4	4	2		4	1	1	1	3	1	1	3	1	4	4	1	3	1	3	3
州	眷	句	決	[1]君	駐	專	莊	追	準	忠	該	赶	綱	告	個	歌	誤	更	狗	古
抽	勸	去	癐	[2]羣	處	穿	窗	吹	蠢	充	開	砍	康	靠	刻	科	肯	坑	口	苦

1	4	1	1	4	3	1	4	4	4	4	4	4	4	1	4	3	3	1	1	4
瓜	怪	官	光	貫	滾	工	過	罷	敗	扮	謗	報	貝	奔	迸	筆	表	憋	編	殯
誇	快	寬	詎	愧	綑	空	闊	怕	派	判	胖	砲	配	噴	碰	擗	漂	撇	偏	聘

	1	3	3	1	4	1	3	4		3	4	1	1	1	1	4	2	3	1	1
兵[1]	波	捕	打	呆	蛋	當	島	得	登[1]	底	棹	參	顛	丁	多	豆	毒	短	堆	敦
平[2]	坡	普	塔	胎	炭	湯	討	忒	騰[2]	體	跳	帖	天	聽	拖	透	徒	橦	推	吞

1	3	3	4	1	3	4	4	4	4	1	1	4	4	1	4
東	紮	宰	讚	臧	早	仄	贈	坐	奏	租	鑽	最	尊	宗	自
通	擦	採	諺	倉	草	測	蹭	錯	湊	粗	攢	脆	村	聰	次

SOUTHERN TABLE.

1	3	1	1	1	1	4	1	1	1	1	1	3	1	1	1	3	3	4	1	4
齋	展	張	招	渣	遮	振	貞	周	知	卓	忠	主	專	庄	追	準	改	幹	剛	告
差	諂	昌	超	叉	車	趁	稱	抽	痴	綽	冲	處	穿	窗	吹	蠢	愷	看	康	靠

Digitized by Google

5	3	1	5	1	3	5	5	4	1	4	5	1	3	1	3	1	4	1	4	5
革	狗	根	及	江	狡	甲	結	見	斤	竟	脚	鳩	果	公	古	瓜	怪	官	逛	國
客	口	坑	乞	腔	巧	恰	怯	欠	欽	慶	却	邱	可	空	苦	誇	快	寬	況	闊

4	4	1	4	4	4	4	3	4	5	4	4	5	1	5	3	4		5	4	4
貫	棍	君	拜	扮	半	謗	保	罷	別	辯	倍	白	奔	必	表	殯	兵[1]	薄	布	代
愧	困	羣	派	盼	判	胖	跑	怕	撇	片	配	迫	熹	匹	漂	聘	平[2]	潑	鋪	太

1	3	3	5	5	1	4	5		5	4	1	1	1	3	1	1	3	5	1	3
丹	擋	島	答	跌	顛	豆	得	登[1]	的	吊	丁	多	冬	宰	簪	髒	早	節	尖	奏
貪	倘	討	蹋	貼	天	透	特	疼[2]	剔	跳	聽	拖	通	采	餐	倉	草	切	千	湊

5	1	5	1	1	1	3	1	3	4	5	1	1	4	1	4	1	5	3	1	1
則	爭	疾	將	焦	津	井	揪	子	坐	爵	宗	租	聚	鑽	罪	尊	毒	短	堆	敦
策	撐	七	槍	鉚	親	請	秋	此	錯	雀	聰	粗	趣	攢	脆	村	禿	疃	推	吞

PEKING SOUND TABLE.

The following List of Syllables represents the application of the new system of spelling to Peking dialect.

The points of departure from the system of Sir Thos. Wade are briefly as follows :—

1. Final *o* is changed to *oă*.
2. *U* when followed by a vowel is changed to *w*.
3. Final *ŭ* and final *ih* are both changed to *ĭ*.
4. *Ss* is changed to *s* and *tz* to *ts*, so that ssŭ becomes *sĭ* and *tzŭ* becomes *tsĭ*.
5. *Yeh* and *yen* and *yu* are changed to *yie* and *yien* and *yiu*.
6. Final *h* is discarded in all cases.
7. Üan is changed to üen.

☞ See remarks at the end of the table.

阿	A, Nga	兆	Chao	楷	Ch'iai	角	Chioŭ	除	Ch'u	君	Chün
哎	Ai, Ngai	潮	Ch'ao	江	Chiang	卻	Ch'ioŭ	追	Chwei	羣	Ch'ün
安	An, Ngan	這	Chei	搶	Ch'iang	酒	Chiu	吹	Ch'wei	窮	Chüoŭ
昂	Ang	這	Chê	交	Chiao	秋	Ch'iu	準	Chun	却	Ch'üoŭ
傲	Ao	車	Ch'ê	巧	Ch'iao	窘	Chiung	春	Ch'un	抓	Chwa
乍	Cha	眞	Chên	姐	Chie	窮	Ch'iung	中	Chung	欻	Ch'wa
茶	Ch'a	臣	Ch'ên	且	Ch'ie	知	Chī	充	Ch'ung	拽	Chwai
齋	Chai	正	Chêng	賤	Chien	池	Ch'ī	聚	Chü	揣	Ch'wai
柴	Ch'ai	成	Ch'êng	錢	Ch'ien	拙	Choŭ	取	Ch'ü	專	Chwan
占	Chan	祭	Chi	進	Chin	綽	Ch'oŭ	卷	Chüen	川	Ch'wan
詔	Ch'an	齊	Ch'i	親	Ch'in	晝	Chou	犬	Ch'üen	壯	Chwang
章	Chang	家	Chia	井	Ching	抽	Ch'ou	決	Chüe	牀	Ch'wang
昌	Ch'ang	恰	Ch'ia	清	Ch'ing	主	Chu	缺	Ch'üe	濁	Ch'woŭ

Digitized by Google

額 Ê
恩 Ên
哼 Êng
兒 Êr
法 Fa
反 Fan
方 Fang
非 Fei
分 Fên
風 Fêng
佛 Foŭ
否 Fou
夫 Fu
哈 Ha
害 Hai
寒 Han
杭 Hang
好 Hao
赫 Hê Hei
很 Hên
恆 Hêng
河 Hê
後 Hou
希 Hsi
下 Hsia
向 Hsiang
孝 Hsiao
些 Hsie
限 Hsien
欣 Hsin
形 Hsing
學 Hsioŭ
休 Hsiu
兄 Hsiung
須 Hsü
旋 Hsüen
雪 Hsüe
訓 Hsün
學 Hsüoŭ
乎 Hu
回 Hwei
混 Hun
紅 Hung
花 Hwa
懷 Hwai
換 Hwan
黃 Hwang
火 Hwoŭ
衣 I
染 Jan
嚷 Jang
繞 Jao
惹 Jê
人 Jên
扔 Jêng
日 Jï
若 Joŭ
柔 Jou
如 Ju
瑞 Jwei
潤 Jun
絨 Jung
轉 Jwan
蛤 Ka
卡 K'a
改 Kai
開 K'ai
甘 Kan
看 K'an
剛 Kang
炕 K'ang
告 Kao
考 K'ao
給 Kei
刻 K'ei
根 Kên
肯 K'ên
更 Kêng
坑 K'êng
哥 Kê
可 K'ê
狗 Kou
口 K'ou
古 Ku
苦 K'u
棍 Kun
困 K'un
工 Kung
孔 K'ung
瓜 Kwa
誇 K'wa
怪 Kwai
快 K'wai
官 Kwan
欵 K'wan
光 Kwang
況 K'wang
規 Kwei
魁 K'wei
果 Kwoŭ
闊 K'woŭ
拉 La
來 Lai
懶 Lan
浪 Lang
老 Lao
累 Lei
勒 Lê
冷 Lêng
李 Li
倆 Lia
兩 Liang
了 Liao
列 Lie
連 Lien
林 Lin
另 Ling
畧 Lioŭ
留 Liu
羅 Loŭ
陋 Lou
路 Lu
論 Lun
龍 Lung
驢 Lü
戀 Lüen
畧 Lüe
掄 Lün
畧 Lüoŭ
亂 Lwan
馬 Ma
買 Mai
慢 Man
忙 Mang
毛 Mao
美 Mei
門 Mên
夢 Mêng
米 Mi
苗 Miao
滅 Mie
面 Mien
民 Min
名 Ming
謬 Miu
摩 Moŭ
謀 Mou
墓 Mu
那 Na
奶 Nai
男 Nan
囊 Nang
鬧 Nao
內 Nei
嫩 Nên
能 Nêng
你 Ni
娘 Niang
鳥 Niao
揑 Nie
念 Nien
您 Nin
寧 Ning
虐 Nioŭ
牛 Niu
挪 Noŭ
耨 Nou
奴 Nu
嫩 Nun
濃 Nung
女 Nü
虐 Nüe
虐 Nüoŭ
煖 Nwan
訛 Oŭ
偶 Ou
巴 Pa
怕 P'a
拜 Pai
派 P'ai
板 Pan
盼 P'an
邦 Pang
旁 P'ang
包 Pao
跑 P'ao
倍 Pei
陪 P'ei
本 Pên
盆 P'ên
崩 Pêng
朋 P'êng
比 Pi
皮 P'i
表 Piao
票 P'iao
別 Pie
撇 P'ie
扁 Pien
片 P'ien
賓 Pin
貧 P'in
兵 Ping
平 P'ing
波 Poŭ
破 P'oŭ
剖 P'ou
布 Pu
普 P'u
撒 Sa
賽 Sai
散 San
桑 Sang
掃 Sao
色 Sê
森 Sên
僧 Sêng
傻 Sha
曬 Shai
山 Shan
賞 Shang
少 Shao

Digitized by Google

舍 Shê	算 Swan	爹 Tie	草 Ts'ao	宗 Tsung	翁 Wêng
身 Shên	大 Ta	貼 T'ie	賊 Tsei	從 Ts'ung	我 Woŏ
聖 Shêng	他 T'a	店 Tien	則 Tsê	鑽 Tswan	武 Wu
時 Shĭ	歹 Tai	天 T'ien	策 Ts'ê	竄 Ts'wan	牙 Ya
手 Shou	太 T'ai	定 Ting	怎 Tsên	妒 Tu	挨 Yai
書 Shu	單 Tan	聽 T'ing	參 Ts'ên	土 T'u	羊 Yang
水 Shwei	炭 T'an	丟 Tiu	增 Tsêng	對 Twei	要 Yao
順 Shun	當 Tang	多 Toŏ	層 Ts'êng	退 T'wei	言 Yien
耍 Shwa	湯 T'ang	妥 T'oŏ	子 Tsĭ	敦 Tun	夜 Yie
衰 Shwai	道 Tao	豆 Tou	次 Ts'ĭ	吞 T'un	音 Yin
拴 Shwan	逃 T'ao	頭 T'ou	坐 Tsoŏ	冬 Tung	迎 Ying
雙 Shwang	得 Tei	雜 Tsa	錯 Ts'oŏ	同 T'ung	約 Yoŏ
說 Shwoŏ	得 Tê	擦 Ts'a	走 Tsou	短 Twan	有 Yiu
絲 Sĭ	忒 T'ê	在 Tsai	湊 Ts'ou	團 T'wan	用 Yung
索 Soŏ	等 Têng	才 Ts'ai	祖 Tsu	瓦 Wa	魚 Yü
搜 Sou	疼 T'êng	贊 Tsan	粗 Ts'u	外 Wai	原 Yüen
素 Su	地 Ti	殘 Ts'an	嘴 Tswei	萬 Wan	月 Yüe
碎 Swei	替 T'i	葬 Tsang	催 Ts'wei	王 Wang	雲 Yün
孫 Sun	弔 Tiao	倉 Ts'ang	尊 Tsun	爲 Wei	
送 Sung	挑 T'iao	早 Tsao	寸 Ts'un	文 Wên	

REMARKS.

1. In the first edition in substituting *w* for *u* an exception was made in case the *u* was followed by i (that is in *ui*). In this edition the adoption of *w* for *u* is made uniform. It is conceded that neither letter is equally applicable in all cases, but in any given dialect it is better to adhere to the one or the other throughout.

2. Of the final *i* in *ui* Sir Thos. Wade says "it is ei in some tones," that is to say the difference as between *i* and *ei* is tonal. Now the fact that in other cognate dialects *ei* prevails very largely and in some entirely, points to the conclusion that *ei* is the normal sound and *i* the tonal variation. Moreover a discriminating analysis will I think show that the final sound in (hui) 灰[1] 回[2] 悔[3] 惠[4] is not really different from that in (kuei) 虧[1] 魁[2] 傀[3] 愧[4] or that in (lei) 勒[1] 雷[2] 縲[3] 類[4]. So far as any difference exists it is merely a matter of less or more tonal variation between i and ei. Chinese teachers also *when they comprehend the idea of classifying sounds* will not fail to classify these finals together. If Sir Thos. Wade had given attention to these facts he might have avoided making a distinction between Pekingese and other dialects which does not really exist.

3. The fact that final *eh* (not preceded by an intermedial vowel) occurs in only one syllable, viz., *yeh*, of itself raises the suspicion that it is misclassified. The analogy of *mieh*, *lieh*, *tieh*, etc., indicates that it should be spelled *yieh* (or, dropping the *h*, *yie*.) The *i* is indeed to a considerable extent occluded by its union with the cognate initial *y*, yet analogy indicates its presence, and in some tones it is quite discernible. In most of the dialects of central and southern Mandarin the *i* is often quite unmistakeable. The Chinese in Peking as elsewhere regard 烈, 滅, 貼, etc., as having the same final as 也.

The syllable *yen* is the only one with simple *en* as its final which likewise raises a suspicion that it also is misclassified. It belongs in fact

Digitized by Google

with lien, mien, tien, hsien, pien, etc., and should be spelled *yien*. The *i* is of course occluded by its union with *y* yet analogy shows that it is there and in some tones its presence is clearly perceived.

On the same principles *yu* should be spelled *yiu*. The general concensus of opinion in central and southern dialects has always been that this final is analogous with liu, miu, tiu, hsiu etc., not with lu, mu, tu, su, etc. In this opinion I coincide and have accordingly made the change. The *i* is of course largely occluded in practice, but should not be dropped out of the writing.

4. Of the finals in *ien* and *üan* Sir Thos. Wade says that in some tones *ien* changes to *ian* and that in some tones *üan* changes to *üen*, and further that the two have the same peculiarity with regard to the final sound. It seems very strange under these circumstances that he did not spell them both *en* or both *an*. The fact that we have a number of final *ie* and a number of final *üe* but no final *ia* or *üa*, creates a very strong presumption that *en* is the normal sound and *an* the tonal variation. The distribution of the two endings amongst the different tones varies much in different dialects and not unfrequently in the same dialect, but the fact still remains that the one is the normal and the other the variant, whilst both analogy and usage indicate that the ending which is normal in the one case is also in the other and that in both cases this is *en*. Chinese scholars when they understand the point will not admit that the two endings are different either theoretically or practically.

5. Sir Thos. Wade's final *ih* and his final *ü* have been combined in one (viz., ï) for the reason that the distinction between them is more imaginary than real, being merely the effect of differing initials. A slight distinction is perhaps made in Peking city, but certainly not such a distinction as is indicated by Sir Thos. Wade's description of the power of i in ih, viz.,—"as *i* in chin, chick, thing." Practically no distinction is heard in Chili out of Peking. The conclusion that the two finals are really the same was reached by my Peking advisers after very careful investigation and comparison. In southern Mandarin the two endings are regarded as identical.

6. In his Pocket Dictionary, Dr. Goodrich has changed Sir Thos. Wade's *ko*, *k'o* and *ho*, to *kê*, *k'ê*, and *hê*, "as more accurately representing the Peking sounds." I have in this second edition followed him in making this change, albeit I have since felt that it is probably introducing a distinction where there is no real difference. The question is whether the remaining sounds of the class, viz., 摩 波 破 and 佛 should not follow the same rule.

7. Final *ün*, represents a sound which is practically the same in Peking that it is in other Mandarin dialects. The general concensus of opinion in central and southern Mandarin is that it is better written *üin*. Sir Thos. Wade says of it: "It is inflected as if an *i*, very faint and rapidly pronounced intervened between *ü* and *n*." In some of the dialects of Central China the *i* is by no means "faint." Whether the difference between Pekingese and other dialects is in this case sufficient to justify a different spelling, I question. I have, however, allowed it to stand unchanged.

NANKING SOUND TABLE.

The following list of syllables represents the application of the new system of spelling to the Nanking Dialect. *U* is retained, because it represents the sound more accurately than *w*. Syllables containing it are pronounced so as to bring out the vowel force of *u*—often making the syllable sound like a dissyllable. The addition of—*h* to a syllable indicates the existence of a fifth tone, spelled by the addition of *h* to the regular spelling. All fifth tones which modify the spelling of the fundamental syllable, together with all whose fundamental syllable is unknown, are inserted in alphabetic order.

See remarks at the end of the table.

阿 A	安 An	傲 Ao	齋 Chai	占 Chan	章 Chang
哎 Ai	昂 Ang	阿 Au	柴 Ch'ai	諂 Ch'an	昌 Ch'ang

Digitized by Google

兆 Chao
潮 Ch'ao
乍 Chau—h
茶 Ch'au—h
這 Che—h
車 Ch'e—h
眞 Chên
臣 Ch'ên
正 Chêng
成 Ch'êng
晝 Chêo
抽 Ch'êo
知 Chī—h
池 Ch'ī—h
着 Choh
綽 Ch'oh
中 Chong
充 Ch'ong
主 Chu—h
除 Ch'u—h
揣 Ch'uai
專 Chuan
川 Ch'uan
壯 Chuang
牀 Ch'uang
抓 Chuau
追 Chuei
吹 Ch'uei
拙 Chuêh
準 Chuên
春 Ch'uên
額 Êh
恩 Ên, Êng
偶 Êo
兒 Êr
反 Fan
方 Fang
法 Fauh
非 Fêei

分 Fên
風 Fêng
否 Fêo
夫 Fu—h
害 Hai
寒 Han
杭 Hang
好 Hao
哈 Hau
赫 Hêh
很 Hên
恒 Hêng
後 Hêo
希 Hi—h
偕 Hiai
向 Hiang
孝 Hiao
下 Hiau—h
歇 Hieih
限 Hiein
欣 Hin
形 Hing
學 Hioh
兄 Hiong
休 Hiu—h
火 Ho—h
紅 Hong
乎 Hu—h
懷 Huai
換 Huan
黃 Huang
花 Huau—h
回 Huei
或 Huêh
混 Huên
許 Hü
靴 Hüei—h
喧 Hüein
訓 Hüin, Hüing

衣 I—h
改 Kai
開 K'ai
甘 Kan
看 K'an
剛 Kang
炕 K'ang
告 Kao
考 K'ao
革 Kêh
客 K'êh
根 Kên
肯 K'ên
更 Kêng
坑 K'êng
狗 Kêo
口 K'êo
記 Ki—h
奇 K'i—h
界 Kiai
楷 K'iai
江 Kiang
腔 K'iang
交 Kiao
巧 K'iao
家 Kiau—h
掐 K'iau—h
絜 Kieih
怯 K'ieih
見 Kiein, Kieing
欠 K'iein, K'ieing
金 Kin
欽 K'in
經 King
輕 K'ing
脚 Kioh
卻 K'ioh
窮 Kiong
窮 K'iong

救 Kiu
求 K'iu
哥 Ko—h
可 K'o—h
工 Kong
孔 K'ong
古 Ku—h
苦 K'u—h
怪 Kuai
快 K'uai
官 Kuan
欵 K'uan
光 Kuang
況 K'uang
瓜 Kuau—h
誇 K'uau
規 Kuei
虧 K'uei
國 Kuêh
闊 K'uêh
棍 Kuên
困 K'uên
居 Kü—h
去 K'ü—h
嘴 Küei—h
虧 K'üei—h
巷 Küein
犬 K'uein
君 Küin
羣 K'üin
來 Lai
懶 Lan
浪 Lang
老 Lao
拉 Lau—h
列 Leih
連 Lein
勒 Lêh
冷 Lêng

陋 Lêo
李 Li—h
兩 Liang
了 Liao
林 Lin
另 Ling
留 Liu
羅 Lo—h
龍 Long
路 Lu—h
亂 Luan
累 Luei
論 Luên
驢 Lü—h
買 Mai
慢 Man
忙 Mang
毛 Mao
馬 Mau—h
滅 Meih
面 Mein Meing
美 Mêei
麥 Mêh
門 Mên
夢 Mêng
謀 Mêo
米 Mi—h
苗 Miao
民 Min
名 Ming
謬 Miu
摩 Mo—h
母 Mu—h
奶 Nai
男 Nan
囊 Nang
鬧 Nao
那 Nau—h
揑 Neih

念 Nein
能 Nêng
你 Ni—h
娘 Niang
鳥 Niao
寧 Ning
牛 Niu
挪 No—h
濃 Nong
奴 Nu
煖 Nuan
女 Nü
阿 O—h
翁 Ong
拜 Pai
派 P'ai
板 Pan
盼 P'an
邦 Pang
旁 P'ang
包 Pao
跑 P'ao
巴 Pau—h
怕 P'au
別 Pei—h
撇 P'eih
扁 Pein Peing
片 P'ein P'eing
倍 Pêei
陪 P'êei
白 Pêh
迫 P'êh
本 Pên
盆 P'ên
朋 Pêng
朋 P'êng
袍 Pêo
捧 P'êo
比 Pi—h

Digitized by Google

皮 P'i—h
表 Piao
票 P'iao
賓 Pin
貧 P'in
兵 Ping
平 P'ing
波 Po—h
破 P'o—h
布 Pu—h
普 P'u—h
染 Ran
讓 Rang
繞 Rao
惹 Rêei
熱 Rêh
忍 Rên
扔 Rêng
柔 Rêo
日 Rïh
弱 Roh
絨 Rong
如 Ru—h
軟 Ruan
銳 Ruei
潤 Ruên
賽 Sai
散 San
桑 Sang
掃 Sao
撒 Sau—h

些 Sei—h
先 Sein
色 Sêh
森 Sên
僧 Sêng
嗇 Sêo
曬 Shai
山 Shan
賞 Shang
少 Shao
傻 Shau—h
舍 She—h
身 Shên
聖 Shêng
時 Shï—h
句 Shoh
書 Shu—h
衰 Shuai
拴 Shuan
雙 Shuang
水 Shuei
順 Shuên
西 Si—h
相 Siang
小 Siao
心 Sin
性 Sing
修 Siu
絲 Sï
所 So—h
送 Song

素 Su—h
算 Suan
碎 Suei
孫 Suên
須 Sü—h
雪 Süeih
旋 Süein
巡 Süin
歹 Tai
太 T'ai
單 Tan
炭 T'an
當 Tang
湯 T'ang
道 Tao
逃 T'ao
大 Tau—h
他 T'au—h
參 Tei—h
貼 T'eih
店 Tein Teing
天 T'ein T'eing
得 Têh
特 T'êh
等 Têng
疼 T'êng
豆 Têo
頭 T'êo
地 Ti—h
替 T'i—h
弔 Tiao

桃 T'iao
定 Ting
聽 T'ing
丟 Tiu
多 To—h
朵 T'o—h
冬 Tong
同 T'ong
在 Tsai
才 Ts'ai
贊 Tsan
殘 Ts'an
葬 Tsang
倉 Ts'ang
早 Tsao
草 Ts'ao
咱 Tsau—h
擦 Ts'au—h
姐 Tsei—h
且 Ts'ei—h
賤 Tsein Tseing
錢 Ts'ein Ts'eing
則 Tsêh
策 Ts'êh
怎 Tsên
增 Tsêng
層 Ts'êng
走 Tsêo
湊 Ts'êo
祭 Tsi—h
齊 Ts'i—h

將 Tsiang
槍 Ts'iang
焦 Tsiao
俏 Ts'iao
進 Tsin
親 Ts'in
井 Tsing
清 Ts'ing
酒 Tsiu
秋 Ts'iu
子 Tsï
次 Ts'ï
坐 Tso—h
錯 Ts'o—h
宗 Tsong
從 Ts'ong
祖 Tsu—h
粗 Ts'u—h
鑽 Tsuan
竄 Ts'uan
嘴 Tsuei
催 Ts'uei
尊 Tsuên
寸 Ts'uên
聚 Tsü
取 Ts'ü
嗟 Ts'üei—h
全 Ts'üein
俊 Tsüin
妒 Tu—h
土 T'u—h

短 Tuan
團 T'uan
對 Tuei
退 T'uei
敦 Tuên
吞 T'uên
武 U—h
外 Wai
萬 Wan
王 Wang
瓦 Wau—h
爲 Wêei
文 Wên
挨 Yai
羊 Yang
要 Yao
牙 Yau—h
夜 Yei—h
言 Yein Yeing
音 Yin
迎 Ying
有 Yiu
約 Yoh
用 Yong
魚 Yü
月 Yüeh
原 Yüein
雲 Yüin

REMARKS.

1. In Nanking, initial *n* and *l* are not distinguished. Some of the people say *l* and some say *n*, and all are unconscious of the difference. Both syllables are given in the table according to the usage of general Mandarin. If students of Nankingese will take pains to acquire this distinction and keep it up, it will do their Nankingese no harm, and will be a very great advantage in case of removal to another dialect, or in conversing with persons from the North or West.

2. Final *n* and *ng*, especially when following *i*, are confused in the same manner as initial *n* and *l*. Both syllables are given in the table according to the usage of general Mandarin, and

Digitized by Google

for the same reason as in the case of initial *l* and *n*.

3. There is a difference of opinion in Nanking as to whether 這, 車 and 舍 should be spelled with *e* or *é*. The older spelling is *é*, the newer, *e*. Personally I hear the sound rather *e* than *é*. All the other syllables with this final, are confined to the fifth tone and become *éh*, save 月 which inclines strongly to *eh*.

4. Final *én* is not so clearly *é* as in Pekingese, but rather a sound between *en* and *ên*. The balance of opinion is in favor of writing it *ên*.

KIUKIANG SOUND TABLE.

哎 Ai	準 Chwên	乎 Hu—h	結 Kieih	來 Lai	民 Min
阿 Au	春 Ch'wên	紅 Hung	茄 K'iei—h	懶 Lan	名 Ming
章 Chang	專 Chwoan	壞 Hwai	見 Kien	浪 Lang	摩 Mo—h
昌 Ch'ang	川 Ch'woan	黃 Hwang	欠 K'ien	老 Lao	滿 Moan
兆 Chao	耳 Êr	花 Hwau—h	金 Kin	拉 Lau—h	墓 Mu—h
潮 Ch'ao	反 Fan	或 Hwâh	欽 K'in	勒 Lâh	夢 Mung
乍 Chau—h	方 Fang	回 Hwei	經 King	累 Lei	您 N'
茶 Ch'au—h	法 Fauh	混 Hwên	輕 K'ing	論 Lên	奶 Nai
折 Châh	非 Fei	換 Hwoan	脚 Kioh	陋 Lêo—h	男 Nan
轍 Ch'âh	分 Fên	衣 I—h	卻 K'ioh	李 Li—h	囊 Nang
這 Chei	否 Fêo	改 Kai	救 Kiu—h	兩 Liang	鬧 Nao
車 Ch'ei	夫 Fu—h	開 K'ai	求 K'iu—h	了 Liao	那 Nau—h
占 Chein	風 Fung	甘 Kan	窮 K'iung	烈 Lieih	內 Nei
諂 Ch'ein	害 Hai	看 K'an	哥 Ko—h	連 Lien	嫩 Nên
眞 Chên	寒 Han	剛 Kang	可 K'o—h	林 Lin	耨 Nêo
臣 Ch'ên	杭 Hang	炕 K'ang	古 Ku—h	另 Ling	愛 Ngai
晝 Chêo—h	好 Hao	告 Kao	苦 K'u—h	掠 Lioh	安 Ngan
抽 Ch'êo—h	哈 Hau	考 K'ao	工 Kung	留 Liu	昂 Ngang
知 Chï—h	赫 Hâh	卡 K'au—h	孔 K'ung	羅 Lo—h	傲 Ngao
池 Ch'ï—h	很 Hên	革 Kâh	怪 Kwai	亂 Loan	額 Ngâh
着 Choh	後 Hêo	客 K'âh	快 K'wai	龍 Lung	恩 Ngên
綽 Ch'oh	火 Ho—h	根 Kên	欵 K'wan	買 Mai	偶 Ngêo
中 Chung	希 Hsi—h	肯 K'ên	光 Kwang	慢 Man	我 Ngo—h
充 Ch'ung	皆 Hsiai	狗 Kêo	況 K'wang	忙 Mang	你 Ni—h
主 Chü—h	向 Hsiang	口 K'êo	瓜 Kwau—h	毛 Mao	娘 Niang
除 Ch'ü—h	孝 Hsiao	記 Ki—h	誇 K'wau	馬 Mau—h	鳥 Niao
揣 Ch'wai	下 Hsiau—h	奇 K'i—h	國 Kwâh	美 Mei	揑 Nieih
壯 Chwang	血 Hsieih	界 Kiai	闊 K'wâh	蓼 Mêh	念 Nien
床 Ch'wang	限 Hsien	江 Kiang	規 Kwei	門 Mên	寧 Nin or Ning
抓 Chwau	欣 Hsin	腔 K'iang	魁 K'wei	謀 Mêo	虐 Nioh
拙 Chwâh	形 Hsing	交 Kiao	棍 Kwên	米 Mi—h	牛 Niu
缺 Ch'wâh	學 Hsioh	巧 K'iao	困 K'wên	苗 Miao	挪 No—h
追 Chwei	休 Hsiu—h	家 Kiau—h	官 Kwoan	咩 Miei—h	煖 Noan
吹 Ch'wei	兄 Hsiung	掐 K'iau—h	寬 K'woan	面 Mien	膿 Nung

Digitized by Google

女 Nü
啊 O
拜 Pai
派 P'ai
板 Pan
盼 P'an
邦 Pang
旁 P'ang
包 Pao
跑 P'ao
巴 Pau—h
怕 P'au—h
白 Pâh
迫 P'âh
倍 Pei
陪 P'ei
本 Pên
盆 P'ên
褒 Pêo
呸 P'êo
比 Pi-h
皮 P'i—h
表 Piao
票 P'iao
別 Pieih
撇 P'ieih
扁 Pien
片 P'ien
賓 Pin
貧 P'in
兵 Ping
平 P'ing

波 Po—h
破 P'o—h
半 Poan
盤 P'oan
布 Pu—h
普 P'u—h
蓬 Pung
朋 P'ung
讓 Rang
繞 Rao
熱 Râh
惹 Rei
人 Rên
柔 Rêo—h
雲 Rûn
日 Rih
弱 Roh
染 Roan
如 Rü—h
賽 Sai
散 San
桑 Sang
掃 Sao
撒 Sau—h
色 Sâh
碎 Sei
森 Sên
嗖 Sêo—h
賞 Shang
少 Shao
傻 Shau—h
舌 Shâh

舍 Shei
善 Shein
身 Shên
手 Shêo—h
時 Shi—h
嗾 Sho—h
書 Shü—h
衰 Shwai
雙 Shwang
要 Shwau—h
說 Shwâh
瑞 Shwei
順 Shwên
拴 Shwoan
西 Si—h
相 Siang
小 Siao
些 Siei—h
先 Sien
心 Sin
性 Sing
削 Sioh
修 Siu—h
綵 Sï
所 So—h
算 Soan
送 Sung
歹 Tai
太 T'ai
單 Tan
炭 T'an
當 Tang

湯 T'ang
道 Tao
逃 T'ao
大 Tau—h
他 T'au—h
得 Tâh
特 T'âh
兌 Tei
退 T'ei
敦 Tên
吞 T'ên
豆 Têo—h
頭 T'êo--h
地 Ti—h
替 T'i—h
吊 Tiao
挑 T'iao
爹 Tiei—h
鐵 T'ieih
店 Tien
天 T'ien
定 Ting
聽 T'ing
丟 Tiu
多 To—h
妥 T'o—h
短 Toan
團 T'oan
在 Tsai
才 Ts'ai
贊 Tsan
殘 Ts'an

葬 Tsang
倉 Ts'ang
早 Tsao
草 Ts'ao
咱 Tsau—h
薩 Ts'au—h
則 Tsâh
策 Ts'âh
罪 Tsei
催 Ts'ei
怎 Tsên
寸 Ts'ên
走 Tsêo—h
湊 Ts'êo—h
祭 Tsi—h
齊 Ts'i—h
將 Tsiang
槍 Ts'iang
焦 Tsiao
俏 Ts'iao
姐 Tsiei—h
且 Ts'iei—h
賤 Tsien
錢 Ts'ien
進 Tsin
親 Ts'in
井 Tsing
清 T's'ing
爵 Tsioh
雀 Ts'ioh
酒 Tsiu
秋 Ts'iu

子 Tsï
次 Ts'ï
坐 Tso—h
錯 Ts'o
鑽 Tsoan
竄 Ts'oan
宗 Tsung
從 Ts'ung
冬 Tung
同 T'ung
外 Wai
萬 Wan
王 Wang
瓦 Wau—h
爲 Wei
文 Wên
惡 Wo—h
丸 Woan
武 Wu—h
翁 Wung
挨 Yai
羊 Yang
要 Yao
牙 Yau—h
液 Yei—h
有 Yêo—h
言 Yien
音 Yin
迎 Ying
喲 Yo—h
用 Yung

REMARKS.

1. Initial *l* and *n* are occasionally confused, but for the most part they are distinguished in the same way as in general Mandarin.

2. With respect to final *n* and *ng*, syllables in *an* and *ang* are generally distinguished; final *ên* is used exclusively, final *êng* disappearing entirely; final *in* and *ing* are confused to some extent, especially in the native city, but the dialect, as a whole, makes the same distinction that is made in general Mandarin.

3. *K* before *i* approximates *ch*, especially in the aspirates, but still is decidedly not *ch* as heard in Pekingese. The syllable *k'iung*, in particular, becomes practically *ch*, and might, with propriety, be so written.

4. Final *â*, or *âh*, is confined to the 5th tone

Digitized by Google

and is peculiar to the Kinkiang dialect. Rev. J. R. Hykes, D.D., who has arranged the syllabary as here given, regards it as the 5th tone of syllables in ai. It is so regarded by native scholars in Kinkiang. Judging from analogy it looks as if it were rather the Kiukiang modification of *êh*, as heard in other Southern Mandarin dialects. It is a singular fact that nearly all 5th tones in *êh* are without a fundamental syllable.

5. In the syllables 占 and 善 the vowel is a full clear *ei*, and quite different from 見, *chien*, and others of the same class.

6. The termination *ên* is not as distinctly *ên* as in Pekingese, but tends more or less towards *en*. This is especially the case with the syllable 人, which is in fact *ren*.

In the syllable 雲 *ruên* the *u* is quite short and cannot be represented by *w*. In fact the difference between 人 and 雲 is expressed by *ren* and *rên*.

TÊNGCHOW SOUND TABLE.

阿 A	哼 Êng	休 Hiu	根 Kên	古 Ku	浪 Lang
哎 Ai	兒 Êr	兄 Hiung	肯 K'ên	苦 K'u	老 Lao
安 An	法 Fa	後 Ho	更 Kêng	工 Kung	累 Lei
昂 Ang	反 Fan	乎 Hu	坑 K'êng	孔 K'ung	勒 Lê
傲 Ao	方 Fang	紅 Hung	記 Ki	居 Kü	論 Lên
章 Chang	非 Fei	許 Hü	奇 K'i	去 K'ü	冷 Lêng
昌 Ch'ang	分 Fên	穴 Hüe	家 Kia	决 Küe	李 Li
兆 Chao	風 Fêng	喧 Hüen	恰 K'ia	癐 K'üe	倆 Lia
潮 Ch'ao	否 Fo	訓 Hüin	界 Kiai	卷 Küen	兩 Liang
祭 Chi	夫 Fu	花 Hwa	江 Kiang	犬 K'üen	了 Liao
齊 Ch'i	哈 Ha	懷 Hwai	腔 K'iang	君 Küin	列 Lie
姐 Chie	害 Hai	換 Hwan	交 Kiao	羣 K'üin	連 Lien
且 Ch'ie	寒 Han	黃 Hwang	巧 K'iao	瓜 Kwa	林 Lin
賤 Chien	杭 Hang	回 Hwei	結 Kie	誇 K'wa	另 Ling
錢 Ch'ien	好 Hao	混 Hwên	怯 K'ie	怪 Kwai	畧 Lioŏ
進 Chin	黑 Hê	火 Hwoŏ	見 Kien	快 K'wai	留 Liu
親 Ch'in	很 Hên	衣 I	欠 K'ien	官 Kwan	龍 Liung
井 Ching	恆 Hêng	蛤 Ka	金 Kin	欵 K'wan	陋 Lo
清 Ch'ing	希 Hi	磕 K'a	欽 K'in	光 Kwang	羅 Loŏ
酒 Chiu	下 Hia	改 Kai	經 King	况 K'wang	路 Lu
秋 Ch'iu	偕 Hiai	開 K'ai	輕 K'ing	規 Kwei	龍 Lung
爵 Choŏ	向 Hiang	甘 Kan	角 Kioŏ	魁 K'wei	驢 Lü
綽 Ch'oŏ	孝 Hiao	看 K'an	卻 K'ioŏ	棍 Kwên	馬 Ma
踪 Chung	歇 Hie	剛 Kang	救 Kiu	困 K'wên	買 Mai
主 Chü	鞋 Hiei	炕 K'ang	求 K'iu	果 Kwoŏ	慢 Man
除 Ch'ü	限 Hien	告 Kao	窘 Kiung	闊 K'woŏ	忙 Mang
全 Ch'üen	欣 Hin	考 K'ao	窮 K'iung	拉 La	毛 Mao
額 Ê	形 Hing	個 Kê	勾 Ko	來 Lai	美 Mei
恩 Ên	學 Hioŏ	刻 K'ê	口 K'o	懶 Lan	末 Mê

Digitized by Google

門 Mên
夢 Mêng
米 Mi
苗 Miao
滅 Mie
面 Mien
民 Min
名 Ming
謀 Mo
墓 Mu
那 Na
奶 Nai
男 Nan
囊 Nang
鬧 Nao
內 Nei
您 Nên
能 Nêng
你 Ni
娘 Niang
鳥 Niao
揑 Nie
念 Nien
寧 Ning
牛 Niu
濃 Niung
耨 No
挪 Noă
奴 Nu
膿 Nung
女 Nü
偶 O
巴 Pa
怕 P'a

拜 Pai
派 P'ai
板 Pan
盼 P'an
邦 Pang
旁 P'ang
包 Pao
跑 P'ao
倍 Pei
陪 P'ei
波 Pê
破 P'ê
本 Pên
盆 P'ên
崩 Pêng
朋 P'êng
比 Pi
皮 P'i
表 Piao
票 P'iao
別 Pie
撇 P'ie
扁 Pien
片 P'ien
賓 Pin
貧 P'in
兵 Ping
平 P'ing
剖 P'o
布 Pu
普 P'u
撒 Sa
賽 Sai
散 San

桑 Sang
桑 Sao
碎 Sei
色 Sê
森 Sên
僧 Sêng
傻 Sha
賞 Shang
少 Shao
西 Shi
舍 Shie
善 Shien
心 Shin
聖 Shing
手 Shiu
勺 Shoă
松 Shung
書 Shü
說 Shüe
尋 Shüin
絲 Sï
搜 So
索 Soă
素 Su
送 Sung
耍 Swa
衰 Swai
拴 Swan
雙 Swang
水 Swei
順 Swên
大 Ta
他 T'a
歹 Tai

太 T'ai
單 Tan
炭 T'an
當 Tang
湯 T'ang
道 Tao
逃 T'ao
兌 Tei
退 T'ei
得 Tê
忒 T'ê
敦 Tên
吞 T'ên
等 Têng
疼 T'êng
地 Ti
替 T'i
弔 Tiao
挑 T'iao
爹 Tie
貼 T'ie
店 Tien
天 T'ien
定 Ting
聽 T'ing
丟 Tiu
豆 To
頭 T'o
多 Toă
妥 T'oă
雜 Tsa
擦 Ts'a
在 Tsai
才 Ts'ai

贊 Tsan
殘 Ts'an
葬 Tsang
倉 Ts'ang
早 Tsao
草 Ts'ao
罪 Tsei
崔 Ts'ei
則 Tsê
策 Ts'ê
怎 Tsên
岑 Ts'ên
增 Tsêng
層 Ts'êng
子 Tsï
次 Ts'ï
走 Tso
湊 Ts'o
坐 Tsoă
錯 Ts'oă
祖 Tsu
粗 Ts'u
宗 Tsung
聰 Ts'ung
抓 Tswa
No character. Ts'wa
揣 Tswai
揣 Ts'wai
專 Tswan
川 Ts'wan
壯 Tswang
牀 Ts'wang
追 Tswei
吹 Ts'wei

準 Tswên
春 Ts'wên
妒 Tu
土 T'u
冬 Tung
同 T'ung
瓦 Wa
外 Wai
萬 Wan
王 Wang
爲 Wei
文 Wên
我 Woă
武 Wu
翁 Wung
牙 Ya
挨 Yai
羊 Yang
要 Yao
矮 Yei
夜 Yie
言 Yien
音 Yin
迎 Ying
有 Yiu
約 Yoă
用 Yung
魚 Yü
月 Yüe
原 Yüen
雲 Yüin

REMARKS.

1. The dialect of Têngchow is remarkable for the small number of its syllables and for the clearness with which they are distinguished. The sounds also depart less from normal English sounds than those of most Mandarin dialects—the only elementary sound in it not heard in English being ü.

2. The hard sounds are all pure hard—

Digitized by Google

showing no tendency whatever towards *ch*; nor does *h*, when followed by *i* or *ü*, show any tendency to change to *hs*. Both *ch* and *sh* are pronounced quite as they are in English.

3. It is important for the learner to take especial note of the fact that *k* and *h*, followed by *i* or *ü*, are pronounced as if a *y* intervened between the consonant and the vowel.

4. The double readings, due to accidental variation, are very few. This is, no doubt, due to the comparative isolation of the promontory, and the absence of admixture of other dialects. Pekingese has more than ten times as many such variations.

5. The termination *iu* shows a strong tendency to pass into *êo* or *io*. In some tones of certain syllables the final *o* is quite distinct. The predominant sound, however, is *iu*.

6. The termination *ien* changes in the 1st and 4th tones to *ian*, and the termination *üen* changes in the 1st and 4th tones to *üan*. It is evident, however, from analogy that *en* is the normal sound, and *an* the tonal variation.

7. In the 1st and 4th tones *ing*, after *ch* and *k*, tends to pass into *iéng*—a tonal variation which need not be recognised in a table of sounds.

8. The syllables ch'üen and shüin are stray-sounds from some outside dialect, and are confined,—the former to 全 and the latter to 巡 and one or two other characters.

WEIHIEN SOUND TABLE.

阿 A
章 Chang
昌 Ch'ang
兆 Chao
潮 Ch'ao
眞 Chen
臣 Ch'en
晝 Chêo
抽 Ch'êo
占 Chian
諂 Ch'ian
這 Chie
車 Ch'ie
正 Ching
成 Ch'ing
知 Chĭ
池 Ch'ĭ
拙 Choa
綽 Ch'oa
主 Chü
除 Ch'ü
專 Chwan
川 Ch'wan
準 Chwen
春 Ch'wen
兒 Êr
法 Fa

反 Fan
方 Fang
非 Fei
分 Fen
風 Fêng
否 Fêo
佛 Foă
夫 Fu
哈 Ha
害 Hai
寒 Han
杭 Hang
好 Hao
赫 Hei
很 Hen
恆 Hêng
侯 Hêo
希 Hi
下 Hia
偕 Hiai
限 Hian
向 Hiang
孝 Hiao
蝎 Hie
欣 Hin
形 Hing
休 Hiu

兄 Hiung
西 Hsi
斜 Hsia
先 Hsian
相 Hsiang
小 Hsiao
些 Hsie
心 Hsin
性 Hsing
修 Hsiu
誦 Hsiung
須 Hsü
旅 Hsüan
雪 Hsüe
巡 Hsüin
紅 Hung
許 Hü
喧 Hüan
穴 Hüe
訓 Hüin
花 Hwa
懷 Hwai
換 Hwan
黃 Hwang
回 Hwei
混 Hwen
火 Hwoă

乎 Hwu
衣 I
染 Jran
讓 Jrang
繞 Jrao
柔 Jrêo
惹 Jrie
人 Jrin
如 Jru
絨 Jrung
輭 Jrwan
若 Jrwoă
蛤 Ka
磕 K'a
改 Kai
開 K'ai
甘 Kan
看 K'an
剛 Kang
炕 K'ang
告 Kao
考 K'ao
格 Kei
刻 K'ei
根 Ken
肯 K'en
更 Kêng

坑 K'eng
狗 Kêo
口 K'êo
記 Ki
奇 K'i
家 Kia
恰 K'ia
界 Kiai
見 Kian
欠 K'ian
江 Kiang
腔 K'iang
交 Kiao
巧 K'iao
結 Kie
怯 K'ie
金 Kin
欽 K'in
經 King
輕 K'ing
救 Kiu
求 K'iu
窘 Kiung
窮 K'iung
工 Kung
孔 K'ung
居 Kü

去 K'ü
卷 Küan
犬 K'üan
君 Küin
羣 K'üin
腳 Küoa
却 K'üoă
瓜 Kwa
誇 K'wa
怪 Kwai
快 K'wai
官 Kwan
欵 K'wan
光 Kwang
況 K'wang
規 Kwei
魁 K'wei
棍 Kwen
困 K'wen
果 Kwoă
闊 K'woă
古 Kwu
苦 K'wu
拉 La
來 Lai
懶 Lan
浪 Lang

Digitized by Google

老 Lao
冷 Lêng
陋 Lêo
李 Li
倆 Lia
連 Lian
兩 Liang
了 Liao
列 Lie
林 Lin
另 Ling
界 Lioŏ
留 Liu
龍 Liung
羅 Loŏ
路 Lu
龍 Lung
驢 Lü
界 Lüe
亂 Lwan
累 Lwei
倫 Lwen
馬 Ma
買 Mai
慢 Man
芒 Mang
毛 Mao
美 Mei
門 Men
夢 Mêng
謀 Mêo
米 Mi
面 Mian
苗 Miao
滅 Mie
民 Min
名 Ming
摩 Moŏ
墓 Mu

那 Na
奶 Nai
男 Nan
囊 Nang
鬧 Nao
內 Nei
能 Nêng
耨 Nêo
艾 Ngai
安 Ngan
昂 Ngang
傲 Ngao
厄 Ngei
恩 Ngen
偶 Ngêo
你 Ni
念 Nian
娘 Niang
鳥 Niao
揑 Nie
甯 Ning
牛 Niu
濃 Niung
挪 Noŏ
奴 Nu
膿 Nung
女 Nü
煖 Nwan
餧 Nwei
巴 Pa
怕 P'a
拜 Pai
派 P'ai
板 Pan
盼 P'an
邦 Pang
旁 P'ang
包 Pao
跑 P'ao

倍 Pei
陪 P'ei
本 Pen
盆 P'en
崩 Pêng
朋 P'êng
剖 P'êo
比 Pi
皮 P'i
扁 Pian
斤 P'ian
表 Piao
票 P'iao
別 Pie
撇 P'ie
賓 Pin
貧 P'in
兵 Ping
平 P'ing
波 Poŏ
破 P'oŏ
布 Pu
普 P'u
撒 Sa
賽 Sai
散 San
桑 Sang
掃 Sao
塞 Sei
叟 Sêo
僧 Sêng
賞 Shang
少 Shao
身 Shen
善 Shian
舍 Shie
聖 Shing
手 Shiu
十 Shï

勺 Shoŏ
書 Shü
順 Shüin
絲 Sï
索 Soŏ
沙 Sra
晒 Srai
山 Sran
梢 Srao
色 Srei
森 Sren
生 Srêng
搜 Srêo
師 Srï
疏 Sru
耍 Srwa
率 Srwei
拴 Srwan
雙 Srwang
誰 Srwei
朔 Srwoŏ
素 Su
送 Sung
算 Swan
碎 Swei
孫 Swen
大 Ta
他 T'a
歹 Tai
太 T'ai
單 Tan
炭 T'an
當 Tang
湯 T'ang
道 Tao
逃 T'ao
得 Tei
忒 T'ei
等 Têng

疼 T'êng
豆 Têo
頭 T'êo
地 Ti
替 T'i
店 Tian
天 T'ian
弔 Tiao
桃 T'iao
爹 Tie
貼 T'ie
定 Ting
聽 T'ing
丟 Tiu
多 Toŏ
妥 T'oŏ
雜 Tsa
擦 Ts'a
在 Tsai
才 Ts'ai
贊 Tsan
殘 Ts'an
葬 Tsang
倉 Ts'ang
早 Tsao
草 Ts'ao
賊 Tsei
僭 Tsen
增 Tsêng
層 Ts'êng
走 Tsêo
湊 Ts'êo
即 Tshi
妻 Ts'hi
尖 Tshian
前 Tsh'ian
將 Tshiang
鎗 Tsh'iang
焦 Tshiao

俏 Tsh'iao
節 Tshie
切 Tsh'ie
進 Tshin
親 Tsh'in
井 Tshing
清 Tsh'ing
酒 Tshiu
秋 Tsh'iu
蹤 Tshiung
從 Tsh'iung
聚 Tshü
取 Tsh'ü
全 Tsh'üan
俊 Tshüin
爵 Tsüoŏ
雀 Ts'üoŏ
子 Tsï
次 Ts'ï
扎 Tsra
茶 Ts'ra
齋 Tsrai
柴 Ts'rai
站 Tsran
產 Ts'ran
找 Tsrao
抄 Ts'rao
窄 Tsrei
拆 Ts'rei
篆 Tsren
岑 Ts'ren
爭 Tsrêng
撐 Ts'rêng
鄒 Tsrêo
愁 Ts'rêo
之 Tsrï
匙 Ts'rï
卓 Tsroŏ
錯 Ts'roŏ

Digitized by Google

助 Tsru	追 Tsrwei	尊 Tswen	敦 Twen	武 Wu	用 Yung
楚 Ts'ru	吹 Ts'rwei	寸 Ts'wen	吞 T'wen	牙 Ya	魚 Yü
中 Tsrung	祖 Tsu	妒 Tu	凡 Wa	挨 Yai	原 Yüan
冲 Ts'rung	粗 Ts'u	土 T'u	外 Wai	羊 Yang	雲 Yün
抓 Tsrwa	宗 Tsung	冬 Tung	萬 Wan	要 Yao	約 Yüoă
No character. Ts'rwa	聰 Ts'ung	同 T'ung	王 Wang	夜 Yie	
拽 Tsrwai	鑽 Tswan	短 Twan	爲 Wei	言 Yian	
揣 Ts'rwai	竄 Ts'wan	團 T'wan	文 Wen	音 Yin	
庄 Tsrwang	罪 Tswei	對 Twei	翁 Wêng	迎 Ying	
窗 Ts'rwang	崔 Ts'wei	退 T'wei	我 Woă	有 Yiu	

REMARKS.

1. Syllables which in most other Mandarin dialects begin with initial *s* and *ts*, are in Wei-hien divided into two sets, one set having simply *s* and *ts* as in other dialects, and the other set having *s* and *ts* modified by *r*.

2. The characters under the Pekingese initial *hs* divide into two classes, one taking *hy* and the other *hs*, the former embracing characters read *hy* in Southern Mandarin, and the latter those read *si*.

3. *Tsh* represents a sound which is neither *ch* nor *ts*, but a combination of the two. It is always followed by *i* or *ü*, whilst *ts* alone is never followed by *i* or *ü*.

4. All final *n's* are nasal, so that the *n* is scarcely audible.

5. In final *en* the sound of the vowel is obscured by the strong nasal, so that it is difficult to tell whether it should be written *en* or *ėn*. There is a difference of opinion as to which is the better writing.

6. The syllables *chen*, *ch'en* and *shen* show a strong tendency towards *chin*, *ch'in* and *shin*, and the syllables *ching*, *ch'ing* and *shing* show a similar tendency towards *chêng*, *ch'êng* and *shêng*. In both cases the sounds are really admixtures of the clear *i* of the district to the east, with the *e* or *ê* of the region to the west.

7. In the syllables *chü*, *ch'ü* and *shü* the *ü* is not pure, but lies between *ü* and *u*.

CHUNGKING SOUND TABLE.

The following list of syllables represents the application of the system of spelling to the dialect of Chungking. It was prepared by a committee appointed by the missionary community in Chungking. The following remarks concerning it were also prepared by this committee:—

1. The syllables spelled *ai*, *an*, *ang*, *ao*, *ê*, *ên*, *ou (eo)* and *oă (o)* in Peking are preceded by *ng* in Chungking.

2. Where the initial *ch* is followed by the vowels *a*, *ei*, *ê*, *ou (eo)* *i*, *oă (o)* *u* (except 足 and 族), the letter *w* and the final *ung* (in Chungking), this *ch* is changed to *ts*. Both spellings are given in the table, so as to be in accord with general mandarin usage, and both are equally understood. *Ch* is sometimes heard with these syllables by men from other parts of the province.

3. The sounds 足 *choo*, 族 *ch'oo*, 贖 *shoo* and 育 *yoo* have been spelled with *oo* instead of *u* as better representing the sounds, and more readily learned by the beginner.

4. The final *g* of Pekingese is not sounded in syllables with the vowels *ê* and *i*, as 正 *Chên*, 成 *Ch'ên*, 兵 *Pin*, 平 *P'in*, etc.

5. The *j* of Pekingese is a decided *rough r* in Chungking, but is given differently by different Chinese.

6. *L* and *N* are almost always interchangeable, being sometimes used interchangeably on the same character.

7. A number of characters represented by *i* in Pekingese are *Ni* or *Li* in Chungking.

8. The sounds 盾 *Tun* and 吞 *T'un* are included under *Tên* and *T'ên* as being practically the same sounds.

9. *Hu* of Pekingese becomes *Fu* in Chungking.

10. In the talk of the people of Chungking such sounds as 惹 and 熱 would seem to be truly represented by *rei* and *rê*. This is also the case with the sounds 舍 *sei* and 舌 *sê*. The difference is largely due to the tones of the two characters, and as *ê* is regarded as the true sound these

Digitized by Google

characters have been included under *rê* and *sê* respectively.

11. With the exception of *shoo*, all syllables commencing with *sh* in Pekingese, are sounded without the *h*, though it is retained in some other districts of Sī-chuan.

12. *O* seems to fairly give the sounds of both 阿 and 窩, therefore *wo* is omitted in the table. While these two characters seem to demand something more than *o*, the *w* is not equivalent to that in 完 or 文 or 五.

阿 A or an
哎 Ai
扎 Cha, Tsa
茶 Ch'a, Ts'a
債 Chai, Tsai
柴 Ch'ai, Ts'ai
占 Chan, Tsan
諂 Ch'an, Ts'an
章 Chang, Tsang
昌 Ch'ang, Ts'ang
兆 Chao, Tsao
潮 Ch'ao, Ts'ao
者 Chei, Tsei
車 Ch'ei, Ts'ei
拆 Chê, Tsê
徹 Ch'ê, Ts'ê
眞 Chên, Tsên
臣 Ch'en, Ts'en
舟 Cheo, Tseo
仇 Ch'eo, Ts'eo
吉 Chi
七 Ch'i
甲 Chia
恰 Ch'ia
戒 Chiai
江 Chiang
强 Ch'iang
交 Chiao
巧 Ch'iao
姐 Chie
切 Ch'ie
件 Chien
千 Ch'ien

今 Chin
欽 Ch'in
覺 Chio
卻 Ch'io
九 Chiu
求 Ch'iu
襲 Chiung
窮 Ch'iung
之 Chï, Tsï
尺 Ch'ï, Ts'ï
捉 Cho, Tso
戳 Ch'o, Ts'o
足 Choo
族 Ch'oo
主 Chu, Chu
出 Ch'u, Ts'u
中 Chung, Tsung
充 Ch'ung, Ts'ung
句 Chü
去 Ch'ü
決 Chüe
瘸 Ch'üe
捐 Chüen
犬 Ch'üen
君 Chüin
羣 Ch'üin
爪 Chwa, Tswa
拽 Chwai, Tswai
揣 Ch'wai, Ts'wai
專 Chwan, Tswan
川 Ch'wan, Ts'wan
壯 Chwang, Tswang
床 Ch'wang, Ts'wang

追 Chwei, Tswei
吹 Ch'wei, Ts'wei
準 Chwun, Tswun
春 Ch'wun, Ts'wun
二 Er
乏 Fa
凡 Fan
方 Fang
非 Fei
浮 Feo
分 Fên
夫 Fu
奉 Fung
哈 Ha
孩 Hai
汗 Han
行 Hang
好 Hao
后 Heo
黑 Hê
很 Hên
合 Ho
西 Hsi
下 Hsia
懈 Hsiai
相 Hsiang
小 Hsiao
邪 Hsie
仙 Hsien
心 Hsin
學 Hsio
休 Hsiu
凶 Hsiung

序 Hsü
削 Hsüe
玄 Hsüen
巡 Hsüin
戶 Hu and Fu
宏 Hung
化 Hwa
懷 Hwai
宦 Hwan
皇 Hwang
回 Hwei
惑 Hwê
魂 Hwun
一 I
噶 Ka
卡 K'a
改 Kai
開 K'ai
干 Kan
看 K'an
岡 Kang
炕 K'ang
告 Kao
考 K'ao
勾 Keo
口 K'eo
革 Kê
克 K'ê
根 Ken
肯 K'en
哥 Ko
可 K'o
給 Ki or Kê, Chi

古 Ku
苦 K'u
工 Kung
孔 K'ung
瓜 Kwa
誇 K'wa
怪 Kwai
快 K'wai
官 Kwan
寬 Kw'an
光 Kwang
況 Kw'ang
桂 Kwei
盔 Kw'ei
國 Kwê
闊 K'wê
棍 Kwun
困 Kw'un
拉 La
來 Lai
藍 Lan
郎 Lang
老 Lao
樓 Leo
勒 Lê
冷 Lên
力 Li
倆 Liang
了 Liao
列 Lie
連 Lien
林 Lin
畧 Lia

流 Liu
落 Lo
陸 Lu
倫 Lun
弄 Lung
旅 Lü
亂 Lwan
累 Lwei
馬 Ma
買 Mai
滿 Man
忙 Mang
毛 Mao
美 Mei
貿 Meo
墨 Mê
門 Men
米 Mi
妙 Miao
滅 Mie
免 Mien
民 Min
謬 Miu
末 Mo
木 Mu
某 Mung
那 Na
乃 Nai
南 Nan
曩 Nang
腦 Nao
嫩 Nên
哀 Ngai

Digitized by Google

安 Ngan
昂 Ngang
拗 Ngao
額 Ngê
恩 Ngên
偶 Ngeo
我 Ngo
尼 Ni
娘 Niang
鳥 Niao
揑 Nie
年 Nien
虐 Nio
寧 Nin
牛 Niu
挪 No
奴 Nu
農 Nung
女 Nü
暖 Nwan
內 Nwei
阿 O
八 Pa
怕 P'a
拜 Pai
派 P'ai
半 Pan
盼 P'an
邦 Pang
胖 P'ang

包 Pao
拋 P'ao
貝 Pei
丕 P'ei
褒 Peo
北 Pê
拍 P'ê
本 Pên
盆 P'ên
比 Pi
疋 P'i
表 Piao
票 P'iao
別 Pie
撇 P'ie
便 Pien
片 P'ien
彬 Pin
品 P'in
波 Po
坡 P'o
不 Pu
鋪 P'u
蹚 Pung
朋 P'ung
然 Ran
嚷 Rang
饒 Rao
柔 Reo
熱 Rê

人 Rên
日 Rī
若 Ro
入 Ru
絨 Rung
軟 Rwan
銳 Rwei
閏 Rwan
撒 Sa
顋 Sai
三 San
桑 Sang
掃 Sao
手 Seo
舌 Sê
僧 Sên
贖 Shoo
十 Sī
勺 So
書 Su
宋 Sung
刷 Swa
衰 Swai
拴 Swan
雙 Swang
水 Swei
順 Swun
大 Ta
他 T'a
代 Tai

太 T'ai
丹 Tan
坦 T'an
當 Tang
唐 T'ang
刀 Tao
叨 T'ao
斗 Teo
偷 T'eo
得 Tê
忒 T'ê
灯 Tên
疼 T'ên
地 Ti
梯 T'i
刁 Tiao
佻 T'iao
迭 Tie
貼 T'ie
典 Tien
天 T'ien
丁 Ting
廷 T'ing
丟 Tiu
多 To
拖 T'o
咱 Tsa
擦 Ts'a
在 Tsai
才 Ts'ai

偺 Tsan
參 Ts'an
臧 Tsang
倉 Ts'ang
早 Tsao
草 Ts'ao
走 Tseo
湊 Ts'eo
賊 Tsê
册 Ts'ê
怎 Tsên
曾 Ts'ên
子 Tsï
此 Ts'ï
左 Tso
錯 Ts'o
租 Tsu
粗 Ts'u
最 Tsui
脆 Ts'ui
尊 Tsun
寸 Ts'un
宗 Tsung
從 Ts'ung
鑽 Tswan
攢 Ts'wan
掇 Tswê
杜 Tu
土 T'u
東 Tung

同 T'ung
段 Twan
團 Tw'an
兌 Twei
推 Tw'ei
翁 Ung
瓦 Wa
外 Wai
完 Wan
王 Wang
未 Wei
文 Wen
五 Wu
丫 Ya
挨 Yai
央 Yang
吆 Yao
掖 Yi
也 Yie
言 Yien
引 Yin
又 Yiu
岳 Yo
育 Yoo
用 Yung
玉 Yü
元 Yuen
月 Yüê
勻 Yün

COMPARATIVE CHART.

The foregoing five tables are combined in a comparative chart in colors and inserted as a frontispiece. This chart shows in detail the relation of the several dialects to each other. So far as possible the same key characters have been retained throughout. The preparation of the chart has entailed much labor, and its printing considerable expense.

Digitized by Google

一 書中並列之句、皆係不通行者、先生可擇其行者教之、如俱不行、而另有他話與之意同、亦可隨意示明。

一 西人學習官話、原非易事、未免常有忘記與錯亂之時、爲先生者、應當耐性、屢說覆述、教示不倦、方爲善於教導者也。

一 書中既無話不說、所用之字、未免有希見罕用者、雖覺生索、却經名士批過、大都憑衆人之識見而定、故有以爲非者、亦未可憑一人之識見而改也、其中亦有無心之錯字、書後業已指明、先生從而改之可也。

Digitized by Google

例言

夫人之教話、原非中國之常事、故所請之先生、未必盡得要訣、今余不揣鄙陋、畧舉數端、以誌於下、

一 當知此書、非爲人之學文而作、乃爲學話而作也、且所編之話語、亦非效法書中句法、特以工雅爲貴、乃摹倣口中句法、以自然爲貴也、爲先生者、宜詳辨之、

一 此書所記之四聲、非憑五方元音而定、乃憑北京之語音而定、蓋中國之四聲、處處不同、論及說話、各當以本地之聲氣爲準、不可拘於五方元音、亦不可拘於此書、祇當推敲本地之語音、憑己之耳韻、聽其爲何聲、卽言其爲何聲也、

一 中國書中、雖有五聲之說、然而北方祇有四聲、蓋入聲獨南方有之、而北方諸省、已將此聲混於餘四聲內、故在北方教話之先生、可將入聲之說置之不論、祇留心分辨四聲可也、

一 若學者請先生誦讀、自己隨而學之、則先生誦讀之時、務要出於自然、使其輕重快慢、各得其當、聲音不可太高、亦不可故作腔調、一如誦經讀文者然、

一 如學者吐字不清、未得字之眞音、先生則當立卽示明、使其說得恰對、蓋於初時學錯、以後雖欲改之、亦深難矣、卽於平素說話之間、亦當爲之留意、一有不對之處、卽當言明、不可聽其錯誤、而絕不理也、

Digitized by Google

官話類編序

此書之作、原爲西人學官話而作也、所謂官話者、非言盡爲官場中話、乃言通行之話也、狄公有志於此書、由來久矣、自二十年前、卽有所積蓄、近來五六年間、與僕專作此事、嘔心吐膽、不知凡幾、論此書之作法、係依話語之樣數、分作二百題目、每題一課、凡話語之種類式樣、以及如何變轉、如何接連、此二百題、俱已賅括、至若課中散語、非盡自編、更博覽聖諭廣訓、好逑傳、西遊記、水滸、自邇致等書、擇其言語之佳者、按題分列、且語中所論、則甚周徧、凡農工商賈、官場日用、無不俱備、總爲發明 各題之用法、而加之於諸事也、故學者如能學熟此二百課、其話語已足用矣、如能精通此二百題、而說話之妙訣、則已得矣、且此書之成、並非一人之力、曾經分發北京濟南南京九江漢口等處、批過數次、又曾親往各地、協同諸位名士、詳加批閱、終則合此諸批、一一審定、要必以通行者爲是、兼有不通行者、則並列之、其列法、北京在右、南京在左、如有三行並列、卽山東居其中也、是故用此書者、非但可得通行之益、卽不通行者、亦可確知南北終有何不同也、卽所繙之英文、以及所講所註者、亦經南北有名之西士批閱、務求與漢語適合、字義恰對、並爲南北酌定字音、使各方知其共有幾音、而各音係何聲氣、復按字音字部、將書中所用之字與話、各作一指要錄、令學者便於觀查、故此編旣成、於有志學官話者、豈特爲小補哉、時在光緒十八年、歲次壬辰、夏季中澣、

鄒立文序

Digitized by Google

A COURSE

OF

MANDARIN LESSONS.

Suggestions to the Student.

1.—Begin by reading over the introduction carefully, especially the "Explanations" and "Advice to Students." You will find there many things you ought to know when commencing the study of Chinese.

2.—Take especial pains to acquire at the very outset a good working knowledge of the system of spelling as applied to your own dialect. *Do not begin to spell at random.*

3.—Listen very carefully to your teacher, so that you may hear the sounds correctly. When you can *hear* a sound correctly you will generally be able to speak it correctly.

4.—Do not neglect the tones *at first*, but try to get them from the very start. If your teacher cannot distinguish the tones as such get some one to *teach* him. Practice on the tone table will be time profitably spent.

5.—It will pay every student of Chinese to learn the radicals, and the *best time* to learn them is at the very outset.

6.—Do not be afraid to use what you have learned. Get it off on all occasions, no matter who hears or who laughs.

Digitized by Google

第一課

一[1]個人。 四[4]個師父。 七[7]個學生。 八[8]個門。 九[9]個月。 十[10]個錢。 十[11]一個月。 十[12]二個月是一年。 房[13]子有三十間。 堂屋有三十間。

TRANSLATION.

1 One person. 2 Two men.
3 Three women. 4 Four teachers.
5 Five ladies. 6 Six pupils.
7 Seven characters. 8 Eight doors.
9 Nine months.
10 Ten school rooms (or schools).
11 Eleven cash.
12 Twelve months are one year.
13 Thirty days are a month.

LESSON I.

THE GENERAL CLASSIFIER.

There is in Chinese a large class of words joined with substantives as classifiers, there being some sort of affinity, real or imaginary, on which the classification is based. In general, each noun has a fixed classifier, though a few nouns have two or more. We have in the case of a few nouns in English a somewhat similar usage: thus we say, a flock of sheep, a pane of glass, a loaf of bread, a piece of work, two stalks of corn, etc. When these classifiers happen to correspond to similar forms in English, they may be translated; in all other cases they are untranslatable. Pidgin English has summed up the whole class in the one word "piece." Thus, "one piece man," is the English equivalent of 一個人, *i*[1] *kê*[4] *jên*[2].

Classifiers are only used when a definite number is spoken of, and hence have been by some called *numeratives*.* Beyond this merely negative rule, no definite directions can be given for the use of these classifiers. The only adequate rule is usage.

Most concrete nouns take a classifier; but some do not, especially such as express time, space, or quantity; such as, day, year, inch, mile, ounce, catty, etc. These classifiers will be illustrated at length in a number of future lessons.

The present lesson is limited to 個, which may be called the general classifier. It is applied to such nouns as have no special classifier, and *may*, upon occasion, be applied to almost any noun, as a substitute for the special classifier. The idea of 個 is that of mere individuality, and hence it is by far the most extensively used of its class. It is the only classifier that can be applied to an abstract noun. It is often written 箇, and its abbreviated form is 个.

些 may be regarded as the plural of 個. As such it is joined with 這 *chê*[4] and 那 *na*[4], as in the next lesson. When used alone it is always used indefinitely, as in (22), (23) and (24). It is often preceded by *one*, the two words together meaning *some*.

* I prefer the term *classifier*, because these words are only adjunct to the matter of enumeration, which in still effected by the proper numerals. Their primary office is to classify.

VOCABULARY.

個 *Kê*[4]. One, a single one; a unit; the general ..... classifier:—See Sub.

些 *Hsie*[1]. A little, a few; somewhat; an adjec- ..... tive of comparison often answering to the English termination *er*. Forms the plural of 個:—See Sub.

一 *I*[1]. *One;* the first; the same; at once; a, an; ..... a few; the whole. [two.

二 *Êr*[4]. ... *Two;* the second; the cardinal number

兩 *Liang*[3]. *Two;* a couple, a few; a pair, double; ..... an ounce, a tael of silver.

三 *San*[1]. ..... *Three;* thrice. Also read *sa*[1].

四 *Sï*[4]. ..... *Four;* all around.

五 *Wu*[3]. ..... *Five;* a perfect number.

六 *Liu*[4]. ... *Six.* Often read *lu*[4] by literary men.

七 *Ch'i*[1]. ..... *Seven.*

八 *Pa*[1]. ..... *Eight.*

九 *Chiu*[3]. ..... *Nine.*

十 *Shï*[2]. ..... *Ten;* complete.

人 *Jên*[2]. *A man;* mankind; human; a person: ..... —Les. 52.

Digitized by Google

些個一些生 ○ 六百個個七[14]
學些個有十[21]個四十個人。錢是一天是
生。女好好一錢。○是一錢。個禮
○人。些些個月、十[17]九吊。○拜。
門[25]○個零七[20]年零八[16]百五十[15]千
口學[24]錢。天。○一百○二[18]十
有房堂○門[23]○個零○一[19]百
五有有一好口有先[22]月。零
六個大些

14 Seven days are a week.
15 One thousand cash are a string.
16 One hundred and fifty men.
17 Nineteen small cash.
18 Two hundred and forty women.
19 One hundred and six cash.
20 A year and eight months.
21 Eleven months and seven days.
22 The teacher has a good many cash (or, much money).
23 There are some women at the door.
24 There are good many scholars in the school room.
25 There are five or six persons at the door.

男 *Nan*[2]. A male (of the human species); *masculine;* a son.

男人. *A man;* a husband.

女 *Nü*[3]. *A woman;* a girl; a wife; a lady; female (of the human species).

女人. *Nü*[3] *jên*[2]..... *A woman;* a wife.

先 *Hsien*[1]. *Before;* former; previous; early; in front.

生 *Shêng*[1]. To bear, to produce; to beget; *to be born;* to excite; to live, to exist; unripe, raw; unacquainted.

先生 *A teacher.* A style of address applicable to all educated men, and generally applied to any genteel stranger. It is the nearest equivalent of Mr. that the Chinese language affords.

師 *Shï.* A leader; a model; *a teacher,* a master; a metropolis.

娘 *Niang*[2]. A girl, a young lady; *a mother;* a wife.

師娘 Wife of an educated man; *Mrs.*

母 *Mu*[3].....*A mother;* female.

師母 Wife of an educated man :—Note 5.

學 *Hsüe*[2] or *hsiao*[2]. *To learn;* to imitate; learning, science, doctrines; a school or place of learning.

學生 *Hsüe*[2] *shêng*[1]. *A pupil, a scholar;* a disciple, a follower.

字 *Tsï*[4]. *A written character;* a word; a writing; a name; a title.

門 *Mên*[2]. *A gate, a door;* an opening; a profession; an occupation; a class.

月 *Yüe*[4].....The moon; *a month.*

房 *Fang*[2]. *A room;* a house: an office or bureau; .....a wife.

堂 *T'ang*[2]. *A mansion, a hall;* an official room; a court; a church, hospital or large shop; the persons assembled in a hall.

學堂 *Hsüe*[2] *t'ang*[2]. A school room, a school.

學房 *Hsüe*[2] *fang*[2]. Same as last :—Note 10.

錢 *Ch'ien*[2]. *Copper cash;* money; wealth; the tenth part of a tael, a mace.

是 *Shï*[4]. *The verb to be;* is, am, are; it is so, yes; absolute right; this.

年 *Nien*[2]..... A year, annual.

天 *T'ien*[1]. Heaven; the sky, the air; *a day;* a season; Providence; God.

禮 *Li*[3]. *Worship;* a ceremony, a rite; propriety; offerings; ceremonial gifts.

拜 *Pai*[4]. To reverence, to kneel to; *to worship;* to visit, to pay one's respects to.

禮拜 Worship; *a week;* the Sabbath day.

千 *Ch'ien*[1]. *A thousand;* an indefinite number; many.

吊 *Tiao*[4]. To hang; to suspend or lift,—as by a cord; *a string of cash,* equal in most places to a thousand, but in some places to five hundred, or even less,—as in Manchuria.

百 *Pai*[3]. *A hundred;* the whole of a class; numerous; all.

小 *Hsiao*[3]. *Small;* petty, mean; junior, inferior; a concubine.

零 *Ling*[3]. *A fraction;* a remainder; a cipher showing that one place is vacant.

Digitized by Google

八人。○一[26]千六百零
八個男人。○一[27]年
有三百六十五天。○三[28]千零零五個
錢。○李[29]太太、有十
八九個學生。○李[30]
老爺、是個好人。○
房[31]老爺、有三吊五
百錢。

26 One thousand six hundred and eight men.
27 There are three hundred and sixty-five days in a year.
28 Three thousand and five cash.
29 Madam Li has eighteen or nineteen pupils.
30 Li Lao Yie is a good man.
31 Fang Lao Yie has three thousand five hundred cash.

有 *Yiu*³. *To have, to possess;* to be, to exist; ..... in replies,—yes.

好 *Hao*³. *Good;* right, proper; fit; fine, grace- .....ful; very. Also read *hao*⁴.

好些 *Hao*³ *hsie*¹. A good many, a considerable .....number:—Note 22.

口 *K'ou*³. The mouth; *an entrance or opening;* .....a hole; a port for trade; speech; pronunciation. A classifier:—Les. 68.

門口 *Mén*² *k'ou*³. A gateway; the recess outside ..... of a gate.

些個 *Hsie*¹ *kê*¹. ..... } Some; a few:—
一些 *I*¹ *hsie*¹. ..... } Note 22–3.

大 *Ta*⁴. *Great, big;* noble; chief, elder; very; ..... entirely. Also read *tai*⁴.

一大些 *I*¹ *ta*⁴ *hsie*¹. A great many, a large ....number.

李 *Li*³. ..... A plum; *a common surname.*

太 *T'ai*⁴. Too; very, extreme:—Les. 24. *A .....term of respect,* mostly applied to women.

太太 Wife of an officer or of a titled gentleman, Madam. Applied by way of compliment to very old women of any rank.

老 *Lao*³. Old, aged, venerable; *a term of re- ..... spect, Sire;* out of date; stale; in Pekingese, a long or protracted time. An intensive:—Les. 142.

爺 *Yie*². A father; *a grandfather.* A title used ..... in addressing divinities, officers and titled gentlemen.

老爺 Sir, Your Honor,—applied to all inferior officers, and to men of wealth who have honorary degrees; a maternal grandfather.

Notes.

2 Chinese has two words for *two;* viz, 二 and 兩. The former is the regular cardinal number, is generally used when speaking of abstract numbers and takes no classifier; while the latter is used of persons and things. The appropriate place of each can only be learned from usage.

3 女人. *A female man,* as 男人 is *a masculine man.* 人 is generic for the race, though commonly used as masculine.

5 The wife of an educated man is called 師娘 in the North, and in the South 師母. In Nanking 師娘 is also used, but is considered a little less respectful than 師母, being applied to the wives of tradesmen and shop-keepers.

10 Both 學房 and 學堂 are intelligible anywhere, but the former prevails in the North and the latter in the South.

11 The Chinese has no such contracted forms as eleven, twelve, twenty, thirty, etc., but the numbers are given in full.

12 Verbs in Chinese have no modification for number; hence 是 is used alike for singular and plural.

13 The student will notice that the classifier is used with 月, but not with 年 or 天. There is no accounting for such freaks of usage.

16 The "and" is supplied. In Chinese, numerals are strung together without any connecting word.

17 "Small cash" are counterfeit cash made smaller or thinner than the legal coin, and are slipped in between the others and counted as good cash. When receiving money in small sums the receiver throws out these small cash, and demands that they be replaced with good ones. Brokers make a business of buying these small cash at a discount and paying them out a few in each hundred for good ones. These 小錢 are also called 私錢 *Sï*¹ *chien*², *illicit cash.*

19 The omission of a digit in the midst of a number is indicated in Chinese by the word 零. When two or more places are omitted, two *ling's* are generally used (always in mathematical language):—(28). *Ling* is also used when a lower denomination follows a higher,—as (21).

22 The use of 個 after 些 is an anomalous form current in Peking, but largely confined to Peking and its vicinity.

23 Lit.—*The door mouth has some women;* i.e., *there are some (or several) women at the door.* The verb 有, *to have,* is frequently used in this way for the verb *to be.* 一些 is rarely heard in Peking, being replaced by 些個. In Southern Mandarin the 一 is often omitted and 些 used alone.

25 The "or" is understood. Whenever two digits follow each other in this way, "or" is understood between them.

29 The 十 here belongs to both 八 and 九; or in literal English *ten, and eight or nine.*

Digitized by Google

第二課

這[1]沒有個人、沒有學問。
那[2]個人、用使吃飯。○
這[3]個人有飯要開東西、
這[4]些小錢、不好用、
不[5]好。○
這[6]些字難學。
這[7]個筆、不好。
那[8]個字用使音、不
好。○
這[9]些東西、實在不
能吃。
這[10]些好好的飯、
不[11]要用、
那[12]些好好的飯、
會生病、
那[13]個門。○

TRANSLATION.

1 This man has no learning.
2 That man has no money.
3 This syllable is not pleasant to hear.
4 These small cash are not good to use (will not pass).
5 This pen is not very good.
6 These characters are hard to learn.
7 That place is not good.
8 This man cannot speak Mandarin.
9 That man is ill, and unable to eat.
10 These things are really not usable.
11 Do not open that door.
12 Those men have nothing to eat.

LESSON II.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

這 This / That 那 { These words, when not followed by a special classifier, are generally followed by 個 or 些. Sometimes the 個 and 些 are omitted, the sense remaining approximately the same. When followed by 些 the meaning is plural; viz, *these* and *those*. The 些 sometimes takes an 一 before it, which modifies the sense á little, making it equivalent to *this or that lot of*, etc. Thus, 這些東西 means *these things*, but 這一些東西 means rather, *this lot of things*.

VOCABULARY.

這 *Chê*[4], *chei*[4]. This; here; now; this place or thing. The second pronunciation is colloquial, and probably a contraction of 這一.

那 *Na*[4], *nei*[4]. That; there; that place, or thing, or time. The second pronunciation is colloquial, and probably a contraction of 那一. Also *na*[3].

沒 *Moŏ*[4], *mei*[2]. To die; to disappear; not yet; *no, not.* In Mandarin 沒 is always followed by 有, expressed or understood, and, except when 有 is used as a principal verb, always puts the idea in the perfect tense.

問 *Wên*[4]. *To ask;* to hold responsible; to examine a case; to convict.

學問 *Hsüe*[2] *wên*[4]. *Learning;* scholarship; knowledge; information.

音 *Yin*[1]. A sound of any kind; a musical note, a tone; *the sound of a word.*

不 *Pu*[4]. *Not, no;* with adjectives it answers to the prefixes, *un, dis,* etc. The tone varies with the collocation.

聽 *T'ing*[1]. *To hear;* to listen, to understand. Also *t'ing*[4].

使 *Shï*[3]. To order; to send; *to use;* to cause, to effect; if; supposing that:—Les. 132. An instrumental verb:—Les. 54.

用 *Yung*[4]. *To use,* to employ; to cause; to need; useful; so as to. An instrumental verb:—Les. 54.

筆 *Pi*[3]. *A pen,* a pencil, a style; a stroke in a character; an item in an account.

難 *Nan*[2]. *Hard, difficult;* irksome; to be hard on, to harrass, to persecute. Also *nan*[4].

地 *Ti*[4]. The earth; a place, a spot; the ground, the floor.

方 *Fang*[1]. A square; a place; a rule; a prescription; to compare; then, thereupon; a classifier:—Les. 147.

Digitized by Google

寫好些字。○這[14]個人、不說實話。○那[15]個人、不會寫字。○這[16]個字、實在不好寫。○那[17]個人、不要這些小錢。○這[18]些話、實在難學。○那[20]個學生、請[19]先生寫這個字。○那[21]個小學生、不聽說。○太太不能吃這個飯。○這[22]個地方、有一好些個人。○那[23]個地方、沒有好人。○大老實。○那[24]個地方、沒有好人。○那[25]個地方、沒有好人。

13 That scholar can write a good many characters.
14 This man does not speak the truth.
15 That man cannot write.
16 Truly this character is not easy to write.
17 That man will not take these small cash.
18 These words are truly hard to learn.
19 Will you (teacher) please write this character?
20 That scholar does not mind what he is told.
21 The lady cannot eat this food.
22 There are a good many people in this place.
23 That small pupil is not very steady.
24 There are no good men in that place.
25 There is not a good man in that place.

地方 *A place;* an occasion; a situation to work or to live; a tax collector.

落 *Loŏ*[4]. *To descend, to fall;* to let down; to enter on an account; to begin,—to write. Also *lao*[4] and *la*[4].

落地 Same as 地方, but used only in the South.

會 *Hwei*[4]. To collect; to know how; *can,*—used of acquired ability; a fraternity; a joint-stock company; a church; a short time.

能 *Nêng*[2]. Power; ability; to be able; *can,*—used of natural ability; competent; talented.

說 *Shwoŏ*[1]. *To speak, to say;* to narrate; to reprove; words, sayings. Also *shwei*[4].

官 *Kwan*[1]. An officer of any class; official; the government.

話 *Hwa*[4]. Words, talk; *spoken* as opposed to *written* language; to speak.

官話 Official language; the court dialect, Mandarin.

病 *Ping*[4]. *Illness, disease;* a defect; a fault; a vice.

喫 } *Ch'i*[1]. *To eat;* to drink; to suffer, to bear.
吃 } The second is a short form of writing in common use.

飯 *Fan*[4]. A meal; *food;* rice or millet (cooked).

東 *Tung*[1]. *East;* sunrise; the place of honor; master or owner.

西 *Hsi*[1]. *West;* western; foreign.

東西 *A thing;* a worthless fellow.

實 *Shi*[2]. *Real, solid;* true, honest; the results; the kernel; the multiplicand or dividend.

在 *Tsai*[4]. *To be in or at;* at, in, within; present; depending upon; to be alive.

實在 Really; truly; verily; in fact; well!

要 *Yao*[4]. *To want;* to need; to require from; to dun; necessary, important; to intend; to be about to; sign of future:—Les. 13.

開 *K'ai*[1]. *To open;* to explain; to begin; to start; to write out; boiling hot. An auxiliary verb:—Les. 74.

寫 *Hsie*[3]. *To write;* to compose; to disburden; to dissipate.

實話 *Shi*[2] *hwa*[4]. The truth; the facts.

聽 *T'ing*[4]. To hearken to; *to obey;* to let; to follow; to hear a cause, to await; according to, as. See *t'ing*[1].

聽說 *T'ing*[4] *shwoŏ*[1]. To obey; to be obedient.

請 *Ch'ing*[3]. To request; to invite; *please;* to engage or hire,—as a teacher, etc.

老實 *Lao*[3] *shi*[2]. Honest; trustworthy; steady; gentle (of an animal).

窮 *Ch'iung*[2]. Exhausted; *poor;* to exhaust, to search out; the end.

Digitized by Google

那[26] 有 沒 ○ 人。 地 方、 個 個
老 有[28] 沒 ○ 人。 地 好 個 好
先 這 方、 ○ 人。 個 個 地 人。
生 個 人。 ○ 學 窮 一[27] 這 ○
實 六 ○ 生 錢。 ○ 個 有 窮。
在 個 要[29] ○ 生 ○ 這 個

26 There is not a single good man in that place.
27 There are no poor people in this place.
28 This pupil wants six cash.
29 This old teacher is exceedingly poor.

NOTES.

3 The verb *to be* is here understood. Its omission is very common.

4 使 is very common in Northern Mandarin, but not in the South, where 用 is always used.

5 不大好. *Not great good*; i.e., *not very good.*

7 地方 is everywhere current, 落地 is only used in the South.

9 飯 is added to 吃 in order to specialize the syllable *ch'i*, as that *ch'i* which has 飯 for its object, thus distinguishing it from other words of the same sound. The object combines with the verb and need not appear in the translation. This is a very common idiom. In the fifteenth sentence we have another example in 窩 字. See Lesson 51.

12 沒有吃飯. Lit., *No have rice to eat*; i.e., have nothing to eat.

19 Lit., *I invite the teacher to write this character.* "Teacher" is here used instead of "you," for the sake of politeness.

20 聽說. Lit., *hear saying*; i.e., *obey orders.* Both words are here used out of their primary senses. 聽, *to hear*, is used in the sense of *listen to, to obey*; and 說, *to speak*, is used in the sense of commands or instructions. The former changes its tone, but the latter does not.

24 The plural is here implied, as it often is. The 25th sentence shows how the singular is expressed, and the 26th shows how the addition of an 一 emphasizes the singular.

LESSON III.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

我 I, or me.

你 You, or thou, or thee.

他 He, she, him, her, it;—used freely of men and beasts, but sparingly of things. As in Chinese nouns have no distinction of gender or case, one pronoun answers for all.

們 The sign of the plural; usually added only to the personal pronouns, but sometimes to other words denoting persons. It is never added to words, denoting things. The second and third personal pronouns are often used in the plural without 們. In polite language 們 is often added to 我 and 你 when only one is meant. This is especially the case in Pekingese.

The above are the regular personal pronouns. There are besides these a number of colloquial pronouns which will be introduced by and by:—Les. 84.

VOCABULARY.

我 *Wo*[3]..... I, me, mine, we, us; the *ego.*

你 *Ni*[3]. You, thou, your. When formally ad- ..... dressing superiors 你 is generally replaced by the title of the person addressed.

他 *T'a*[1]. He, she, him, her, it; that one; the ..... other.

們 *Mên*[1]..... Sign of the plural:—See Sub.

早 *Tsao*[3]..... *Early*; soon; beforehand.

朝 *Chao*[1]. The dawn, the morning, early. Also .....*ch'ao*[2].

早飯 *Tsao*[3] *fan*[4]..... Breakfast:—Note 2.

朝飯 *Chao*[1] *fan*[4]..... Breakfast.

來 *Lai*[2]. *To come*; to effect; the future. An ..... auxiliary verb:—Les. 10 and 113.

明 *Ming*[2]. Bright; evident; brilliant; *intelli-* .....*gent*; to make plain; the dawn.

白 *Pai*[2], *pai*[2]. White; *plain*, easy to compre- ..... hend; obvious; without rank; without price, freely; in vain. The second reading is confined to Pekingese.

明白 Evident; plain; *to understand*; satisfactory,—as a bargain; intelligent, shrewd.

Digitized by Google

第三課

他[1]沒沒有吃朝早飯。○我[2]有三百錢。○他[3]們不能來。○我[4]沒有錢。○他[5]不會寫這個字。○先[7]生要你說這個字。不能不管。○我[6]不明白這個字。○他[8]不能不告訴你。○你[9]們可以不告訴他。○他[11]不等我[10]們那[12]時候、我不能去。○這[13]個禮拜、我們還不能吃飯。○你[14]去告訴他、你等一等。這[16]個事情你不可好好的告訴他。○這[17]個開會、等一等。○這個門。○那個地方寫字。○中晌午飯。○

TRANSLATION.

1 He has not eaten breakfast.
2 I have three hundred cash.
3 They can not come.
4 I have no money.
5 He can not write this character.
6 I do not understand this character.
7 The teacher wants you to speak the truth.
8 He can not but tell you.
9 You may wait a little.
10 We have no place to write.
11 He can not open this door.
12 At that time I can not go.
13 This week I can not come.
14 You go and tell him to wait a little.
15 We have not yet eaten dinner.
16 You can not but attend to this affair.
17 You must not tell him of this business.

告 *Kao*[4]. To announce to a superior; *to tell of;* ..... to accuse or impeach; to proclaim.

訴 *Su*[4]. *To tell, to inform;* to state in reply or ..... defense.

告訴 *To inform, to tell.* In this combination *su*[4] is frequently corrupted into *sung*[4].

可 *K'ê*[3]. *To be willing, to permit;* to be able; ..... may, can, might; fitting; accurate. Before a verb it forms a verbal adjective:—Les. 180. Also *k'ê*[2].

以 *I*[3]. To use; *to take;* to regard as, by; so ..... as to; an instrumental verb:—Les. 145.

可以 *Can, may;* will do, will answer the purpose; as a reply,—yes:—Les. 70.

等 *Têng*[3]. An order or class; equal, like; *to* ..... *wait;* to want immediately; such like, etc.; a sign of the plural:—Les. 188.

等一等 Lit., wait one wait; i.e., wait a little, presently; hold!

時 *Shi*[2]. *Time;* a season; an hour; an occasion, ...an opportunity.

候 *Hou*[4]..... To wait; to expect; *a time.*

時候 Time, duration; *a certain time.*

去 *Ch'ü*[4]. To go (somewhere); to go away, to .....leave; to separate, to reject; past, gone. An auxiliary verb:—Les. 10.

還 *Hwan*[2]. To return; to revert; to repay; .....*still*, even, furthermore, yet, also, and. As a conjunction it is often read *Han*[2] or *Hai*[2] or *Ha*[2]. It sometimes merely serves to intensify, and is incapable of translation.

晌 *Shang*[3]..... Noontide, noon.

午 *Wu*[3]. Midday, noon; the hour which begins ..... at eleven and ends at one o'clock.

中 *Chung*[1]. *The middle,* the center; in the .....middle of, within; medium; to accomplish, to be sufficient. Also *chung*[4].

晌飯 *Shang*[3] *fan*[4]. The noontide meal, din- ..... ner:—Note 15.

午飯 } The noontide meal,
中飯 } dinner:—Note 15.

正 *Chêng*[4]. Correct, just, legal; upright, not .....awry; principal; orthodox; exactly; *at the time, just;* plus (+). Also *chêng*[1].

事 *Shi*[4]. *An affair;* business; that which is .....done, an act; to serve; to manage.

Digitized by Google

這[18]個飯、我實在不能吃。○這[19]個時候、他們正吃飯。○這[20]個東西、我不能給你。○這[21]個事情、我實在不知道。○他[22]不明白這個道理。○請[23]先生給我一吊五百大錢。○這[24]個事情、我們不能不告訴先生。○這[25]個時候、他們還沒有吃夜飯。○你[26]可以告訴他、禮拜四來。○明[27]天是禮拜六、我們不學話。

18 I really can not eat this food.
19 They are just now eating.
20 I can not give you this article.
21 This business I positively do not know.
22 He does not understand this doctrine.
23 Please, teacher, give me three thousand cash, (or, one thousand five hundred big cash.)
24 We can not but tell the teacher of this affair.
25 At this time they have not yet eaten supper.
26 You may tell him to come on Thursday.
27 To-morrow is Saturday, we shall not study.

情 *Ch'ing*[2]. The seven passions taken together; ..... viz., 喜 joy, 怒 anger, 哀 sorrow, 懼 fear, 愛 love, 惡 hatred and 欲 concupiscence; the desires; the emotions, the passions; *the facts or circumstances of an affair;* a case.

事情 An affair; business; a matter.

管 *Kwan*[3]. A tube; a flute; to rule, to control; ..... *to care for, to manage;* a classifier:—Les. 42.

給 *Chi*[3], *kei*[3]. To give; to supply; sign of the ..... dative:—Les. 25. The reading *kei*[3] is confined to Pekingese; in Central Mandarin it is often, perhaps generally, read *k'i*[3].

知 *Chi*[1]. *To know*, to be aware of; sensible of; ..... to inform; knowledge, wisdom.

道 *Tao*[4]. *A road or path;* a doctrine or prin..... ciple approved by the mind; the right way, duty; to speak, to talk; Taoism.

知道 To know, to be aware of; to care.

理 *Li*[3]. To govern, to regulate; to erect; *reason*, abstract right; a principle; to think of; to regard.

道理 Reason; *doctrine;* what is right.

曉 *Hsiao*[3]. Clear, luminous; the morning, the ..... dawn; *to understand, to know.*

得 *Tê*[2]. *To get, to obtain;* to succeed; to be..... come, to accomplish. An auxiliary verb:—Les. 43. Also *tei*[3].

曉得 To know, to comprehend.

晚 *Wan*[3]. *Evening*, twilight; late, tardy; the ..... latter or last.

夜 *Yie*[4]. ..... *Night;* darkness.

晚飯 *Wan*[3] *fan*[4]. ..... } Supper.
夜飯 *Yie*[4] *fan*[4]. ..... }

NOTES.

2 In speaking, the **有** is very often omitted after **沒**, especially in the North. When writing, however, teachers will generally insist on using it; especially is this so in the South. As often in Chinese, the practice belies the theory. When **有** is omitted, the **沒** is generally read *mei*, which is presumably a contraction for **沒有**; albeit in the North *mei* is frequently heard with **有** following. **朝飯** for "breakfast" appears to be used only in Shantung.

8 We have here two negatives making a strong affirmative, which is a common Chinese idiom.

9 The "you" is emphatic; that is, the person addressed is contrasted with some one who is *not* required to wait: unless so used the **你們** would generally be omitted.

14 **等一等** is in the infinitive by the construction of the sentence, which is the only sign the infinitive has in Chinese.

15 In Peking, **午飯** is used, and in the South, **中飯**, while **晌飯** is used in Shantung. In Chinanfu, however, **晌午飯** is generally used.

16 The object is here placed before the verb, which is quite a common idiom in Chinese. It gives prominence to the object and force to the expression.

17 **不可** means *must not*, and has more or less the force of a command. It is entirely *t'ung hsing*(**通行**); i.e., everywhere current. **不好** means, *ought not*, or

Digitized by Google

第四課

我[1]的錢不彀。○老[2]爺的話不錯。○你[3]不要管我的事。○他[4]的學問不大。○他[5]不懂得我的話。○你[6]不該說他母親的不是。○這[7]個東西是我的。○我[8]不能隨他的意。○他[9]不明白我的意思、正對。○師[10]娘的衣裳、實在好看。○李[11]先生的意思、正對。

TRANSLATION.

1 My money is not sufficient.
2 Your Honor's words are correct.
3 Do not meddle in my affairs.
4 His scholarship is not good.
5 He does not understand my language.
6 You ought not to speak of his mother's faults.
7 This article is mine.
8 I can not accommodate myself to his convenience.
9 He does not comprehend my idea.
10 Your clothes are very beautiful, Madam.
11 Mr. Li's idea is exactly right; [or, your idea, Mr. Li, is exactly right.]

should not, and implies an impropriety. It is extensively used in this sense both in Central and Southern Mandarin, but is not often heard in Pekingese.

21 知道 is rarely heard in Nanking or the South; 曉得 almost entirely superseding it. 曉得 is also used in the North, but somewhat sparingly.

23 In a large part of North China it is the custom to call ten cash twenty, fifty a hundred, and so on, in all cases (except in numbers under ten) giving a number which is double the actual number of the cash; and sums of cash when so designated are called 小錢, *small cash*. When, on the contrary, it is desired not to reckon double, but to call a cash a cash, they say 大錢, *large cash*. Numbers under ten are not doubled, but the word 大 is added by way of distinction. The 小錢 are also called 京錢, *capital cash*, because this method of reckoning originated in Peking. In places near the border line between these methods of reckoning, the terms "large" and "small" are applied to all sums of cash. Elsewhere it is understood,—in the North that any given sum of cash is double, and in the South that it is the real number. Thus we see that 小錢 may mean either counterfeit cash, or cash reckoned double, according to circumstances.

25 晚飯 is used both in Pekingese and in Southern Mandarin, but 夜飯 is generally used in Shantung.

26 The days of the week are numbered as so many days after the Sabbath. The Sabbath itself is called 禮拜日, or more commonly simply 禮拜. This terminology was introduced by the Roman Catholics.

27 學話 *learn words*, i.e., have a lesson.

LESSON IV.

THE POSSESSIVE PARTICLE.

的 is the common sign of the possessive case. It serves for both our forms of the possessive; viz., the *'s* and the *of*. It is often omitted and the possessive implied by the mere juxtaposition of the words. This is especially the case when two possessives follow each other.

的 has other important uses which will appear by and by:—Les. 18, 23 and 39.

VOCABULARY.

的 *Ti*[1]. *Sign of the possessive*:—see Sub.; also .....Lessons 18, 23 and 39. Also *ti*[4].

彀 *Kou*[4]. To draw a bow to its full; *enough*, ...adequate.

錯 *Ts'oŭ*[4]. To confuse; to mistake or err; *wrong*, ...*to be wrong*; excepting.

懂 *Tung*[3]. Disturbed; *to understand, to per-* .....*ceive*. Read *twin*[3] in some places.

懂得 *Tung*[3] *tê*[2]. To understand, to comprehend. .....

該 *Kai*[1]. To owe money; *ought, should*; what .....is proper or right; the aforesaid.

親 *Ch'in*[1]. To love, to be attached to; to show .....affection for; *a relative*, kin; one's own. Also *ch'ing*[4].

母親 *Mu*[3] *ch'in*[1]. . . . Mother.

Digitized by Google

○ 李[19]先生的學房、沒有規矩。○
這[20]個人的官話、實在好。

知道這個地方的規矩。○
先生的話、我聽不明白。○

東西、不合我的式。○
沒有明白你的話。○

這[14]不是他男人的事。○
他[13]的意思、容易明白。○

○ 你[12]先生的意思、不大合式。
他[15]○

我[17]不這[16]個

12 Your teacher's idea is not quite suitable.
13 His idea is easily understood.
14 This is not her husband's business.
15 He did not understand your language.
16 This thing does not suit me.
17 I do not understand the customs of this place.
18 I do not understand what you say, [or, the teacher says.]
19 Mr. Li's school-room has no discipline.
20 This man's Mandarin is exceedingly pleasant to hear.

不是 *Pu*[2] *shi*[4]. A fault; a sin; a wrong. Note ..... in this phrase 不 is read *pu*[2].

隨 *Swei*[2]. To follow, *to comply with;* to permit; .....as, according to; whenever.

便 *Pien*[4]. To accord with; *convenient*, opportune; at hand, ready; then, so, just:—Les. 190. Also *p'ien*[2].

意 *I*[4]. Thought, intention, *idea;* meaning, motive; opinion.

思 *Si*[1]..... *To think*, to consider; to desire.

意思 Intention; sentiments, opinion; *meaning.*

衣 *I*[1]. *Clothes*, garments; a case or covering of .....any kind.

裳 *Shang*[1]..... Skirts, petticoats; *clothes.*

衣裳 Dress, clothes (personal, not bed-clothes).

看 *K'an*[4]. *To see, to look at;* to examine; to ..... regard as, to estimate; mock,—as a mock persimmon. Also *k'an*[1].

好看 *Hao*[3] *k'an*[4]. Good to see, beautiful, admirable. 好 is joined to many other words in the same way as, 好聽, good to hear, 好吃 good to eat, etc.

對 *Twei*[4]. Parallel scrolls; *to correspond, to suit;* .....to compare, to respond; consistent with; opposite; a pair. A classifier:—Les. 140.

合 *Hê*[2]. To shut the mouth; to unite, to com-.....bine; suitable; *according to;* harmonious; together; the whole; product (math.). A classifier:—Les. 140.

式 *Shi*[4]..... A form, *a pattern;* an example.

合式 According to pattern; *suitable; appropriate.*

容 *Yung*[2], *jung*[2]. To contain; *to tolerate* or .....bear with; to pass over, to forgive; air, manner; face, countenance.

易 *I*[4]. *Easy;* without care; remiss; the muta-.....tions of nature, change; to exchange.

容易 Easy, facile.

規 *Kwei*[1]. A pair of compasses; a regulation, ...a law; a *custom.*

矩 *Chü*[4]. A carpenter's square; a law; *a cus-.....tom;* a pattern.

規矩 Custom; *usage;* propriety; order, method.

樣 *Yang*[4]. A model, a pattern; manner, style; .....way, fashion; *sort.*

氣 *Ch'i*[4]. Vapor, steam; gas; *air, breath;* the .....vital principle; the ether; *spirit, temper;* any feeling that produces excitement, as anger, hatred, etc.; air, aspect.

生氣 *Shêng*[1] *ch'i*[4]. To get angry, to be excited .....by passion.

力 *Li*[4]. *Strength* of body or mind; energy; ..... properties or powers of anything.

力氣 *Physical strength*, prowess; force.

比 *Pi*[3]. *To compare;* to assort; to equal; an ..... illustration:—Les. 58.

國 *Kwoh*[2]. A state, *a country*, a kingdom, a .....nation; governmental.

中國 *Chung*[1] *kwoh*[2]. The Middle Kingdom, ...China.

外 *Wai*[4]..... Outside; *foreign;* extraneous.

外國 Each and all foreign countries.

課 *K'ê*[4]..... *A lesson*, a task; a series.

多 *To*[1]. *Many*, numerous; much; mostly; .....very, excessive:—Les. 48.

Digitized by Google

沒有這樣的規矩。○我們的老爺、聽。
○請[22]老爺不要生氣、這是我的錯。○他[23]女人的力氣、比他的大。○中[24]國的字、比外國的難寫。○這[25]一課的生字、不大多。

21 Our master has no such custom.
22 Please, sir, do not get angry; this is my mistake.
23 His wife's strength is greater than his.
24 Chinese characters are more difficult to write than foreign ones.
25 There are not very many new characters in this lesson.

Notes.

2 *Your honor*, is but a make-shift translation. The 老爺 is used for the sake of etiquette, to avoid the use of the pronoun. This polite form is used in addressing officials, superiors, strangers, etc. It is, however, far from being universal custom in every day life, especially in the familiar intercourse of family and friends. As the English language does not afford any adequate means of rendering such indirect address, I shall hereafter translate simply by the pronoun "you" as the equivalent of the title, whatever it may be.

3 不要 *not want*, is a common and mild form of forbidding. The 你 is best omitted in the translation.

14 The 個 is here omitted, as it often is, especially when not followed by its noun.

16 我的 is here interjected between the parts of the compound term 合式.

20 A more elegant translation would be, *This man speaks Mandarin beautifully.*

21 The attachés of an official all speak of him as 我門的 so-and-so, meaning thereby "the official with whom we are connected."

23 Lit.—*His wife's strength compared with his is great.* This is the ordinary method of formal comparison. There are a variety of other forms of comparison, for which see Les. 58, 99. The term 女人 is here used for wife, as it often is when there is no occasion or desire to show any special respect.

LESSON V.

The Enclitics 子 and 兒.

子 A child, a son.
兒 An infant, a son.

Both of these characters are added to words to individualize them, and mark them as nouns. Some words take one and some take the other, while many take either at pleasure. A few nouns never take either of them. The two answer substantially the same purpose. 子 is a little more dignified than 兒. 兒 has in most cases more or less of a diminutive force. 子 is more used in Southern Mandarin, and 兒 in Northern Mandarin, especially in Pekingese.

Both 子 and 兒 are more used in spoken than in written Mandarin. Their excessive use, especially that of the latter, marks an uneducated man, or a careless speaker. 兒 is usually spoken so as to coalesce with the word to which it is joined; thus 錢兒, is not pronounced *Ch'ien-er*, but *Ch'ier*. Many of the Chinese are scarcely conscious of the fact that they are adding this 兒 to their words. In Nanking, especially, most teachers will aver that it is not used, and will protest against writing it, while in fact it is much used, though not so much as in Peking.

兒 is also used in forming adverbs of time and place:—Les. 9 and 16.

Vocabulary

子 *Tsï*[3]. *A child*, a son; a boy, a lad; an heir; .....a seed or kernel; a sage:—see Sub.
兒 *Ér*[2]. . . . An infant; a son; a boy:—see Sub.
桌 *Choŏ*[1]. . . . A table, a stand.
乾 *Kan*[1]. Dry; exhausted; *clean*. Also read .....*ch'ien*[2].
淨 *Ching*[4]. Pure, undefiled; *clean;* only, simply; .....net:—See Les. 49.
乾淨 Clean, unspotted; trifling, dainty.
法 *Fa*[3]. A law, a statute; *an art, a method;* .....the rules or methods of any science; legal punishment:—Les. 103.

Digitized by Google

第五課

這[1]個桌子不乾淨。○他[2]的法子不合式。○你[3]不可學他的樣子。他[4]有兩個兒子、一個閨女。○那[5]些花兒、實在好看。○這[6]些椅子不好坐。○我[7]不要這個小房子。○他[8]的老婆不會過日子。○他[9]不能不過窮日子。○三[10]兩銀子、該換五吊多。

TRANSLATION.

1 This table is not clean.
2 His plan is not suitable.
3 You must not follow his example.
4 He has two sons and one daughter.
5 Those flowers are certainly beautiful.
6 These chairs are not fit to sit on (or, not comfortable).
7 I do not want this small house.
8 His wife can not economize.
9 He can not but be a poor man.
10 Three ounces of silver ought to sell for over five thousand cash.

姑 *Ku*[1]. *A polite name for women*, especially young and unmarried women; lenient, yielding.

閨 *Kwei*[1]. Women's apartments; *unmarried girls;* feminine.

姑娘 *Ku*[1] *niang*[2]. A girl, an unmarried lady; Miss; a daughter:—Note 4.

閨女 *Kwei*[1] *nü*[3]. A virgin, a girl, a young lady; a daughter.

花 *Hwa*[1]. *A flower*, a blossom; variegated; to spend money; pleasure; vice; raw cotton.

椅 *I*[3]. A chair, a seat.

坐 *T'soò*[4]. To sit, to squat; to sit in judgment, to remain; to set, to place.

婆 *P'oâ*[2]. *An old woman;* a mother.

老婆 *Lao*[3] *p'oâ*[2]. *A wife;* an old woman; a woman servant:—Note 8.

老太 *Lao*[3] *t'ai*[4]. An old woman; an old lady, (Nankingese.)

家 *Chia*[1]. A household, *a family;* home; domestic; a sect; a profession. An enclitic:—Les. 72.

裏 or 裡 *Li*[3]. A lining; inside, inner, in; within. Both forms are used.

家裡 Home; family; *wife;* wife and children.

過 *Kwoò*[4]. To pass by or over; to exceed, to surpass; *to spend time;* to transgress; a transgression; beyond, further; excessive; than, rather; an auxiliary verb:—Les. 41.

日 *Jï*[4]. The sun; *a day;* days, times; the day for a thing.

過日子 To make a living; *to live;* to be thrifty, to economize.

銀 *Yin*[2]. Silver; money; cash.

換 *Hwan*[4]. To remove; *to exchange*, to change; to barter.

頭 *T'ou*[2]. *The head;* front; top; chief; first; best; the beginning or entrance; the end. A classifier:—Les. 38. Also Les. 47, 143.

老頭 *Lao*[3] *t'ou*[2]. An old man; the old man of the house.

歲 *Swei*[4]. *A year of one's age;* years, age.

孩 *Hai*[2]. A child; a youth; a boy.

生日 *Shêng*[1] *jï*[4]. Birthday.

出 *Ch'u*[1]. *To go out;* to issue, to put forth; to surpass; to eject; to sacrifice; to beget; to be born. An auxiliary verb:—Les. 40.

出門 or 出門子 *Ch'u*[1] *mên*[2] *tsï*[3]. To go from home, to travel; *to get married* (said of the woman):—Note 16.

閣 *Kê*[2]. An upper room; a balcony; *female apartments;* a council chamber.

出閣 To marry, to wed, (said of the woman.)

尖 *Chien*[1]. Tapering, pointed; wedge-like; *a point*, the apex.

刀 *Tao*[1]. A sword; *a knife;* a quire of paper ranging from fifty to two hundred sheets.

快 *K'wai*[4]. Glad, cheerful; prompt, quick, rapid; *sharp*, keen.

辮 *Pien*[4]. To plait, to braid; *the queue.*

Digitized by Google

錢。○[11]他該我兩吊多錢兒。○

[12]那個老頭兒、沒有兒子。○[13]這個老婆子、有七十多歲。○他[14]的孩子沒有力氣。○[15]李老爺的兒子、明天過生日。○[16]衣先生的女兒、還沒出門子。○[17]這個筆沒有尖兒。○[18]我的小刀兒、不大快。○[19]外國人沒有辮子。○[20]不要開書房的門兒。○

11 He owes me more than two thousand cash.

12 That old man has no son.

13 This old woman is over seventy years of age.

14 His child has no strength.

15 To-morrow is Mr. Li's son's birthday.

16 Mr. I's daughter is not yet married.

17 This pen has no point.

18 My pocket knife is not very sharp.

19 Foreigners have no queues.

20 Do not open the school-room door.

書 *Shu*[1]. *A book;* a letter; documents; to write; .....the canon of History.

書房 *Shu*[1] *fang*[2]. A school room; a study; a .....library.

杏 *Hsing*[4].....An apricot.

三 *Sa*[1]. Three, a contraction of 三個. See *san*[1]. .....

賣 *Mai*[4]...*To sell;* to betray; to make game of.

僱 *Ku*[4].....To hire; to engage the services of.

媽 *Ma*[1]. An old woman; a mother; *a waiting* .....*woman.*

老媽 *Lao*[3] *ma*[1]. *A servant woman;* a nurse; ..... among the Manchus,—mother.

看 *K'an*[1]. To watch, to guard, to look after ..... to tend:—See *k'an*[4].

娃 *Wa*[2]. A baby, an infant. Usually doubled, ... 娃娃:—Note 23.

叫 *Chiao*[4]. *To call;* to cry out; to name; to .....sing,—as an insect; to tell to do; to cause, to let; sign of passive:—Les. 53.

名 *Ming*[2]. A name; *the given name;* a person; ..... fame, reputation; a title.

小名 *Hsiao*[3] *ming*[2]. A small or pet name:— .....Note 24.

學名 *Hsüe*[2] *ming*[2].....A school name.

Notes.

4 There is great diversity in Mandarin in the use of terms for girl or young lady. In Shantung the common term is 閨女. The term 姑娘 is also used of the daughters of officers and educated men. In Peking 閨女 is used when speaking of one's own daughter, while 姑娘 is used in other cases. In Southern Mandarin both terms are used with varying frequency, and besides them, as more genteel, 小姐 (little sister) is used. The terms 女兒 and 女子 are also frequently used, both in the North and in the South, especially for daughter, for which the Chinese has no distinctive word.

8 The term 老婆 is often used (generally in Shantung) by the common people for wife, but is more or less disrespectful. When thus used the accent is thrown on the 老, also 子 or 兒 is frequently added. 家裏 means properly *home*, but is often used for that which is most important in a home; viz., a wife. The expression 過日子 is very suggestive, in view of the hand to mouth way in which the most of the Chinese live.

12 After 老頭 the 子 and 兒 are used indifferently. When 兒 is used, the two words are often pronounced as if the *ér* were in the middle of the *t'ou*[2]; namely, *lao t'rou*[2]. In this case, as in other similar cases of corrupt pronunciation, it is not necessary to imitate the corruption.

13 老婆子 here means an old woman, the emphasis being on the 婆. With an odd perversity, they put the emphasis on the 老 when the woman is young, and not when she is old. 有 not 是 is generally used in speaking of ages.

15 The first birthday of a child is specially observed. Afterwards little notice is taken of birthdays, except in the case of old people and officials.

16 出閣 is the more correct term, though 出門子 is much used in some places. In Kiukiang 出門子 is only applied to the marriage of a widow while in Chinanfu it is used of harlots. If 子 be omitted, or if it be replaced by 兒, the phrase means *to go on a journey.*

Digitized by Google

這[21]些杏子、賣三個錢一個。能學二十[22]一個字、字兒一個。○年不子、他[24]的小名兒、叫娃子。○我[23]要僱一個老婆子、孩兒看、娘母的老師。○李五六天、過生學個。○十

21 These apricots sell for three [large] cash apiece.

22 One can learn only twenty-five or six new characters in a day.

23 Mrs. Li wishes to hire an old woman (or, a nurse) to take care of her baby.

24 His little name is called Nien-tsï; his school name I do not know.

得道的學名兒我曉知不。

18 小刀兒 means a pocket knife, while 刀 or 刀子 means a large knife, or a sword.

21 三個錢一個. *Three cash [for] one.* The Chinese inserts no word answering to our word "for."

23 The prevalent term for *nurse* is 老媽, though 老婆兒 or 老婆子 is used in some places in this sense. In Nanking 媽媽 is also used in the same sense. In the South 娃娃 is commonly applied to little children, in the North only to babies, or (more commonly) to earthen dolls.

24 Boys at birth receive a 小名, or more elegantly, a 乳名 *ju³ ming², milk name.* When they start to school, a new name is given them by the teacher, which becomes their proper name through life. If they never go to school, a new name is usually given them by their parents before their manhood, which is called a 大名. The parents, especially the mother, often call them by their "little name" as long as they live. Besides these two names, young men usually take a 號 *hao⁴* or *title*, and many of them also receive a 外號 *wai⁴ hao⁴, nickname.* It is considered the proper thing to address a grown man by his *hao⁴*, especially in writing.

LESSON VI.

The Common Preposition of Place.

在 At, in:—it precedes the noun and is generally followed by a postposition after the noun; as if we should say in English, *to the wall-wards,* instead of, towards the wall. The most frequent postpositions are 裏, 外, 上 and 下. 在 is sometimes omitted or understood, as in 18 and 24.

Vocabulary.

上 *Shang⁴.* Above, upon; high, ancient; before; superior; excellent, exalted; Heaven; imperial; on, near. Also *shang³.*

下 *Hsia⁴.* *Below, underneath*; low, vulgar; poor in quality; next; a time; once; to descend; to fall,—as rain.

父 *Fu⁴.* *A father;* an ancestor; a senior.

父親 *Fu⁴ ch'in¹.* Father.

城 *Ch'êng².* A citadel; *a walled city;* the wall of a city.

住 *Chu⁴.* To stop, to cease; *to dwell, to live in;* to endure. An auxiliary verb:—Les. 75.

躺 *T'ang³.* *To lie down;* to sprawl.

牀 *Ch'wang².* *A bed;* a lounge; a sled.

樓 *Lou².* A loft; a tower; *an upper floor or story;* a house of two or more stories.

底 *Ti³.* The bottom; *below, underneath;* low, menial; to the end; the original draft.

底下 *Ti³ hsia⁴.* Beneath, underneath:—See Les. 120, Sub.

鋪 *P'u¹.* *To spread out;* to arrange, or lay out in order; bedding.

看書 *K'an⁴ shu¹.* To read, to study.

打 *Ta³.* *To strike,* to beat; to fight; to bastinade; to do, to make; to cause; by, in, through:—See Les. 124.

敲 *Ch'iao¹.* To pound, to tap, *to rap on;* to beat,—as a drum.

打門 *Ta³ mên².* To knock at the door:—Note 10.

敲門 *Ch'iao¹ mên².* To knock at the door.

叫門 *Chiao⁴ mên².* To halloo; *to knock at the door:*—Note 10.

炕 *K'ang⁴.* To dry, to bake; *a brick bed or divan heated by a fire underneath.*

紡 *Fang³.* To spin, to twist into thread.

Digitized by Google

第六課

我[1]的父親不在家。○我[2]的母親還在。○他[3]們在城裏住。○我[4]住在東門外。○他[5]兩個人躺在牀上。○在[6]樓底下沒有人。他們叫打門、他不在家。○在上有天、在下有地。○不用敲門、大[12]姑娘在家裏紡棉花。○小[13]女兒、躺在炕上。○李[7]師娘在樓上鋪牀。○李[8]先生在家裏看書。○在[9]上有病、生病有[11]母親。○在[10]下有地。○李先生在院子裏看孩子。○你[14]的帽子、不好放在桌子上。○在[16]地下。○我[15]的衣裳在樓上。

Translation.

1 My father is not at home.
2 My mother is still living.
3 They live in the city.
4 I live outside the east gate.
5 They two are lying on the bed.
6 There is no one down-stairs.
7 Mrs. Li is up-stairs making the beds.
8 Mr. Li is at home (or, in the house) reading.
9 Above is heaven, below is the earth.
10 You need not knock at the door; he is not at home.
11 His mother is lying on the *k'ang* sick.
12 The eldest daughter is in the house spinning.
13 The younger daughter is in the yard watching the baby.
14 You should not put your hat on the floor.
15 My clothes are up-stairs.
16 There are a good many books on the table.

線 *Hsien*⁴. *Thread*, either cotton, woollen, silk, ... or flaxen; a fine cord; a clue, a trace; a ray,—as of light; a streak or vein.

棉 *Mien*². ..... The cotton plant.

棉花 *Mien*² *hwa*¹. Cotton, raw cotton, cotton ..... wool.

小女兒 *Hsiao*³ *nü*³ *êr*². A little girl; *a young-* ..... *er daughter.*

院 *Yüen*⁴. A walled enclosure; *a yard;* a public ..... institution,—as a hospital, an asylum, a college, etc.

帽 *Mao*⁴. A cap, hat, or head covering of any ..... kind.

放 *Fang*⁴. To let go, to liberate; to indulge; *to* ..... *lay down*, to put, to open out; to send forth; to stretch, to extend.

地下 *Ti*⁴ *hsia*⁴. Below, on the ground, on the ..... floor.

鋪 *P'u*⁴. A shop, a workshop; *a store;* a stage ..... of ten *li* on official roads.

店 *Tien*⁴. *A large shop;* a storing and for- ..... warding office; an inn:—Note 17.

街 *Chie*¹. ..... A thoroughfare, a street.

買 *Mai*³. ..... To buy, to purchase.

買賣 *Mai*³ *mai*⁴. ... Business, trade:—Les. 50.

少 *Shao*³. *Little*, not much; few; a little while; .....seldom; slightly; to owe; wanting. Also *shao*⁴.

擱 *Kê*¹. *To lay on, or down;* to put or place ..... carefully; to hinder; to run aground.

碎 *Swei*⁴. To break to pieces; a piece; *frag-* ..... *ments, bits.*

零碎 *Ling*² *swei*⁴. Fragments, broken pieces; ..... *odds and ends*, remnants.

窗 *Ch'wang*¹. ..... *A window;* a window sash.

臺 *T'ai*². A turret; a fort; *a stand;* a plat- .....form, a pulpit; a title of respect to officers and others.

窗臺. A window-sill.

要飯 *Yao*⁴ *fan*⁴. To ask for food from door to ..... door, to beg:—Note 23.

做 *Tsou*⁴, *tsoò*⁴. To do, to act, to perform. ..... Often interchanged with 作.

Digitized by Google

上有好些老些書。○他[17]父親的舖子、店在大街上。○東街[18]上的買賣不少。○在學堂裏、有二十多個學生。○在[20]城裏有一百多學房。[21]○這些書可以擱在桌子上。○這[22]些零碎東西、你可以擱在窗臺上。○有[23]一個老頭子、在門外要飯。○院[24]子裏的花、實在好看。○他[25]們兩個在書房裏看書。○李[26]老爺的兒子、在西門外做買賣。

17 His father's shop is on the great street.
18 There is no little business on the east street.
19 There are over twenty pupils in the school-room.
20 There are over one hundred schools in the city.
21 You may put these books on the table.
22 These odds and ends you may put on the window-sill.
23 There is an old man outside the gate begging.
24 The flowers in the yard are truly beautiful.
25 They two are in the school-room studying.
26 Mr. Li's son is doing business outside the west gate.

NOTES.

2 在 is here used as a verb meaning *to be alive*. This is the common way of saying that any one is still alive, and 不在 of saying that he is dead.

5 I have translated this sentence as referring to present time; but for any thing that appears in the words themselves, it might with equal propriety be rendered, *they were lying on the bed*. The correct sense must be gathered from the connection. The want of tense endings in Chinese leaves a great deal of the language in this uncertain state.

6 在樓底下 Lit., *at the loft underneath*. The 底 might be omitted, and in some sections generally is omitted. 人 at the close of this sentence is equivalent to *one*. It is constantly used in this indefinite sense for, *any one, any body*, etc.:—Les. 52.

9 在上 *At the above*. The absence of a noun leaves 上 as the noun. The same is true of 下 in the next clause. This form of expression is often used to call heaven and earth (embracing the Chinese idea of God) to witness to the sincerity of the speaker.

10 Both 打 and 敲 are used of knocking at the door. In some places one is more used, and in other places the other. 敲 is the more proper and elegant of the two words. 叫門, *to call the gate*, is also largely used in the same sense. The book term is 叩門 *k'ou⁴ mên²*.

12 Might also be translated *my eldest daughter*, etc.: which is correct, would depend on who is the speaker. In some places 棉 is omitted, and 紡花 used alone.

14 Note the difference between 底下 (6) and 地下.

17 In the South 店 is used for *shop* instead of 舖子, and an inn is called 客棧 *k'ê⁴ chan⁴* or 客寓 *k'ê⁴ yü⁴*.

23 要飯 is commonly used for begging, though 討飯 *t'ao³ fan⁴* is more accurate.

LESSON VII.

SIGN OF THE PAST TENSE.

了 is added to verbs to denote that the action is complete, and hence past. In speaking it is generally shortened into *la³*. It is also used as an auxiliary verb:—Les. 88.

已經 denotes past time, but always with a reference to the present, or to some given past or future time; thus answering to both the perfect and pluperfect tenses. It is stronger, however, than *have* and *had*, and for this reason *already* is frequently added in translating. 已經 immediately precedes the verb, except as separated by the negative particle. When it precedes a verb 了 always follows, though 了 is often used without a preceding 已經.

The future perfect form is too complicated for this lesson.

Digitized by Google

第七課

張[1]先生的錢鋪、已經黃倒了。○我[2]在街上、買了三斤棉花。○我[3]已經吃了飯。○大[4]老爺已經走了。○他[5]的事情、已經說明白了。○我[6]已經等了三天。○丁[7]先生的母親、已經死了。○他[8]在城裏、住了好些日子。○沒[9]有法子、事情已經壞了。○他[10]們的買賣做賠了。○張[11]老爺的錢、已經花淨了。○他[12]做了一年買賣、賺了一百五十兩銀子。○做[13]完了活、你可以來告

Translation

1 Mr. Chang's bank is already bankrupt.
2 I bought three catties of cotton (or, cotton wool) on the street.
3 I have already eaten.
4 The Prefect has already gone.
5 His business is already satisfactorily settled.
6 I have already waited three days.
7 Mr. Ting's mother is already dead.
8 He lived in the city a long time.
9 There is no help for it, the business is already ruined.
10 They have done a losing business.
11 Mr. Chang's money is already all spent.
12 He did business one year and cleared one hundred and fifty taels.
13 When you have finished your work, come and tell me.

Vocabulary.

了 *Liao*[3]. *Fixed, concluded;* to bring to an ..... end; to complete; intelligent:—See Sub., also Les. 88.

已 *I*[3]. Now, already, just:—See Sub. At the .....end of a clause,—no more, enough.

經 *Ching*[1]. To pass through or by; *already,* ..... *then:*—See Sub. To manage; laws, canons; classical books. Also *ching*[4].

張 *Chang*[1]. To extend; to increase; to pro- ..... claim; to boast, *a surname.* A classifier, Les. 42.

錢鋪 *Ch'ien*[2] *p'u*[4].....A bank, a broker-shop.

錢店 *Ch'ien*[2] *tien*[4]. A bank, a broker-shop; ..... Southern.

黃 *Hwang*[2]. Yellow; the imperial color; blast- ..... ed; *to fail in business.*

倒 *Tao*[3]. To fall over or down; *to fail in busi-* ..... *ness,* to empty:—Les. 91. Also *tao*[4].

斤 *Chin*[1]. An axe; *a catty,*—equal to one and .....one-third English pounds.

走 *Tsou*[3]. To go; to walk; to run; to travel; .....to go away, to depart.

大老爺 *Ta*[4] *lao*[3] *yie*[2]. A title of respect higher ..... than 老爺:—Note 4.

丁 *Ting*[1]. A full-grown man; an individual; a .....*surname.*

死 *Si*[3]. *To die;* dangerous, mortal; urgent, ...intense; firm, fixed; a closed passage; an auxiliary verb:—Les. 183.

壞 *Hwai*[4]. To spoil, to injure; to perish; *spoiled,* ..... rotten; dilapidated.

賠 *P'ei*[2]. To make up a deficiency, *to lose*; to ..... confess a fault and make amends.

賠 *Shê*[2]..... To lose money in trade.

賺 *Chwan*[4]. To sell at a profit; to gain; to .....earn; to cheat.

尋 *Hsin*[2], *hsün*[2]. To seek, to investigate; com- ..... monly, usually; *to gain,* to make money.

完 *Wan*[2]. To finish; *finished,* completed; entire- .....ly:—Les. 101.

活 *Hwo*[2]. Living, lively; cheerful; to be alive; ..... open; moveable; *work,* livelihood.

忘 *Wang*[2,4]..... *To forget;* to neglect.

Digitized by Google

訴我。○我[14]已經吃穀了。○這[15]個字我忘記了。○他[16]在鄉裏、住了一年。○這[17]一課、我們已經學熟了。○先[18]生已經放了學。○已[19]經過了時候、先生還沒來。○這[20]些話、我們已經學了兩天。○我[21]五點半鐘到了家。○他[22]已經寫了三點鐘的工夫、還沒寫完。○等[23]他來了、可以請他到客堂客房坐一會兒。○你[24]當小心那個火、不要燒了房子。○他[25]的孩子、已經不上學了。

14 I have already eaten enough.
15 I have forgotten this character.
16 He lived in the country a year.
17 This lesson we have already well learned.
18 The teacher has already dismissed school.
19 It is already past the time, and the teacher has not yet come..
20 We have already been learning these sentences for two days.
21 I reached home at five and a half o'clock.
22 He has already been writing three hours, and has not yet finished.
23 When he comes you may invite him into the parlor to sit a while.
24 You should be careful of that fire and not burn the house.
25 His boy has already quit school.

記 *Chi*[4]. *To remember;* to record, to note down; ..... a history; a mark, a sign.

忘記 To forget.

鄉 *Hsiang*[1]. A village; *the country;* a region; .....rude, rustic.

熟 *Shu*[2], *shou*[2]. Ripe, mature; cooked, well cook- .....ed; *acquainted with;* intimate.

點 *Tien*[3]. A black spot, a speck; a dot, a com- .....ma; *an hour* by a foreign clock; a little, a particle; speckled; to punctuate; to erase; to nod; to light,—as a lamp; to kindle.

半 *Pan*[4]..... To divide in two; a half.

鐘 *Chung*[1]. A bell; a clock,—so called because .....it strikes.

到 *Tao*[4]. To arrive at, *to reach;* to go or come .....to:—Les. 76.

工 *Kung*[1]. *Work;* skill; a workman; a job, a .....piece of work; a day's work.

夫 *Fu*[1]. *To assist;* a husband; a man; a dis- ..... tinguished man; an exalted lady.

工夫 *Time spent in doing anything;* leisure; time; work; skill acquired by practice.

客 *K'ê*[4] *A guest, a visitor;* a stranger; a pas- ..... senger; a merchant; a dealer; a customer.

客堂 *K'ê*[4] *t'ang*[2]. A reception room, a guest .....room, *a parlor.*

客房 *K'ê*[4] *fang*[2]. A guest room, a parlor. .....

一會 *I*[1] *hwei*[4]. A short space of time, *a while;* .....presently, after a little.

當 *Tang*[1]. What is suitable or just; *ought;* .....adequate to bear responsibility; to act as, to be; to meet; to occur; when, at the time of; as, then:—Les. 90. Also *tang*[4].

心 *Hsin*[1]. *The heart;* the mind; the will; af- .....fections, desires; the middle.

小心 *Hsiao*[3] *hsin*[1]. To be careful, cautious, ... prudent.

火 *Hwo*[3]. *Fire,* flame; excitement; anger; .....fever; inflammation.

燒 *Shao*[1]. *To burn;* to kindle; to roast, to .....grill; hot, feverish.

上 *Shang*[3]. To go up, to ascend; to exalt; to .....hand up; the third tone. See *shang*[4].

Digitized by Google

第八課

林[1]先生來了嗎。○你[2]不認識認得我嗎。○火[3]爐裏還有火嗎。○你[4]的父母好嗎。○你[6]還不熟飯[5]嗎。○這[7]些銀子彀了嗎。○扯撒[8]謊謊還不算罪嗎。○你[9]不是張先生的兄弟嗎。○先[10]生吃了飯嗎。答已經吃了。○

TRANSLATION.

1 Has Mr. Lin come?
2 Do you not know (recognize) me?
3 Is there still fire in the stove?
4 Are your father and mother well?
5 Is the rice not yet cooked?
6 Do you think I am afraid of you?
7 Is this silver sufficient?
8 And is not lying to be considered a sin?
9 Are you not Mr. Chang's younger brother?
10 Have you eaten? Ans. I have already eaten.

NOTES.

1 There is some uncertainty whether 黃 for "bankrupt" should not rather be written 荒 *hwang*[1] and read *hwang*[3]. 倒 is the more widely used of the two forms.

4 The prefix 大 is not considered as properly belonging to a Hsien magistrate, though generally given to him. It is given of right to a Prefect and to sundry military officers. 大人 is given to a Tao T'ai and a Governor.

5 說明白了 means to discuss and agree upon a bargain, or a business arrangement of any kind:—See Les. 109.

7 Might with equal propriety be rendered, *has already died.*

9 The natural object of the verb here stands as its nominative, and by virtue of its position makes the verb passive. This is a very common idiom,—more common, in fact, than the regular passive with 被:—Les. 53. There are several other examples in this lesson.

11 花淨 Lit. *spent clean*; i.e., *all spent.*

13 完 is frequently added to verbs as an auxiliary to mark the completion of the action:—Les. 101.

15 This sentence might follow the English order, and read 我忘記了這個字, but is more thoroughly Chinese as it is.

19 The translation supplies "it is" and "and," illustrating how Chinese often does without such little words as these, so frequent and so useful in English.

20 話 commonly means *words*, but in this connection should be translated *sentences.*

LESSON VIII.

THE DIRECT INTERROGATIVE PARTICLE.

嗎 The sign of a direct question; i. e., a question that may be answered by yes or no. The Chinese do not indicate a direct question, as we do, by a rising inflection, but by the addition of this special word at the end of the interrogative clause. The character 麼, *mo*, is often written instead of 嗎, and some teachers will insist on always writing 麼, but incorrectly.*

麼 is joined to other particles (see Les. 17 and 36) to ask an *indirect* question, of which it is the proper sign. In speaking, both sounds (*ma* and *mo*) are heard, *ma* being the more frequent.

* NOTE.—嗎 formerly meant to revile, but is now entirely superseded by 罵, leaving 嗎 as the proper and distinctive sign of a direct question. Pedantic teachers object to it because it is a modern and colloquial character.

VOCABULARY.

嗎 *Ma*[1]. Direct interrogative particle:—See Sub.

林 *Lin*[2]..... A forest, a grove; *a surname.*

認 *Jên*[4]. *To know well;* to recognize; to acknowledge, to confess.

識 *Shï*[4]. To know; *to recognize;* to be versed in; knowledge.

認識 To know; to be acquainted with.

認得 To know, to recognize.

爐 *Lu*[2]. Any vessel for holding fire; *a stove;* a furnace. A classifier:—Les. 140.

火爐 *Hwo*[3] *lu*[2]..... A stove.

怕 *P'a*[4]..... *To fear,* to dread; lest, perhaps.

Digitized by Google

你[11]不會講這個字嗎。○已[12]經給了你、你還來要嗎。○你[13]還敢說不該我這個錢嗎。○從[14]北京來了信、你不知道曉得嗎。○已[15]經賠了不是、你還要告跟東家借一點嗎。○你[16]的錢不彀、不好對老板借一點嗎。○你[17]念了四年的書、還不認識

11 Can you not explain this character?
12 Having given you, do you still come and ask [for more]?
13 Do you even dare to say that you do not owe me this money?
14 Do you not know that a letter has come from Peking?
15 I having apologized, do you still intend to bring suit?
16 If your money is insufficient, why not borrow a little of your employer?
17 Have you gone four years to school and yet do not know this character?

撒 *Sa*[1]. To let loose; to let go. Also *sa*[3].

扯 *Ch'ê*[3]. *To pull apart;* to tear; to drag or haul.

謊 *Hwang*[3]. Falsehood, *lies;* exaggeration.

撒謊 To tell lies, to lie.

扯謊 „ „ „ „ „

算 *Swan*[4]. To count, to reckon; to estimate, *to regard;* a calculation, a scheme.

罪 *Tswei*[4]. A crime, *a sin,* a fault; a violation of law or order; punishment; retribution; suffering.

兄 *Hsiung*[1]. *An elder brother;* a senior, used after names as a term of respect.

弟 *Ti*[4]. *A younger brother;* a junior; a cousin.

兄弟 *A younger brother* or cousin:—Note 9.

答 *Ta*[1]. *An answer;* to answer; to respond to; to recompense.

講 *Chiang*[3]. To converse; *to explain;* to discourse, to preach; to discuss; to make a bargain.

敢 *Kan*[3]. *To dare, to venture;* presuming, bold. With 不, in polite phrase,—I can not, I would not presume.

從 *Ts'ung*[2]. To follow; to comply with; *from;* by; through; whence.

北 *Pei*[3]. The north, northern.

京 *Ching*[1]. Great, exalted; *the capital,* the metropolis.

北京 The northern capital, Peking.

信 *Hsin*[4]. Sincerity; truthfulness, faith; to believe, to trust; *a letter;* a message, news; to accord with, to follow.

跟 *Kên*[1]. The heel; to follow; to follow up an inquiry; *to apply to.* In Pekingese, —with, together with, and.

板 *Pan*[3]. A board or plank; an engraved block; a bastinado; fixed, obstinate.

老板 *Lao*[3] *pan*[3]. The head of a shop or business. A Southern word.

東家 *Tung*[1] *chia*[1]. The master of a household; *employer;* the responsible or moneyed partner of a firm:—Note 16.

借 *Chie*[4]. To lend; *to borrow;* to avail of, by; supposing, for example.

念 *Nien*[4]. To reflect, to consider; *to chant, to read aloud;* to memorize; thoughts.

打算 *Ta*[3] *swan*[4]. To consider; to plan; *to expect,* to intend.

飽 *Pao*[3]. *Satiated,* full; satisfied.

眼 *Yien*[3]. The eye; a hole, an opening; a fault; the centre. A classifier:—Les. 140.

見 *Chien*[4]. To perceive by the senses; *to see;* to observe; to visit; to endure; an opinion; a mental view:—Les. 102 and 122.

親眼 *Ch'in*[1] *yien*[3]. With one's own eyes.

看見 *K'an*[4] *chien*[4]. To see; to perceive.

不好過 *Pu*[4] *hao*[3] *kwo*[4]. Hard to make a living; *unwell,* ailing; sick.

疼 *T'êng*[2]. To pain, *to ache;* to love intensely; to have a fondness for; to feel for.

Digitized by Google

識 這個字嗎。○ 他[18]還
沒有走嗎。答 他打算
明天走。○ 客[19]已經
飽了嗎。○ 張[20]老爺不
在家、你不曉得嗎。○
他[21]沒親眼看見、還敢
這樣說嗎。○ 先[22]生不
大好過嗎。答 是、我的
疼。好

18 Has he not yet gone? Ans. He proposes to go to-morrow.

19 Have the guests already finished eating (eaten to the full)?

20 Do you not know that Mr. Chang is not at home?

21 If he had not seen with his own eyes, would he venture to speak thus?

22 Are you not well? Ans. No, my head aches.

Notes.

6 看 here means, *to think*. Seeing, being the chief means of acquiring knowledge and forming judgment, is put figuratively for the act of judging.

7 The plural form is used in Chinese because the silver consists of irregular pieces which are to be weighed.

8 Lying is not practically regarded by the Chinese as an offence against morals, though it is so in theory. The term 罪 comes very far short of expressing the Christian idea of sin. 還 is only approximately translated by *and*. It expresses surprise, and adds emphasis to the question.

9 兄弟 means *younger brother*, though 兄 alone means *elder brother*, and 弟 alone means *younger brother*. There is no accounting for this anomalous combination. When the order is inverted; viz., 弟兄, the phrase means *brothers*, including both older and younger.

13 還, if read without special emphasis, is intensive, and may be rendered *even*. If, however, it be emphasized, it assumes its proper meaning, and must be rendered, *still*. "Do you *still* dare to say," etc.

16 The conditional idea is here implied, as is often done in Chinese. It is indicated, partly in the order of the sentence, and partly by the emphasis given in speaking. (21) is similar. In ancient times the eastern side of the house, or court, was occupied by the proprietor, or host, the west being given to guests; hence the meaning of 東家. For this use of 家 see Les. 72.

20 The first clause is spoken affirmatively, and the second interrogatively. *Mr. Chang is not at home; don't you know?*

22 不大好 *not very well*. 大 after a negative is often thus used as an intensive, equal to *very*. 不好過 Lit., *not passing over well*; i.e., *not in good health*. It is Southern Mandarin, and somewhat stronger than 不大好. Notice how the English idiom requires the answer to be "no," while the Chinese makes it "yes."

Lesson IX.

Here and There.

這裡 Here, in this place.
這兒 „ „ „ „

The first is the proper and regular form, and should always be used in public discourse, or when dignity is important. The second is the short colloquial form. It is much more used in Northern than in Central and Southern Mandarin. It is not heard at all in Nanking.

那裡 There, in that place.
那兒 „ „ „ „

These two forms correspond to those above, and the same remarks apply.

此地 In this place, here. Used chiefly in Southern Mandarin, where it largely supersedes 這裡.

Vocabulary.

此 *Ts'ŭ*[3]. This, here; now:—Les. 63.

成 *Ch'ĕng*[2]. To finish; to become; to fulfil one's part; to terminate; complete; *the results*; the quality of a thing:—Les. 101.

年成 *Nien*[2] *ch'ĕng*[2]. The harvest, the crops.

說話 *Shwo*[1] *hwa*[4]. To talk, to speak, to converse.

閒 *Hsien*[2]. Repose, leisure; at ease, unoccupied; *idle*, indolent; vacant.

閒話 *Hsien*[2] *hwa*[4]. *Chit chat*; gossip; conversation.

冷 *Lĕng*[3]. *Cold*, chilly; indifferent; offended; lonesome; unusual.

熱 *Jĕ*[4]. Hot; to heat; feverish; ardent, *interested*; zealous.

Digitized by Google

第九課

請[1]先生在這裏坐。○這[2]裏沒有你的事情。○你[3]那兒的年成好嗎。○這[4]兒地是個規矩地方。○那[5]裏沒有火爐。○他[6]不在這裏說話。○在[8]這裏不要說閒話。○你[7]們那兒不好住。○這裏熱鬧、那裏清靜。○這[9]裏熱、那裏冷。○這[10]那些傢伙可以放在這裏。○這[11]裏熱鬧熱鬧、那裏清靜。○這[12]裏的木匠、沒有好手藝。○這[13]那兒不好說閒話。○那裏的年成好嗎。○這兒地是個規矩地方。○那裏沒有火爐。○他不在這裏說話。○在這裏不要說閒話。○你們那兒不好住。○這裏熱鬧熱鬧、那裏清靜。○這裏的木匠、沒有好手藝。○這裏是住家、不是講書堂。○這[14]那些傢伙可以放在這裏。○這裏是住家、不是講書堂。○這[15]裏的買賣過晌、先生可以在這裏寫字。

Translation.

1 Will you please sit here?
2 There's nothing here that concerns you.
3 Is it a good year with you?
4 This is an orderly place.
5 There is no stove there.
6 He does not live here.
7 You must not talk here.
8 It's not proper to gossip there.
9 It is hot here and cold there.
10 It is bustling here and quiet there.
11 These tools of yours you may put here.
12 The carpenters of this place are not skillful.
13 This is a dwelling house; not a chapel (or, a preaching hall).
14 You may write here this afternoon.
15 The business here is large; there, it is small.

鬧 *Nao⁴*. *Bustle*, tumult; to scold, to rail, to make a disturbance.

熱鬧 Bustling, busy; interesting.

鬧熱 The same. Southern.

清 *Ch'ing¹*. *Pure, clear;* incorruptible; clear,—as a tone; settled,—as an account.

靜 *Ching⁴*. *Still, quiet;* mild, peaceable; silent; pure; impassable.

清靜 Quiet, undisturbed.

傢 *Chia¹*. Tools, furniture.

伙 *Hwo³*. Goods, furniture.

傢伙 Household furniture; *utensils;* tools; a bold, reckless fellow.

傢使 *Chia¹ shi³*. *Utensils;* tools. Local in Shantung.

木 *Mu⁴*. Wood; wooden.

匠 *Chiang⁴*. *A mechanic*, an artisan.

木匠 A carpenter; a joiner.

手 *Shou³*. The arm; *the hand;* a hand, a person; skill; actions, doings.

藝 *I⁴*. *Skill in doing;* expert; a craft, an art; an accomplishment.

手藝 Manual skill, handicraft, workmanship.

住家 *Chu⁴ chia¹*. *A dwelling house;* to be at home.

講書堂 *Chiang³ shu¹ t'ang²*. A preaching place, a chapel, a church.

過晌 *Kwo⁴ shang³*. The afternoon.

過午 *Kwo⁴ wu³*. The afternoon.

情理 *Ch'ing² li³*. Reason; right; common sense:—Note 17.

纔 *Ts'ai²*. Near in time; just, just now; *and then;* thereupon:—Les. 65.

害 *Hai⁴*. To injure, to hurt; to damage; *fearful* of; very, extremely.

害怕 *Hai⁴ p'a⁴*. *To fear;* to be frightened.

藏 *Ts'ang²*. *To hide*, to conceal; to store up; stores. Also *tsang⁴*.

躲 *To³*. *To conceal oneself*, to hide; to slip away, to escape.

好說 *Hao³ shwo¹*. *Easy to speak;* proper, grammatical. In answer to a compliment,—You flatter me.

强 *Ch'iang²*. Violent, headstrong; firm; relying on force; sturdy; an excess, a remainder; *better than*, superior to:—Les. 58. Also *ch'iang³*, *chiang⁴*, and *chiang¹*.

Digitized by Google

大、那裏的買賣小。○木匠[16]的傢伙、不在這裏。○這兒的人、實在不講說情理。○他[17]在這裏、坐了半天纔走了。○他[18]害了怕、這兒藏、那兒躲。○這裏的話、比那裏的規矩、比我們這裏好强。○你們[21]那裏的師傅司務、在那裏嗎。答我沒看見。○他[22]是在這裏、是在那裏、我一點兒不曉得。○我[24]已經找偏了、實在不知道他放在那裏。

16 The carpenter's tools are not here.

17 The people here are very unreasonable.

18 He sat here half a day before he left.

19 He was afraid and hid himself here and there.

20 The language here is easier to speak than the language there.

21 Your customs there are better than ours here.

22 Is the carpenter there? Ans. I have not seen him.

23 Whether he is here or whether he is there I have not the least idea.

24 I have already searched everywhere; I have really no idea where he put it.

傅 *Fu*⁴. To superintend; a tutor, a teacher; a ..... skilled workman; to lay on,—as colors.

司 *Si*¹. ..... To control, to preside over.

務 *Wu*⁴. To bend the mind to, to strive; *business*, ... duty; must, by all means.

師傅 *Shi*¹ *fu*⁴. A teacher, an instructor; one ..... who has pupils or apprentices; a *master workman*, a head-man.

司務 *Si*¹ *wu*⁴. Same as preceding, but used ..... only in the South.

一點兒 *I*¹ *tien*³ *êr*². Read *i*² *tier*³. A very ..... little; in the least.

找 *Chao*³. To supply what is deficient; *to look* ..... *for*, to seek, to search for; to accuse, to hold responsible.

偏 *Pien*⁴. *Everywhere;* the whole; entire; to ..... pervade.

Notes.

1 This sentence would be equally good if written 請先生坐在這裏.

3 Lit., *Is you there's year good?* The Chinese takes the liberty of putting "there" in the possessive case.

4 規矩 is properly a noun, but is here used as an adjective. It is a very common thing for Chinese words and phrases to be used as several parts of speech. Such transitions must not surprise the learner.

11 A 的 is implied after 你. This idomatic form gives almost exactly the same force as the form of the translation. 傢伙 is used both in the North and South:—See 傢什. 傢使 is chiefly used in Shantung.

12 好 drops out of the translation. It might be preserved by turning the sentence about thus: *The skill of the carpenters of this place is not good.*

13 住家, *a live-home;* i.e., *a private residence.* This sentence would be appropriately used to visitors or strangers who were intruding into private rooms or buildings where it was not convenient to have them go, a chapel being understood to be a public place where any one may go.

14 過午 is Southern and 過晌 Northern, though either would probably be understood in most places. 過晌午 is also heard in some places, but the Nanking teacher rejects all these and insists on 中飯後.

17 In this connection 講 is more widely used than 說. 情理, the affections and the reason—the humane sentiments combined with the principles of abstract right, forming the ideal "ought."

18 "Half a day" is here, as often, used as an exaggeration, meaning a considerable time, or at least more time than befitted the circumstances. The turn of the sentence here requires 纔, *then*, to be translated *before*.

19 了 is elegantly inserted between the parts of the 害怕 instead of coming after it. "Hid himself here and there;" lit., *hid here and skulked there.*

21 There ought of right to be a 的 after 這裏 and before 强, and it would often be so said. The fact that it *can* be omitted and the incongruity not be noted by a Chinese teacher, shows that no proper analysis is applied to their spoken language.

22 師傅 means properly a master or teacher in any art or profession. It is used throughout the North. Teachers along the *Yangtse* reject it, however, and substitute 司務, which would be wholly inadmissible in the North.

Digitized by Google

第十課

請[1]先生起來。○賊[2]偷了我的衣裳去了。○張[3]先生的牲口、跑去了。○可[4]以叫喊兩個人來擡轎子。○這[5]些傢伙可以撤去。○他[6]已經搬去了。○他[7]的衣裳箱子、已經搬來了。○桌[8]子上有灰、土可以撣去。○大[9]狗奪了小狗的食去。○這[10]三個箱子、還沒有發去嗎。○他[11]沒有力氣、不能起來。○有[12]一個人、從西院子過來。○我[13]的兄弟、帶了一百兩銀子去。○他[14]的錢已

TRANSLATION.

1 Will you please get up? (or, Will the gentleman please rise?)
2 A thief stole away my clothes.
3 Mr. Chang's animal ran away, (or, has run away.)
4 You may call two men to carry the chair.
5 You may take away these dishes.
6 He has already moved away.
7 His box of clothing has already been brought.
8 There is dust on the table, brush it off.
9 The big dog snatched away the little dog's food.
10 Have these three boxes not yet been forwarded?
11 He has no strength, he can not get up.
12 A man came over from the west court-yard.
13 My younger brother took with him a hundred taels of silver.
14 He has already drawn his money.

LESSON X.

THE AUXILIARY VERBS 來 AND 去.

There is in Chinese a large class of auxiliary verbs which are joined to other verbs to qualify or limit their meaning. Of these the simplest are 來 to come, and 去 to go. They are auxiliary verbs of direction, and may be joined to any verb containing the idea of motion.

VOCABULARY.

起 *Ch'i*[3]. To rise, *to stand up;* to begin; to raise up; to open out the meaning; the origin:—Les. 29 and 126.

賊 *Tsei*[2], *tsé*[2]. *A thief*, a robber, a bandit; an insurgent, a rebel.

偷 *T'ou*[1]. *To steal*, to pilfer; underhand, secret.

牲 *Shêng*[1]. Sacrificial animals,—the horse, ox, lamb, cock, dog and hog.

牲口 *Shêng*[1] *k'ou*[3]. Domestic animals, especially work animals,—the horse, cow, mule and donkey.

跑 *P'ao*[3]. To run, to gallop; *to run off*, to flee; to walk; to travel.

喊 *Han*[3], *hsien*[3]. *To call*, to call to; to vociferate, to halloo.

擡 or 抬 *T'ai*[2]. *To carry between two persons;* to lift; to elevate; to praise.

轎 *Chiao*[4]. A sedan chair, a palanquin.

撤 *Ch'è*[4]. *To remove from;* to recall; to set aside.

搬 *Pan*[1]. To remove; *to transport;* to move; to bandy, to discuss.

箱 *Hsiang*[1]. A box; *a trunk;* a casket.

灰 *Hwei*[1]. Ashes; soot; *dust;* lime; ash-colored; disheartened.

土 *T'u*[3]. Earth, soil, clods; *dust;* territory, lands; native; local.

撣 *Tan*[3]. *To brush off with a duster*, to dust; a feather duster.

狗 *Kou*[3]. *A dog;* petty, contemptible; vile.

Digitized by Google

經支去了。○請[15]王先生、明天帶捎我的綿衣裳來。○說[16]來說去、還是那些話。○他[17]們四個人、擡轎去接王大人。○生[18]子已經跑去告訴他母親了。○這[19]些東西、你還沒送去嗎。○這[20]是兩個錯字、可以點去。○你[21]借了我的筆去、明天要送來。○丁[22]先生的兒子、從關東寄了信來。○他[23]借了我的大襖去、當了五百錢。○王[24]老三的兒子、在這裏跑來跑去、實在討厭。

15 Will Mr. Wang please bring along my wadded clothes to-morrow?
16 He talked and talked, but it was still the same thing over and over.
17 They four went as chair-bearers to meet General Wang.
18 Shêng-tsï has (or, had) already run off to tell his mother.
19 Have you not yet taken these things [to their destination]?
20 These are two erroneous characters; you may strike them out.
21 The pen which you borrowed of me you must return to-morrow.
22 Mr. Ting's son has sent a letter from Manchuria.
23 He borrowed my overcoat and pawned it for five hundred cash.
24 Wang the Third's boy is here running back and forth most provokingly.

奪 *To*[2]. To take by force, *to snatch;* to carry ..... off; to criticise.

搶 *Ch'iang*[3]. To rob by violence; *to snatch;* to ..... dispute and struggle for.

食 *Shi*[2]. To eat; *food;* a meal; bait; to take ..... back one's word, to retract.

發 *Fa*[1]. To send forth; *to dispatch;* to prosper; ..... to grow rich; to ferment; to show forth; to issue, to pay out money:—Les. 73.

帶 *Tai*[4]. A sash, a girdle, a garter; a bandage; ..... a tape; a zone; connected with; *to take along with*, to conduct:—Les. 110.

支 *Chi*[1]. A branch, to pay out; *to draw money;* ..... to diverge; to withstand.

捎 *Shao*[1]. To select; to take along with; *to* ..... *send by another*:—Note. 15.

綿 *Mien*[2]. *Soft, cottony;* wadded; floss; drawn ..... out as a thread; enduring; connected.

綿衣裳 *Mien*[2] *i*[1] *shang*[1]. Wadded garments. ....

王 *Wang*[2]. A king, a ruler; royal; *a surname.* ..... Also *wang*[4].

接 *Chie*[1]. *To receive;* to succeed to, to take; ..... to unite; to join on; to graft.

送 *Sung*[4]. To accompany, to see a guest to the ..... door; to send; *to go on purpose to take;* to make a present; to give as a free gift.

關 *Kwan*[1]. To shut,—as a gate; to bar; a cus- ..... tom house or *barrier;* a suburb; to belong to, to concern; consequences, results.

關東 *Kwan*[1] *tung*[1]. East of the 山海關, or ..... end of the great wall on the Gulf of Pechili, Manchuria.

寄 *Chi*[4]. To lodge, to transfer; to entrust to, ... *to send a letter or message.*

襖 *Ao*[3]. ..... An outer garment, a robe, a coat.

當 *Tang*[4]. *To pawn,* to pledge; to consider or ..... regard as; instead of, for, as; suitable, proper:—Les. 90. See *tang*[1].

討 *T'ao*[3]. To manage; to search; to ask for, to ..... beg; to bring upon; *to provoke.*

厭 *Yien*[4]. Satiated; distasteful, hateful; to dis- ..... like, to loathe.

討厭 Hateful, *disagreeable,* provoking.

Digitized by Google

第十一課

拿[1] 一 杯 水 來。 ○
柴 伙 來 生 火。 你[3] 去 一 點
個 燈 來。 ○ 拿[4] 手 巾 擦 揩 去 拿
眼 淚。 ○ 他[5] 盡 淨 拿 了、 可 實 話 哄
人。 ○ 紙[6] 沒 有 取 燈 可 以 拿
錢 去 買。 ○ 拿[7] 自 來 火 來
點 燈。 ○ 拿[8] 熱 水 洋 火 還 洗 不
乾 淨 嗎。 ○ 可[9] 以 拿 我 的
片 子 去 請 他。 ○ 沒[10] 有 座 座

Translation.

1 Bring a cup (or, glass) of water.
2 Bring a little wood and kindle the fire.
3 You go and bring a lamp.
4 Take your handkerchief and brush away the tears.
5 He just deceives people by means of the truth.
6 The paper is all used up: you may take [some] cash and go and buy [more].
7 Bring a match and light the lamp.
8 Can you not wash clean, even with warm water?
9 You may take my card and go and invite him.

Notes.

4 The translation fails to convey fully the direction, or command, implied in the Chinese. The use of 叫 implies that there are professional chair-bearers within "call." Where there are none such, the term 找 *chao*³, *to seek*, would most likely be used.

9 食 food, is used in Mandarin only in certain phrases.

10 In the South 隻 *chi*¹ is generally used as the classifier of "boxes."

15 捎 means, *to bring, take or send along with*, the implication being that the purpose of going is aside from the matter in question. It is not used in Southern Mandarin, where 帶 takes its place, although 帶 only serves to replace it in part.

16 說來說去 is a highly idiomatic expression, meaning to repeat over and over again, or to talk around a thing without coming to the point. There is nothing in the sentence to indicate whether the time is past or present; whether it should be translated in the third person or in the second. It defies all attempts at a literal translation.

17 When an official in travelling approaches a city over which he has jurisdiction, etiquette requires that officials of a lower rank go outside of the city to a greater or less distance to "receive" him. A military officer entitled to be addressed as 大人 would generally be of rank corresponding to that of Brigadier General.

19 Note how the object is here placed first.

21 This sentence *implies* a relative clause, without formally expressing it. See Les. 46.

22 Here 帶 will not replace 捎, and 寄 is somewhat bookish.

23 It is a common practice in China to borrow clothing, or other articles, for the purpose of "making a raise" by pawning them.

24 The sons of a family are numbered according to their ages, and are frequently designated by these numbers added to the family name, either with or without an intervening 老. The eldest, however, is not called 王一 or 王老一, but 王大 or 王老大. The use of 老 does not indicate that the person in question is old, but simply that in age he is the third. A child in arms may be so called. Not only are the sons of one man thus numbered, but the sons of brothers, living together, are all counted as own brothers and numbered in the order of their ages.

LESSON XI.

The Instrumental Verb 拿.

拿 or 拿 *to take, to bring*, is much used as an instrumental verb. It nearly always takes after it either 來 or 去. It is sometimes rendered as a verb, but is often best rendered by an instrumental preposition. The frequent use of instrumental verbs, of which there are a number, is a characteristic feature of Chinese construction. See Les. 28, 54 and 145.

Vocabulary.

拿 *Na*². To lay hold of, to seize; to arrest; *to take; to bring*:—See Sub.

拿 *Na*². Same as 拿. The two forms are used indiscriminately.

杯 *Pei*¹. A cup; a goblet; *a tumbler*.

水 *Shwei*³. *Water;* a fluid; a stream; clear limpid; pliant.

柴 *Ch'ai*². Brush; *firewood;* fuel.

柴伙 *Ch'ai*² *hwoǒ*³. Firewood; fuel.

生火 *Shêng*¹ *hwoǒ*³. To light or kindle a fire.

Digitized by Google

兒、可以去拿椅子來。○
你[11]拿我的東西去送人、
還有這個理嗎。○那[12]牆
上有灰、可以拿笤帚來
掃去。○拿[13]鉛筆寫字、還
能擦去。○拿[14]手打他、還
不行嗎。○到[15]八點鐘、你
可以拿燈籠去接我。○
他[16]拿我的話、不當話。○

10 There are no seats: go and bring some chairs.
11 Is it reasonable for you to take my things to make presents to other people?
12 There is dust on that wall, bring a broom and sweep it off.
13 If you write with a lead pencil, you can rub it out.
14 Will it not answer to strike him with your hand?
15 At eight o'clock you may bring a lantern to meet me.
16 He paid no attention to what I said.

燈 *Têng*[1]. . . . . *A lamp;* a lantern.
巾 *Chin*[1]. *A napkin;* a neckcloth; a cap or . . . . . turban.
手巾 *Shou*[3] *chin*[1]. *A handkerchief;* a towel; a . . . . . napkin.
擦 *Ts'a*[1]. To scatter; to brush; *to wipe;* to . . . . . rub; to scour.
揩 *Ch'ie*[1]. *To brush away,* to wipe lightly with . . . . . the hand. In Shantung read *ts'ai*[1].
淚 *Lei*[4]. . . . . *Tears;* to weep.
眼淚 *Yien*[3] *lei*[4]. . . . . Tears.
盡 *Ching*[4]. . . . Entirely, wholly; just. Also *chin*[4].
哄 *Hung*[3]. The hum of a crowd; to cozen, *to* . . . . . *deceive;* to coax, to soothe.
紙 *Chi*[3]. . . . . *Paper,* stationery; a document.
取 *Ch'ü*[3]. To lay hold of; *to take,* to bring, to . . . . . exact; to select.
洋 *Yang*[2]. . . . . The ocean; *foreign;* vast, wide.
自 *Tsï*[4]. From, commencing at; *self,* myself; . . . . . personally:—Les. 21.
取燈 *Ch'ü*[3] *têng*[1]. . . . . Matches:—Note 7.
洋火 *Yang*[2] *hwŏ*[3]. . . . . Matches.
自來火 *Tsï*[2] *lai*[2] *hwoŏ*[3]. . . . . Matches.
洗 *Hsi*[3]. . . . . *To wash;* to purify; to rinse.
片 *P'ien*[4]. A leaf, a flake; a strip; *a card;* a . . . . . section. A classifier:—Les. 125.
座 *Tsoŏ*[4]. *A seat,* a place to sit; a divan. A . . . . . classifier:—Les. 100.
位 *Wei*[4]. A seat, a throne; position, dignity; . . . . . proper. A classifier:—Les. 27.
座位 A seat, *a place to sit;* an honorable seat; dignity.
牆 *Ch'iang*[2]. . . . . A wall of stone, brick or mud.
笤 *T'iao*[2]. . . . . A coarse broom.
帚 or 帚 *Chou*[3]. . . . . A broom.
笤帚 A corn broom.
掃 *Sao*[4]. *To sweep,* to brush; to clean up; to clear off, to rid. Also *sao*[4].
鉛 *Ch'ien*[1]. . . . . *Lead;* leaden.
鉛筆 *Ch'ien*[1] *pi*[3]. . . . . A lead pencil.
行 *Hsing*[2]. To go, to walk; to act, to do; to . . . . . prevail; to be customary; to serve as, *to answer.* Also *hsing*[4], and *hang*[2].
籠 *Lung*[2]. *A cage;* an open basket; to cover; . . . . . to entrap.
燈籠 *Têng*[1] *lung*[2]. . . . . A lantern.
鞭 *Pien*[1]. *A whip;* a lash, a cut or stroke of . . . . . a whip; to flog.
小人 *Hsiao*[3] *jên*[2]. *The mean man,* a depraved . . . . . and contemptible fellow,—a classical term; a boy, a child.
作 *Tsoŏ*[4]. *To act, to do;* to become; to behave; . . . . . to make; to stimulate; work. Also *tsoŏ*[1] and *tsu*[3].
下作人 *Hsia*[4] *tsoŏ*[4] *jên*[2]. A worthless fellow; . . . . . a blackguard.
貨 *Hwoŏ*[4]. . . . . *Goods;* merchandize; stock.
常 *Ch'ang*[2]. Constant, ordinary; ever, always; . . . . . *habitually;* a rule, a principle.

Digitized by Google

這[17]個牲口不走、可以拿鞭子打他。○你[18]上書房去拿我的帽子來。○我[19]看你淨拿不是當理說。○你[20]不好拿小人當拿下作人來比我。○李[21]老三拿四千八百兩銀子來買貨。○他[22]常拿中國的貨、當外國貨賣。○林[23]師傅、你不要拿我的傢伙、做你的活。

17 This animal will not go; you should whip him up.

18 Go to the school-room and bring my hat.

19 In my opinion you are just putting wrong for right.

20 You must not take me to be a mean fellow.

21 Li the Third brought four thousand eight hundred taels of silver to buy goods.

22 He constantly sells native goods for foreign goods.

23 Mr. Lin, you must not take my tools to do your work.

NOTES.

1 In this first sentence 拿 is a principal verb. So also in the third.

4 We might with equal propriety translate, "Take *a* handkerchief and wipe away *your* tears." The Chinese could readily express the "your" by inserting 你的, but they would rarely do so except for the sake of special emphasis. 擦, *to wipe, to scour*, is not often used of tears, the more common word being 揩, *to brush, or wipe away*, and which in Shantung is read *ts'ai*[3] and in Nanking *k'a*[3].

5 "Just" is only an approximate rendering of 淨 or 盡, which is much used, as here, with the general sense of *entirely, wholly*, etc. The 盡 suits the meaning best, and is preferred at Nanking, where also its ordinary reading is correct. The idea in the sentence is, that the speaker creates an impression in advance, which is contrary to the facts, and then states the facts in such a way that they are disbelieved.

6 The 人 at the close is used indefinitely:—Les. 52.

7 取燈 is the literary name for matches, 自來火 is the commercial name, and 洋火 the name most commonly used by the people. Besides these names, matches are in some places called 觸燈, ts'u[3] têng[1], *strike lamps*.

9 A card in the hand of a messenger is the proof that he is authorized to speak for the party whose card he bears.

10 The form of the sentence implies that more than one chair was wanted; hence, "some" is supplied in the translation.

11 人 is here used in contrast with 我, and hence means *other people*, or *another man*. 還 is used intensively.

13 The subjunctive idea is implied rather than expressed. The sentence might perhaps with equal propriety be rendered, *Writing done with a lead pencil may be rubbed out.*

15 拿燈籠去接我. *We* should certainly say "come" rather than go. The Chinese in such cases always speak from the standpoint of the person addressed.

16 Lit., *He took my words not as words*; i.e., *disregarded what I said*. For this and similar uses of 當, see Les. 90.

20 Lit., *You ought not to take a mean man to measure me*; i.e., you should not liken me to a mean man. 好 and 當 do not convey quite the same meaning; the former refers to propriety, the latter to duty.

LESSON XII.

THE COMMON CONNECTIVES.

和 With, together with, and. The Chinese language has no equivalent for "and." This word 和 is made to do duty for it, and foreigners are generally inclined to use it too much. The Chinese very often allow mere juxtaposition to suggest or imply the idea we convey by "and."

也 In *Wên-li* (文理 the literary style) a final particle marking the completion of the idea. In Mandarin it means, *also, likewise*. Before 是 it serves to strengthen the idea, but is not generally translatable:—See 17. Before 不 it implies a doubt, or alternative, which is sometimes, though not always, equal to *whether*. When used twice in succession the first is untranslated and the second rendered *and also*.

又 Again; moreover; still. Followed by 不 it is disjunctive.

再 Again, a second time; henceforth.

This lesson only introduces the common uses of these words, without attempting to illustrate them fully. There are also a number of other words of the same class:—See Les. 110.

Digitized by Google

第十二課

○ 我[1]和他不合式。○ 不[2]可和人打打仗。
○ 我[3]已經再三和他說了。○ 你[4]說這話、也有情理。○ 我[5]和他沒有來往。○ 他[6]不還錢、又不見面。○ 我[7]和你兩個一路去不好嗎。○ 我[8]的父親在家裏、和客說話。○ 他[9]嘴裏是一樣、心裏又是一樣。○ 善[10]人和惡人、天生是仇敵。○ 丁[11]百萬又和他兄弟打架。○ 拿[12]爐灰擦、也不能擦乾淨。

TRANSLATION.

1 He and I are not on good terms.
2 You must not fight with people.
3 I have already spoken to him repeatedly.
4 There is some reason in what you say.
5 I have no intercourse with him.
6 He will not pay me, nor even see me.
7 Wouldn't it be well for us to go together?
8 My father is at home talking with the guests.
9 In his mouth is one thing, in his heart another.
10 The good and evil are by nature enemies.
11 Ting Pê Wan has had another quarrel with his younger brother.
12 It cannot be scoured clean, even with ashes.

和 *Hê*[2], *hwod*[2]. Harmony, agreement; to be at ..... peace; to mix; to unite; *with*, etc.:—see Sub.

也 *Yie*[3]. ..... Also, and, likewise:—see Sub.

又 *Yiu*[4]. Also, and; furthermore; and then; ..... again:—see Sub:—Les. 170.

再 *Tsai*[4]. Repeated, a second time; then; ..... again; still, henceforth; in any case; certainly.

仗 *Chang*[4]. Weapons; to fight, to come to blows; ..... a *fight;* to rely on, to trust.

架 *Chia*[4]. A frame, a stand, a rack; staging; to ..... support; *to ward off*. A classifier:—Les. 125.

打仗 *Ta*[3] *chang*[4]. To fight a battle; to fight; ..... to come to blows:—Note 2.

打架 *Ta*[3] *chia*[4]. ..... To fight, to fisticuff.

再三 *Tsai*[4] *san*[1]. Again and again, repeat- ..... edly.

往 *Wang*[3]. *To go;* to go away, to go towards; ..... past, gone; formerly.

來往 *Lai*[3] *wang*[3]. To and fro; intercourse, ... communication, dealings.

面 *Mien*[4]. The countenance, *the face;* the sur- ..... face; the side; the front; honor; reputation:—Les. 26 and 125.

路 *Lu*[4]. *A road*, a path; a way of duty or ac- ..... tion; a sort, a class.

一路 *I*[1] *lu*[4]. The whole way; a sort, or kind; ..... the same kind:—Les. 106.

嘴 *Tswei*[3]. A bird's bill; *the lips;* the snout; ..... a mouth; a spout; an aperture.

善 *Shan*[4]. *Good*, virtuous; goodness, merit; ..... meet, docile; skilful, expert.

惡 *Ê*[4]. *Bad*, vicious; *evil;* ugly, vile; wicked- ..... ness. Also *wu*[4] and *ê*[3].

天生 *T'ien*[1] *shêng*[1]. By birth, by nature; ..... *naturally*, originally.

仇 *Ch'ou*[2]. *An enemy*, a competitor; hatred, ... enmity, revenge.

敵 *Ti*[2]. An opponent, a competitor; *an enemy;* ..... an equal; to withstand; to fight.

仇敵 *An enemy*, a foe; an antagonist.

萬 *Wan*[4]. A myriad; ten thousand; many; ..... every one; all:—Les. 104.

爐灰 *Lu*[2] *hwei*[1]. ..... Ashes.

回 *Hwei*[2]. To revert; to return; to repeat, to ..... review; to repent; *a time*, a turn; a chapter in a novel; Mohammedan:—Les. 41 and 64.

緊 *Chin*[3]. To bind fast; *urgent, pressing;* in- ..... stant; confined, tight.

Digitized by Google

我[13]已經告訴你三回、你又忘記了嗎。○這[14]個禮拜、你不去也不要緊。○他[15]不是個好人、你再不可和他交往。○和[16]他說話、該大一點聲兒。○你[17]和他說到天亮、也是無益。○你[18]的女人不講情理、你也不講情理嗎。○他[19]的房子和地、也不過能值一千吊錢。○我[20]已經告訴你不用再來、你又來了嗎。○他[21]已經定主意勸同參睛眼睛耳朵聾同窗戚親戚

13 I have already told you three times: have you forgotten again?

14 It is no matter, even if you do not go this week.

15 He is not a good man: you must have no more dealings with him.

16 When you speak to him you should raise your voice a little.

17 Talk to him till daylight and it will be of no avail.

18 Are you going to talk unreasonably as well as your wife?

19 His house and land are not *worth* over one thousand strings of cash.

20 Have you come again, after I told you you need not come any more?

21 He has already made up his mind: it is useless to exhort him.

要緊 *Yao⁴ chin³*. ..... Urgent; *important.*

交 *Chiao¹*. To join; to deliver up; to communi- ..... cate with; to copulate; trade; *intercourse, friendship.*

交往 *Chiao¹ wang³*. The intercourse of friend- ..... ship; dealings.

聲 *Shêng¹*. A sound; *a voice;* accent, tone; re- ..... putation; to make known.

聲氣 *Shêng¹ ch'i⁴*. ..... Sound, *voice.*

亮 *Liang⁴*. ..... *Clear*, bright; lustrous; open.

無 *Wu²*. None; not having; *without,* want- ..... ing:—Les. 121.

益 *I²,⁴*. To increase; more; to benefit; *benefi-* ..... *cial;* advantageous; full:—Les. 123.

無益 Useless, unprofitable.

值 *Chi²*. To meet, *to be worth;* to sell for; ..... value, price; worth while.

定 *Ting⁴*. To fix, to settle, *to decide;* really, ... certainly; at rest, fixed:—Les. 116.

主 *Chu³*. A ruler, lord, *master;* a host; to rule; ..... to show what is to be.

主意 *Chu³ i⁴*. Will, *determination;* to decide, ... to make up the mind.

勸 *Ch'üen⁴*. *To exhort;* to admonish; to en- ..... courage; to advise.

同 *T'ung²*. Together; all; united; *the same,* ..... alike; identical; to unite, to harmonize; and, with, etc.:—Les. 110.

參 *Tie¹*. Papa, daddy.

睛 *Ching¹*. ..... The pupil of the eye; the iris.

眼睛 *Yien³ ching¹*. ..... The eye; the eyes.

耳 *Êr³*. ..... *The ear;* a handle, an ear.

朵 *To³*. A cluster; *a lobe;* a head of flowers; ..... a pendant. A classifier:—Les. 125.

耳朵 The ear lobe; the ear.

聾 *Lung²*. ..... Deaf; hard of hearing.

同窗 *T'ung² ch'wang¹*. ..... A school-mate.

戚 *Ch'i⁴*. To pity; mournful; related to, akin, ... *relatives,* kindred.

親戚 *Ch'in¹ ch'i⁴*. Relatives not of the same ..... surname.

NOTES.

2 打架 is the more general and proper term for "to fight." 打仗 is, however, largely used in Shantung and elsewhere in this sense.

4 也 is represented by *some* in the translation. It gives the idea of a concession on the part of the speaker that "you" *also* have some show of reason on *your* side; as if we should say, *Well, yes, what you say is reasonable.*

7 The addition of 兩個 is a common idiom. It conveys the idea that you and I are to be companions. The 一路, which is the Southern form, does not give quite the same sense. With it the translation should be, *Wouldn't it be well for me to go along with you?*

10 天生 *Heaven born;* i.e. *by nature.* The sentiment of the sentence is too strong for Chinese ethics.

Digitized by Google

了。○我[22]的兒子、和他的女兒同歲。○他[23]的老父親、眼睛也花了、耳朵也聾了。○告[24]訴他、和告訴我是一樣。○他[25]是我的同窗、又是我的親戚。○王[26]太太又來了、林師娘可以和他講一會道理。

22 My son and his daughter were born the same year.

23 His old father's eyes are dim and his ears deaf.

24 To tell her is the same as to tell me.

25 He is my schoolmate and also my relative.

26 Old Mrs. Wang has come again. You (Mrs. Lin) may preach to her a while.

主意、勸他也是無益。

13 In the South 記 is always used with 忘; in the North it is often, perhaps generally, omitted.

16 大 is here translated as a verb. We might, however, supply a verb and translate, *When you speak to him you should speak with a little louder (greater) voice.*

18 The first clause does not affirm what is said, but assumes it as a fact.

19 也 is lost in the translation. It was introduced into the sentence by something that preceded, and with which the assertion concerning the worth of the property is brought into comparison. Its force may be approximated by emphasizing the word worth. 能 would be omitted by many. Its presence implies a hypothesis:—"in case they were sold."

22 When speaking of age, 歲 is commonly used. In this sentence Nanking Mandarin prefers 年, which is only so used, however, when joined with 同. Notice that in this sentence the verb to be is omitted.

24 It is here assumed that the person referred to is a woman; hence 他 is rendered "her."

LESSON XIII.

Common Future Forms.

就 To approach; just now, forthwith.

必 Certainly; must, determined on.

要 To want, to need.

These three words are all used to express the future. The first expresses what will immediately or speedily follow;—often equal to, *just now, at once, forthwith,* etc.

The second expresses what will necessarily or certainly follow;—often equal to, *surely, must.*

The third expresses what will probably follow, or what the person intends should follow; generally rendered simply *will* or *shall.*

要 is often joined with 就 or 必, in which case it largely loses its own special signification.

These words do not always require "will" or "shall" in the translation. They are often equivalent to, *about to, going to,* etc. The future is often implied without any special word, by the mention of a future time; as, 我明天去, *I to-morrow go; i.e.,* I shall go to-morrow.

Vocabulary.

就 *Chiu*[4]. To approach; to accompany; to complete, to finish; to accommodate; then,—in time or in argument; *just now, at once:*—See Sub., also Les. 44.

必 *Pi*[4]. A strong affirmative; *certainly will:*—See Sub. Must; necessarily; positively:—Les. 104 and 116.

教 *Chiao*[1]. To instruct, *to teach;* to command. Also *chiao*[4].

館 *Kwan*[3]. An inn; a club house; an assembly hall; an exchange; a saloon, a restaurant; a school-room; *a school.*

天父 *T'ien*[1] *Fu*[4]. Heavenly Father:—a Christian term.

保 *Pao*[3]. *To protect;* to defend; to be surety for, to warrant; to keep safe; to insure.

護 *Hu*[4]. *To protect;* to aid; to escort.

保護 *To protect,* to guard; to screen from.

本 *Pên*[3]. The origin, root; source; cause; radical; the beginning; native; *capital,* principal; proper, own; this; the present; a volume; a document. A classiner:—Les. 42.

Digitized by Google

第十三課

等[1]一等我就去。○他[2]要到這裏來教教館學。○不[3]用害怕、天父必保護你。○李[4]先生一會兒就來。○他[5]的買賣、必要賠錢。○不[6]多時候、木匠就要收工。○過[7]三四個禮拜、我要回家。○我[8]家去住七八天、就回來。○這[9]個事、我要先和你說明白。○你[10]可以先走、我隨後就到。○這[11]本三字經、不多日子就念會了。○等[12]兩三天、我必要去見他。○客[13]來了、我就必來告訴你。○還沒寫完嗎、答眼看[14]就寫完了。○用[15]電線眼見

TRANSLATION.

1 Wait a little and I will go.
2 He intends to come here to teach school.
3 You need not fear: the Heavenly Father will certainly protect you.
4 Mr. Li will come presently.
5 His business will certainly be a losing one.
6 In a short time the carpenters will quit work.
7 After three or four weeks I shall return home.
8 I will go home and stay seven or eight days and then return.
9 I want to have a clear understanding with you about this matter beforehand.
10 You may go ahead: I will be there presently.
11 I can master this Trimetrical Classic in a few days.
12 Wait two or three days and I will certainly go and see him.
13 When the guests come I will certainly come and tell you.
14 Have you not yet finished writing? Ans. I shall finish in a moment.

三字經 *San*[1] *Tsi*[4] *Ching*[1]. The Trimetrical Classic, — a primer containing an epitome of Chinese philosophy and history.

散 *San*[4]. *To scatter;* to dissipate; to disperse, to separate. Also *san*[3].

收 *Shou*[1]. To receive; *to quit work;* to collect, to gather; to harvest; to wind up.

後 *Hou*[4]. *After, subsequent;* behind in place; then, next; in future; an heir.

隨後 *Swei*[2] *hou*[4]. Forthwith, presently, at once.

念會 *Nien*[4] *hwei*[4]. To memorize, to master:— Note 11.

ㄟ眼看 *Yien*[3] *k'an*[4]. About to; *on the point of,* on the verge of; evidently.

ㄡ眼見 *Yien*[3] *chien*[4]. The same.

電 *Tien*[4]. Lightning; electricity.

電線 *Tien*[4] *hsien*[4]. A telegraph wire or line; the telegraph.

立 *Li*[4]. To stand up; to set up; to institute, to establish; to appoint; to draw up a contract; *just now,* soon.

立時 *Li*[4] *shi*[2]. Instantly, at once, forthwith:— Les. 162.

傳 *Ch'wan*[2]. To transmit; to hand down; to promulgate, *to propagate;* to summon, to subpœna. Also *chwan*[4].

好事 *Hao*[3] *shi*[4]. Virtuous deeds; deeds of benevolence or charity; alms.

存 *Ts'un*[2]. To preserve; *to maintain;* to retain; to lay by, to keep; to file; to put on deposit; a balance to credit.

耽 or 耽 *Tan*[1]. To obstruct; to prevent; *to hinder.*

誤 *Wu*[4]. To mistake, to be in error; *to hinder;* an unintentional wrong, a fault.

耽誤 To hinder, to prevent; *to spend in vain;* to miss an opportunity.

Digitized by Google

捎打信、立時就到了。○我[16]就要在這裏傳道理。○要[17]作好事、必要先存好心。○不[18]先說明白了、這個法子就不行。○這[19]個法子怕要不行。○這[20]個法子必不行。○不[21]要耽誤工夫、起來就走、○已[22]經換了東北風、我看必要下雨。○我[23]出劃拼上上一夜不睡、趕天亮也必送去。○不[24]用再去請他、等一會兒他就來。○我[25]看他的買賣、快要關門。歇了○王[26]心清在安息日上、必要到講書堂。

15 A letter sent by telegraph is there at once.
16 It is my purpose to propagate religion here.
17 If you would act right you must first have a right heart.
18 If you do not first have a clear understanding this plan will not work.
19 This plan will probably not succeed.
20 This plan will certainly not succeed.
21 Do not waste time: go as soon as you get up.
22 The wind has changed to the north-east: I think it will certainly rain.
23 Even if I give up the whole night to it I will not fail to deliver it to you by day-light.
24 You need not go again to invite him: wait a little and he will come.
25 In my opinion his business will soon close up.
26 Wang Hsin Ch'ing will certainly be at church on the Sabbath.

轉 *Chwan*³. To turn over or about; to reverse; .....to turn over to; on the contrary, on the other hand; to comprehend; *to veer—as the wind:*—Les. 112. Also *chwan*⁴.

風 *Fêng*¹. *The wind;* air; manner, style; fash-.....ion, example; fame, reputation.

雨 *Yü*³..... ...Rain; a shower.

劃 *Hwa*¹. To split open; to rend; to give up, ...to risk, *to sacrifice:*—Note 23.

拼 *P'in*¹. To reject; to brush away; to risk, to .....stake; *to sacrifice.*

睡 *Shwei*⁴..... ... *To sleep;* to nod or doze.

趕 or 赶 *Kan*³. To pursue; to hurry; to drive; ....*by*, by the time:—Les. 144.

歇 *Hsie*¹. To rest; to stop, to leave off; to take .....a vacation· *to quit business.*

關門 *Kwan*¹ *mên*². To shut the door; *to quit* or *wind up business.*

安 *An*¹. Quiet; *rest;* peace; at ease; to tran-..... ...quilize; to place; to put to rights.

息 *Hsi*². A respiration; to breathe; to sigh; ....*to rest;* to put a stop to; interest.

安息日 *An*¹ *hsi*² *jï*⁴. The Sabbath day.

Notes.

2 This sentence might mean, *He wants to come here to teach.* Which meaning the speaker intended would be indicated by the emphasis and the connection. 教館 is rarely heard in the North, and 教學 as rarely in the South.

6 收工 is more widely used than 散工. The 收 is used from the standpoint of gathering tools, etc., and putting them in order for leaving.

11 Nothing in the sentence indicates whether "I" or "you" or "he" should be used in translating. 念 means *to chant, or drone,* and 念會 means to rhyme over till you "know it," as school boys say; that is, to memorize.

13 客來了 *The guests having come;* i.e., *when the guests come.*

14 眼看 *eye seeing;* i.e., *in sight, just at hand;* nearly always followed by 就. The two forms are quite equivalent.

16 The translation does not quite give the full force of the 就: the idea is that just now and here I purpose to propagate religion.

17 Might with equal propriety be rendered, *Whoever would act right must first have a right heart.*

19 要, as here used, is more or less local: it should be read with a slight emphasis, and expresses a strong presumption; whereas 怕 properly expresses apprehension.

Digitized by Google

第十四課

若[1]是你去、我也要去。○若[2]是先生知道、他必要打你。○若[3]沒有人挑唆、事情早成了。○你[4]若等用、我就給你。○若[5]是他不先提、你也不要提。○你[6]的兄弟若不出頭、別人還能出頭嗎。○若[7]是他不還你、我就還你。○罪[8]人若不悔改、死後必下地獄。○若[9]沒有事情躭悞、六天我就回來了。

TRANSLATION.

1 If you go I also will go.
2 If the teacher knew it he would certainly whip you.
3 If no one had meddled, the affair would have been concluded long ago.
4 If you are waiting to use it, I will just give it to you.
5 If he does not first mention it, you need not mention it.
6 If your younger brother does not take the lead (or, come to the front), can any one else do so?
7 If he does not repay you, I will repay you.
8 If sinners do not repent, after death they will go to hell.
9 If there is nothing to prevent, I shall return in six days.

22 換 is more common in the North, 轉 in the South though both forms would probably be understood either North or South.

23 The expression 劉上, or 出上, or 拼上, has a peculiar force very near to our word *sacrifice;—I will sacrifice the whole night*, etc. The three forms are not precisely equal in force, nor are they everywhere alike current. 劉 is most used in the North, 拼 in the South. In Kiukiang 舍不得 also is used in the same sense, but how analyzed it is not easy to see.

LESSON XIV.

THE COMMON SIGN OF THE SUBJECTIVE.

若 If, should, supposing.
若是 If, should, supposing.

As a conjunction, 若 means the same without 是 that it does with it. Whether 是 is added or not depends chiefly on euphony.

There are a number of other words of similar meaning and use, which will be introduced by and by:—See Les. 132.

This lesson illustrates in a measure how the Chinese language expresses moods and tenses without any endings or even special forms.

VOCABULARY.

若 *Jo⁴*. Like; as; same as; *if, perhaps, supposing*:—See Sub.

挑 *T'iao¹*. To provoke, *to irritate;* to tease; to mix, to stir up; to rip open; to carry,—as a lantern. Also *t'iao¹*.

唆 *So¹*. *To incite;* to set at variance.

挑唆 To sow discord; *to incite to contention.*

提 *T'i²*. To raise up; to bring to notice; *to mention;* to summon; to remit. Also *ti¹*.

出頭 *Ch'u¹ t'ou²*. To take the lead, to put oneself forward, to take the responsibility.

別 *Pie²*. To separate; to distinguish; to depart; different from, *another*. Also *pie⁴*.

罪人 *Tswei⁴ jên²*. A sinner:—a Christian term.

悔 *Hwei³*. *To repent;* to regret.

改 *Kai³*. *To change*, to alter; to reform, to amend.

悔改 To repent and reform; *to repent.*

獄 *Yü⁴*. A prison, a jail.

Digitized by Google

若[10]是明天再不學、我必要罰你。○幸[11]虧你來幫助、你若是不來、我們就沒有法子。○若[12]王老三眞說了這些話、他實在沒有良心。○我們[13]在路上若不坐那一會兒、這個時候早到了。○若[14]是他不罵我、我還能打他嗎。○他[15]若眞窮到這個分兒、還能這樣胖嗎。○若[16]是天分好、二年也能學會了。○他[17]又應許二十還錢、若是到了日子、

10 If by to-morrow you still have not learned it, I shall certainly punish you.

11 It's fortunate you came to our help: if you had not come we should have been in a dilemma.

12 If Wang the Third really said these things, he certainly has no conscience.

13 If we had not sat down that time on the road, we should have been there before this time.

14 If he had not reviled me, would I have struck (or, thrashed) him?

15 If he were really as poor as this, would he still be so fat?

16 If his talents are good, he can learn it even in two years.

17 He has again promised to pay by the twentieth: if at that time he still does not pay, I shall strip off his clothes.

地獄 *Ti⁴ yü⁴*. Hell:—a Buddhist term adopted by Christianity.

悞 *Wu⁴*. To deceive; false; *to hinder*. Constantly interchanged with 誤.

罰 *Fa²*. A punishment; to fine; *to punish*.

幸 *Hsing⁴*. *Fortunate*, lucky; blessed.

虧 *K'wei¹*. To wane, to be wanting; a deficiency; a defect; to injure; *owing to;* in consequence of; happily.

幸虧 Fortunately; *luckily;* a happy chance.

幫 *Pang¹*. *To help;* to assist; to add on a piece; a company, a set:—Les. 140.

助 *Chu⁴*. To assist, to help.

幫助 To assist, to help, to aid.

眞 *Chên¹*. True; sincere; genuine; *in reality;* truly, in fact.

良 *Liang²*. *Good*, gentle, mild; excellent of its kind; natural, instinctive.

良心 *Liang² hsin¹*. Conscience, the moral nature; a desire to do right.

罵 *Ma⁴*. To rail at, to scold; *to call names;* to revile.

分 *Fên⁴*. A part, a share; *rank*, lot; the duties of a station. Also *fên¹*.

步 *Pu⁴*. To walk; *a step*, a station; a pace of five Chinese feet, a way, a course. A classifier:—Les. 125.

地步 *Ti⁴ pu⁴*. Rank; *position;* footing; circumstances.

胖 *P'ang⁴*. *Fat;* hearty.

天分 *T'ien¹ fên⁴*. Natural endowments, talents gifts.

應 *Ying¹*. That which is right, ought; suitable, proper; *to assent*. Also *ying⁴*.

許 *Hsü³*. To grant, to allow; to acquiesce; to permit; *to promise;* to betroth; many, very:—Les. 130.

應許 To *promise;* to consent.

剝 *Poā¹, pa¹*. To skin; to peel off; to uncover; *to tear off;* to fleece.

肯 *K'ěn³*. To be willing; to assent, *to allow*.

待 *Tai⁴*. To wait; to expect; *to treat*, to behave towards.

管保 *Kwan³ pao³*. To guarantee, *to warrant;* you may be sure.

府 *Fu³*. A library; a store-house; an encyclopedia; a palace; *a mansion*.

府上 *Fu³ shang⁴*. A gentleman's house; your residence.

望 *Wang⁴*. To hope for, to expect; *to look towards;* to gaze at; hopes.

拜望 *Pai⁴ wang⁴*. To pay one's respects to, to call on.

Digitized by Google

再不還、我要剝他的衣裳。○若[18]是有人這樣待你、管保你也是不肯。○若[19]是知道府上在這兒、就早過來拜望了。

18 If any one should treat you in this way, I'll guarantee you also would protest.

19 If I had known your residence was here, I should have come over before this to call upon you.

NOTES.

1 Or, *If you go I also want to go.*

2 This sentence might be rendered, *If the teacher had known it he would certainly have whipped you*, or, *If the teacher finds it out he will certainly whip you.* These distinctions which the English expresses so admirably, the Chinese does not express, although it might be made to express, or at least indicate them; thus the first, by inserting 早 *tsao,*³ *early*,—若是先生早知道, etc.; and the second by inserting 後來 *hou*⁴ *lai,*³ *afterwards*,—若是先生後來知道, etc.

6 The Chinese might with equal propriety be arranged, 若你的兄弟不出頭, etc., and this is the *grammatical* order. The Chinese, however, do not hesitate, in order to throw emphasis on the subject, to leave the first words without any logical construction. The grammatical incongruity is something they neither understand nor appreciate.

9 The use of 了 at the close implies that the return would be within, or by the end of, the six days; without it the meaning *might* be that the party would *start* back in six days.

13 Lit., *at this time early have arrived;* i.e., *before this time.* Notice how the Chinese language attains to the idea of "should have been."

15 分兒 will not pass in the South, though 地步 is equally good in the North.

17 "*Strip off his clothes;*" i.e., to hold for security.

LESSON XV.

INTENSIVES.

最 Excessively, exceedingly, very. More used in the South than in the North.

頂 The top; the best or highest in character or quality,—thus making the superlative. Less used in Southern than in Northern Mandarin.

挺 To stretch, used as a kind of super-superlative in place of 頂. It is a question whether *t'ing* is not simply 頂, aspirated in order to strengthen it.

很 Excessive; joined to adjectives, it form an intensive, often equivalent to a superlative. It is often preceded by 得 or 的, in which case the two words follow the adjective they qualify. The literal meaning is, *to the point of excess*, but in use the meaning is not essentially different from that of 很 alone.

至 Very; most; wholly. As an intensive it is used chiefly with adjectives of time or quantity.

誠得 Very, exceedingly. This term is much used in Central Mandarin, but not at all in the South, and but little in the North. There are sundry other intensives:—See Les. 137.

VOCABULARY.

頂 *Ting*³. The top, the summit; the crown; to ..... carry on the head; to put one thing for another; to serve as; *very, in the highest degree:*—see Sub. A classifier:—Les. 125.

最 *Tswei*⁴. To carry to the extreme; *very, exceed-* ..... *ingly:*—see Sub.

很 *Hĕn*³. Stern, harsh, etc., often used for 狠; ..... very, excessively:—see Sub.

誠 *Ch'êng*². Sincere; real; perfect in virtue; ..... *really, verily, certainly.*

誠得 *Ch'êng*² *tĕ*³. Very, exceedingly:—see Sub. .....

挺 *T'ing*³. To straighten; to stiffen; resolute, ... decided; *very, exceedingly.*

至 *Chï*⁴. To arrive at, to reach: the end, the ..... summit; to, at, even to; respecting; *the greatest degree of, most, very:*—see Sub., also Les. 144.

利 *Li*⁴. *Sharp, acute;* advantageous; fortunate; ..... gain, profit; interest; to benefit.

利害 *Li*⁴ *hai*⁴. Severe, stern; violent; *fierce;* ..... powerful.

Digitized by Google

第十五課

他[1]的狗頂利害。○這[2]個人最論理、公道的很。○我[3]的大師傅、誠得會做飯。○王[4]老二很會弄的身量頂高。○你[5]的小刀兒快得很。○我[6]看你至多有三十歲。○寫[7]這本書、至少也得要三個月的工夫。○張[8]五的心眼兒最詭詐。○他[9]至早是禮拜四來、至晚是禮拜六、○這[10]個小姑娘眞淘氣、我頂不喜歡他。○你[11]這個瘡、該常用水洗、至少一天一回。○這[12]些藥頂利害、至多一點鐘吃一回。○還[13]

Translation.

1 His dog is exceedingly fierce.
2 This man is very reasonable;—exceedingly just.
3 My cook can prepare first-class food.
4 Wang the Second's stature is exceedingly tall.
5 Your pocket-knife is extremely sharp.
6 I take you to be, at most, thirty years old.
7 To write this book will take, at the very least, three months' time.
8 Chang the Fifth's heart is very deceitful.
9 At the earliest he will come on Thursday; at the latest on Saturday.
10 This little girl is very provoking (or, mischievous): I dislike her exceedingly.
11 This boil of yours you should frequently wash with water;—at least once a day.
12 This medicine is very powerful: at most, take it but once an hour.

論 *Lun*[4]. To discourse upon; to discuss; to reason, to think over; to estimate; an essay; *according to;* as to, with reference to.

公 *Kung*[1]. Public, common; general; just, *equitable;* the male of animals; husband; a "duke;" Sir, Mr.

公道 *Kung*[1] *tao*[4]. *Just,* righteous; fair, impartial; cheap.

大師傅 *Ta*[4] *shi*[1] *fu*[4]. A head cook, a steward.

弄 *Lung*[4], *nung*[4], *nou*[4]. To do; to handle; to manage; to toy or trifle with; *to prepare or cook food.*

身 *Shên*[1]. *The body;* the main part of a thing; oneself; a lifetime:—Les. 147.

量 *Liang*[4]. *A measure,* a limit; capacity to eat or drink; size; calibre. Also *liang.*[2]

身量 Stature, size.

高 *Kao*[1]. High; *tall;* loud; eminent; excellent; old; high-priced; good.

心眼 *Hsin*[1] *yien*[3]. *Disposition,* character; plans, tricks.

詭 *Kwei*[3]. *To deceive,* to cheat; malicious; perverse.

詐 *Cha*[4]. To deceive, to impose upon; *artful,* cunning, false.

詭詐 *Crafty;* deceitful; treacherous.

遲 *Ch'i*[2]. Slow, dilatory; *late;* to delay.

淘 *T'ao*[2]. To scour; to wash in a sieve; to stir about; to clean out, *to excite.*

淘氣 *T'ao*[2] *ch'i*[4]. *Provoking;* troublesome; mischievous; fidgety:—Note 10.

喜 *Hsi*[3]. Joy, delight; *to be pleased with;* to give joy to; to rejoice.

歡 *Hwan*[1]. Joy (in expression); glad, merry; *to rejoice;* to gladden.

喜歡 To be pleased with, *to like;* to rejoice.

瘡 *Ch'wang*[1]. A sore, *a boil,* an ulcer. In some places, the itch.

一回 *I*[1] *hwei*[2]. Once, one time:—Les. 64.

藥 or 葯 *Yao*[4]. *Medicine,* physic, drugs, chemicals; gunpowder.

大道 *Ta*[4] *tao*[4]. *The main road,* a highway; fundamental truth.

Digitized by Google

是走大道好、小路難找得很找。○我[14]打算十五六到家、至遲不過十七日。○這[15]本書頂貴重、你要小心用他。○送[16]他這些禮物、也很可以。○他[17]們弟兄三個、最多有四十畝地。○這[18]個洗臉盆、至少也值四百錢。○西[19]國的狗、白天最老實、到了下黑下夜裏、纔利害。○眞[20]神是天地的主宰、最尊貴、最聰明、最能幹。○這[21]個布頂好頂好、我也要去買他的。

13 It is better, after all, to go the main road; the small road is exceedingly hard to find.

14 I propose to reach home on the fifteenth or sixteenth, or, at the latest, by the seventeenth.

15 This book is very precious, you must be careful how you use it.

16 To make him these presents will answer very well.

17 The three brothers have, at most, but forty mow of land.

18 This wash-basin is worth, at the very least, four hundred cash.

19 Western dogs are very docile in the day-time: it is only when night comes that they are fierce.

20 The true God is Lord of heaven and earth, very great, very wise and very powerful.

21 This cloth is first-rate; I also will go and buy of him.

小道 *Hsiao³ tao⁴*. . . . . A by-road, a path.

貴 *Kwei⁴*. Honorable; dignified; a term of . . . . . respectful address; dear, high priced; *precious;* to honor, to value.

重 *Chung⁴*. Heavy; weighty; severe; heinous; . . . . . grave; *to honor;* to regard as important. Also *ts'ung²*.

貴重 To value highly; *precious;* honorable; dignified.

高貴 *Kao¹ kwei⁴*. Highly valued, *precious;* . . . . . *rare*:—Note 15.

物 *Wu⁴*. A thing; matter; *an article;* goods; . . . . a creature, a being, the *non ego*.

禮物 *Li³ wu⁴*. . . . . *Presents;* offerings.

弟兄 *Ti⁴ hsiung¹*. . . . . Brothers, brethren.

畝 *Mu³*. A Chinese acre,—about one-sixth of . . . . an English acre.

臉 *Lien³*. The cheek; *the face;* the countenance; . . . . reputation; honor.

盆 *P'ên²*. . . . . A tub; a basin.

白天 *Pai² t'ien¹*. . . . . Day-time, daylight.

黑 *Hei¹*. . . . . Black; *dark;* cloudy; obscure.

黑下 *Hei¹ hsia⁴*. . . . . At night, at dark.

下黑 *Hsia⁴ hei¹*. . . . . At night, at dark.

神 *Shên²*. The gods; *god*—in the heathen sense, ... a supernatural (good) being; the human spirit; superhuman, divine. Used by many for God.

眞神 *Chên¹ Shên²*. . . . . The true God.

宰 *Tsai³*. To rule; a steward; a minister of state; . . . . . *a ruler;* to slaughter and dress.

主宰 *Chu³ tsai³*. . . . . A ruler, the chief ruler.

尊 *Tsun¹*. High, honorable; *eminent;* to honor; . . . . . to dignify. A classifier:—Les. 140.

尊貴 *Tsun¹ kwei⁴*. Honorable, lofty; great, ... *exalted.*

聰 *Ts'ung¹*. Discriminating; *quick of apprehen-* . . . . . *sion* or perception.

聰明 *Ts'ung¹ ming²*. Discriminating; clever, ... *intelligent;* wise.

幹 *Kan⁴*. *Skill, capability;* to attend to; to . . . . follow a calling; affairs, business.

能幹 *Nêng² kan⁴*. Ability; *power;* might. . . . . .

布 *Pu⁴*. *Cloth* of any kind; to spread out; to . . . . diffuse; to publish.

Digitized by Google

第十六課

今[1]清今日天。亮天。兒正還斤天日明好。很
日天。兒個好在魚去去天兒些。高[2]睖
天。是收那來。上赶是。今大大和、
日。安割裏。市集、初今[3]媽娘天
息莊嗎。他[5]可四。天兒的氣
日。稼。。們以。是病、也
。現[6]如買你[4]初今清今[1]
明[7]在今五明三、天亮。天日

TRANSLATION.

1 It is very mild to-day, and the air is bracing.
2 Mrs. Kao's disease is somewhat better to-day.
3 To-day is the third, to-morrow will be the fourth.
4 When you go to market to-morrow you may buy five catties of fish.
5 Are they, at present, still there?
6 It is just now time to reap the harvest.
7 To-morrow will be the Sabbath.

2 The second clause is in apposition with the first, and supplementary to it. The clauses should be separated by a short pause.

3 In some places, especially in the South, 弄飯 completely supplants 做飯.

7 得 as here used is read *tei*³ in Peking, but retains its normal sound in Shantung. It is never used in this way in the South, 要 being used instead.

9 晚, in the sense of late, is rarely used in the South, being nearly always replaced by 遲.

10 淘氣 Lit., *stir up anger*; i.e., *provoking, vexatious*, in which sense it is used in most places. In some places, however, notably in Peking, it is used in the sense of *mischievous, fidgety*, which leaves out of view all reference to the person affected. The "anger" excited is evidently that of the party affected by the "mischief."

11 的 is to be understood after 你, and in similar cases is often expressed. The construction is thoroughly Chinese; viz., *your this boil*, for, *this boil of yours*.

13 The 還 at the beginning of this sentence implies that a mistake had been made in going by the small road, or at least a question is raised as to which road to take.

15 高貴 as used in Shantung means *precious, rare*, in the sense of being hard to get or hard to replace. In Peking it is only so used of persons. It is replaced in the South by 貴重, which adds to its ordinary meaning that of rarity or preciousness.

16 很可以 Lit., *very can do*; i.e., *will do very well*.

19 下黑 or 黑下. Both forms are used in the North, the one in some places, the other in other places. In the South 夜裡 is chiefly used, 黑下 being heard in some places.

21 頂好 is repeated for emphasis, which is a very common idiom. The 他 at the close refers to the person of whom the cloth was bought.

LESSON XVI.

Common Time Particles.

今日 or 今天 To-day.
明日 or 明天 To-morrow.
昨日 or 昨天 Yesterday.

The two forms are used indifferently in most places. In Nanking the forms with 日 are rarely used.

今兒 or 今兒個 To-day.
明兒 or 明兒個 To-morrow.
昨兒 or 昨兒個 Yesterday.

These are colloquial forms in constant use. The addition of 個 is peculiar to Pekingese.

前日 or 前天 Day before yesterday.
後日 or 後天 Day after to-morrow.
前兒 or 前兒個 Day before yesterday.
後兒 or 後兒個 Day after to-morrow.

The addition of 個 is peculiar to Pekingese.

現在 } Now, at present. The two forms are
如今 } substantially equivalent, which one is used being chiefly a matter of euphony. If there be any difference, it is that the first is more definitely immediate than the second.

後來 Afterwards, in future, then.
以後 Afterwards, subsequently.

There are many other ways of marking time. See Les. 117 to 120.

Digitized by Google

我[8]兒晚上、肚子昨日疼了一天。○明[9]兒個我請客。○前[10]日我去會見他、他不在家。○現[11]在饅頭饃饃蒸好得了。○在[12]二月裏我見了他、以後再沒見他。○後[13]來的事情、你還能先曉得嗎。○現[14]在已經到了時候、我要去考書。○若[15]是今兒個我就起身。○僱妥了牲口、明兒個王[16]大人有信說、天

8 Yesterday my belly ached the whole day.
9 To-morrow evening I want to invite company.
10 Day before yesterday I went to see him and he was not at home.
11 By this time the bread is sufficiently steamed.
12 I saw him in the second month, and I have not seen him again since.
13 And can you foreknow that which is future?
14 The time has now fully arrived; I must go and hear my class.
15 If I succeed in hiring animals to-day, I shall start to-morrow.
16 General Wang has sent word saying that he will come to see me day after to-morrow.

VOCABULARY.

今 *Chin*[1]. . . . . Now, presently.
前 *Ch'ien*[2]. To advance; *before in time or place;* . . . . . in the presence of; the former; previously; the south side.
如 *Ju*[2]. *As, like;* as if; according to; if, perhaps; to equal:—Les. 99.
昨 *Tsoă*[2]. . . . . *Yesterday;* recently.
現 *Hsien*[4]. To manifest; *now,* at present; current; . . . . . plain, apparent; for the occasion.
暖 *Nwan*[3]. . . . . Warm; bland, mild.
暖和 *Nwan*[3] *hê*[2]. . . . . *Warm;* to warm.
天氣 *T'ien*[2] *ch'i*[4]. *The air,* the atmosphere; . . . . . the weather.
清亮 *Ch'ing*[1] *liang*[4]. Refreshing, bracing, cool; . . . . . pure.
大娘 *Ta*[4] *niang*[2]. A father's elder brother's . . . . . wife; applied at large as a term of respect to any elderly woman, *Mrs.*
大媽 *Ta*[4] *ma*[1]. Same as 大娘. Southern.
集 *Chi*[2]. To flock together; to gather; to col- . . . . lect; to compile; *a market or fair.*
赶集 *Kan*[3] *chi*[2]. To go to market:—Note 4. . . . . .
市 *Shi*[4]. . . . *A market;* to trade; a crowd; vulgar.
魚 *Yü*[2]. . . . . A fish.
初 *Ch'u*[1]. To begin; *the first,* the beginning:— . . . . . Note 3.
割 *Kê*[1]. To cut; to divide; *to reap;* to deduct, ... to take off.
收割 *Shou*[1] *kê*[1]. . . . . To reap, to harvest.
莊 *Chwang*[1]. *Growing grain;* sedate, serious; . . . . . well-behaved.
稼 *Chia*[4]. Farming, husbandry; *standing grain;* . . . . . a sheaf.
莊稼 *Standing grain;* the crops; farming.
肚 *Tu*[4]. *The belly,* the abdomen; the temper or . . . . . mind. Also *tu*[3].
晚上 *Wan*[3] *shang*[4]. . . . . The evening.
下晚 *Hsia*[4] *wan*[3]. . . . . The evening.
饅 *Man*[2]. . . . . Steamed bread or cakes; bread.
饅頭 *Man*[2] *t'ou*[2]. Bread,—always steamed by . . . . . the Chinese, but in foreign families the term is used of baked bread.
饃 *Moă*[2]. Steamed cakes or rolls. In use always . . . . . doubled.
蒸 *Chêng*[1]. Steam, vapor; *to cook by steaming;* . . . . . to distil; to decoct.
考 *K'ao*[3]. A deceased father, ancestors; *to exa-* . . . . . *mine* a candidate or a pupil; to question.
考書 *K'ao*[3] *shu*[1]. To hear a recitation. A . . . . . foreign term:—Note 14.
妥 *T'oă*[3]. Secure, safe, firm; *satisfactory,* all . . . . . right; ready:—Les. 109.

Digitized by Google

他後天日來見我。○保[17]住子很結實、後來必是個好漢子。○你[18]在這裏住一宿、明日再走不好嗎。○看[19]他現在這夜樣用心、以後必有出息。○野[20]地裏的草、今日還在、明日就丟在爐裏。○我[21]從前沒見他、今天纔見了。○這[22]個事情、今兒個不能定規、可以等到明日兒個再說。○如[23]今電報已經行在中國、以後火輪車也必要行。

17 Pao Chu-tsī is very hardy: in due time he will certainly be a robust man.

18 Will it not do for you to stay here to-night and go on again to-morrow?

19 Seeing he is so diligent now, he will no doubt turn out well hereafter.

20 The grass of the field to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven.

21 I never saw him before: I have only just seen him to-day.

22 This business cannot be settled to-day: wait till to-morrow and we will talk about it again.

23 The telegraph has already become an accomplished fact in China, and railroads will succeed by and by.

起身 *Ch'i³ shên¹*. To start to go anywhere, to set off.

結 *Chie¹*. A knot; to knot, to tie; to bind by a contract; to set, to stiffen; *strong, vigorous;* to bear,—as fruit. Also *chie²*.

結實 *Chie¹ shi²*. To bear fruit; strong, tough, vigorous, *robust*.

漢 *Han⁴*. A noted Chinese dynasty; Chinese; *a large strong man;* a man.

好漢子 *Hao³ han⁴ tsï³*. A strong man, a fine portly fellow.

宿 *Su⁴, hsiu¹*. A stage where one rests for the night; a night's rest; *to pass the night*, to lodge; a constellation.

出息 *Ch'u¹ hsi²*. *Outcome*, profit.

野 *Yie³*. A waste; *a common;* a desert; the country; savage, wild; rustic, rude.

草 *Ts'ao³*. Herbs, *grass;* weeds; straw; hastily, carelessly; the running hand; a rough draft, female.

丟 *Tiu¹*. To cast away; to throw aside; *to throw or pitch;* to lose.

定規 *Ting⁴ kwei¹*. To decide, to settle, to fix.

報 *Pao⁴*. To recompense; to revenge; to inform, to report; *a gazette*, a newspaper.

電報 *Tien⁴ pao⁴*. The telegraph; a telegram.

輪 *Lun²*. *A wheel*, a disk; a revolution; to rotate, to take turns.

車 *Ch'ê¹*. A wheeled carriage; a cart, a barrow. Read *chü¹* in *Wên-li*.

火輪車 *Hwo³ lun² ch'ê²*. A railroad car; the cars.

Notes.

2 In many places 一 would be inserted before 些.

3 初 is applied to the first ten days of the month to distinguish them from the second and third ten; hence 初三 is the *third*, as distinguished from the 13th and 23rd. As we have no such distinction in English, the 初 disappears in the translation.

4 In North China, markets are held in all the principal towns and villages every five days. They are always arranged so that the markets in a given neighborhood come in rotation. Tradesmen and small dealers *follow* these markets, usually attending one each day. Hence 赶集 comes to mean *to go to market*. Such markets are not prevalent in the South, where the business is mostly done by shopkeepers.

6 Peking teachers object to 好 as here used, and would change to 現在正是收割莊稼的時候. This, however, gives a slightly different sense; viz., *it is just now (in the midst of) harvest time.*

8 一天 one day; that is, the whole day.

11 The use of 得 in this connection is Pekingese.

13 這 is here intensive.

Digitized by Google

第十七課

他[1]爲甚麼打你呢。○他[2]是你的什麼人。○你[3]的大姐姐爲甚麼不來做針線呢。○你[4]們這裏娶奶嬤、奶奶行甚麼禮呢。○你[5]弄[6]壞了我今天不開快活、是爲甚麼呢。○你[7]們像像伙伙的爭鬧、是爲甚麼事呢。○現[8]在銀子甚麼行市呢。○你[9]今天、從什麼地方動身別字眼、爲甚麼不來告訴我呢。○你[10]這個事情、爲甚麼到如今纔說呢。○你[11]有病、爲甚麼不早調治呢。○我[12]說呢。

TRANSLATION.

1 Why did he strike you?
2 What [relative] is he of yours?
3 Why does your oldest sister not come to sew?
4 Here when you marry a wife, what ceremony do you have?
5 Why is it that you are not happy to-day?
6 Having spoiled my tools, why did you not come and tell me?
7 What is it you are wrangling about?
8 What is the price of silver at present?
9 From what place did you start to-day?
10 Why have you delayed till now to speak of this business?
11 If you were sick, why did you not seek treatment before this?

14 In this sentence 要 expresses both intention and necessity. 考書 is a term used in foreign schools: in native schools they have no occasion to use such a term; they use only 背書 *pei⁴ shu¹*,—*repeat the books*, and 講書 *chiang³ shu¹*,—*explain the books*.

15 僱妥 *to hire satisfactorily*; that is, in this case, *to succeed in hiring*.

16 The Chinese seems to say that 王大人 received a letter; nevertheless, the meaning here is that a letter has come from 王大人. In a different connection 王大人有信 might mean that *Wang Ta Jên* had received a letter.

22 再說 *Again speak*,—a common phrase for postponing any business, and including a promise to attend to it at some future time.

LESSON XVII.

COMPOUND RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PARTICLES.

甚麼 or **什麼** What, anything, something. The second is the colloquial form. In use, the final *n* of 甚 is always elided, and 什 is in most places pronounced in the same way as 甚. The 麼 is sometimes spoken *ma* (嗎), but is never so written.

When 爲 precedes 什麼 the combination means, *because of what*; i.e., *why*. When followed by 人 the combination means *who*.

什麼 is also used indefinitely, meaning *any, at all*; or with a negative, *none, not at all*.

Colloquially, 什麼 is in many places contracted into *sha²*. In other places 麼 is used alone for 什麼. Neither of these corruptions is heard in Eastern Shantung, but they prevail in the middle and western parts of the province, as well as in many other places, both North and South.

呢 the sign of an indirect question. Theoretically every indirect question should end with 呢. Practically it is very often omitted, and there seems to be no rule governing its use. It is more used in some places than in others. It has but a limited use in Western Mandarin. See also Les. 89.

Digitized by Google

話、你爲甚麼不留心聽呢。○你[13]甚麼時候要走、可以來告訴我一聲。○你[14]身上有甚麼病嗎。○你[15]身上有甚麼病呢。○我[16]今年八十三歲、甚麼也不能管了。○這[17]個東西、不好做甚麼。○尊[18]敬長上、不是甚麼難事。○你[19]好不好等一等、我先事。

12 Why do you not pay attention when I speak?
13 Whenever you wish to go, come and give me word.
14 Have you any disease?
15 What disease have you?
16 This year I am eighty-three, and can not attend to any thing at all.
17 This article is not good for any thing.
18 To show respect to your elders is not any thing difficult.
19 Could you wait a little and allow me first to go and attend to a little something?

Vocabulary.

甚 *Shèn*². What:—see Sub., also Les. 188. ..... Also read *shèn*⁴.

什 *Shï*². A file of ten soldiers; used as a con..... tracted form of 甚.

麼 *Moŏ*², *ma*². An interrogative particle joined ..... with various words in asking indirect questions:—see Sub.

呢 *Ni*¹. An interrogative particle ending any ..... question not answered by yes or no:—see Sub., also Les. 89.

爲 *Wei*⁴. For, *on account of;* because, where..... fore:—Les. 77. Also *wei*².

姐 *Chie*³..... An elder sister.

大姐 *Ta*⁴ *chie*³..... Eldest sister.

大姐姐 *Ta*⁴ *chie*³ *chie*³..... Eldest sister.

針 *Chên*¹. *A needle;* a pin; a stitch; to prick; ..... to stab with a needle.

針線 *Chên*¹ *hsien*⁴..... Needle-work, sewing.

娶 *Ch'ü*³..... To take a wife, to marry.

媳 *Hsi*²..... A son's wife.

婦 *Fu*⁴.... *A wife;* a married woman; a female.

媳婦 A daughter-in-law; a wife.

奶 *Nai*³. The breasts, the udder; to suckle; ..... to suck; milk; a nurse.

奶奶 A paternal grandmother; also applied to any elderly lady; a wife (Nankingese).

快活 *K'wai*⁴ *hwoŏ*². Cheerful, in good spirits, ... *happy.*

味 *Wei*⁴..... *Taste,* flavor; a delicacy.

開味 *K'ai*¹ *wei*⁴. To enjoy oneself; *cheerful;* to ..... like; to have an appetite.

傢什 *Chia*¹ *shi*². Utensils, *tools,* fixtures:— ..... Note 6.

爭 *Chêng*¹. *To wrangle,* to contest; to strive for ..... precedence.

爭鬧 *Chêng*¹ *nao*⁴. *To wrangle,* to quarrel, to ..... fight.

別字眼 *Pie*² *tsi*⁴ *yien*³. *To altercate,* to dispute, ... to quarrel.

行 *Hang*². A row; a series or order; a guild, a .....trade; *a mercantile establishment,* a store. See *hsing*², from which it is often distinguished by inserting a dot, thus—行; or by a small circle, thus,—行. A classifier:—Les. 42.

行市 *Hang*² *shï*⁴. The market price, the cur..... rent rate.

動 *Tung*⁴. *To move;* to excite; to shake; to ..... begin; to take action:—Les. 91.

動身 *Tung*⁴ *shên*¹..... To move; to start.

調 *T'iao*². To harmonize; to mix; *to regulate;* ..... to stir up, to incite. Also *tiao*⁴.

治 *Chï*⁴. To govern, to rule; *to heal, to cure;* to ..... oversee; to condemn.

調治 To treat a disease; to cure.

留 *Liu*². To detain,—as a guest; to keep back; ..... to leave; *to hold on to;* to delay.

留心 *Liu*² *hsin*¹. To be careful, to give good ..... heed; to bear in mind.

一聲 *I*¹ *shêng*¹. One sound; *a call;* a cry, a ..... shout, etc.

Digitized by Google

去做一點甚麼。○你[20]是甚麼人、敢這等大模大樣。○他[21]的本事、和他父親不差甚麼。○[22]北屋的後房的炕不好燒、常冒煙、不知是甚麼毛病。○那[23]個人眞不知道甚麼、我爲他費了多少事、臨走任甚麼也沒說。

20 Who are you, that you dare to put on such airs?

21 His ability is about equal to that of his father.

22 The k'ang in the north room does not draw well; it is constantly smoking. I do not know what defect it has.

23 That man really does not know anything. I have taken any amount of pains on his account, yet when he was about to start he said nothing at all.

敬 *Ching⁴*. To honor, *to show respect to;* reverence; to worship.

尊敬 *Tsun¹ ching⁴*. To show respect to; to honor.

長 *Chang³*. Senior; *an elder;* a superior; to grow; to swell. Also *ch'ang²*.

長上 *Chang³ shang⁴*. Elders; superiors.

模 *Moŏ², mu²*. A mold; *a pattern*, a model.

大模大樣 *Ta⁴ mu² ta⁴ yang⁴*. An ostentatious manner; braggadocio.

本事 *Pĕn³ shï⁴*. *Ability*, capacity,—including both natural and acquired qualities; resources.

差 *Ch'a¹*. To mistake; *to differ;* a fault, a difference; a discrepancy:—Les. 57. Also *ch'ai²* and *ts'i²*.

屋 *Wu¹*. *A house;* a room, an apartment.

好燒 *Hao³ shao¹*. To burn well,—of fuel; *to draw*,—as a k'ang, or a stove.

冒 *Mao⁴*. To rush forward heedlessly; *to rush or stream out;* to feign; heedless.

烟 or 煙 *Yien¹*. *Smoke;* tobacco or opium,—as smoked.

毛 *Mao²*. *Hair*, fur, feathers; mould; tare of goods.

毛病 *Mao² ping⁴*. A fault; a peccadillo; *a defect;* an idiosyncrasy; a disease.

費 *Fei⁴*. *To spend*, to use; to lavish; outlay; waste; trouble.

多少 *Toŏ¹ shao³*. How much? a great deal, *ever so much.*

臨 *Lin²*. To look down on; to approach; to descend; at the point of, *about to;* whilst.

任 *Jĕn⁴*. A trust, a duty; to bear, to sustain; *to allow*, to give rein to:—Les. 83.

任甚麼 *Jĕn⁴ shĕn² moŏ²*. No matter what; anything at all.

管甚麼 *Kwan³ shĕn² moŏ²*. The same, but not *t'ung hsing.*

NOTES.

2 做針線, *to do needle thread;* i.e., *to sew, to do needlework.*

4 娶媳婦 means literally, *to marry a daughter-in-law.* When a girl is first married, and for some years, at least, her duty as a daughter-in-law completely overshadows her duty as a wife; hence she is not usually called a wife, but a daughter-in-law. The proper word for wife is 妻 *ch'i⁴* which, however, is rarely used in the North, though frequently heard in the South.

6 傢什 is equivalent to 傢伙, but is not so widely used. Though written 傢什, it is generally pronounced as if written 傢使.

7 別字眼, *to distinguish character eyes;* i.e., *to dispute about words, to jangle.* 眼 is often put for the important or central part.

8 We might insert 是 in this sentence, thus,—現在銀子是什麼行市呢,—and the English learner has a strong feeling that it should be there. Chinese, however, while it will tolerate it, prefers to omit it. The same remarks apply to the 17th sentence, and to many others.

10 The order of this sentence might be changed as follows;—爲什麼到如今纔說這個事情呢,—and thus agree with the English order; but the Chinese prefers to set forth the object first.

12 The "when" is implied in the order of the words.

14 This use of 甚麼 is thoroughly colloquial, but seems to be quite general. It is to be spoken without any emphasis.

15 甚麼 is here used normally, and is to be emphasized.

16 The force of 也 is untranslatable. The 甚麼 is to be strongly emphasized.

Digitized by Google

第十八課

我[1]要買好的、不要壞的。○他[2]要白的、不要黑的。○粗[3]的、細的、不好合在一塊兒。○可[4]以先用那些零碎的。○客[5]嫌酒冷、再要熱的。○那[6]個胖的、是他女兒。○這[7]些桃兒桃子不大好、生的多、熟的少。○他[8]一家人、沒有一個不伶俐的。○你[9]是甚麼人、答小的叫同喜。○教友[10]也不能一樣、有眞的、有假的。○沒[11]有再好的嗎、答沒有、這還不算好的嗎。○有[12]軟和的、可以給我一個。○世[13]上的人、

Translation.

1 I want to buy good ones; I don't want spoiled ones.
2 He wants the white, not the black.
3 It is not proper to mix the coarse and the fine together.
4 First use those odds and ends.
5 The guest complains that the wine is cold, and asks that the next be hot.
6 That fat one is his daughter.
7 These peaches are not very good: there are more green ones than ripe ones. (Lit., the green are many, the ripe are few.)
8 There is not one of the whole family that is not clever.
9 Who are you? Ans. Your servant is called T'ung-Hsi.
10 Nor are church members all alike;—some are true and some are false.
11 Have you no better ones? Ans. No: are not these to be considered good ones?
12 If you have any *soft* ones you may give me one.
13 Of men the intelligent are few, the stupid many.

19 In the first clause 甚麼 is used to modify the abruptness of the request; as if we should say, *would it be at all convenient for you*, etc. This use of 甚麼 is more or less local. Some teachers would prefer the sentence written 你等一等好不好, etc., which is neither better nor worse, save that it throws a little more stress on the *waiting*. The first means, *can you wait a little?* the second, *can you not wait a little?*

20 模樣 is separated, and 大 repeated for rhetorical effect.

21 The proper structure of this sentence would demand 的 after father, but the Chinese omit it without feeling the incongruity.

23 Note how the pronoun is omitted where the English requires it.

LESSON XVIII

的 Joined to Adjectives.

When 的 is joined to an adjective it turns it into a noun of quality, approximating in sense to "the" joined to an adjective of quality in English; as 好的, *the good*, 壞的, *the spoiled*, etc. The translation, however, will vary very much with the circumstances of the case.

Vocabulary.

粗 *Ts'u*[1]. Rough; large; *coarse;* vulgar; gross, ... vile.

細 *Hsi*[4]. Fine; *small;* delicate; trifling; subtle; ..... careful.

塊 *K'wai*[4]..... A lump; a piece:—Les. 27.

一塊兒 *I*[1] *k'wai*[4] *êr*[2]. *All together*, all at once; ..... together with, in company with:—Les. 105.

嫌 *Hsien*[2] *To dislike;* to find fault with, to ..... have an aversion to; fastidious.

酒 *Chiu*[3]. All spirituous liquors,—fermented, ... malted and distilled.

涼 *Liang*[2]..... Cool, *cold;* distant, cool.

桃 *T'ao*[2]..... A peach.

伶 *Ling*[2]..... Active; *clever.*

Digitized by Google

聰明的少、糊塗的多。○[14]在家裏穿舊的、出門穿新的。○[15]那一家有兩個媳婦、一個俊的、一個醜的。○[16]我看這是個公的、那是個母的。○[17]長的不合式、若是沒有短的、可以不買。○[18]他一家人、老的老、小的小、一個中用的也沒有。○[19]家裏有現成的東西、現做也不費事。○[20]院子裏的樹、有高的、有矮的、有大的、有小的、有活的、有死的。

14 At home wear the old [clothes]: when you go abroad wear the new.

15 There are two daughters-in-law in that family; one pretty and one homely.

16 I think this one is a male and that one a female.

17 The long are unsuitable. If there are no short ones you need not buy.

18 The old are too old and the young are too young: there is not one capable person in the whole family.

19 There is ready material in the house: to make it when needed will be no trouble.

20 Of the trees in the yard some are high and some low, some large and some small, some alive and some dead

伶俐 *Li*⁴. . . . . *Clever*, talented; neat.
伶俐 *Talented*, smart; shrewd, quick-witted.
小的 *Hsiao*³ *ti*¹. Your humble servant:—Note 9.
友 *Yiu*³. . . . A companion, *an associate;* a friend·
教 *Chiao*⁴. To cause to do:—Les. 71; a sect; *a church;* doctrine, tenets. See *chiao*⁴.
教友 One who belongs to the same society or church; *church members;* membership.
假 *Chia*³. *False;* feigned; to avail of, to borrow; if, supposing:—Les. 123. Also *chia*⁴.
軟 *Jwen*³. *Soft*, weak, tender; yielding; limber, pliable.
軟和 *Jwen*³ *hê*². *Soft*, pliable; tender-hearted.
世 *Shï*⁴. An age, a generation; *the world;* mankind; times; hereditary.
塗 *Tu*¹. . . . . Dull, stupid. Also t'u².
糊 *Hu*². . . . . To paste; sticky; *foolish*, stupid.
糊塗 Foolish, silly; *stupid;* demented.
穿 *Ch'wan*¹. To perforate; to string, to run on or through,—as cash on a string; to put on,—as clothing, *to wear.*
舊 *Chiu*⁴. *Old;* worn out, spoiled; ancient, venerable:—Les. 97.
新 *Hsin*¹. . . . . To renew; *new;* fresh; recent.
俊 *Chün*⁴. . . . . Superior; handsome, *pretty.*
標 *Piao*¹. A signal, a flag; a sign-board; a ticket; a warrant; to make a signal; to display; to inscribe; fine, *beautiful.*
緻 *Chï*⁴. . . . . Fine in texture; soft, *elegant.*
標緻 Pretty, handsome, lovely.
醜 *Ch'ou*³. Ugly, deformed, *homely;* disagreeable; shameful.
長 *Ch'ang*². *Long*,—in time or distance; constant; to excel. See *chang*³.
短 *Twan*³. *Short* in time or distance; brief; a short-coming; few; wanting.
中 *Chung*⁴. To hit the centre; to happen according to; to fall into,—as a trap; fit, *suitable.* See *chung*¹.
中用 *Chung*⁴ *yung*⁴. *Capable*, efficient; with a negative,—worthless.
現成 *Hsien*⁴ *ch'êng*². Ready; ready-made; *ready to hand.*
費事 *Fei*⁴ *shï*⁴. To spend effort; to take pains; laborious, *troublesome.*
樹 *Shu*⁴. . . . . *A tree;* plants in general.
矮 *Ai*³. . . . . *Low*, squat; short, small; to lower.

Digitized by Google

第十九課

地[1]是圓圓的。○你[2]快快的去請他來。○我[3]慢慢的一會兒就去。○他[4]是暗暗的說你的不是。○這[5]個人常常和他兄弟打架。○張[6]先生不會辦事、常常的上當。○明[7]天我要早早的起身。○你[8]說這個話、明明不合情理。○往[9]往有人看錯了這個事。

Translation.

1 The earth is round.
2 Do you go quickly and ask him to come.
3 I shall go presently.
4 He is covertly finding fault with you.
5 This man is constantly fighting with his younger brother.
6 Mr. Chang does not know how to do business. He is constantly being cheated.
7 To-morrow I want to start early.
8 What you say is plainly contrary to reason.
9 Men frequently make a mistake in this matter.

Notes.

5 In the South 凉 is very little used, 冷 quite taking its place. If 冷 were used in this connection in the North, it would imply that the wine was not only not hot (as it should be according to Chinese ideas), but cold—excessively cold.

7 In Peking 桃 never takes 子, and in Nanking it never takes 兒. In Chinanfu either may be used. In some places neither is used.

9 The question is supposed to be asked by a magistrate of one appearing before him. In such cases the party addressed generally speaks of himself as 小的, *the little one*, unless he is a literary man, when he calls himself 晚生 *t'ung³ shêng¹*, or if he has a degree, simply 生.

10 也 indicates that the sentence is in addition to some previous statement, and, combined with the negative, has the force of "nor." The 能 does not appear in the translation. Its use intimates a difference in Christians *as a matter of course*.

12 *If*, is here clearly implied.

16 This sentence has reference to fowls, or to birds.

18 It would seem as if 太 (Lesson 24) ought to be joined with the second 老 and 小, and it might be so said; the correlation of the clauses, however, allows of its omission, which adds to the sprightliness of the style.

19 Note the opposite meanings which the two 現 here have.

20 Or, *there are high ones and low ones, etc.*

LESSON XIX.

Adjectives Reduplicated for Emphasis.

Adjectives are often repeated for the sake of emphasis. This idiom is important and ever recurring. Most adjectives and some adverbs may be so repeated. Adjectives when repeated generally become adverbs.

For the reduplication of verbs, see Les. 33.

Vocabulary.

圓 *Yüen²*. *Round*, circular; spherical; to make round; to interpret a dream.

慢 *Man⁴*. Remiss; *slow;* sluggish, dilatory; supercilious.

慢慢的 Slowly; gradually; *presently;* by and by.

暗 *An⁴*. Dark; obscure; gloomy; secret; *covert*, stealthy; to one's self, mentally.

辦 *Pan⁴*. To administer; *to manage;* to transact, to do; to provide.

上當 *Shang⁴ tang⁴*. *To get cheated*, to be victimized, to fall into a trap:—Note 6.

往往 *Wang³ wang³*. *Frequently*, every little while:—Les. 108. Sub.

輕 *Ch'ing¹*. Light; to think lightly of; to slight; frivolous; *gently;* young.

笨 *Pên⁴*. Stupid; dull of apprehension; awkward, clumsy; unwieldy.

蠢 *Ch'un³*. . . . . Simple, foolish, *stupid*, doltish.

Digitized by Google

再[10]要你輕輕的關這個門。○這[11]個孩子頂蠢笨、上學也是白白兒的。○不[12]用着急、慢慢的就明白了。○稱[13]了高高的一百二十斤。○沒[14]有大進項、也不過僅僅的彀花費。○你[15]打聽明白了、可以悄悄兒的來告訴我。○漸漸人[16]過了四十歲、身子漸

10 Hereafter I want you to shut this door gently.
11 This child is extremely stupid: it is useless for him to go to school.
12 Don't get impatient: by and by you will understand.
13 It weighed one hundred and twenty catties, good weight.
14 He has no great income,—no more than barely enough to cover expenses.
15 When you have found out clearly, come quietly and tell me.
16 When a man has passed forty, his strength gradually declines.

着 *Chao²*, *choa²*. To become; to attain to; to cause, to send, to order; to place; yes, truly, exactly so; a move in chess. Les. 20. Sub.

急 *Chi²*. *Impatient*, anxious; hurried; uneasy; in extremity.

着急 Anxious, excited; eager; *impatient.*

稱 *Ch'ēng¹*. To style, to call; to praise, to compliment; *to weigh.* Also *ch'ēng⁴* and *ch'ēn⁴*.

進 *Chin⁴*. To advance, to make progress; *to enter*, to go in, up, or on.

項 *Hsiang⁴*. The neck; a sort, an item, a class; a term (in algebra); *money*, funds.

進項 Income, receipts.

僅 *Chin³*. *Barely;* scarcely; only.

花費 *Hwa¹ fei⁴*. Expense, outlay.

打聽 *Ta³ t'ing⁴*. To make inquiry, to find out by inquiring.

悄 *Ch'iao³*. Secret; *quiet;* private; anxious.

悄悄的 Secretly; clandestinely; *quietly;* be quiet, keep still.

漸 *Chien⁴*. *Gradually*, step by step; slowly.

衰 *Shwai¹*. To wear away, to decay, *to decline;* to fade. Also *ts'wei¹*.

敗 *Pai⁴*. To destroy; to ruin; to suffer defeat; *enfeebled;* damaged.

衰敗 To decay; *to fail, to grow infirm;* to suffer defeat.

頹 *T'wei¹*. *Broken down*, ruined.

衰頹 To go to ruin; *to grow infirm.*

苦 *K'u³*. Bitter; unpleasant; painful; *urgent;* afflictions, sufferings.

苦苦的 *Earnestly*, urgently; severely.

哀 *Ai¹*. To grieve for; to pity; to lament; *to beseech;* urgent, importunate; alas!

哀告 *Ai¹ kao⁴*. To beseech, *to entreat;* to importune.

强 *Ch'iang³*. To compel, *to force;* to constrain; to strengthen. See *ch'iang²*; also read *chiang⁴*, and *chiang¹*.

强嘴 *Ch'iang³ tswei³*. To deny in the face of evidence, to asseverate.

倖 *Chiang⁴*. Unsubmissive, obstreperous.

嘴倖 *Tswei³ chiang⁴*. Unreasonable talk; contradictory.

離 *Li²*. To leave, *to separate from;* to be absent; to scatter; from, away from:—Les. 57.

遠 *Yüen³*. Distant; *to keep away from.*

逃 *T'ao²*. *To abscond*, to flee; to escape.

逃學 *T'ao² hsüe²*. To play truant.

應該 *Ying¹ kai¹*. Ought to, duty bound.

蹧 or 遭 *Tsao¹*. *To meet;* to endure; to experience; a time:—Les. 64.

踢 *T'a⁴*. To stamp; to tread on.

蹧踢 To destroy wantonly; *to abuse;* to spoil.

紛 *Fēn¹*. *Confused;* many things at once.

紛紛不— *Fēn¹ fēn¹ pu⁴ i¹*. Confused, contradictory.

悶 *Mēn⁴*. Sad; *melancholy,* heavy-hearted; lonely; a feeling of oppression.

樂 *Lo⁴*. Joy, pleasure, fun; to rejoice, *to be happy;* to be pleased with. Also *yo⁴*.

悶悶不樂 *Mēn⁴ mēn⁴ pu⁴ lo⁴*. *Melancholy,* discouraged.

Digitized by Google

就衰敗了。○我[17]的意思、還是苦苦的去哀告他。○明明[18]是你的錯、你還這樣强嘴。○我[19]勸你以後要離他遠遠的。○他[20]這樣的逃學、應該重重的打他。○你[21]的孩子也多多的、你還能說他不蹧蹋人的東西嗎。○街[22]上的話、紛紛不一。○你[23]常這樣悶悶不樂、最容易生病。

17 My idea is to go again and earnestly entreat him.

18 Clearly it is your fault; and yet you asseverate in this way.

19 I recommend you hereafter to keep far away from him.

20 You ought to whip him severely for having played truant in this way.

21 Your children also are quite numerous: would you venture to assert that they never abuse anybody's things?

22 The reports on the street are contradictory.

23 When a man is all the time so melancholy as this, it is very easy to become sick.

Notes.

1 Peking teachers object to doubling 圓, but Southern teachers approve.

3 Both forms are in general use. If 一會兒 be used, the translation should be *presently*, instead of *by and by*.

6 上當 Some would write 檔, but the general custom of Chinese books is to write simply 當. The derivation of the meaning is not certain. Perhaps it is from the idea of a pawn or surety, implying that the party found himself suddenly placed in the power of another; or perhaps from the idea of an opening or empty space, implying that the party took for reality that which proved to be "thin air."

7 早些, properly, *a little earlier*.

13 The general custom in China, in weighing all kinds of coarse commodities, is to weigh with the end of the scale beam considerably above the level, and there is generally some contest on the part of the purchaser to get it higher. Steelyards are nearly always made to weigh light in anticipation of this custom.

16 If the sentence were rendered, *His strength will gradually decline*, it would show more clearly the force of the 就, but it would not give the whole idea of the sentence so well.

20 We might with equal propriety render, *If he plays truant in this way, you ought to whip him severely.*

21 人 is used indefinitely for *anybody*.

23 Such expressions as 紛紛不一, and 悶悶不樂 in the next sentence, are taken from the book language. Mandarin is constantly spiced by such ready-made phrases, appropriated from the book language. By use they become familiar to the unlearned as well as the learned.

LESSON XX.

The Auxiliary Verbs 着 and 之.

着 is the most important and widely used of all the auxiliary verbs. It expresses the carrying of the action of the principal verb into effect. It often gives the force of the present participle. It may be joined to almost any active verb; but is much more frequently joined to some than to others.

In Peking, when 着 immediately follows the verb, it is read *choʻ*[2]; but when 不 or 得 intervenes, it is always read *chao*[2]. This distinction of reading is confined to Pekingese.

之 is a *Wên li* particle having various uses, one of which corresponds in a measure to the use of 着 as an auxiliary in Mandarin. It is used in Shantung and elsewhere as a substitute for 着, which, in Eastern Shantung, it largely replaces. It can not, however, be used with a negative, as 着 can. It is probably an old form which has been superseded by 着 in most places. It is sometimes heard both in Nanking and in Kiukiang.

Digitized by Google

第二十課

某[1]人仗着他有力氣。○那[2]個人想之着打你。○你[3]該等着先生的空兒。○說[4]着容易、做着難。○黑[5]夜你該鎖着那個後門。○他[6]專靠着他父親的錢、過日子。○這[7]些話要緊、你該留心聽之着。○你[8]不要指着這個、說那個。○婦[9]人該順着他的丈夫。○你[10]不認得路、可以找個人來引領着你。○他[11]們兩個、在門口坐着說話。○王[12]先生覺得我待他不公道。○他[13]不肯照覺得着

Translation.

1 The man referred to presumes on the fact that he is strong.
2 That man has a mind to beat you.
3 You ought to wait the teacher's leisure.
4 To talk is easy; to perform is difficult (or, talking is easy; performing is difficult).
5 You ought to lock that back door at night.
6 He depends entirely upon his father's money for a living.
7 These words are important; you should pay attention to them.
8 Do not address this one when you are speaking of that one.
9 A woman ought to obey her husband.
10 If you are not acquainted with the road, you should get a man to guide you.
11 They two are sitting at the door talking.
12 Mr. Wang feels that I treated him unjustly.

Vocabulary.

之 *Chï*[1]. To go, to proceed; belonging to; sign of possessive in *Wên li:*—see Sub. He; she; it; this; that; also used as an expletive.

某 *Mu*[3], *mou*[3]. A certain person, so-and-so,—used when it is not convenient to use the name.

想 *Hsiang*[3]. To think on; to reflect; to remember; *to plan;* to expect; to wish.

空 *K'ung*[4]. An empty place, a crevice; vacant, unoccupied; time, *leisure;* a deficiency, a defalcation. Also *k'ung*[1].

黑夜 *Hei*[1] *yie*[4]. Night; *at night.*

鎖 *Soa*[3]. A lock; *to lock.*

專 *Chwan*[1]. Singly, *solely;* bent on; special.

靠 *K'ao*[4]. To lean upon, *to rely on;* to trust to; to be near; adjoining.

指 *Chï*[3]. A finger or toe; *to point at;* to refer to; to direct; to rely upon.

婦人 *Fu*[4] *jên*[2]. A married woman, a wife.

順 *Shun*[4]. To comply, to yield to; *to obey;* dutiful; convenient.

丈 *Chang*[4]. A rod of ten Chinese feet; *a senior;* one worthy of respect.

丈夫 *Chang*[4] *fu*[1]. *A husband;* a man (*vir*), a knight; a brave man.

領 *Ling*[3]. A collar, a necktie; to receive from, to take:—Les. 79; to direct; *to lead,* to act as guide. A classifier:—Les. 125.

引 *Yin*[3]. To draw out; *to lead, to guide;* to induce; to introduce; to thread,—as a needle; to quote; an introduction or preface.

覺 *Chüe*[2], *chioa*[2]. To perceive; to be sensible of, *to feel;* to awaken, to arouse. Also *chiao*[4].

覺得 *Chüe*[2] *tê*[2]. To feel, to be sensible of.

照 *Chao*[4]. To enlighten, to shine; to front towards; to care for; to accord with; *according to,* as; a pass, a permit.

主人 *Chu*[3] *jên*[2]. Master, employer.

碰 *P'êng*[4]. To run against; to bump; *to meet;* to happen on.

作 *Tsu*[3]. To let out, to tell:—See *tsoa*[4] and *tsoa*[1].

作聲 *Tsu*[3] *shêng*[1]. To tell, to divulge, to let out a secret:—Note 14.

Digitized by Google

着他主人的意思行。○[14]若在路上碰着他、不要作聲。○[15]暫且留着、也不礙事。○[16]穿着雨衣、下雨也不妨事。○[17]你不按着規矩不行。○[18]守着甚麼、學甚麼。○[19]我的小刀子、已經找着了。○[20]好好生看孩子、不要磕着跌着他。○[21]他的孩子、跟着李先生念書。○[22]他不想着還錢、你跟他要、也是白費工夫。○[23]正對着門、有對我生財四個字、貼在牆上。

13 He is not willing to act according to his master's wishes.
14 If you meet him on the road, don't mention it.
15 It's no matter if you do keep it for the present.
16 When you have on rain clothes, it is no matter if it does rain.
17 It will not do for you not to follow the rule.
18 Men imitate those with whom they associate.
19 My pocket knife has already been found (or, is already found).
20 Take good care of the baby, and do not let him fall down.
21 His son goes to school to Mr. Li.
22 He does not intend to pay: it is a waste of time for you to dun him.
23 Exactly opposite the door there are pasted on the wall the four characters, "May he who is opposite me make money."

暫 *Chan*[4]. A short time, briefly; for the time being, temporarily.

且 *Ch'ie*[3]. Moreover, also, yet; further, besides:—Les. 138.

暫且 Temporarily, for the time being.

礙 *Ai*[4]. *To hinder*, to impede; to embarrass; to obstruct.

妨 *Fang*[1]. *To hinder*, to oppose; an impediment.

礙事 *Ai*[4] *shi*[1]. Matter; *consequence;* hindrance; generally used with a negative.

關事 *Kwan*[1] *shi*[4]. Same as 礙事.

妨事 *Fang*[1] *shi*[4]. Same:—Note 16.

按 *An*[1]. To act according to; as, according to. Also *an*[4].

守 *Shou*[3]. To keep; to guard; to obey; to attend to; to protect; *to associate with.*

好生 *Hao*[3] *shêng*[1]. Carefully, attentively. 生 is the form found in books, but the phrase is universally spoken *hao*[3] *shing*[4].

慎 *Shên*[4]. To act carefully; *cautious;* attentive; considerate.

好慎 *Hao*[3] *shên*[4]. Same as 好生.

磕 *K'ê*[1]. *To strike against;* to knock.

跌 *Tie*[1]. To slip and fall, to tumble; to stumble; *to fall:*—Les. 92.

念書 *Nien*[4] *shu*[1]. *To go to school;* to study; to repeat over and over.

財 *Ts'ai*[2]. *Riches*, wealth; property, goods.

貼 *T'ie*[4,1]. To attach to; *to paste to*, to post; to make up a loss; adjacent.

Notes.

3 The idea is, Do not pretend to be speaking to this one when you really mean that one;—do not whip one man over another man's shoulders.

11 Or, *They two were sitting at the door talking.* See Note, Les. 6. (5.)

14 In many places 作聲 is read *tsu*[4] *shêng*[1]. It is also often written 做聲, and pronounced *tsoù*[4] *shêng*[1]. It should be noted that 作 and 做 are both read *tsoù*[4] in Peking; but in most places the latter is read *tsou*[4]. The two characters are by no means interchangeable.

15 Or, if referring to a person, *It is no matter if you do detain him for the present.*

16 妨事 is Southern Mandarin, though occasionally heard in the North. 關事 is frequently written 管事, and 礙事 is more widely understood than either of these forms.

18 Or, *Men take to that with which they are constantly brought in contact.*

20 磕 is here used causatively, not meaning to strike, but to cause, or allow, the child to fall down and strike itself on the ground. Chinese verbs are often so used.

23 When it is desired to isolate a clause, or expression, and use it as a substantive, it is followed by a statement of the number of characters it contains. These characters are pasted up by the shopkeeper himself; but they read as if expressing the good wishes of the party on whose wall they are pasted.

Digitized by Google

第二十一課

我[1]正子。知的和是人、自
自去、人。○己的他我是家
己我自。說毛的應[5]○自一要
的不[4]他當朋。病○己自樣留
錢放自愛友。○這[9]各一的着
不心。己人○我[8]不兒個罪。使用
殼。打如自[7]己己是的。○喚
○先[3]自。己己合是的。○°
打[2]正己○不不能自[10]夥這[12]
發自的○他[6]知好的盡給個
己、你嘴的是道意買和你、事
後巴我、賣思自我殺、情

TRANSLATION.

1 My own money is not sufficient.
2 I do not feel easy to send you alone.
3 Correct yourself before you correct others.
4 He slaps his own mouth (i.e., he talks inconsistently).
5 You should love others as yourself.
6 He is my confidential friend.
7 One does not know one's own faults.
8 I do not like to speak to him myself.
9 This is not a partnership business; it is my own.
10 To commit suicide is as great a sin as to commit murder.
11 I cannot give it to you; I want to keep it for my own use.
12 You ought to decide this thing yourself.

LESSON XXI.

THE REFLEXIVE PRONOUN.

自 Self; my own, his own, etc.

己 Self; private; selfish.

自己 Self. This term is joined with the several personal pronouns to make *myself*, *thyself*, etc. It is also used alone in these same senses, the antecedent being understood. It may sometimes also be translated, *oneself*. It is frequently written, and more frequently spoken, **自家**. Both **自** and **己** are used alone, but always in ready-made book phrases. When thus used, the **自** precedes the verb with which it is joined, while **己** follows it.

自各兒 or **自己各兒** His own, her own, etc. The second form is strongly colloquial. The Nanking equivalent is **自己一個**:—Les. 66.

VOCABULARY.

己 *Chi*[3]. . . . . Self, oneself; private; special.
各 *Kê*[4]. . . . . Each, every, all:—Les. 66.
打發 *Ta*[3] *fa*[1]. To send, to dispatch; to satisfy, ... to please.
放心 *Fang*[4] *hsin*[1]. To set the mind at rest, to . . . . . be free from anxiety.
巴 *Pa*[4]. To adhere; a crust; a clamp; *the jaw;* . . . . . a tail. Also *pa*[1].
嘴巴 *Tswei*[3] *pa*[4]. The lower jaw; *the mouth.* . . . . . .
應當 *Ying*[1] *tang*[1]. Ought, should, duty bound, ... under obligation.
知己 *Chi*[1] *chi*[3]. . . . . Intimate, confidential.
愛 *Ai*[4]. *To love*, to take delight in; to wish; to . . . . . be sparing of, to grudge.
朋 *P'êng*[2]. . . . . A friend, a companion.
朋友 *P'êng*[2] *yiu*[3]. . . . . A friend, an associate.
夥 *Hwoă*[3]. A band, a company; a comrade, *a* . . . . . *partner*; numerous.
合夥 *Hê*[2] *hwoă*[3]. *A partnership;* to enter into . . . . . a partnership.
盡 *Chin*[4]. To exhaust; *finished*, ended; empty; . . . . . all, entirely; to the uttermost:—Les. 101 and 158. See *ching*[4].
自盡 *Tsï*[4] *chin*[4]. To end one's own life, to . . . . . commit suicide.
殺 *Sha*[1]. . . . . To kill; *to murder*:—Les. 183.
殺人 *Sha*[1] *jên*[2]. . . . . To commit murder.
喚 *Hwan*[4]. . . . . To call, to hail, to bid, to name.
使喚 *Shï*[3] *hwan*[4]. To employ, to use, to utilize . . . . . (C. and N.).
掛 *Kwa*[1]. To be connected with, involved in; *to* . . . . . *brush against*, to jostle. Also *kwa*[4]

Digitized by Google

該是你自己拿主意。○○不[13]關他的事、是你自己、是我自家的錯。[14]沒有人[15]地上掛着的能自己造自己的眼鏡、不是自己。○跌倒了。○哥哥不能自己拐他、[16]這是他[17]○不[18]用人送他、我他自己能去。○你[19]不靠着哥哥的功勞、自己不能得的。○救他人、若不親自去、[20]怕這個二事情、○你能辦妥當。○安分守己、也可以過來

13 He is not responsible; it was my own mistake.
14 Nobody touched him; he fell down of himself.
15 Heaven and earth could not create themselves.
16 These are his elder brother's spectacles, not his own.
17 A man cannot be saved by trusting in his own merit.
18 He does not need any one to go with him: he can go himself.
19 If you do not go yourself, I fear this business can not be satisfactorily arranged.
20 He now has upwards of twenty mow of land: if he is frugal and temperate he can make a living.

拐 *Kwai*[3]. To swindle, to decoy; to kidnap; to .....round a corner; a right angle. Read *kwai*[1],—*to brush against*, to jostle (L).

造 *Tsao*[4]. To make, to build; *to create;* to act; .....to commence.

哥 *Ke*[1]. *An elder brother;* used as a suffix to ..... show respect.

哥哥 An elder brother:—Note 16.

鏡 *Ching*[4]. A metallic mirror; a looking-glass; ..... *a lens.*

眼鏡 *Yien*[3] *ching*[4]..... Spectacles.

功 *Kung*[1].....*Merit;* achievements; virtue.

勞 *Lao*[2]. To toil, *to labor;* to trouble; wearied, ...distressed, burdened.

功勞 Meritorious deeds, merit.

救 *Chiu*[4]..... To rescue, *to save;* to liberate.

親自 *Ch'in*[1] *tsï*[4]. *Oneself;* in person, *in propria* ..... *persona.*

妥當 *T'o*[3] *tang*[4]. Satisfactory, in proper order .....or condition.

安分 *An*[1] *fèn*[4]. To do one's duty; to fill one's ..... proper station; *to be frugal.*

守己 *Shou*[3] *chi*[3]. To restrain oneself, *to be tem-* ..... *perate.*

吃虧 *Ch'ï*[1] *k'wei*[1]. *To suffer loss;* to get the ..... worst of the bargain.

埋 *Man*[2]. To conceal; to lay up; to accuse. .....Also *mai*[4].

怨 *Yüen*[4]. To hate, to feel bitter; *to murmur at;* .....malice; a wrong.

埋怨 To hold a grudge against; *to find fault with*, to murmur at.

欺 *Ch'i*[1]. To cheat; *to deceive;* to insult; to .....befool; to ridicule.

欺哄 *Ch'i*[1] *hung*[3]. *To deceive*, to impose upon. .....

底細 *Ti*[3] *hsï*[4]. The facts, the real state of the ..... case.

底裏 *Ti*[3] *li*[3]..... The same as 底細 (w).

約 *Yüe*[1], *yoa*[1]. To bind by contract, to agree with; ..... to restrain; *to estimate;* a treaty; a deed; condensed; about, nearly:—Les. 96.

摸 *Moa*[1], *mu*[1]. To feel after, to seek; *to guess;* .....to follow a pattern.

約摸 To estimate, to guess, *to speak at random.*

表 *Piao*[3]. The exterior; to manifest, *to make* ..... *known;* a signal; any instrument with a scale,—as a thermometer or a watch; a permit; kindred of a different name.

表明 *Piao*[3] *ming*[2]. To make known, to show; ..... *to tell, to publish.*

表白 *Piao*[3] *pai*[2]..... To show, to *publish.*

跟從 *Kèn*[1] *ts'ung*[2]..... To follow.

克 *K'è*[4]..... To be able; *to subdue;* to repress.

克己 *K'è*[4] *chi*[3]. To govern oneself, *to deny one-* ..... *self.*

背 *Pei*[1].....To carry on the back. Also *pei*[4].

十字架 *Shi*[2] *tsï*[4] *chia*[4]. The cross—from its ..... resemblance to the character 十.

Digitized by Google

着 跟 早 自 好 自[23] 要 我 找 日
十 從 曉 己 約 己 自 嗎。着 子。
字 我、得 表表 摸 不 己 ○ 吃 ○
架 就 了。白明、着 知 欺 你[22] 虧、這[21]
跟 當 ○ 好 說。道 哄 該 還 是
從 克 有[25] 不 ○ 底底 自 小 來 你
我。己、人 好、不[24] 裏細、己。心、埋 自
背 要 人 用 不 ○ 不 怨 己

21 You brought this loss on yourself; and yet you come complaining against me.
22 You should be careful and not deceive yourself.
23 You should not speak at random, when you do not know the bottom facts in the case.
24 You need not publish it yourself: whether good or bad, people already know.
25 If any man will follow me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

2 放心 Lit., *to let down, or lay down, the heart*; similar to our phrase "to set the heart at rest."

3 人 is here used for *others*, in opposition to *self*. So also in (5).

8 不好意思 is a very common phrase, which will not bear a literal analysis. It expresses a slight feeling of shame or embarrassment.

12 Lit., *This thing is yours to decide.*

14 是 might be omitted, but as used it adds emphasis to the clause following it.

16 哥 is not repeated as adjectives are, for emphasis, but probably for the purpose of distinguishing the word from others, or as an indication of endearment. Names of relatives show a special tendency to double in this way: thus we have,—**姐姐** *chie³ chie³*, elder sister; **妹妹** *mei⁴ mei⁴*, younger sister; also **媽媽** *ma¹ ma¹*, mother; **爹爹** *tie¹ tie¹*, father; **爺爺** *yie² yie²*, grandfather; **奶奶** *nai³ nai³*, grandmother, etc. **父** and **母**, however, are never repeated.

20 二十來. It is hard to see how this phrase comes to mean *upwards of twenty*. The **來** is nearly always pronounced *la*, and **個** is often added. In Peking it means *about twenty*—less or more; elsewhere it always means upwards of twenty, though not usually over twenty-five.

21 吃虧 is an infinitive clause, the object of the verb **找.**

23 底裏 is not used in the North, save in one or two ready-made phrases. It is used in the South, but is a little bookish.

24 Note how the subjunctive idea is implied in **好不好.**

LESSON XXII.

AFFIRMATIVE-NEGATIVE QUESTION.

Besides the form with **嗎**, a direct question is very often asked by putting the idea first in the affirmative, and then in the negative, implying or offering an alternative in the answer; somewhat as we do in English when we add "or not" to a direct question.

This form of question is much used, and is somewhat less categorical than with **嗎**.

VOCABULARY.

想家 *Hsiang³ chia¹*.....To be homesick.
忙 *Mang²*..... Busy, occupied; *hurried.*
幫忙 *Pang¹ mang².* *To help do extra work;* to ..... assist:—Note 5.
賬 *Chang⁴*.....*An account;* a debt; a charge.
宜 *I²*..... Right; fit, proper; *suitable.*
便宜 *Pien⁴ i²*..... *Convenient;* serviceable.
方便 *Fang¹ pien⁴*..... Convenient.
嫁 *Chia⁴*..... To marry a husband.
出嫁 *Ch'u¹ chia⁴.* To get married (of the ..... woman).
齊 *Ch'i².* Even, uniform; on a level; complete; ..... to equalize; at once; *all.*
陽 *Yang².* The superior of the dual powers of .....nature; *the sun;* day; heaven; male; virility; the front; this world or life.
太陽 *T'ai⁴ yang²*..... The sun.
封 *Fêng¹.* To appoint, to constitute officially; to .....seal; *an envelope,* a sealed packet. A classifier:—Les. 125.
信封 *Hsin⁴ fêng¹*..... A letter envelope.
營 *Ying².* To plan, *to attend to;* to get a living; .....an intrenched camp; military.

Digitized by Google

第二十二課

喉在式。到○方便來是不紙[1]
嚨、中○不客[8]便宜,幫不你好。還
今國、還[11]能。來○忙是的○有
天服服有○齊你[7]不你不你[3]沒
好不水別這[10]了家能。的是。想想有。
了服土的個沒大○○不家○
沒水不營事信有。姑今[6]我[5]想不你[2]
有土服生情封○娘、天明想早
○○。沒兒、趕[9]出算天家。一
先[14]李[13]有。合落了賬、請○點
生師○式太門嫁方便客、這[4]兒
的母先[12]不陽、沒便宜你個去
胳的生合能有。不不能刀好

Translation.

1 Is there any more paper?
2 Would it not be better for you to go a little earlier?
3 Are you homesick?
4 Is this knife yours?
5 I am going to invite company to-morrow: can you come and help me?
6 Is it convenient to settle accounts to-day?
7 Is the eldest daughter of your family married yet?
8 Have the guests all arrived?
9 Can we arrive by sunset?
10 Is this envelope suitable or not?
11 Have you still any other business?
12 Does the climate in China agree with you?
13 Is Mrs. Li's throat well to-day?
14 Does your upper arm still pain you?

營生 *Ying² shêng¹*. To make a living; an affair, ... *a piece of business;* work.

服 *Fu²*. Clothing; *to yield to;* to submit; to ..... subdue; to agree to; to swallow.

水土 *Shwei³ t'u³*. ..... Climate.

服水土 Acclimated, to stand the climate.

喉 *Hou²*. ..... The throat, the gullet.

嚨 *Lung²*. ..... The throat, the œsophagus.

喉嚨 The throat.

胳 *Kê¹*. ..... The fore-arm.

膊 *Poŏ⁴*. ..... The humerus, the upper arm.

胳膊 The upper arm; the arm. Also written 胳膀.

脚 *Chiao³, chioŏ³*. *The foot*; the base; con- ..... veyance; freightage.

凍 *Tung⁴*. ..... To freeze; frost-bitten; cold.

賤 *Chien⁴*. Mean, ignoble; *cheap;* to depre- ..... ciate, to regard lightly.

便 *P'ien²*. ..... Advantage; *cheap*. See *pien⁴*.

便宜 *P'ien² i²*. ..... Advantage; *cheap*.

米 *Mi³*. ..... Rice or millet after being hulled.

大米 *Ta⁴ mi³*. Rice,—as distinguished from ..... millet (小米).

乾飯 *Kan¹ fan⁴*. ..... Rice or millet boiled dry.

到底 *Tao⁴ ti³*. In the end; *after all;* finally; ..... positively.

火盆 *Hwoŏ³ p'ên²*. A brazier; *an earthen bowl* ..... *for holding live coals.*

滅 *Mie⁴*. To destroy; to exterminate; to put ..... out or *to go out*,—as fire.

焐 *Wu³*. To smother,—as fire, *to put out* or to ..... go out. Also *wu⁴*.

保人 *Pao³ jên²*. *Bail*, security, an endorser, a ..... backer.

商 *Shang¹*. *To consult*, to deliberate; to trade; ..... a merchant.

議 *I⁴*. ..... *To deliberate;* to discuss; to criticize.

商議 To consult with, to consider; to speak in behalf of.

厨 *Ch'u²*. ..... A kitchen, a cook-house.

鍋 *Kwoŏ¹*. ..... An iron kettle, a skillet.

破 *P'oŏ⁴*. To break, to tear, *to split*; to destroy; ..... to solve; to storm:—Les. 102.

補 *Pu³*. *To repair;* to patch; to make up; to ..... aid, to strengthen. Also *p'u¹*.

小爐匠 *Hsiao³ lu² chiang⁴*. A tinker, a travel- ..... ing smith.

整 *Chêng³*. To adjust; *to repair*, to mend; to ..... reform; the whole of, entire.

整治 *Chêng³ chi⁴*. To repair, to put in order. .....

拾 *Shi²*. To gather up; to bring together; to ..... clear away; to arrange; ten.

收拾 *Shou¹ shi²*. To put in order; *to repair;* to ..... gather up and take away.

Digitized by Google

脾、還疼不疼。○那[15]個飯壞了沒壞。○這[16]個禮拜的
衣裳、洗完了沒有。○今[17]天實在冷、你的脚凍不凍、
○這[18]兩天銀子行市、長了沒有。○四[19]百錢買這本
書、你看便宜賤不賤。○大[20]米乾飯、先生吃不吃。○
他[21]說要來、到底來了沒有。○這[22]個意思、先生明白
不明白。○我[23]給你三吊錢、穀不穀。○我[24]要再說、請
先生聽着、看對不對。○火[25]盆裡的火、滅了沒有。○
你[26]不放心、我找個保人行不行。○我[27]要和他商議
一點事情、不知道他有工夫沒有。○廚[28]房的鍋破
了、我去找個補小爐的匠來、來收拾他好不好。

15 Has that food spoiled?
16 Have you finished washing this week's clothes?
17 It is very cold to-day: are your feet frozen (or cold)?
18 Has the price of silver advanced these few days?
19 Four hundred cash for this book; do you not think it cheap?
20 Do you eat dry rice?
21 He said he would come; but, after all, has he come?
22 Is this idea clear to you?
23 If I give you three thousand cash, will it be enough?
24 I will say it again. Please listen and see whether it is correct or not.
25 Has the fire in the fire-pan gone out?
26 If you are uneasy, would it do for me to get some one as security?
27 I want to consult him about a small matter: I wonder if he has time.
28 The kettle in the kitchen is cracked (or, broken): shall I not get a tinker to come and mend it?

NOTES.

2 好不好 has a different meaning here from what it had in the last lesson, and is read with a different emphasis.

3 你想家不想家 is the proper and more prevalent form; that is, the rule in all cases is, to complete the affirmative form *before* the negative is begun. The second form is much used in Shantung, and also to some extent in other places; though most teachers, if asked, would say that the first is the right one; because they have been accustomed to see it so in books. To adhere in all cases to the book form sounds labored and awkward.

4 To give the meaning in the translation, a slight emphasis should be thrown on 你. By a different emphasis the sentence might be made to mean, *This knife is yours, is it not?* To give this meaning the emphasis should be thrown, in the first form on the first 是, and in the second form on the second 是.

5 帮忙, *to assist the hurry;* i.e., to help with any extra work. Properly applied to assistance rendered freely; but often used of temporary work that is paid for.

7 Instead of repeating the principal verb in the negative form, 有 is made to stand for it. This is a common form.

13 For anything that appears in this sentence, it may have been addressed to Mrs. Li; in which case the meaning would simply be, *Is your throat well to-day?*

17 凍 properly means *frozen*, but is used in many places as an exaggeration for *very cold,—freezing cold.*

20 大米乾飯 is a Northern expression. In the South 飯 alone expresses it all, for the reason that they have no 小米, *millet;* and 飯, when used alone, is understood to mean *dry rice.*

27 不知道 *do not know*, is the common way of expressing "I wonder." The 道 is often omitted.

28 The Southern form in 補鍋的, *a mender of kettles*:—Les. 39. In the North a 小爐匠 is a traveling tinker who carries a forge and a small kit of blacksmith tools, and mends crockery, as well as iron, brass and tin ware.

LESSON XXIII.

的 JOINED TO VERBS.

When 的 follows a verb it gives it the force of a participial noun, or makes it equivalent to a relative clause. Thus, the first sentence might be rendered literally, *His going is very quick;* and the second, *The money which he earned was not much.* While this is the analysis of this idiom-

Digitized by Google

第二十三課 ㄨ

他[1]○花快。堂畫的聽恰學
走的伏[3]天下雨的少。父乾好好的怕
很的不的不的我[6]的清大畫的我[12]楚。對。的不的對。得的
快。○的掃兒、不淨。親、○病這[5]個大。掙○的
他[2]很這[5]個大。掙○的你[8]得的個大。掙○的
○的這[9]看不刀○的這[4]錢
我輕。磨這[4]錢
字這○的個不
客[7]不月多。

TRANSLATION.

1 He goes very fast.
2 He did not make much money.
3 The summer rains were very great.
4 There has been not a little money spent this month.
5 This knife is not ground sharp.
6 My father is very sick.
7 The parlor is not swept clean.
8 Look at this painting of mine, [and see] whether it is well painted.
9 This word is not translated quite right.
10 If you speak slowly, I shall hear distinctly.
11 He used this comparison very appositely.
12 I fear you are speaking rashly: (or, I fear you spoke rashly.)
13 He learned much, and also learned [it well.

atic usage, a good English rendering will take a variety of forms, according to the connection.

得 may often be substituted for 的 without appreciable change of meaning. Such substitution is more frequent in the South than in the North. It is possible that 得 was the original form.

VOCABULARY.

掙 *Chêng*[4]. *To make money by labor*, to earn; to break or tear away.

伏 *Fu*[2]. To fall prostrate, to humble oneself; to suffer, to conceal; *the hot season.*

伏天 *Fu*[2] *t'ien*[1]. The hot season, July 19 to Augnst 18.

磨 *Moă*[2]. To rub, *to grind;* to sharpen; to argue; trials; a time:—Les. 64. Also *moă*[4].

畫 *Hwa*[4]. A picture, *a painting;* a mark, a line; a stroke in a character. Also *hwa*[2].

畫 *Hwa*[2]. To draw a line; *to paint or draw;* to line off. See *hwa*[4].

繙 *Fan*[1]. To open out; *to translate,* to interpret.

楚 *Ch'u*[3]. Sharp, painful; orderly; plain, *distinct,* clear.

清楚 *Ch'ing*[1] *ch'u*[3]. Clear, *distinct;* in order; settled,—as an account.

比方 *Pi*[3] *fang*[1]. *A comparison;* an illustration; for instance.

恰 *Ch'ia*[4]. Luckily, opportunely; *exactly;* just; at the exact moment.

荒 *Hwang*[1]. Barren, waste; *reckless,* careless; empty; famine.

唐 *T'ang*[2]. To boast; dissolute.

荒唐 Unsteady; unreliable; wild; *rash.*

温 *Wên*[1]. Warm, tepid; mild, genial, kind; to practice, *to become familiar with.*

習 *Hsi*[2]. *To practice;* skilled; custom, habit.

温習 To repeat again and again, to practice.

肉 *Jou*[4]. Flesh; *meat;* fat, fleshy; corporeal; substantial. Also *ju*[4].

煮 *Chu*[3]. To boil in water, to cook.

爛 *Lan*[4]. Bright, brilliant; *cooked tender;* soft, mellow; tattered; rotten.

湊 *Ts'ou*[4]. To gather together, to collect; *to happen or hit upon.*

巧 *Ch'iao*[3]. Skilful, ingenious; wily, shrewd; *opportune.*

湊巧 *Opportune*, in the nick of time; lucky.

櫃 *Kwei*[4]. A chest; a locker; a bureau; a safe; a cupboard; *a sideboard.*

正當 *Chêng*[4] *tang*[4]. Square; level; *straight, not awry.*

蓋 *Kai*[4]. A cover, a roof; to cover, to roof; *to build a house.*

體 *T'i*[3]. The body, the limbs; a solid; the substance; to feel for; *becoming;* to embody; to realize; to pervade.

Digitized by Google

官話、發用的來的不發用的呢。這15個個肉煮得的櫃、櫃子安在路20上、大老爺的新娶將的太太生得和氣、意不如的我19當正。正你16來的不發用的呢。這17個個櫃子、蓋的不少。得的實在的工夫、不但的體面。不爛。○正○

第二十四課

○ 促 的 泡 沏 ○ 心 了。○ 的 今[1]
他[15] 了。過 的 以[10] 忒 ○ 如[5] 衣 天
做 ○ 於 茶 後 毒 那[7] 今 裳 太
的 先[14] 精 太 講 了。些 天 忒 熱。
過 生 細 明 厚 釅。的、○ 水 太 癩 抗 ○
快、寫 ○ ○ 太 學[9] 太 短。歹 講。你[2]
不 字、明[13] 那[12] 煩 的 凉。○ ○ 說
大 費 天 個 絮 太 ○ 我[6] 我[4] 的
仔 工 出 小 了。多、那[8] 今 的 太
細。夫 殯、姑 ○ 學 個 日 鐘 快。
○ 太 太 娘、早[11] 不 人 太 太 ○
我[16] 大。急 生 上 晨 熟。的 乏 慢。你[3]

TRANSLATION.

1 It is too hot to-day.
2 You speak too fast.
3 Your clothes are too dirty.
4 My clock is too slow.
5 The days now are too short.
6 I am too tired to-day.
7 That water is too cold.
8 That man's heart is too malignant.
9 If you learn too much you will not learn it well.
10 Afterwards there was too much repetition in his discourse.
11 The tea made this morning was too strong.
12 That little girl is by nature too precocious.
13 To have the funeral to-morrow will be too hurried.
14 You take too much time in writing.

忒 Too, excessive; an exaggeration of **太**:—mostly used of things that are in some way displeasing.

過於 Too, excessive. **過** is sometimes used alone in the same sense.

過逾 Both words mean to pass over, or to go beyond, and together mean, *too much, beyond measure.* The accent is on the second character, while in **過於** it is on the first.

過分 Beyond duty or propriety, outrageous.

VOCABULARY.

忒 *T'ê*[4]..... An excess; too, very:—see Sub.
於 *Yü*[2]..... In, at, on; with, by; as, so; than.
逾 *Yü*[4]. To pass over; to go beyond; to exceed; ..... to omit; still, more.
癩 *Lai*[1]..... Foul, filthy (L.). Also *lai*[4].
歹 *Tai*[3]..... *Bad*, vicious; perverse.
✗**癩歹** Unkempt; soiled, dirty (L.).
骯 *Ang*[1]..... Dirty.
髒 *Tsang*[1]..... Filthy; to *dirty*, to defile,
骯髒 Filthy, *dirty*, foul, nasty.
乏 *Fa*[2]. To be in want of; deficient; exhausted, ... weary, *tired;* half-witted, stupid.
毒 *Tu*[2]..... Poisonous; *malignant;* cruel.
煩 *Fan*[2]. Troubled; annoyed; perplexed, *con*..... *fused;* grieved; urgent.
絮 *Hsü*[4]. To repeat, *to reiterate;* prolix; to ..... wad,—as a quilt; gossamer, fleecy.
✗**煩絮** *Repetitious*, tautological.
晨 *Ch'ên*[2]..... Morning, dawn.
早晨 *Tsao*[3] *ch'ên*[2]..... The morning.
早上 *Tsao*[3] *shang*[4]..... The morning.
沏 *Ch'i*[1]..... To steep or *make* tea (Pekingese).✝
泡 *P'ao*[4]. To steep, to soak; *to draw,—as tea.* ..... Also *p'ao*[1].
茶 *Ch'a*[2]..... Tea,—the plant or the infusion.
釅 *Yien*[4]..... Strong,—as tea or coffee. ✝
厚 *Hou*[4]. Thick; generous, liberal; large, sub..... stantial; intimate; *strong,*—as tea.
精 *Ching*[1]. Unmixed; fine, subtle; expert, prac..... ticed; *smart*, ready; the essence; semen; an apparition.
精明 *Ching*[1] *ming*[2]. *Smart*, clever, quick-wit..... ted, sharp; shrewd.
精細 *Ching*[1] *hsi*[4]. *Smart*, clever, sharp; alert. .....
殯 *Pin*[4]..... To carry to burial; a funeral.
出殯 *Ch'u*[1] *pin*[4]. To observe funeral rites; *to* ..... *have a funeral.*
促 *Ts'u*[4]..... To urge; *urgent*, pressing; close.
急促 *Chi*[2] *ts'u*[4]..... *Hurried*, hasty.

Digitized by Google

分了、我不能讓他。

看你譏誚他、太過逾了。○他27蹧蹋我太過

分的。○和25熟人交往、不必過於拘謹。○我26過

輕了。○世24上的利害人、沒有像你這樣過

你也說的太過了。○送23他這點禮物、過於

也不可過於打算。○他22有不是、是不錯的、

問很好、可惜張狂了。○人21不可不打算、

館學不可過鬆、也不可過嚴。○丁20家木的學

以少買一點。○這18個學生、過逾的拙笨。○教19

的嘴太直、說話常得罪人。○若17是太貴、可

15 He works too fast, and is not very careful.

16 My manner of speaking is too straightforward: I am constantly offending people in my talk.

17 If it is very dear, buy a little less.

18 This pupil is excessively stupid.

19 In teaching it is not best to be too lax, nor yet too strict.

20 Ting Chia Mu's scholarship is very good: it is a pity he is so arrogant.

21 A man should make plans; yet he should not plan too much.

22 He was to blame it is true, and you also spoke too severely.

23 To give him this trifling present, is too meagre.

24 Of all the violent men in the world, you are the most outrageous.

25 It is not best to be too punctilious in our intercourse with intimate friends.

26 In my opinion, you ridicule him too excessively.

27 He insults me too outrageously; I shall not submit to it [him].

仔 *Tsï*[3]. . . . To carry; *careful.*

仔細 *Tsï*[3] *hsi*[4]. . . . Careful, particular.

直 *Chi*[2]. Straight; upright; outspoken; *straightforward;* purposely.

拙 *Cho*[1]. . . . *Stupid;* unskillful, clumsy.

鬆 *Sung*[1]. To relax; *slack,* loose; easy-going; flabby, spongy.

嚴 *Yien*[2]. Severe, stern, *strict;* extreme; majestic, dignified; close,—as a door.

惜 *Hsi*[1]. To compassionate; *to regret;* to be sparing.

可惜 *K'ê*[3] *hsi*[1]. To be regretted; *what a pity!* Alas!

狂 *K'wang*[2]. Mad, raving; insane; rash, excitable; *proud,* insolent; violent.

張狂 *Chang*[1] *k'wang*[2]. Boastful; *arrogant;* pretentious.

像 *Hsiang*[4]. *Like,* similar, as; a likeness; an image, an idol.

拘 *Chü*[1]. To grasp and hold; to restrain; to embrace; *to adhere to.*

謹 *Chin*[3]. . . . Diligent, *careful;* respectful.

拘謹 Cautious, conservative; *punctilious.*

譏 *Chi*[1]. . . . *To ridicule;* to mock; to satirize.

誚 *Ch'iao*[4]. . . . *To blame,* to scold, to upbraid.

譏誚 *To ridicule,* to jeer at.

讓 *Jang*[4]. *To yield,* to allow; to esteem others; to waive; retiring; courteous.

NOTES.

3 嘴子 is very forcible, but more or less local. In the South 辯 is used alone.

7 那些水 might, with equal propriety, be 那個水. The plural form usually indicates a limited quantity, while the singular is quite indefinite.

8 Lit., *This man's heart is too poisonous;* said of one who has no regard for the rights and feelings of others.

11 沏 is Pekingese. 泡 is Central and Southern Mandarin. 厚 is Nankingese.

16 Lit., *My lips are too direct.* We attribute speech to the tongue, the Chinese, to the lips.

18 拙 is Nankingese. In the North 拙 is not applied to the mind.

21 過於打算 refers to one who is always changing his plans, or is too sanguine in his planning.

26 We have in 太過逾, a duplicate intensive, which, however, is more elegant in Chinese than the redundant expression "too excessively" is in English.

Digitized by Google

第二十五課

走、鞋給罪。不○替給替給他[1]
你底、他○要我[6]你我我臨
與給我拔提請[9]緊、的寫。討辦拿走、
他替給鞋、先我大○個一留
平你也生賒襖、你[5]家壺這
上褡是給與給不能小口。開五
三褂不我你。能給○水百
兩子。配寫○借我你[4]來。錢
銀○的。個耶[8]把給找自○把給
子。客[12]○影仿穌他。個己請[3]夥
○到你[11]本格替○地不你計。
王[13]明替給子。萬沒[7]處方會要○
先天我○人有不寫、緊可[2]
生要衲我[10]贖錢能。我的以

Translation.

1 When he was starting, he left these five hundred cash for the servants.
2 Bring a pitcher of hot water for me.
3 Please do not fail to bespeak a wife for me.
4 If you can not write it yourself, I will write it for you.
5 Can you find a situation for me?
6 I can not lend him my overcoat.
7 If you have no money, no matter; I will trust you.
8 Jesus made atonement for the sins of all men.
9 Will you please write a copy for me?
10 I am not worthy to pull up his shoes.
11 If you quilt my shoe soles, I will hem your coat.
12 The guest will leave to-morrow; do you weigh for him three taels of silver.

LESSON XXV.

The Dative.

給 To give; hence,—to, for; when it follows the verb it means *to*, and when it precedes it, *for*. It is nearly always read *kei*[3] in Pekingese. Though properly unaspirated, it is generally aspirated in Central and Southern Mandarin. In Nanking, when used as the sign of the dative it is read *kê*[3].

替 To substitute; hence,—instead of, for. It always precedes the verb.

把 To take (see Les. 28), is much used along the Yangtse for **給**, when **給** means *to*, but never when it means *for*. This use of **把** is not properly Mandarin, but is allied to the Southern coast dialects.

與 To, the *Wên-li* equivalent for **給** as a sign of the dative. Colloquially it is not so used in the North, but is used to some extent in the South, especially in the region of Hankow.

In the South, **替**, **把** and **與** largely supersede **給**, which is, however, the regular and recognized Mandarin form.

Vocabulary.

替 *T'i*[4]. To take the place of; to do for or instead of; in behalf of; for.

把 *Pa*[1]. To take; to take hold of, to seize; to regard as:—an instrumental verb, Les. 28. *To*:—see Sub. Also *pa*[3] and *pa*[4].

與 *Yü*[3]. To give; to transfer; as, rather; with, and; *to*:—see Sub., also Les. 110.

計 *Chi*[4]. To plan, to consider; to compute; a stratagem; *a comrade.*

夥計 *Hwoh*[3] *chi*[4]. A comrade, a companion; *the employés in a shop.*

壺 *Hu*[2]. A pot, a jug, a pitcher:—Les. 174.

開水 *K'ai*[1] *shwei*[3]. Boiling water.

家口 *Chia*[1] *k'ou*[3]. Family; *wife.*

家小 *Chia*[1] *hsiao*[3]. A wife.

處 *Ch'u*[4]. *A place;* a state; a circumstance:—Les. 98. A classifier:—Les. 125. Also *ch'u*[3].

地處 *Ti*[4] *ch'u*[4]. A place, a locality; *a situation;* a berth (L.).

賒 *Shê*[1]. To buy or sell on credit; *to trust;* to borrow.

耶 *Yie*[2]. Father; a Wên-li final particle implying doubt.

Digitized by Google

替我代了一個月的館。不[14]用你自己來拿、錢、換賣。給拿、這[16]給。換賣。他。○與給換賣。意。的故事、○窗不我在們。○我[22]們日用些釘子、○你[20]打算拿來不找、的故事、堯[18]○這[16]給拿、
我[17]自己不能定的信、到了北京、託你[15]這些洋自
是王大老爺、規、請你替我拿個最熟開主交我
我好不兒我就給你送去。○○
會兒代了
好、答
好、我
正打
算
你坐下下、讓給舜。○有一個可以給
能換把給你。說給你聽。我[19]
天
的
你
能
臺上。○
保[23]子他媽娘、在南街給王二爺當媽老媽媽、

13 Mr. Wang taught school a month in my stead.
14 You need not come for it yourself: I will take it to you presently.
15 Would you sell (i.e., in exchange for cash) me these dollars of yours? *Ans.* All right; I was just about to ask you to sell them for me.
16 This is Wang Ta Lao Yie's letter; when you reach Peking you can give it to him.
17 I can not come to a decision myself: will you please make the decision for me?
18 Yao yielded the empire to Shun.
19 I know a very interesting story: sit down and I will tell it to you.
20 If you expect to trade even, I can not trade with you.
21 Bring those nails and put them on the window-sill for me.
22 Give us this day our daily bread.
23 Pao-tsi's mother is nurse on the South street for Wang Êr Yie.

甦 *Su*[1]. . . . . To revive, to come to life again.
耶甦 Jesus.
贖 *Shu*[2]. . . . . A pledge; *to redeem*, to ransom.
影 *Ying*[3]. . . . . A shadow; *a picture*, an image.
仿 *Fang*[3]. To imitate; a model; *a copy to write . . . . . by.*
格 *Kê*[2]. To examine thoroughly; to influence, to . . . . . affect; to reach; a line, *a rule;* a limit.
仿格 A copy to write by:—Note 9.
影本 *Ying*[3] *pên*[3]. . . . . The same.
拔 *Pa*[2]. *To pull up;* to extirpate; to draw,— . . . . . as a sword; to pinch and pull the skin as a counter-irritant, to cup; to excel.
鞋 *Hsie*[2]. . . . . Shoes, gaiters.
配 *P'ei*[4]. An equal; a wife; to pair, to match; . . . . . to accompany; *to be worthy of.*
衲 *Na*[4]. . . . To line, to pad; *to quilt;* a cassock.
幣 *Ch'iao*[1]. . . . . To hem.
褂 *Kwa*[4]. . . . . An upper garment, a coat.
平 *P'ing*[2]. Even, level; equitable; ordinary; . . . . . peaceful; to level; *to weigh in scales.*
代 *Tai*[4]. To substitute; *for*, in place of; a genera- . . . . . tion; a dynasty.
託 *T'oa*[1]. To charge with; to entrust to; *to ask . . . . . one to do for;* to rely upon.
堯 *Yao*[2]. A celebrated sovereign of China, said . . . . . to have reigned 103 years, beginning B. C. 2357.
舜 *Shun*[4]. An ancient emperor, whose reign be- . . . . . gan B. C. 2255.
天下 *T'ien*[1] *hsia*[4]. All under heaven, the world; . . . . . China; *the sovereignty.*
故 *Ku*[4]. The cause or reason of a thing; there- . . . . . fore; on purpose; of course; *old;* original; former; an affair.
故事 *Ku*[4] *shi*[4]. A legend, *a story*, an adventure, ... a singular or amusing affair.
兩不找 *Liang*[3] *pu*[4] *chao*[3]. To trade even, no . . . . . boot.
釘 *Ting*[1]. . . . A nail, a spike, a peg. Also *ting*[4].
飲 *Yin*[3]. . . . . To drink; *drink.* Also *yin*[4].
飲食 *Yin*[3] *shi*[2]. . . . . Food and drink.
賜 *Sz*[4], *t'si*[4]. *To give*, to bestow; a benefit, a gift . . . . . from a superior.
南 *Nan*[2]. . . . . South.
媽媽 *Ma*[1] *ma*[1]. Mamma;—in some places, ... grandmother, in other places *a nurse:*—Les. 5, Note 23.

Digitized by Google

第二十六課

我[1]說看見他在們在眼在前、土地廟後
話。看見正[2]在[4]○火。他還廟後頭。
○見○嗎。○裏實○是在頭面。見話。看
正[2]他在[3]我頭裏面、你地方不後頭。
在們在眼在前、土地廟後頭。看見話。
○嗎。○裏實○是在頭面。見話。看見
正[2]他在[3]我頭裏面、你地方不後頭。

Translation.

1 I saw them behind the T'u-ti temple talking.
2 Right before your eyes, and you don't see it?
3 I was inside, and he outside.
4 There is fire inside the earth.
5 It is very cold outside.
6 My family live within.
7 Is the house in here yours?
8 Wan the Fourth's dog is constantly out biting [people's] chickens.
9 I just now saw your two children behind the house.
10 I propose to build a side room on the west side of the yard.

Notes.

1 On leaving a Chinese inn, it is customary to give a small "tip" to the servants; not, however, so much as five hundred cash, unless one has been at the inn a number of days.

3 Marriages in China are arranged by go-betweens. This is a request to some one not to neglect the business entrusted to him. 辦, in the North, and 討, in the South, are used only with reference to a second wife. In some places 家口 means either wife, or wife and children; in other places it is confined to the latter meaning.

9 A 仿格, or 影本, is a page of "copy" written by the teacher in a large, fair hand. This copy the pupil places underneath his thin paper and traces the characters.

12 Chinese ideas of hospitality require that, in sending away a guest from a distance, you should make him a present of something for his journey.

18 It is related of the ancient emperor *Yao*, that he yielded the empire to his friend *Shun*, instead of leaving it to his son; which the Chinese regard as an unparalleled example of patriotism. The use of 天下 for China is a specimen of Chinese egotism.

22 This is from the translation of the Lord's prayer. The clause 日用的飲食 means literally, *the drink and food, used day by day.* It is high Mandarin, not readily understood save by constant use.

23 保子他娘 is a somewhat inelegant colloquial form, equivalent to 保子的娘.

LESSON XXVI.

Beside the postpositions of place, 裏, 外, 上, 下, given in Lesson 6, there are also such as 前, 後, 左, 右, etc., all which take after and combine with themselves the words 頭, *head*, 面, *face*, and 边, *border*. We say, inside, outside, etc.; but the Chinese go further and say, in-head, out-head, in-face, out-face, etc. The meaning in the several cases is substantially the same. Which form is most suitable in any case can only be learned by practice. The usage varies considerably in different places.

Vocabulary.

邊 or 边 *Pien*[1]. . . . . Edge; border; boundary.
廟 *Miao*[4]. . . . . A temple—great or small.
土地 *T'u*[3] *ti*[4]. . . . . A local divinity:—Note 1.
眷 *Chüen*[4]. To love; to care for; kindred; . . . . . *family.*
家眷 *Chia*[1] *chüen*[4]. *Family*, household; wife. . . . . .
咬 *Yao*[3]. *To bite*, to chew; to involve in a . . . . . crime; to bark.
雞 *Chi*[1]. . . . . A chicken; a cock. [188.
廂 *Hsiang*[1]. . . . A side building; a suburb:—Les.
廂房 *Hsiang*[1] *fang*[2]. A small house at the side . . . . . of the court between other houses.
背 *Pei*[4]. The back; the rear; to turn the back . . . . . on; to repudiate, to falsify; *in the shade;* to repeat. See *pei*[1].
撇 *P'ie*[1]. To skim off; to throw aside; to leave . . . . . behind, *to forget;* a stroke down and to the left in writing:—See Radical 4.
拴 *Shwan*[1]. To bind up; to fasten or tie to; *to* . . . . . *hitch.*
馬 *Ma*[3]. . . . . *A horse;* warlike; cavalry.

Digitized by Google

在面邊、的子下衚的和。邊、
前聽你衣在面儘馬、○蓋
頭見也服、炕是裏是我[12]個
走、了。找連外反邊你的廂
你○了外邊面。的少衣房。
們請[20]嗎。邊笑。○那爺裳、○
在先○的○大[16]個的檄在[11]
後生他[19]也有[17]孩門不在房
頭上們由人子裏是。裏子
跟邊在他想在住。○邊。東
着。坐。裏拿告炕裏○王[14]○面
○○頭去、你、上[15]老在[13]背
你[22]該[21]說、○要面三、大風、
的讓我抽[18]你哭、是在門實在
鞋、先在屜裏小正東前拴暖
可生外裏邊孩面、巷衚栓

11 At the east side of the house it is sheltered from the wind, and is quite warm.
12 I forgot my clothes inside.
13 The horse hitched in front of the large gate is your young master's, is it not?
14 Wang the Third lives in the innermost door in the east alley.
15 The upper side is the right side; the lower side is the wrong side.
16 The big child was on the inner side of the k'ang crying, and the little one on the outer side laughing.
17 If a man thinks to accuse you, wanting your inside coat, let him take the outside one also.
18 Did you also search in the drawer?
19 They were talking inside, and I heard them outside.
20 Please take the upper seat.
21 You should allow the teacher to go before, and you follow after.
22 You may take off your shoes without, at the side of the door.

少 *Shao⁴*. Young, juvenile; *a youth;* secondary; to be second:—See *shao³*.
少爺 *Shao⁴ yie²*. The son of an official.
衚 *Hu²*. A side street.
衚衕 *T'ung⁴*. A side street.
衚衕 A side street, an alley (Pekingese).
巷 *Hsiang⁴, hang⁴*. An alley.
儘 *Chin³*. To finish; completely; all; *the utmost:*—Les. 137.
反 *Fan³*. To return; to turn over; *to reverse;* to rebel; but, on the contrary:—Les. 112.
哭 *K'u¹*. *To cry*, to weep, to bemoan.
笑 *Hsiao⁴*. *To laugh;* to smile; to ridicule.
衣服 *I¹ fu²*. Clothing, dress.
連 *Lien²*. To connect; to join; following; even, still; and, *together with:*—Les. 110.
由 *Yiu²*. The origin or antecedents; from, through; the cause or instrument; *to let*, to permit:—Les. 83.
抽 *Ch'ou¹*. To take or *draw out;* to select, to allot; to smoke,—as a pipe.
屜 *T'i⁴*. A pad, a saddle-cloth; a buffer.
抽屜 A drawer.
聽見 *T'ing¹ chien.⁴* To hear; to perceive by hearing; to listen:—Les. 51.
脫 *T'oa¹*. *To take off*, to undress; to escape, to evade; to avoid.
旁 *P'ang²*. *The side;* sideways; near.
旁邊 *P'ang² pien¹*. At or by the side; the side.
颳 *Kwa¹*. *To blow;* to drive with the wind.
左 *Tsoa³*. *The left;* second in position, a deputy; depraved, heretical.
右 *Yiu⁴*. *The right;* to honor; to aid.
上頭 *Shang⁴ t'ou²*. Upon; above; overhead; the term by which inferiors designate their superiors, and the apartments in which they live, "topside."
上邊 *Shang⁴ pien¹*. The same.
開飯 *K'ai¹ fan⁴*. To set forth or serve a meal.
罩 *Chao⁴*. To cover over; to shade; a hollow cover; an air-pump receiver.
燈罩 *Têng¹ chao⁴*. A lamp shade, a lamp chimney.
骨 *Ku³*. *A bone;* the skeleton or hard part of anything.
骨頭 *Ku³ t'ou²*. A bone:—Les. 47.
髮 *Fa³*. Hair, the hair on the head.
頭髮 *T'ou² fa³*. Human hair.

Digitized by Google

外淨。頭有人[29]的頭髮。

了。這[28]個燈罩裏頭有面骨頭、

還沒有開飯嗎、答已經開乾

南邊的天氣該太熱。上[27]頭邊

左邊、女的該在右邊。這[26]

書架子高頭。男[25]的在上

不[24]是在書架子上面。

外邊颳大風、實在難走。

以脫在外頭門旁邊。○在[23]

23 A strong wind is blowing outside, and it is very hard walking.

24 If it is not inside the book-case, it is on the top.

25 The man ought to be on the left, and the woman on the right.

26 The climate here in the South is too hot.

27 Has the meal not yet been served to the family (or, guests)? *Ans.* It has.

28 This lamp chimney is not clean inside.

29 On the inside of one's head are bones, and on the outside, hair.

Notes.

1 土地. The lowest god in China with magisterial functions. There is a *T'u³ ti⁴* temple, or shrine, in or near every village, and also one in every Hsien city. The gods in these many temples are all different individuals, though they all have the same birthday, on which they are worshipped; viz., the second day of the second month. It is to this temple that the soul first repairs after death.

7 這裡頭的房子. Lit., *this inside's house;* i.e., *the house which is here within.*

17 The sentence is taken without change from the Mandarin N. T. It would be smoother colloquial if 着 were added to 想.

20 The English speaker is strongly inclined to put 在 before the 上, and the Chinese will allow it, but prefers to omit it.

24 This sentence might be taken indicatively; viz., *It is not in the inside of the book-case; it is on the top.* Which meaning it would convey, would depend wholly on the manner of saying it. The use of 高頭 in the sense of *on top*, or *above*, is exclusively Southern.

25 男的 and 女的 might, with equal propriety, be translated in the plural.

29 This sentence well serves to illustrate some of the uses of the word 頭.

Lesson XXVII.

Four Common Classifiers.

This lesson illustrates four of the most common classifiers:—See subject to Lesson 1. Other Classifiers will be illustrated in a number of future lessons:—See Les. 38, 42, 68, 100, 125, 140 and 147.

把 A handful,—classifier of things which have a handle, or can be held in the hand.

塊 A piece,—classifier of things in pieces, lumps or fragments.

件 To divide,—a classifier of wide application, used in general of particular articles regarded as separate wholes.

位 A seat of dignity,—classifier of persons, especially of such as are regarded as worthy of respect.

For full list of words falling under each of these classifiers, see Supplement.

Vocabulary.

把 *Pa³*. A handful, a bundle:—See Sub. See ..... *pa¹* also *pa⁴*.

件 *Chien⁴*. To divide; an article, an item, a ..... piece:—See Sub.

錐 *Chwei¹*..... *An awl;* to pierce.

剪 *Chien³*. To clip, to snip, to shear; shears, ... scissors, tongs.

鐵 *T'ie³*..... Iron; firm, resolute.

皮 *P'i²*. Skin; leather; fur; bark; a covering; ..... tare of goods.

菜 *Ts'ai⁴*..... Edible vegetables.

園 *Yüen²*. A yard; a garden; a park; a large ..... shop or saloon.

胰 *I²*..... The caul; soap.

肥 *Fei²*..... Fat, plump; rich; fertile.

皂 *Tsao⁴*..... Black; lictors, runners.

肥皂 A kind of coarse native soap.

泥 *Ni²*.... Mud, mire; mortar; clods, earth; *dirt.*

切 *Ch'ie¹*..... To cut, to slice. Also *ch'ie⁴*.

Digitized by Google

第二十七課

這[1] 好 在 件 (辭灰泥。) 切 老 爺。 裏 的 把、 布、
把 使、 用 體 東 一 ○ 爺。 的 裏 把 斧 太
錐 ○ 面。 西 你[8] 塊 ○ 水、 子、 楞
子 這[3] ○ 不 這 西 二[11] 可 已 薄
沒 塊 這[5] 能 件 瓜 位 以 經 了。
有 鐵 塊 很 營 事 給 太 倒 壞 ○
尖 太 地 貴。 生、 情 我。 太 在 了。[15] 這
兒。 長。 正 ○ 不 ○ 已 那 ○ 把
○ ○ 好 這[7] 合 外[10] 經 把 你[14] 椅
那[2] 這[4] 作 塊 情 頭 走 壺 買 子
把 件 菜 肥胰 理。 來 了。 裏 的 底
剪 皮 園。 子 皂 ○ ○ 那 下
子 襖 ○ 不 下 那[6] 位 瓶 這 洋 灰土、
不 實 那 下 你 位 瓶 這 洋 灰土、

TRANSLATION.

1 The awl has no point.
2 That pair of scissors is not usable.
3 This piece of iron is too long.
4 This fur coat is very genteel.
5 This piece of land would just suit for a vegetable garden.
6 That article can not be very expensive.
7 This piece of soap does not take out the dirt.
8 This business of yours is not according to reason.
9 Please cut me a piece of watermelon.
10 Three officers have arrived without.
11 The two ladies have already gone.
12 The water in this bottle you may pour into that pitcher.
13 This ax of mine is already spoiled.
14 That piece of foreign [cotton] cloth which you bought is too thin.

瓜 *Kwa*[1]. . . . . Melons, cucumbers, gourds, etc.
西瓜 *Hsi*[1] *kwa*[1]. . . . . A watermelon.
瓶 *P'ing*[2]. . . . . A pitcher, a jug, a bottle.
倒 *Tao*[4]. To invert; to pour out; to empty, to . . . . . vacate; on the contrary; but, still, then:—Les. 112. See *tao*[3].
斧 *Fu*[3]. . . . . An ax, a hatchet, a cleaver.
洋布 *Yang*[2] *pu*[4]. Foreign cotton cloth, long . . . . . cloth.
楞 *Hsiao*[1]. . . . . Hollow; thin.
薄 *Po*[2], *pao*[2]. Thin, subtile; a thin leaf; poor, ... mean; to extend, to reach. Also *po*[4].
楞薄 Thin; thinness; thickness.
晌午 *Shang*[3] *wu*[3]. . . . . Midday, noon.
中時 *Chung*[1] *shi*[2]. . . . . The same.
中上 *Chung*[1] *shang*[4]. . . . . The same.
數 *Shu*[3]. To enumerate, to count; to censure. . . . . Also *shu*[4] and *soo*[4].
臭 *Ch'ou*[4], *hsiu*[4]. An offensive smell, stench; . . . . . putrid, tainted; disreputable.
終 *Chung*[1]. The end, finis; all, the whole; the . . . . . utmost; dead; to die:—Les. 127.
終身 *Chung*[1] *shên*[1]. . . . . Life-time, life.
談 *T'an*[2]. To talk about, to discuss; to chat; . . . . . conversation; chit-chat.
閒談 *Hsien*[2] *t'an*[2]. To talk familiarly, to chat; . . . . . to gossip.
剪 *Cha*[2]. . . . . A hinged shear or cutter.
剪刀 *Cha*[2] *tao*[1]. . . . . A straw cutter.
竈 *Tsao*[4]. . . . . A furnace, a kitchen range.
竈臺 *Tsao*[4] *t'ai*[2]. . . . . A kitchen range.
鍋臺 *Kwo*[1] *t'ai*[2]. . . . . The same.
菜刀 *Ts'ai*[4] *tao*[1]. A cleaver, a meat chopper. . . . . .
鏟 *Ch'an*[3]. A shovel, a scoop, a scraper; to . . . . . level off, to scrape.
勺 *Shao*[2], *shwo*[2]. To ladle out; a ladle; a spoon; . . . . . a spoonful.
炊 *Ch'wei*[1]. . . . . To cook; a small broom.
刷 *Shwa*[1]. . . . . A brush; to brush; to scrub.
炊箒 *Ch'wei*[1] *chou*[3]. A small broom or whisk . . . . . used to wash dishes.
刷箒 *Shwa*[1] *chou*[3]. . . . . The same.
鈑 *Ch'a*[1]. . . . . A fork; a large pin.
匙 *Ch'i*[2]. A spoon; a key,—in which sense it is . . . . . in Peking read *shi*[2].
羹 *Kêng*[1]. . . . . Soup, porridge.
調羹 *T'iao*[2] *kêng*[1]. A spoon,—usually made of . . . . . wood or porcelain.

Digitized by Google

可以拿一把答箒來掃去。○[16]晌中中午上時買的銀子是八件、你數了沒有。○[17]那塊肉已經臭了。○[18]這是你終身的一件大事、有話不妨說。○[19]我們是一塊土的人、不可爲一件小事打架。○[20]我纔見二位先生、在屋裏閒談。○[21]我要買一把剪刀、不知有現成的沒有。○[22]竈鍋臺上、有一把菜刀、一把鏟子、一把勺子、一把刷炊箒。○[23]我有六把刀子、六把鈀子、還有十二把調匙羹子、一把不知穀不穀。

15 There is dust under this chair; bring a broom and sweep it away.
16 Of the silver bought at noon there were eight pieces; did you count them?
17 That piece of meat is already tainted.
18 This is the great affair of your life; if you have any thing to say, do not hesitate to speak.
19 We are natives of the same place, and must not fight about a small matter.
20 I just now saw the two gentlemen in the room chatting.
21 I want to buy a straw knife: I wonder if they are to be had ready-made.
22 On the cooking range are a meat chopper, a scraper, a dipper, and a whisk.
23 I have six knives and six forks, and also twelve spoons: I wonder if they are enough.

Notes.

7 下 is here used as a verb, meaning to remove, or take out, the dirt. Foreign soap is called 胰子 in the North, and in the South, 肥皂, or 胰子肥皂.

15 椅子底下 means beneath the chair, not the under side, or part, of the chair, which would be, 椅子下邊.

16 晌午 is the form used in the North, while 中時 and 中上 are used in the South.

18 Said by an officer to a girl brought before him in a matter concerning her marriage engagement.

23 Foreign spoons are called 匙子 in some places; in other places they are called 羹匙, *soup spoons*, or 調羹 *stirrers;* and in others, 勺子, *dippers*. The Chinese use spoons much less than we do, and they are generally made either of China-ware or of wood.

Lesson XXVIII.

The Instrumental Verbs 把 and 將.

把 is used instrumentally of anything that can be taken or held in the hand, and often, by accommodation, of other things. Whether used as a classifier or as an instrumental verb is known by the connection.

將 as an instrumental verb is very similar in meaning to 把, but is a little more bookish, and is often used of affairs, and of mental operations.

These words may sometimes be rendered by *take,* but are generally best untranslated.

Vocabulary.

袷 *Chia*[3]. ..... Lined, double.
另 *Ling*[4]. Separate; additional; another; *besides,* furthermore.
托 *T'oə*[1]. To support with the hand, to bear up; the length of the extended arms, a fathom.
襟 *Chin*[1]. ..... The lapel of a coat; *a collar.*
托襟 The round collar on a woman's dress.
托領 *T'oə*[1] *ling*[3]. ..... The same. (N.).
護領 *Hu*[4] *ling*[3]. ..... The same. (S.).
掌 *Chang*[3]. *The palm of the hand;* a hoof, a paw; to grasp; to rule, to control.
巴掌 *Pa*[4] *chang*[3]. *The palm of the hand;* a slap, a box.
帳 *Chang*[4]. ..... A curtain, a screen; a plan.

Digitized by Google

第二十八課

繩	○	請	要	子	生	護托托	櫃	在	孩[1]
放	可[11]	來。張	聲	掛	氣	領襟領。	裏。	皮	子
鎗、	以	○	揚	張。	上。	把	○	○	箱	把
把	把	把[10]	○	○	我	可[5]	我[4]	裏。	火	
孩	鑰	這	張[9]	我[8]	打	以	要	○	弄	
子	匙、	些	先	將	了	把	把	把[3]	熄滅	
嚇	放	髒混	生	這	兩	火	這	這	了。	
哭	在	水	家	件	巴	爐	件	些	○	
了。	抽	拿	去	事	掌。	放	掛	傢	把[2]	
○	屜	去、	了、	告	○	在	子、	伙	我	
他[13]	裏	倒	你	訴	你[7]	外	另	拿	的	
不	頭。	在	去	你、	去	頭。	換	去、	袷	
肯	○	街	把	你	把	○	個	攔	襖、	
把	你[12]	上。	他	不	帳	他[6]	新	在	放	

TRANSLATION.

1 The child has poked out the fire.
2 Take my double coat and put it in the leather trunk.
3 Take away these dishes and put them in the cupboard.
4 I intend to put a new collar on this gown.
5 You can set the stove outside.
6 He got angry and struck me two blows with the palm of his hand.
7 Go and hang up the curtains.
8 I will tell you this affair, but you must not spread it abroad.
9 Mr. Chang has gone home. Do you go and ask him to come.
10 Take away this dirty water and pour it out on the street.
11 You can (or, may) put the key in the drawer.
12 Your shooting off that gun just now frightened the baby till it cried.

掛 *Kwa*[4]. *To hang up,* to suspend; to dwell upon, ... to be anxious about. See *kwa*[1].

揚 *Yang*[2]. To spread; *to publish;* to scatter, ... to winnow; to raise or lift up.

聲張 *Shêng*[1] *chang*[1]. To noise abroad, to pub- .... lish.

張揚 *Chang*[1] *yang*[2]. ... ... The same.

混 *Hun*[2]. ... Turbid, muddy; *dirty.* Also *hun*[4].

鑰 *Yao*[4], *yoă*[4], *yüe*[4]. ... ... A bolt, a key.

鑰匙 *Yao*[4] *shi*[2]. ... ... A key.

鎗 *Ch'iang*[1]. ... .*A gun,* a pistol; a spear.

嚇 *Hê*[4], *hsia*[4]. To threaten, to intimidate; to .... scare, *to frighten.*

武 *Wu*[3]. .... Military, martial; majestic, fierce.

武藝 *Wu*[3] *i*[4]. Military tactics; *skill,*—of any .... kind.

拳 *Ch'üen*[2]. .... ..*The fist;* to grasp in the hand.

踢 *T'i*[1]. ... ... *To tread on;* to kick.

蹬 *Têng*[4]. ... ... To step, *to tread;* to kick.

踢蹬 To spoil, to ruin; to squander.

腹 *Fu*[3,4]. The belly, the abdomen; the seat of .... the mind; *intimate,* dear.

心腹 *Hsin*[1] *fu*[3]. In the heart; intimate, *confi-* .... *dential;* the bosom; the mind.

驢 *Lü*[2]. ... ... An ass, donkey.

趙 *Chao*[4]. ... ... A long time; *a surname.*

驕 *Chiao*[1]. ..... *Proud,* haughty; to be proud of.

傲 *Ao*[4]. ..... *Proud,* uncivil; to treat rudely.

驕傲 *Proud;* overbearing; to disdain.

咧 *Pa*[4]. ... ... The cry of a cockatoo. Jackdaw

咧哥 *Pa*[4] *kê*[1]. ... ... The cockatoo.

賭 *Tu*[3]. ... ... To wager, to bet; *to gamble.*

業 *Yie*[4]. *Estate,* patrimony; calling, profession, ... trade. In books,—a sign of the past.

家業 *Chia*[1] *yie*[4]. ... Family inheritance, *estate.*

牢 *Lao*[2]. ... ... A corral; a jail; *firm,* strong.

搖 *Yao*[2]. *To move to and fro;* to shake; to ... ... ring,—as a bell; tossed, disturbed.

搖椅 *Yao*[2] *i*[3]. ... ... A rocking-chair.

舅 *Chiu*[4]. ... ... A maternal uncle.

舅舅 A maternal uncle. See Les. 21, Note 16.

一下 *I*[1] *hsia*[4]. ... ..One time, *one stroke,* once.

東洋車 *Tung*[1] *yang*[2] *ch'ê*[1]. ... ..A jinricksha.

馬褂 *Ma*[3] *kwa*[4]. ..... A short outside coat.

鈕 *Niu*[3]. ... ... A knob; *a button;* a pivot.

襻 *P'an*[4]. ... ... *A loop;* a belt, a band.

鈕襻 A button loop.

釦 *K'ou*[4]. ..... *A button;* a clasp; to button.

釦門 *K'ou*[4] *mên*[2]. A button loop, a button hole. ... ...

Digitized by Google

自己的武藝教給人。○[14]一拳一脚、將人打死。○[15]我的母親死去、把我撇丟了。○李[16]子把我的那把馬掛子上的釦鈕兒、掙壞了兩個。

剪子弄壞[17]了。○不要將心腹話告訴人。○你上東街、把王老三的小驢兒借來。○趙[19]二爺太驕傲、把人看不在眼裏。○你[20]把那個喇哥籠子、給我拿來。○丁[21]少爺常常賭錢、把家業蹧蹋淨了。○你[22]該將這個意思、牢記在心。○把[23]那把大搖椅子、放在桌子旁邊。○你[24]快去將這件事、告訴你的舅舅。○在[25]街上、有個東洋車碰我一下、把鈕釦兒、掙壞了兩個。

13 He is not willing to teach his skill to others.
14 Between fist and foot he killed the man.
15 My mother died and left me.
16 Li-tsī ruined that pair of shears of mine.
17 Do not tell to others what is told you in confidence.
18 Do you go over to the East Street and borrow Wang the Third's donkey.
19 Mr. Chao the Second is too proud: he can not see other people.
20 Bring here that cockatoo's cage for me.
21 Mr. Ting's son is all the time gambling, and has wasted all his estate.
22 You ought to keep this thought always in mind.
23 Put that large rocking-chair beside the table.
24 Go quickly and tell your (maternal) uncle of this affair.
25 A jinricksha ran against me on the street, and tore out two of the button-holes (loops) on my coat.

NOTES.

4 Lit., *I intend to take this piece of gown, and besides [the original one] exchange a new collar.*

6 The Chinese is similar in structure to the vulgar English,—"He got angry and took and struck me."

8 Or, *If I tell you this affair, you must not spread it abroad.*

10 混水 is not used in the South. It means *muddy* rather than *dirty* water.

14 一拳一脚 is spirited and very expressive. It does not necessarily mean, *one* stroke and *one* kick, but a few strokes and kicks.

16 李子 is a girl's name. It is common to name girls after fruits and flowers.

17 心腹話, *words from the heart and belly;* i.e., *confidential secrets.* The Chinese regard not only the heart, but also the belly, as the seat of knowledge.

18 When 小 precedes 驢, an 兒 is always used after it, thus showing the diminutive force of 兒.

19 把人看不在眼裡 Lit., *takes men and sees them not in his eyes;* i.e., *disregards them.*

LESSON XXIX.

THE AUXILIARY VERB 起.

起 is joined as an auxiliary to verbs indicating motion upwards and, by accommodation, to many others. It sometimes has an inceptive force, and sometimes denotes progressive action, but is more frequently used simply to express the completion of the action. It is generally followed by 來. In Peking 起來 is often replaced by 得. For full list of verbs commonly followed by 起, see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

廳 *T'ing*[1]..... *A hall,* a parlor; a court room.
廳房 *T'ing*[1] *fang*[2]. The central and main build-
..... ing in a compound; a reception room or hall.
羊 *Yang*[2]..... A sheep, a goat.
腿 *T'wei*[3]..... The leg, the thigh.
弔 *Tiao*[4]. To condole, to pity; to suspend, *to*
..... *hang up,*—as by a cord.

Digitized by Google

第二十九課

趙[1]老爺的廳房、還沒有蓋起來。○請[2]你把[3]羊腿支撐起來。窗戶喝。先生的錢、給我掉在地下、規矩你起來。大[13]掛子還這[12]些方甎、該按[14]些散的筆、抱起他來。○把[10]這個畫兒掛起來。○檢起來。○把這[11]些的抱起來。

明天早一點起來。○我有一件事託你。○傅[7]來把窗戶關上、屋[4]子裏太熱、可以開[5]一開、○這[6]個賬、給我算起來。○把[8]這個藥、該用水和了[9]再給他喝。○窗戶關上、屋子裏太熱、可以開一開、○這個賬、給我算起來。○把這個藥、該用水和了再給他喝。

TRANSLATION.

1 Mr. Chao has not yet finished building his main hall.
2 Will you please get up a little earlier to-morrow; I have some business to entrust to you.
3 Hang up that leg of mutton.
4 It is too warm in the room: you may raise the window.
5 This medicine is to be taken mixed with water.
6 Please reckon up this account for [me.
7 Is Mr. Fu's book-case finished?
8 String up these loose cash for me.
9 The baby has wakened; you may take him up.
10 Hang up this picture.
11 My pen has fallen on the floor: please pick it up for me.
12 These square bricks ought to be piled up in order.
13 The large coat is not yet hemmed.
14 The officer gave the order, and they were put in confinement.

戶 *Hu⁴*. *A door of one leaf; an opening;* an individual; a household.

窗戶 *Ch'wang¹ hu⁴*. A window.

撐 *Ch'êng¹*. *To prop;* to fasten open; to pole,—as a boat.

喝 *Hê¹*. *To drink,* to sip; a gurgling sound. Also *hê⁴*.

散 *San³*. To fall apart or into disorder; *scattered;* a medicinal powder; odds and ends. See *san⁴*.

醒 *Hsing³*. *To awake;* to arouse; to startle.

抱 *Pao⁴*. To infold; *to hold in the arms;* to compress; to cherish; to harbor.

掉 *Tiao⁴*. To shake; *to fall into or down,* to slip or fall off:—Les. 92.

撿 *Chien³*. *To gather up;* to collate, to sort.

甎 *Chwan¹*. A brick.

方甎 *Fang¹ chwan¹*. A square brick or tile for paving.

稞 *Tou⁴*. A stack of grain; *to pile up.*

吩 *Fên¹*. To order, to direct.

咐 *Fu⁴*. To enjoin.

吩咐 To command, *to order;* to charge.

押 *Ya¹*. To stamp, to sign; to arrest; *to guard;* to suppress; to pawn,—in an unlicensed pawn shop; to mortgage. Also *ya²*.

折 *Chê², shê²*. To break in two; to annul; to break off; to decide, *to discriminate;* to fold; to abate, to discount; to barter.

証 *Chêng⁴*. To testify, to prove; *to remonstrate with.*

折証 To dispute, to wrangle.

競 *Ching⁴*. To strive; to wrangle, to quarrel.

爭競 *Chêng¹ ching⁴*. To dispute, to contend, to wrangle.

字紙 *Tsi⁴ chi³*. Paper with characters on it, either written or printed.

拉 *La¹*. To pull, to drag, to tug; *to take by the hand;* to buy on credit; to bring up.

扶 *Fu²*. *To help,* to assist, to support; to defend; to lean upon.

站 *Chan⁴*. *To stand up;* to stand still, to stop; a stage of a journey.

捲 *Chüen³*. *To roll up;* to curl; to seize.

疊 *Tie²*. *To fold;* to reiterate; to reduplicate.

包 *Pao¹*. *To wrap up;* to contain; to undertake, to contract; to warrant; to plate; a bundle.

袱 *Fu²*. A cloth for wrapping bundles.

包袱 A wrapper; a bundle.

Digitized by Google

沒 稍 得 了。 官[14] 吩 一 聲、 把 他 們
押 起 來 了。 這[15] 些 零 錢、 合 起 來 是
七 十 五 個。 你[16] 說 起 這 個、 我 就 想
起 一 件 事 來。 他[17] 們 兩 個 爭 折 証 競 一
會 兒、 就 罵 起 來。 我[18] 走 了 不 多
時 候、 就 下 起 雨 來 了。 把[19] 那 些 字
紙、 都 拾 起 來。 耶[20] 穌 拉 着 孩 子 的
手、 扶 他 起 來、 孩 子 就 站 起 來 了。
這[21] 些 衣 裳、 該 捲 的 捲 起 來、 該 疊 的
疊 起 來、 後 來 用 包 袱 包 起 來。

15 These remnants of cash amount in all to seventy-five.

16 Your speaking of this reminds me of a certain affair.

17 They two, having disputed a while, began to swear at each other.

18 I had gone but a little while when it began to rain.

19 Gather up all that paper with characters on it.

20 Jesus took the child by the hand and assisted her to rise, and she stood up.

21 Roll up such of these clothes as should be rolled up, and fold such as should be folded, and then tie them up in a bundle (large handkerchief).

Notes.

1 蓋起來. If the emphasis be thrown on 蓋, the meaning is simply, *built;* if on 起來, the meaning is, *finished building.* When 起 is used alone, it necessarily takes the emphasis and the meaning is, *finished building.*

4 支 is used in the North, 撐 in the South. The former means to *hoist*, the latter more properly means to *prop.*

8 穿. Some would write 串, as the more proper character, though its tone is not correct. If used, it should be read *ch'uan*[1].

10 Foreign pictures in frames are generally classified by 個, rather than by 張:—Les. 42.

14 一聲, *One sound;* that is, he gave one short peremptory order.

16 就 here means *at once*, as it often does:—Les. 44.

18 起來 *seems* inappropriate here. It is used inceptively.

19 It is considered a sin and a shame to defile paper with characters on it, and a meritorious thing to gather it up carefully and burn it, thus preventing its being trodden under foot, or defiled by others. Written characters, being handed down from the sages of antiquity, are regarded as sacred and hence to defile them is a species of sacrilege.

21 The form of expression in this sentence is very common in Chinese.

Lesson XXX.

上 and 下 as Auxiliary Verbs.

上 is added as an auxiliary to verbs expressing motion upwards, and 下 to verbs expressing motion downwards. They are not confined, however, to verbs of motion but are used freely with many others. Besides the idea of motion, they sometimes express the success or practicability, of the action.

To both of them 來 and 去 are frequently added.

Vocabulary.

套 *T'ao*[4]. *To encase;* to include; a wrapper, *a case;* a snare, a trap; tedious, conventional. A classifier:—Les. 42.

筆帽 *Pi*[3] *mao*[4]. A brass cap to protect the point of a Chinese pen.

筆套 *Pi*[3] *t'ao*[4]. The same.

剁 *To*[4]. To chop, to mince; *to cut off.*

節 *Chie*[2]. A limit of time, a festival; *a verse,* a section; temperance, moderation; to regulate. A classifier:—Les. 147. Also *chie*[3].

抄 *Ch'ao*[1]. To hunt up; *to write out,* to transcribe; to confiscate.

盤 *P'an*[2]. A platter, *a plate;* a market; an affair; to coil, to wind; to examine, to question.

牛 *Niu*[2]. A cow, an ox; kine.

搆 *Kou*[4]. To drag, to pull; to implicate; *to reach up to.*

Digitized by Google

第十三課

把[1]你的鞋提上。○這[2]兩個字沒寫、請先生寫上。○不[3]要乾了筆、該把他拉上套帽兒、套上。拿[5]刀○孩[4]子要上炕、你可以筆、把[6]這一節書抄下來。○把[7]可以把骨頭剁下來。○把[8]那塊牛肉給我搆下來。○樓[9]上拿下去。○盤子○我[10]是大人派下來的。○水缸裏有一把[11]舀子、我[12]下樓上來。○在[13]下邊桌子上有半天的工夫、繩求下把匙子、你去把椅子搬上去。○座位、你把這兩個字寫、請你給我送來了。○這[14]是天上掉下

TRANSLATION.

1 Pull up your shoes.
2 These two characters have not been written. Please write them.
3 You should put the cap on the pen, and not allow it to get dry.
4 The child wants to get on the k'ang; pull him up.
5 Take a chopper and chop off the bone.
6 Write out this verse.
7 You may take away this plate.
8 Take down that piece of beef for me.
9 There are no seats upstairs; take up these two chairs.
10 I am come down by appointment of His Excellency.
11 There is a spoon (dipper) in the water kang. Do you go and rake it out.
12 It was half a day before my entreaties prevailed.
13 There are writing materials on the table below. Please bring them up for me.

派 *P'ai⁴*. A branch, a tribe; *to appoint*, to depute; to send; to distribute to each.

缸 *Kang¹*..... A large jar for water, etc.

撈 *Lao¹,²*. *To hook or haul out of the water*, to dredge, to grapple for.

求 *Ch'iu²*. To ask, *to beg;* to pray; to search for, to aim at.

下邊 *Hsia⁴ pien¹*. Below; down-stairs; the apartments of inferiors:—see Note 24, Les. 33.

硯 *Yien⁴*..... An inkstone.

筆硯 *Pi³ yien⁴*. Pen and ink, writing materials,—pen, ink, paper, etc.

富 *Fu⁴*..... *Rich*, affluent; abundant.

富貴 *Fu⁴ kwei⁴*. Riches and honor; wealth, *opulence*.

壓 *Ya⁴*. *To bring into subjection;* to conquer, to repress; to intimidate. Also *ya¹*.

玩 *Wan²*. *To play or toy with;* to ramble; to dawdle; to practice.

耍 *Shwa³*. *To play with*, to trifle; to make game of; to fence; to work at a trade.

玩耍 *To play*, to amuse one's self; to dally with.

玩玩 To play, to amuse one's self:—Les. 33.

腦 *Nao³*..... *The brain;* gum camphor.

袋 *Tai⁴*..... *A bag;* a pocket; a purse.

腦袋 *The head;* the wits; the mind.

輩 *Pei⁴*..... *A generation;* a class, a sort.

老輩 *Lao³ pei⁴*..... Grandfather; ancestors.

祖 *Tsu³*.... Grandfather; ancestors, forefathers.

祖上 *Tsu³ shang⁴*..... Ancestors.

降 *Chiang⁴*. *To descend;* to send down; to fall; to reduce in rank. Also *hsiang²*.

天使 *T'ien¹ shi³*. A heavenly messenger, an angel.

玻 *Po¹*..... A transparent glaze.

璃 *Li²*..... A vitreous substance like glass.

玻璃 Glass.

鴉 *Ya¹*..... A raven, a crow.

鵲 *Ch'iao³, ch'io⁴*. The magpie, jackdaw and jay.

鴉鵲 The magpie.

喜鵲 *Hsi³ ch'iao³*..... The magpie.

落 *Lao⁴*. *To alight*,—as a bird; to fall,—as a price. See *lo⁴*, also *la⁴*.

Digitized by Google

來的富貴。○正[15]上學的時候、不好上落下來。

出去玩玩要。○○○

壓下你去玩玩去。

早、來、把頭腦袋磕破了。

桃兒下來的遲晚。○○

他老輩子下留來的。○這[19]杏[18]個子房子、是位天使、從天上降來下來。○這[21]個窗一

戶掉了一塊玻璃、你可以把他安

上去。○外[22]頭有一個鵲喜鵲、繩從樹

14 This opulence has fallen down from heaven.

15 During school hours it is not right to go out of school to play.

16 You want to put me down, and I want to put you down.

17 My younger brother fell off a horse and cut his head open.

18 Apricots get ripe early, peaches, late.

19 This house was handed down to him from his ancestors.

20 I saw an angel coming down from heaven.

21 There is a pane of glass out of this window. You may put it in.

22 There is a magpie outside which has just flown down from the tree.

Notes.

1 The Chinese are much given to wearing their shoes turned down at the heels; hence the occasion of this language.

3 乾 is properly an adjective, but is here used as a verb; yet it does not mean *to dry the pen*, as would seem most natural, but *to allow it to get dry*.

6 這節書, *this verse of book*. The word 書 is added in order to limit the word 節.

14 This is a strong way of saying that the good fortune referred to was both great and unexpected.

17 腦袋, for the head, is Pekingese. Its metaphorical use is more general.

20 天使, for angel, is a Christian term.

22 喜鵲, is the more general term; though 鵲鵲 is also widely used.

LESSON XXXI.

Negation and Affirmation with Auxiliaries.

When a negative is inserted after the principal verb and before the auxiliary, the meaning is not that the action does not take place, but rather that it can not take place; i.e., the negative applies to the auxiliary, not to the principal verb. When it is desired to affirm strongly in opposition to a previous negation, the clause is repeated with 得 substituted for the negative:—Les. 43.

These forms give a peculiar and admirable force, which we can not fully express in English.

Vocabulary.

得 *Tei*[3]. Must, ought. See *tê*[2]. This distinction ... ... of pronunciation is not *t'ung hsing*.

必得 *Pi*[4] *tie*[3]. ... Must, necessarily:—Les. 104.

謄 *T'êng*[2]. *To copy*, to transcribe; to transfer; ... .to vacate, to empty.

脊 *Shao*[1]. ... ... An osier or wooden bucket.

桶 *T'ung*[3]. ..... A tub, a cask; *a bucket*, a pail.

提 *Ti*[1]. ... ... To lift up, to carry. See *t'i*[2].

溜 *Liu*[1]. To flow; to issue forth; to float, to .....wander; smooth. Also *liu*[4].

提溜 To carry with the hand,—as a bucket, etc.

挼 *Ning*[3,2]. To haul about, to twist; to pinch. ... . *To carry in the hand.* (s.)

硬 *Ying*[4]. ... *Hard;* stiff; obstinate; unfeeling.

挖 *Wa*[1]. ... ..*To excavate*, to dig out; to gauge.

辰 *Ch'ên*[2]. A Chinese hour; the hour from 7 to ... .8 o'clock A.M.

時辰 *Shi*[2] *ch'ên*[2]. A Chinese hour,—equal to ... ... two English hours.

時辰表 *Shi*[2] *ch'ên*[2] *piao*[3]. .... A watch.

Digitized by Google

第十三課 一

這[1]個表我買不起。
穿不上。○
下。說的不掉不中下去。
○ 一[4]天的工夫、今天○
我[3]們不給我買些
雞上不來。上做、去。
蛋來。○ 來。必○桶箍騰不必你[2]
白清、○ 做你[8]水、不起得走、我
下打瘦[12]○ 時[11]不跟我提提來。
不子人的辰下着撐溜溜○你買
會沫潑褲表來。他不不他[5]留的
下兒子、是○走、起不上了。的也鞋
來。胖外我[10]我來。○嘴是太
○子人國的看○地[7]拙、留小、
四[14]穿來小你凍怕不我
五不的、刀跟

Translation.

1 I can not afford to buy this watch.
2 The shoes you bought for me are too small; I can not get them on.
3 We must go to-day. You can not detain us if you would. [one day.
4 I can not copy it in the space of
5 His tongue is thick; I fear he will not be able to say it.
6 I can not carry this bucket of water.
7 The ground is frozen too hard; I fear you can not excavate it.
8 If you go with him, it is my opinion you will not be able to keep up.
9 If you depend on preparing this food after it is ordered, you will certainly not be able to do it in time.
10 My pocket knife has fallen into the water, and I can not get it out.
11 Watches come from abroad. The Chinese can not make them.
12 A fat man can not put on a lean man's trousers. [beat into a froth.
13 The whites of these eggs will not
14 Is a boy four or five years old not able to get down himself?

瘦 *Shou*[4], *sou*[4]. . . . . *Lean*, thin, poor.
褲 *K'u*[4]. . . . . Trousers, pantaloons.
蛋 *Tan*[4]. . . . . *An egg;* a testicle.
潑 *P'o*[1]. To scatter, to splash; to drip; *froth;* . . . . . to waste; to dissipate; resolute, gamey.
沫 *Mo*[4]. . . . . *Froth*, foam; bubbles.
英 *Ying*[1]. . . . . Flourishing; excellent; brave.
英國 *Ying*[1] *kwo*[2]. . . . . Great Britain.
密 *Mi*[4]. Thick, dense, close; *fine*, small; hidden; . . . . . intimate; secret.
細密 *Hsi*[4] *mi*[4]. . . . . Fine; delicate; close.
坑 *K'êng*[1]. *A pit, a hollow;* a quarry; a mine; . . . . . to entrap; to wrong.
頭晌 *T'ou*[2] *shang*[3]. . . . . The forenoon.
上半天 *Shang*[4] *pan*[4] *t'ien*[1]. . . . . The same.
填 *T'ien*[2]. *To fill up;* to make up a deficiency, ... to repay; to add on.
丸 *Wan*[2]. . . . . *A pill;* a small ball; a bullet.
丸藥 *Wan*[2] *yao*[4]. . . . . Pills.
咽 *Yien*[4]. . . . . *To swallow*, to gulp. Also *yien*[1].
喘 *Ch'wan*[3]. *To breathe;* to breathe hard, to . . . . . pant.
歎 *T'an*[4]. . . . . To sigh, to moan. *To breathe.* (s.)
鹽 *Yien*[2]. . . . . Salt, saline.
錁 *K'ê*[4]. *A small ingot of silver or gold;* paper . . . . . money.
鹽錁 A small shoe of silver of about ten taels.
銀錁 *Yin*[2] *k'ê*[4]. . . . . The same.
色 *Sê*[4], *shê*[4], *shai*[3]. Color, hue; manner; expres- . . . . . sion of face; kind; *quality;* lust, venery.
成色 *Ch'êng*[2] *sê*[4]. . . . . Quality, touch.
足 *Tsu*[2], *chü*[2]. The foot; enough, *sufficient;* to . . . . . satisfy; entirely, in full.
一身 *I*[1] *shên*[1]. . . . . The whole body.
腰 *Yao*[1]. The loins; *the small of the back;* the . . . . . kidneys; the waist; the middle.
伸 *Shên*[1]. To stretch, to expand; *to straighten;* . . . . . to explain; to redress.
膀 *Pang*[3]. . . . . The upper arm, the humerus.

Digitized by Google

實在覺得下不去。○英[16]國話難學、怕你不起一身病、腿站不上行市。○張[23]老三的奶老婆成天還填針綫做不上來。○我[17]的眼已經花了、細密針黹不足、換不做不上來。○這[18]個坑、一頭晌工夫還做不上來。○這[19]丸藥你若咽不下去、可以用水送下去。○我[20]有個心疼的病、到疼起來、一點氣也喘不上來。○有[21]現成現成的鹽課、銀子、還是[22]個老婆婆的奶老婆、不起來、腰伸直不起來、頭擡不起來。

15 I felt that I could not but promise him.
16 English is hard to learn. I fear you will not be able to learn it.
17 My eyes have already failed, so that I can not do fine sewing.
18 Can you not fill up this pit in a whole forenoon?
19 If you can not swallow these pills, use some water to wash them down.
20 I am subject to pain in my stomach; and when the pain comes on, I can not get my breath at all.
21 Can you not make it, even when you have a ready-made pattern?
22 The quality of this ingot is below par. It will not exchange for market price.
23 Chaog the Third's wife is diseased all over. She can not stand on her legs, nor straighten her back, nor hold up her head, nor lift up her arms.

NOTES.

9 現吃現做 means, to prepare food after it is ordered, or after the guest arrives and is ready to eat. 現 is constantly so used of anything done on or for the occasion, excluding previous preparation.

11 In this sentence 做不上來 indicates want of skill, and in the 9th, 做不下來 indicates want of time; but this distinction between 上 and 下 is merely accidental.

12 Some teachers insist on using 上, and others on using 下. In the former case, the conception is of pulling the trousers on to the legs, and in the latter, of putting the legs into the trousers.

13 沫 is the better and more widely used word for *froth*. The two terms for *the white of an egg* are both widely used.

14 下不來 is rejected by Southern teachers.

15 下不去 is similar in form (but not in elegance) to the slang phrase, "it won't go down."

20 心疼的病 seems to say that the pain is in the *heart*, but *heart* is here put for the stomach.

22 鹽課 is so called because it is used in the payment of the salt tax. Sometimes written 元課 from its similarity to the larger 元寶 of fifty taels.

LESSON XXXII

DEFINITE LOCATIVES.

這 and 那 are joined with the words 頭, 面, 邊 and 處 to express *this* and *that* end, face, side or place. These forms are much more used in Chinese than are the corresponding forms in English. They may often be translated simply by *here* and *there*.

這頭 This end. } Applied to things having
那頭 That end. } length; also to parties opposed to each other.

這面 This face. } Applied to thin articles with
那面 That face. } faces; also to opposing parties.

這邊 This side or edge. } Applied to the bor-
那邊 That side or edge. } ders, or margins, of things, and to places.

這處 This place, or neighborhood. } Slightly
那處 That place, or neighborhood. } bookish.

VOCABULARY.

窄 *Tsê*[3], *chai*[3]. *Narrow;* straightened; narrow-minded, mean.

朝 *Ch'ao*[2]. The imperial court; the sovereign; a dynasty; towards, *facing*. See *chao*[1].

窪 *Wa*[1]. A low place; hollow, *concave*. Often written 凹.

河 *Hê*[2]. *A river;* a canal; a creek.

兵 *Ping*[1]. *A soldier,* troops, martial; a pawn.

Digitized by Google

第二十三課

這[1] 薄、桿。細 面 兵[9] 這 邊 面 沒
邊 ○ ○ 、平 面 向 兒 有。
邊 寬、這[3] 這[5] 那 我[8] 兒、黑。陽 理 ○
那 頭 頭 面 面 那 還 ○ 偏[15]。人
邊、邊 大、兒 窊。窄。朝 那 頭、上 在 一 方 地 背 桌[14] 面 那[11] 說
○ 頭 ○ 河[7] 處 滑 實 光 窓。兒 事、
這[2] 小。那 頭 ○ 這 亂 的 點些。 ○ 不
邊 ○ 面 邊 ○ 雜、 這[13] 人 好
兒 這[4] 兒 頭 厚、 那 粗、 下。 兒 不 那 閒 有 邊 不 這[10] 護
邊 朝、 賊、 人 邊 好 兒 抽 着
那 邊 ○ 那 斷。 亮、 正、 那 頭、 這 屜、 這
兒 頭 這[6] 有 ○ 那[12] 這 邊 那 說

TRANSLATION.

1 This side is wide, and that side is narrow.
2 This side is thick, and that side thin.
3 This end is large, and that end small.
4 This end is coarse, and that end fine.
5 This is to be the upper side, and that the lower side.
6 This side is level; that side is concave.
7 On this side of the river there were robbers; on that side, soldiers.
8 There is a deal of confusion over where I am: there are idlers around all the time.
9 This side is somewhat smoother.
10 Here it is light, and there, dark.
11 The people there are not fit to associate with.
12 This side faces the sun; that side is [shaded.
13 On this side the argument is fair; on that side it is forced.
14 The table has a drawer on this side; on that side it has none.

亂 *Lan*[4], *luan*[4]. Disorder; *confusion;* anarchy, ... rebellion; tangled.

雜 *Cha*[2], *tsa*[2]. Mixed; *confused;* heterogeneous, ... miscellaneous.

亂雜 *Confused;* disorderly; promiscuous. Note 8.

斷 *Twan*[4]. To break or snap in two; to put a .....stop to; *to discontinue;* to decide; certainly, positively:—Les. 116.

光 *Kwang*[1]. Light, brilliance; honor, glory; naked; ..... *smooth;* only, solely:—Les. 49.

滑 *Hwa*[2]. *Smooth;* slippery; polished; knavish, ...cunning; to slip and fall.

光滑 *Smooth;* polished; shining.

向 *Hsiang*[4]. Towards, *facing;* an intention; ..... hitherto, heretofore; the points of the compass:—Les. 119.

陰 *Yin*[1]. A shadow, *shady;* dark; cloudy; hades; ..... the inferior of the dual powers of nature; female; secret, private; supernatural.

偏 *P'ien*[1]. Deflected; excessive; *partial,* prejudic- ..... ed; bent on, determined:—Les. 112.

婿 *Hsü*[4]..... A son-in-law.

女婿 *Nü*[3] *hsü*[4]..... A son-in-law.

姑爺 *Ku*[1] *yie*[2]. Son-in-law,—a title given to a ..... man by the servants and younger members of his wife's family.

說和 *Shuo*[1] *hê*[2]. To make up a quarrel; *to* ..... *act as mediator.*

怪 *Kwai*[4]. Strange, monstrous; supernatural; a .....ghoul; to take offense at, to be surprised; *very,* unusually:—Note 18, also Les. 142.

冰 *Ping*[1]..... *Ice;* clear; crystallized.

鐵匠 *T'ie*[3] *chiang*[4].....A blacksmith.

濟 *Chi*[3,4]. To aid, to relieve; to effect, to further; .....to stop; clever, *excellent.*

不濟 *Pu*[4] *chi*[4]..... Inferior, poor, scrubby.

分 *Fên*[1]. To divide, to separate; to apportion; .....to share; to distinguish; a tenth; a candareen or tenth of a mace. See *fèn*[4].

分明 *Fên*[1] *ming*[2].....Clearly, manifestly.

翻 *Fan*[1]. *To turn over;* to change; to reverse; .....a bout; a set; fickle.

騰 *T'êng*[2]... To ascend; to transfer; to vacate.

翻騰 To turn over, to rummage, to overhaul. In this phrase **騰** is, in most places, read *têng*[2].

陣 *Chên*[4]. To set in array, a rank; an army; a .....battle; *a burst, a time.*—Les. 100.

隔 *Kê*[2], *chie*[2]. A division; to separate, to put or ..... keep asunder; *to prevent.*

釘 *Ting*[4]..... To nail; *to fasten.* See *ting*[1].

搁板 *Kê*[1] *pan*[3]..... A shelf; a mantel.

透 *T'ou*[4]. *To pass through;* to comprehend; .....through; thoroughly:—Les. 102.

Digitized by Google

那頭。○是[16]女婿爺這頭兒告了呢、是女婿娘那頭兒告了呢。○這[17]是正面、那是反面。○炕[18]這頭怪熱、那頭冰涼。○這[19]地方的鐵匠頂不中用、一個好手藝的沒有。○你[20]分明是向着那一邊兒、又上這邊兒來做甚麼呢。○我的鏡子、這面好照人、那面好看畫兒。○這[22]裏的莊稼、比我們那邊的遲晚些。○你[23]翻騰我的抽屜做甚麼、這裏頭沒有你的東西。○昨[24]天下了一陣大雨、把我隔在河那邊。○你[25]看你鈎的這個擱板、這頭高着有二分。○這[26]邊有個小眼、往外透撒氣。

15 When acting as mediator, it is not right to shield one side, and blame the other.

16 Was it the son-in-law's side that brought the suit, or was it the daughter's? [wrong.

17 This is the right side, and that, the

18 This end of the k'ang is very hot, and that end is cold as ice.

19 The blacksmiths of this place are very poor: there is not a good one among them.

20 You are manifestly partial to that side; what are you coming over here for?

21 This mirror of mine reflects your person on this side, and shows you a picture on that side. [with us.

22 The crops are later here than over

23 What are you rummaging my drawer for? There is nothing of yours in here.

24 Yesterday there came a great rain, which cut me off on that side of the river.

25. Look at this shelf which you have put up. This end is about two-tenths of an inch higher (than that end).

26 There is a small hole on this side, which lets out the air.

Notes.

8 亂雜 is often inverted (viz., **雜亂**) without appreciable change of meaning.

9 The two forms are quite equivalent; which is used being a mere matter of taste.

12 Lit., *This side faces the light; that side backs the shade.*

18 怪. Properly, *monstrous, frightful*, but often used as a species of intensive, meaning *excessively, very, rather*. It is only applied to things that are disagreeable or unexpected, and its use may perhaps be explained by considering it an exaggeration; just as the words "horrid" and "frightful" are often used in colloquial English. When so used its tone in most places changes to *kwai*[3].

19 不濟 is a very expressive phrase, which is widely used, though not, perhaps, entirely *t'ung hsing*. It is found in the Sacred Edict.

21 The Chinese are fond of having pictures set in the backs of their mirrors.

25 二分. The parts, or tenths, are understood to be parts of an inch, without specifying the fact.

26 往外撒氣 Lit., *go out leak air*. A relative must be supplied by which to connect the clauses.

LESSON XXXIII.

Reduplication of Verbs.

Verbs are repeated, partly for emphasis, and partly to specialize the action expressed. In many cases — is inserted between the words, by which the second verb is turned into a verbal noun;—thus **看一看**, *to look a look*, or, as we say, "to take a look." It is very likely that the original and full form is that with —, and that the — has been omitted in some cases for the sake of brevity. The meaning is substantially the same, whether — is inserted or not.

Vocabulary.

停 *T'ing*[2]. *To stop*, to cease; to delay; suitable, fit, satisfactory.

景 *Ching*[3]. Bright, luminous; *aspect, view;* a sight, a curiosity; style, form.

光景 *Kwang*[1] *ching*[3]. *State of affairs;* circumstances; scenery; sights.

曬 or **晒** *Shai*[4]. To dry in the sun; *to sun;* to beam upon.

Digitized by Google

第三十三課

客[1]來。一李親的說砍走。
堂看。曬先來題一砍了。
的看。○生了甚題。砍○
鐘事少[4]坐這沒題。○○
停情坐樣有。○他[10]這[9]家
了、的坐費○你[8]頭來去
你光再心。不[7]寬去看坐
去景。走○必聽一了看、
開上○[3]快[6]明聽點一要
開上可好去、說他可、緊油
以他。嗎。望可以們以就早煉
拿○望○在用急早一
去我[2]謝[5]你畧那斧急的煉。
們曬謝父畧裏子的回○

Translation.

1 The clock in the parlor has stopped. Do you go and wind it.
2 We have come to take a look at the state of the affair.
3 Take it away and sun it. [you go?
4 Why not sit down a little before
5 Thank you, Mr. Li, for taking all this trouble.
6 Go quickly and look if your father has come (or, is coming).
7 You need not tell it out plainly: you can allude to it in a general way.
8 Do you go and listen to what they are saying over there.
9 This end is a little wide. Take an ax and hew off some.
10 He came and sat for a while, and then went off in a hurry.
11 When you go home for a visit, be sure and come back early.
12 Wash the kettle, and then try out that fat.

謝 *Hsie*[4]. . . . *To thank;* to resign, to quit; to fade.
費心 *Fei*[4] *hsin*[1]. *To take trouble*, to be accommodating; thank you.
畧 *Lüe*[4], *liao*[4], *liao*[3]. To plan; to seize, to capture; to abridge; a resumé; *in general*, rather, slightly, approximately:—Les. 177.
題 *T'i*[2]. A theme, a proposition, a subject; a heading; *to mention;* to discuss.
砍 *K'an*[3]. To chop, *to cut off;* to cut with a sword or edged weapon; to fell.
脂 *Chï*[1]. . . . . *Fat*, lard, grease; suet.
油 *Yiu*[2]. . . . . Oil; *fat;* slippery; shining; to oil.
脂油 Lard, *fat.*
煉 *Lien*[4]. . . . . To refine, to smelt; *to try out*, [or to separate.
秤 *Ch'êng*[4]. . . . . A steelyard, a balance.
數 *Shu*[4]. *A number;* a list, an account; several; destiny, fate. See *shu*[3], also *soă*[4].
夠數 *Kou*[4] *shu*[4]. . . . . Enough for the purpose.
聞 *Wên*[2]. To hear, to learn from report; *to smell;* news, fame.
嘗 *Ch'ang*[2]. *To taste*, to test, to prove; usually, formerly, ever:—Les. 192.
鹹 *Hsien*[2]. . . . Saltish; *salted;* bitter.
修 *Hsiu*[1]. To adorn; *to clean up;* to repair; to adjust; to cultivate; to chasten.
甲 *Chia*[3]. . . . . The chief, number one; to excel; armor; a scale, *a finger-nail;* C in music.
指甲 *Chï*[3] *chia*[3]. . . . . Finger or toe nails.
消 *Hsiao*[1]. To melt; *to pass away;* to cancel; to allay; to digest; to exhaust; required, necessary.
灑 or 洒 *Sa*[3], *sha*[3], *shai*[3]. *To sprinkle;* to scatter; to spill, to slop over.
加 *Chia*[1]. *To add*, to superadd; to increase; to confer upon; to inflict.
烙 *Loă*[4], *lao*[4]. To burn in or brand; to bake; *to iron clothes* or press a seam.
烙鐵 *Loă*[4] *t'ie*[3]. A branding iron; a soldering iron; *a flat iron.*
燙 *T'ang*[4]. *To iron* or smooth out; to scald, to burn or blister.
逛 *Kwang*[4]. To ramble; to visit; *to walk for pleasure.*
戀 *Lien*[4], *lüen*[4]. *To long for*, to dote on, to hanker for; loving.
捨 *Shê*[3]. To let go, *to give up;* to abandon; to renounce; to give alms.
戀戀不捨 Unable to give up, captivated.
揚揚得意 *Yang*[2] *yang*[2] *tê*[2] *i*[4]. Self-satisfied, elated.
梳 *Shu*[1]. . . . . A coarse-toothed comb; to comb.
抹 *Ma*[1]. To wipe, to wipe off or out; to rub off; *to dust.* Also *moă*[3].

Digitized by Google

拿[13]秤來稱一稱、看看殼數不殼。○你[14]不信聞、是臭了不是。○做[15]的時候、你沒嘗嘗鹹不鹹。嗎。○聞、今[16]你把[17]現在他的天我要去見見他、間間他爲甚麼怪着我。○把[18]正生大氣、可以等他消消氣再說。○先[19]用水灑一灑、再加烙鐵燙烙。——燙烙。○這[20]樣好天、你該出去逛逛、散散心。○他[21]到如今、還是戀戀不捨的。○看[22]他那個樣子、眞是揚揚得意。○早[23]晨起來、洗洗臉、梳梳頭、掃掃地、抹抹桌子、這是一套兒的事情。○你[24]在下邊等一等、我上去給你問問。

13 Bring the steelyards and weigh it, and see if it is full weight.
14 If you don't believe it is spoiled, smell it.
15 When you made it, did you not taste whether it was salt or not?
16 I intend to go to see him to-day and ask him why he is offended at me.
17 Lend me (the use of) your knife to trim my finger-nails.
18 He is very angry just now; wait till his passion cools and we will see about it.
19 First sprinkle with water, and then iron with a flat iron.
20 In such pleasant weather as this, you ought to go out for exercise and recreation.
21 Even to this time she can not give him up.
22 Judging from his appearance he is quite elated.
23 When you get up in the morning, the first things in order are, to wash your face, and comb your hair, and sweep the floor, and dust the table.
24 Wait in the rear, till I go in and inquire.

Notes.

1 上 is the more general word for winding a clock or watch. In Nanking 開 is used.

4 In the translation, 再 is rendered *before*. A more literal translation would preserve its normal meaning; thus,—*Would it not be well to sit down a little and then go?*

7 Some teachers insist on 提, instead of 題, in this sentence. The usage varies. There is authority for using both characters in the sense of *to mention*.

16 怪 is translated in the passive, though the construction is not properly passive. 怪 means *to take offence*, and hence, *to be offended*.

17 In Peking the tone of 指 changes in 指甲, to *chi*[4].

18 We speak of anger cooling; the Chinese, of its melting.

19 烙鐵 is properly either a branding iron, or a small goose for pressing seams; but the term is often used of foreign flat-irons. The second character changes its sound in many places to *t'i*[4], in Peking to *t'ie*[4]. 加烙鐵, *add an iron*; i.e. *proceed, in addition, to iron them*.

21 戀戀不捨. A book phrase, in which the first character is repeated and the opposite idea added with a negative. Phrases made on this model are common.

22 揚揚得意. A book phrase, meaning *to toss the head with a self-satisfied air*.

23 抹 is not read *ma* by the dictionaries; but the syllable *ma* is everywhere used, both North and South, in the sense of *to wipe off*, the idea of cleansing or removing being prominent; and 抹 seems to be the best character to which to attach this meaning. The tone differs in different places. Read *mo*[3], it means *to rub on*, the idea of adding something being prominent.

24 In a yamen, or wherever there are servants or employés, to go into the presence of the officer, or head of the house, is to 上去; and his office, or residence, is referred to as 上邊: hence, also, the houses, or apartments, allotted to inferiors, are spoken of as 下邊. *In the rear*, seems to be our best approximation. It should be noted, however, that with the Chinese the apartments of subordinates are frequently, perhaps generally, in the front.

LESSON XXXIV.

The Interrogative Personal Pronoun.

誰, who, is applied only to persons. It is properly interrogative, but is also used to mean *some one*, *somebody*, and with a negative, *nobody* or *anybody*. It is not much used along the Yangtse, 那個 being used instead. It is understood, however, and but a short distance northwards begins to be heard. Its use is one of the characteristics of a pure Mandarin.

Digitized by Google

第四十三課

今天能下雨不能、答的那個誰是誰的。你知道。

得是誰的。這[11]是那[10]誰呢[12]。

那裏看門的鎮仿圈，那向紙圈個誰。

些看藝兒、那[9]誰答。

有玩門。姓那[7]誰。

叫那[5]誰。

是那[1]誰。

○

○

○

時候他們正在氣頭上、誰也不肯讓誰。

嚴切嚴切的吩咐他、隨你的便那個不是、不是誰不要告訴。○這[24]

的也不是、答不是我的[23]

○同[20]在一體貼個鄉村、那個滋味。○

的瓜兒苦。○誰[19]的門口能掛得住。

裏沒有外人、不是你的心裏認不得那個無事牌。○

嗎呢。怕。○○姜[14]玉山一點羞恥也沒有、他管任誰[18]說自己呢。

○那[16]你[15]聽人聽的街上名直吵嚷、誰吵嚷、誰知道誰鬧誰[17]

○饑荒不

14 Chiang Yü Shan has no shame at all. He fears nobody.

15 Listen to that incessant clamor on the street. Who is making a row with whom?

16 Who does not know that man's bad reputation?

17 There was no other (outside) person here. If it was not you, who was it?

18 Who is willing to admit that his own melons are bitter?

19 Who can hang up a "no trouble notice" at his door?

20 All living in the same village; who does not know every body?

21 No one can appreciate the feelings of my heart.

22 This is not my fault. *Ans.* If it is not your fault, whose is it?

23 You should strictly charge him not to tell anybody.

24 Just now they are in the height of their anger, and no one will yield to any other.

Notes.

3 這 here refers to the thing told, not to the person telling it. The 的 at the end may be omitted. Its use or omission does not alter the sense, but changes the grammatical structure. Without it the translation should be, *Who told you this?*

7 粉 here means the white lead with which Chinese women paint their faces. The idea of the proverb is that one who has merit naturally wishes to display it.

12 A neat way of expressing the idea, that it is to every one's interest to stand up for the man through whom he gets his livelihood.

14 管 is colloquial, and prevails in Central Mandarin. 任 is more elegant, but is slightly bookish in the South, where 隨便 is chiefly used (23).

15 The translation given supposes the sentence to end with 呢. If 嗎 be used, the translation of the last clause should be, *Is it some one having a row with some one?* The emphasis thrown on the 誰 and on the 饑荒 should be quite different for the different interrogative endings.

18 誰 is here equivalent to 自己. Its use in this connection is less general than that of 自己.

19 This sentence grows out of the custom of hanging tablets over the door with complimentary or sentimental inscriptions. Few families are so happy that they can hang up an inscription setting forth that they are free from care.

22 This sentence affords a good exercise in emphasis.

24 氣頭上 Lit., *On the top of their anger.*

LESSON XXXV.

Indefinite Pronouns.

都 All. Its sense is comprehensive. When referring to two things previously spoken of, it is to be rendered *both;* when used, as it frequently is, with a single person or thing, it has the force of *even;* and when preceded by 各 it means severally. It is frequently joined with the other indefinite pronouns as an expletive. It follows the noun.

凡 Every body. Its sense is distributive.

衆 All. Its sense is collective. It is ordinarily applied only to persons. It precedes the noun.

大衆 All, the whole crowd.
大家 All, the whole family or party.
攏總 All, all together, the whole lot, *in toto.*
通統 All, every single one.
通身 All together, *en masse.*

For other words of this class, see Les. 158.

Digitized by Google

第三十五課

他[1]心。不都裏是家○都有
一知來都攏的假是家的認一
人[3]趣。了總的。見家得百
老○嗎。有裏識○誰、裏家零
了、腰[5]你○三千[7]除了[10]兩多個[12]錢不[16]是甚
病腿家的裏這都都不都大
了。都都個兵。個、有都大
○不孩○他[9]甚中用。[2]念書
寫○凡[4]事都要得專
字、呢。去。○[6]衆不位可
都[8]這[11]大薄。身○

TRANSLATION.

1 His whole family, old and young, are sick.
2 In both reading and writing, one should give undivided attention.
3 When a man gets old, both his back and his legs are unserviceable.
4 In every thing, a man should have a just appreciation of the time and the circumstances.
5 Who all are there in your family?
6 Have all [the gentlemen] come?
7 You may take away all except this.
8 There are here, in all, over three thousand soldiers.
9 That talk of his is all false.
10 Your two children are both gifted.
11 Our opinions do not all agree.
12 He treats every body meanly.
13 I have not a single cash in the house.
14 Whom all do you know in this place? *Ans.* I do not know any body at all.
15 The Province of Shantung has, in all, one hundred and eight hsiens.
16 At what time he left, none of us know.

都 *Tu*[1], *tou*[1]. A metropolitan city; all, every ..... one; in general:—See Sub.

凡 or 凡 *Fan*[2]. All, everybody; common, vulgar; .....the world; mortal; earthly.

衆 *Chung*[4]. A concourse; the majority; all; the ..... whole; many:—See Sub.

攏 *Lung*[3]. To seize; to collect together; to ..... operate on; to draw near, to comb.

總 *Tsung*[3]. To unite in one, to comprehend; all, ...the whole; generic; generally, still, in any case; must be; a president:—Les. 104.

通 *T'ung*[1]. To go through; to perceive; to make ..... known; to communicate; to pervade; current; everywhere, general; the whole of.

統 *T'ung*[3]. To gather into one; the whole, general, ...entire; to control; a clue.

專心 *Chwan*[1] *hsin*[1]. Undivided attention; a sin- ..... gle purpose; intent on.

趣 *Ch'ü*[4]. To run quickly; to show alacrity; to ..... regard pleasurably; *taste, flavor;* graceful, elegant.

知趣 *Chi*[1] *ch'ü*[4]. To know the flavor, to have a ..... sense of the fitness of things.

除 *Ch'u*[2]. To exclude, to deduct; to divide .....(math.); besides, *except:*—Les. 135.

見識 *Chien*[4] *shi*[2]. *Opinion*, sentiments; expe- ..... rience; discernment.

刻 *K'ê*[4]. Insulting; *oppressive;* one-eighth of a ..... Chinese hour, or fifteen minutes; a little while. Also *k'ê*[1].

刻薄 *K'ê*[4] *poâ*[2]. To insult, to oppress, *to treat* ..... *meanly.*

山東 *Shan*[1] *tung*[1]..... Province of Shantung.

省 *Shêng*[3]. *A province;* to diminish; to use .....sparingly, to save; to avoid; frugal. Also *hsing*[3].

縣 *Hsien*[4]. A county,—the district ruled by one .....magistrate.

京城 *Ching*[1] *ch'êng*[2]..... The capital.

井 *Ching*[3]. *A well;* a pit; an excavation; a .....plot of ground.

果 *Kwoâ*[3]. *The fruit of trees;* really, truly; .....results, effects; reliable:—Les. 136.

指頭 *Chi*[3] *t'ou*[2]..... *A finger*, a toe.

般 *Pan*[1]..... Sort, *class;* manner.

Digitized by Google

家都不曉得。○我[17]的眼鏡、都是隨身帶着。○京[18]城裏沒有河水、凡[20]不喫的都是井水。○這[19]是大衆的事、我自己不敢作主。○要[21]得衆人的心、那實在難。○孩[22]子們不能都一樣、十個指頭還能有一般齊嗎。○不[23]可凡事都隨從衆人。○風[24]颳翻了船、把船上的長短、通通統統都淹死了。○這[25]些東西都七亂七八糟的、可以把他收拾好了。○這[26]個學生萬惡滔天、連先生他都敢罵。○你[27]們兩家鬧出饑荒、都會。○來他[29]辦這件事、是甚麼時候兒、甚麼法子、我都知道。

地方兒、甚麼緣故、甚麼地方兒、都是隨身帶着。○京[18]城裏沒有

17 I always carry my spectacles with me.
18 There is no river water in the capital. All the water used is well water.
19 The business concerns [us] all. I can not venture to decide it myself.
20 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.
21 It is a very difficult thing to please every body.
22 Children can not be all alike. Can the ten fingers be all of the same length?
23 You must not follow the crowd in every thing.
24 The wind capsized the boat, and every body on board was drowned.
25 These things are all in confusion. Arrange them in proper order.
26 This scholar is outrageous. He even dares to swear at his teacher.
27 You two families getting into a quarrel and going to law, is all of his getting up.
28 Card playing, thimble-rigging and dice throwing;—he is skilled in all of them.
29 I know all about when, and where, and why, and how, he did this thing.

一般 *I[1] pan[1]*. . . . . Alike, the same. Les. 106.
隨從 *Swei[2] ts'ung[2]*. . . . *To follow*, to accord with.
船 *Ch'wan[2]*. . . . . A ship, a boat, a junk.
淹 *Yien[1]*. To soak, to steep; to overflow; *to drown*; to tarry long.
淹死 *Yien[1] si[3]*. . . . . To drown:—Les. 183.
亂七八糟 *Lan[4] ch'i[1] pa[1] tsao[1]*. Topsy-turvy, helter-skelter, all in confusion:—Note 25.
滔 *T'ao[1]*. . . . . To overpass, to reach beyond.
萬惡滔天 *Wan[4] oŏ[4] t'ao[2] t'ien[1]*. Wicked beyond bounds, outrageous, incorrigible.
葛 *Kĕ[2]*. A long creeping vine; connections. As a surname read *kĕ[3]*.
藤 *T'ĕng[2]*. . . . . A trailing plant; the rattan.
葛藤 Intercourse; a difficulty, an embarrassment; *a scrape;* a hanger-on.
狀 *Chwang[4]*. Form, appearance; to accuse; *an accusation*, an indictment.
告狀 *Kao[4] chwang[4]*. To accuse, to indict; *to go to law.*
壓 *Ya[1]*. . . . *To press down*, to weight. See *ya[4]*.
寶 *Pao[3]*. Precious; a gem; a coin; *a treasure;* a complimentary term:—Les. 171.
壓寶 To play at thimble-rig:—Note 28.
看牌 *K'an[4] p'ai[2]*. . . . . To play cards.
擲 *Chi[1]*. *To throw down* or at; to fling away, to reject; to shovel,—as earth.
骰 *Shai[3]*. . . . . Dice.
緣 *Yien[2], yŭen[2]*. A facing, a binding; corresponding with something previously existing, a subtle affinity; *because, therefore.*
緣故 *Yien[2] ku[4]*. . . . . The cause, the reason.

Digitized by Google

第十三課 六

嗎。那恁不哭。的補他你嗎。你[1]
○麼麼要○孩襯、也的○這
那[8]些再他[6]子、你不兄你[2]麼
麼字、忍那恁從都聽。弟。不大
樣着還耐麼麼來用○○可的
我不他。蹧沒了那[4]任[3]這人、
不會○蹋有嗎。麼怎樣還
算。記你[7]你、這○一些麼欺害
○賬識你樣麼我[5]些個說、負怕

Translation.

1 Such a great fellow as you, and still afraid?
2 You ought not to impose upon your brother in this way.
3 No matter what you say, he will not listen.
4 What! have you used up all that lot of patches?
5 My baby has never cried so before.
6 Having abused you in that way, you should not suffer him any longer.
7 Knowing so many characters as that, can you still not keep accounts?
8 In that case, I will decline.

Notes.

2 In Northern Mandarin necessity is generally expressed by 得, rather than by 要. In the South 要 is used.

13 都 in this sentence is used somewhat like our phrase, "at all,"—*I have not a cent at all in the house.* Its use in this way is common, but not elegant. The sentence in the lesson is taken from a Pekingese book, yet a first-class Pekingese teacher, in reviewing this lesson, threw out the 都 and wrote 也.

17 都 here means, *at all times;* i.e., *always.* 隨身, *following* [my] *body;* i.e., *with me.*

18 吃的水, *the water eaten;* i.e., all the water used for domestic purposes.

21 得衆人的心, *to get the hearts of all;* i.e., *to be acceptable,* or *pleasing, to all.*

22 有長短, *have some long and some short.*

25 亂七八蹧. The original and proper order of this phrase undoubtedly is, 七亂八蹧, *seven disorders, eight accidents;*—a most expressive term for *confusion.*

26 萬惡滔天 is a book phrase; lit., *ten thousand vices overtopping the heavens;*—applied hyperbolically to a bad boy. 都 here includes all others, with the teacher as climax.

28 壓寶 is a method of gambling much practised in some parts of China. It is somewhat similar to the game, or trick, called thimble-rig.

LESSON XXXVI.

Model Particles.

這麼 / 這樣 } Such, in this way, so, thus.

那麼 / 那樣 } Such, in that way, so.

The more common and colloquial form is that with 麼. When so used as to involve a comparison, the comparison is completed by *as this*, in the case of 這麼; and by *as that*, in the case of 那麼.

恁麼 / 恁樣 } Such, in that way, so.

The book pronunciation of 恁 is *jên*[3], but as here used it is read *nin*[3] or *nên*[3] (the final *n* is elided in use). It is a question whether 那 should not always be written, and read as 恁. The use of 恁, however, is not without authority.

怎麼 / 怎樣 } How, in what manner.

The normal use of 怎 is interrogative (see next lesson), but it loses its interrogative force in some cases;—as when used in two correlative clauses (11, 15); or when preceded by such words as 任, 管, 不論, etc., (3, 13); or when immediately following a negative, (14.) In some parts of Shantung, and perhaps elsewhere, 怎麼 is often incorrectly used instead of 這麼.

Vocabulary.

怎 *Tsên*[3]. An interrogative particle generally ..... followed by 麼; why? what?—See Sub.

恁 *Nin*[3]..... Thus, so, such:—See Sub.

負 *Fu*[4]. To carry on the back; to bear, to suffer; ..... to turn the back on; to abuse; *to slight;* to be defeated; minus (math.).

欺負 *Ch'i*[1] *fu*[4]..... *To insult;* to oppress.

Digitized by Google

這[9]想料怎底論那紀還[15]我一點不怎樣。
點到想料怎麼沒麼的麼不的一點不
工夫、他答。問明白。要緊的事、不論
不能[12]我○○○○○○○○○○
做這麼這[13]是他、到怎
那痛快快。頂那[14]了麼
麼○官[11]些活。○
我[10]沒他

9 I can not do all that work in this little time. [prompt.
10 I did not anticipate he could be so
11 He answered according to whatever the officer asked.
12 I questioned him in this way and in that way; and, after all, I did not find out.
13 This is a very important matter: we must, by all means, come to some satisfactory understanding.
14 You are not yet very old; is your mind failing?
15 I do not care in the least. Do just as you think best.
16 According to what you say, there is no use in my acting as go-between for these two families.
17 That scholar is essentially lazy. No matter what you do, he will not study.
18 With such a slippery road as this,

補 *P'u*[1]. To spread, to arrange—used for 鋪 in ..... the phrase 補襯. See *pu*[3], also *p'u*[3].

襯 *Ch'ên*[4]. .....Inner garments; padding.

補襯 Rags; pieces of old cloth used for making pasteboard.

從來 *Ts'ung*[2] *lai*[2]. .....Heretofore:—Les. 119.

忍 *Jên*[3]. Fortitude; patience; to bear, *to suffer* ..... *patiently;* to repress; hard-hearted.

耐 *Nai*[4]. .... *To bear with;* to suffer; to forbear.

忍耐 *To be patient*, to forbear; long-suffering.

料 *Liao*[4]. To estimate, *to judge of;* to arrange .....in order; materials; grain, pulse; strass, colored glass; ability, skill.

料想 *Liao*[4] *hsiang*[3]. *To anticipate*, to expect, to ..... deem.

想到 *Hsiang*[3] *tao*[4]. To think of; to expect, ... *to anticipate:*—Les. 91.

痛 *T'ung*[4]. Pain, ache; acute feeling; to com-.....miserate; distressed.

痛快 *T'ung*[4] *k'wai*[4]. Cheerful, buoyant; *prompt*, ...ready; hearty.

爽 *Shwang*[3]. Cheerful; light-hearted; healthy, ... vigorous; sudden; ready, *quick.*

爽快 *Shwang*[3] *k'wai*[4]. Cheerful, healthy, vigor-.....ous; quick, *prompt.*

紀 *Chi*[4]. To arrange and record; annals; *a year*, ... a period.

年紀 *Nien*[2] *chi*[4]. ..... *Age;* years; time.

聽 *T'ing*[4]. To hearken to, *to obey;* to wait; ac-.....cording to, as. See *t'ing*[1].

依 *I*[1]. To rely on, to trust to; to conform to; .....to accede to; *according to*, as.

媒 *Mei*[2]. ..... *A go-between*, a match-maker.

懶 *Lan*[3]. .....Lazy; remiss; disinclined to.

惰 *To*[4]. .....Indolent, remiss.

懶惰 Lazy; disinclined to exertion; averse.

趔 *Lie*[4]. ..... To slip, to stumble.

趄 *Ch'ie*[4]. .....Weak; *to hobble.*

趔趄 The unsteady motions produced by slipping or stumbling.

獃 *Tai*[1]. Foolish, silly; to stare vacantly; *to* ..... *loiter*, to tarry; a simpleton.

挑 *T'iao*[1]. *To carry on a pole on the shoulder;* to .....select, to choose. See *t'iao*[3].

擔 *Tan*[4]. The burden carried on a pole, *a load;* ..... a picul. Also *tan*[1].

肩 *Chien*[1]. ..... *The shoulder;* to sustain; firm.

肩膀 *Chien*[1] *pang*[3]. ..... The shoulder.

肩頭 *Chien*[1] *t'ou*[2]. The top of the shoulder. .....See Les. 47.

蹰 *Pêng*[4], *fêng*[4]. ..... *To jump;* to rebound.

非 *Fei*[1]. No, *not;* wrong; bad; shameless, vi-..... cious:—Les. 121 and 135.

Digitized by Google

路道、不能不打趔趄。○
你[19]這麼停歇着、是個甚[20]麼意思呢。○你[20]這麼重的擔子、不怕壓壞了肩膀兒[21]頭嗎。○這[21]個孩子氣的亂蹚、這麼哄也不好、那麼哄也不好。○
怎[22]樣的大胖孩子、死也不好、非打不行。○
了實在可惜。

one can not but walk unsteadily.

19 What do you mean by loitering (or, stopping) in this way?

20 Are you not afraid of injuring your shoulder by carrying such a heavy load?

21 This youngster is hopping mad (jumping up and down with anger). No kind of coaxing does any good. Nothing will serve but to whip him.

22 What a pity that such a fine, fat child should die.

NOTES.

3 怎麼 is here rendered *what*, though the force of the thought is *how*. We might render, *No matter how you put it.*

4 More literally, *As many rages as that, and you have used them all up!* The 一 might be omitted, but its use adds emphasis.

8 More literally, *In that case, you may count me out.*

9 這點 is a contraction for 這麼點, or 這麼一點. The 麼 is not unfrequently dropped out in this way.

13 不論怎麼樣. Here 麼 and 樣 are both used, and this is a not infrequent form. 管那麼的 is a phrase much used in some parts. It answers to the English, *by all means.* 那 is here read *Na*[3]. For the use of 的 see Les. 80.

16 Or, *Accoording to the way you represent it.*

19 The two forms are not quite equivalent. 停 means, *to stop or refuse to proceed;* whereas 歇 means, *to be absent-minded, or to loiter listlessly.*

21 氣的亂蹚 "*hopping mad.*" Some would write 迸, but I find no authority for using this character in this sense; while the meaning of 蹚 is quite suitable, and it is also read *pêng*[4], as well as *fêng*[4]. The double way of putting the coaxing is a characteristic Chinese idiom; while the use of the word 哄 intimates that Chinese *coaxing* is chiefly *deceiving.*

LESSON XXXVII.

INTERROGATIVES OF MANNER AND PLACE.

怎麼 How? why?
那麼 How? why?
Notice, that when 那 is used interrogatively it takes the third tone.

那裏 / 那兒 } Where? The two forms are quite equivalent in meaning. but the second is colloqnial and somewhat undignified. It is rarely heard in the South.

VOCABULARY.

避 *Pi*[4]. To flee from; *to avoid;* to hide; to shirk; ..... to stand aside.

諱 *Hwei*[4]..... To *shun;* to avoid; to taboo.

避諱 To avoid sacred names; *to avoid a delicate or forbidden subject;* to keep clear of.

鈴 *Ling*[2]..... A small bell; a hand bell.

襪 *Wa*[4]..... Stockings, socks.

抓 *Chwa*[1]. To scratch; to tear with claws; to ..... seize; to catch; to grab.

鐲 *Cho*[2]..... A bracelet, a wristlet.

推 *T'wei*[1]. *To push away;* to secede; to shirk; to ..... decline; to resign; to extend; to infer.

磨 *Mo*[4]..... A millstone; *a mill.* See *mo*[2].

推磨 To grind flour at a mill.

收成 *Shou*[1] *ch'êng*[2]. The proceeds of the year, ... the harvest.

心口疼 *Hsin*[1] *k'ou*[3] *t'êng*[2]. Pain in the stom- ..... ach, dyspepsia.

孫 *Sun*[1]..... A grandson; *a surname.*

迂 *Yü*[1]..... Vague; addled, *stupid.*

滯 *Chï*[4]. To obstruct, to stop; an impediment; ..... *dull witted.*

迂滯 *Stupid,* obtuse, doltish; obstinate.

執 *Chï*[2]. To seize; to lay hold of; to keep; to ..... manage; to maintain; *obstinate,* set.

拘執 *Chü*[1] *chï*[2]..... Obstinate, *immovable.*

進學 *Chin*[4] *hsüe*[2]. To get the first degree, to ..... graduate.

Digitized by Google

第三十七課

你[1]搖[3]了呢。不曉得磨[11]他從那裏來。中平中平的。你[13]如今怎麼這麼瘦呢、答我明明白白的告訴我[5]你怎麼沒去作禮拜。怎[2]麼一點避諱不知道呢。○你的襪子在那裏找着○你[4]的被抓住了呢。○我[8]的鍋子推不動呢。○來[6]了客、我去做飯呢。○今[12]年來的收成這麼好麼。答孫[14]三是個聰明人、答他[10]是要往那裏去呢。○怎[9]麼在那裏誤了。○你[7]在那兒做活呢。○怎麼還沒做好呢。○怎麼遲晚呢、答○鈴、你怎麼沒聽見呢。○怎麼在這裏來、○怎麼不拘那件事上、有個心口疼的病、喫下飯去。○怎麼在這件事上、有個心口疼的病、喫不下飯去。○怎麼樣、答○怎麼樣、答○怎麼樣、答○怎麼樣、答

Translation.

1 Why did you not go to church?
2 Why is it that you have not sense enough to avoid an unpleasant subject?
3 The bell has rung. How is it that you did not hear?
4 Where did you find your stockings?
5 What about the business I entrusted to you?
6 When the stranger came, how is it that you did not come and tell me?
7 Where did you catch it (or, arrest him)?
8 Do you know where my bracelets are?
9 How is it that you have not yet gotten the meal ready? *Ans.* I was hindered by going to grind at the mill.
10 You were told to come quickly: how is it that you have come so late?
11 Where did he come from, and where is he intending to go?
12 How is the harvest this year? *Ans.* Nothing extra: only ordinary.
13 How is it that you are so lean these days? *Ans.* I have dyspepsia, and have no appetite.
14 Sun the Third is an intelligent man: how is it that in this business he is so stupid (immovable)?

為 *Wei*[2]. To do, to effect; *to act;* to play the part of; to regard as. See *wei*[4].

行為 *Hsing*[2] *wei*[2]. Conduct, deportment, character.

品 *P'in*[3]. A kind, rank, order; a rule or guide; *actions;* a part in music. Also *p'in*[2].

行 *Hsing*[4]. Doings, conduct, character. See *hsing*[2] and *hang*[2].

品行 Deportment, character, conduct.

橫 *Hêng*[2], *hung*[2]. *Crosswise,* transverse; to lie across. Also *hêng*[4].

豎 or 竪 *Shu*[4]. To erect; to stand upright; upright; *perpendicular;* chaste.

言 *Yien*[2]. A word; a remark; a phrase; speech, talk; sayings; *to say.*

語 *Yü*[3]. To talk with; *to tell;* words; phrases, sentences; language.

言語 Words, conversation; *to speak,* to tell.

仲 *Chung*[4]. In the middle; *a surname.*

添 *T'ien*[1]. *To add;* to increase; to throw in.

豫 or 預 *Yü*[4]. At ease; satisfied; to prearrange, *to prepare;* beforehand; already.

備 *Pei*[4]. To prepare; *to provide for;* ready; complete; entirely; all; wholly.

豫備 To prepare, *to provide;* to anticipate.

坐月 *Tsoù*[4] *yüe*[4]. To lie in, to be confined:—Note 22.

庇 *Pi*[4], *p'i*[4]. To shelter, to cover; *to protect.* Properly *pi*[4], but usually spoken *p'i*[4].

護庇 *Hu*[4] *p'i*[4]. To shield; to protect.

禍 *Hwoà*[4]. Evil, misery; calamity, *disaster,* woe; the judgments of Heaven.

跳 *T'iao*[4]. To leap, *to jump;* to hop, to dance; to palpitate.

Digitized by Google

時候呢。○他[16]的學問不怎麼樣、那兒能進學呢。[18]○聽怎麼行品的人說、我[17]有意僱他看門、他的行爲怎麼樣呢。○馬先生的本事很好、不知他的品行怎麼說。那位馬先生的本事很好、他的行爲怎麼樣呢。○這[19]些話你怎麼不早說呢。○橫[20]說豎說、你都不肯、你打算怎麼樣呢。○你[21]這麼直哭、不說你怎麼不說、論怎麼問、你也不言語、到底是怎麼着的呢。○仲[22]先生、我今天不能來進上學、問那怎麼不能來、答我的女人添了一個小孩子、我得給他豫備坐月子的東西。○這[23]是怎麼話說、大家都這麼護庇你、你怎麼必得往禍坑裏跳呢。

15 How is it that you do not do your work at the proper time?

16 His scholarship is only so, so. How could he get a degree?

17 I have a mind to hire him as a gate-keeper. What is his general character?

18 I hear that Mr. Ma's abilities are very good, but I do not know what is his general deportment.

19 Why is it that you did not speak of these things sooner?

20 No matter what is said, you dissent. What do you propose to do?

21 You do nothing but cry. No matter what one asks you, you make no reply. What is the matter with you, anyhow?

22 Mr. Chung, I can not come to school to-day. *Q.* Why? *Ans.* My wife has presented me with a baby, and I must prepare for her the things necessary for her confinement.

23 What do you mean! When we are all protecting you in this way, why is it that you persist in courting disaster?

NOTES.

1 We might with equal propriety translate, *Why have you not gone to church?* The Chinese fails to mark the distinction between the imperfect and perfect tenses. 怎麼 is here equivalent to *why*, although its proper meaning is *how*. The same thing is true of "how" in the English phrase, "How is it that, etc.?" The sentence might be rendered, *How is it that you have not gone to church?*

8 If this sentence be made to end with 呢, the emphasis falls on "where"; if with 嗎, it falls on "know."

10 It is quite uncertain by whom the person was told to come quickly, but it is implied that it was either by the speaker, or by some one sent or instructed by him.

12 The force of 不怎麼樣 is, that there was nothing noteworthy about the crops, either good or bad; that is, they were average crops.

18 Note that 行爲 may be applied to any one; but 品行 is properly applied only to persons of some social standing.

20 橫說豎說, *speak crosswise, or speak perpendicular*; i.e., *speak as you will.*

21 怎麼的 is the common Southern form. It is sometimes heard in Peking, especially when the cause, or reason, is required; while 怎麼着 is used when manner is spoken of. See Les. 80, Sub.

22 坐月子. *A woman's confinement; also the month following it.* During this month the mother is supposed to sit on her k'ang, eat certain kinds of food, and be served by her husband and sisters-in-law. Such language sounds strange in the mouth of one who is a pupil in school; but it must be remembered that *boys* get married in China, and that such subjects as this are spoken of by them with the utmost freedom.

23 Lit., *what sort of a speech is this?*—expressing both surprise and reproof. 怎麼必得往禍坑裏跳呢. *Why must you go and jump into the pit of woe?* i.e., *why do you persist in bringing disaster on yourself?*

LESSON XXXVIII.

FOUR COMMON CLASSIFIERS.

條 A branch,—classifier of things distinguished for length, rather than for breadth or thickness.

隻 Single,—classifier of single things as distinguished from pairs, also of some animals.

頭 Head,—classifier of various animals.

匹 A pair,—classifier of horses, and of kindred animals; though the usage in different places is far from uniform.

For full list of nouns falling under each of these classifiers see Supplement.

Digitized by Google

第三十八課

隻 隻 隻 ○ 遠 睛、狗 穿 街、王[1]
金 脚 羊、這[9] 五 疼 不 歪 總 老
鐲鐲 都 迷 失 條 隻 里。得的 知 了。有 二
頭子 磨 失迷 牛 ○ 要 跑 ○ 三 里 眞 是
○ 起 了 你 一[8] 命。了 他[4] 騎 多 長。一 條
這[13] 泡 一 要 條 ○ 那 騎 多 長。條 好
隻條 來 隻。賣 繩 若[7] 裏 着 一 ○ 寶[3] 漢
腿 了。○ 嗎。子 走 去 一 ○ 好 子。
筋 ○ 明[11] ○ 不 那 了。匹頭 寶[3] 漢 子。
骨 李[12] 天 一[10] 骰、條 ○ 大 子 的 ○
疼、小 不 個 可 路、我[6] 騍 的 兩 我[2]
那 姐 能 人 以 少 的 騾。兩 隻 看
隻條 帶 走、有 用 說 兩 ○ 隻 鞋、這
腿 着 我 一 兩 也 隻 那[5] 都 條
生 兩 兩 百 條。要能 眼 條 都 條

Translation.

1 Wang the Second is truly a portly fellow.
2 I think this street must be over three *li* long.
3 Both of Pao-tsi's shoes are worn crooked.
4 He was riding a large she-ass.
5 I wonder where that dog has run to.
6 Both my eyes pain me beyond endurance.
7 If we go by that road it will be further by at least five *li*.
8 One rope is not sufficient; use two.
9 Do you want to sell this cow?
10 A certain man had a hundred sheep, and he lost one (or, one got lost).
11 I can not go to-morrow. I have rubbed blisters on both my feet.
12 Miss Li wears two gold bracelets.
13 I have rheumatism in this leg, and on that one there is a boil.

Vocabulary.

條 *T'iao²*. A branch; a switch; an item; a section, a law. A classifier:—See Sub.

隻 *Chï¹*. One of a sort or of a pair; single. A classifier:—see Sub.

匹 *P'i¹*. A pair; a mate. A classifier:—see Sub. Also *p'i³*.

里 *Li³*. A place; a village; an alley with gates; a measure of three hundred and sixty paces, approximately equal to one-third of a mile.

歪 *Wai¹*. Deflected; askew, awry; *crooked*, aslant; depraved, wicked.

騎 *Ch'i²*. *To ride*; to sit astride.

騍 *Ts'ao³*. The female of equine animals.

命 *Ming⁴*. To command; to charge; an ordinance, a decree, commands, orders; fate, destiny, lot; *life*; living creatures.

要命 *Yao⁴ ming⁴*. To take the life; deadly, fatal; *unendurable*, terrible.

繩 *Shêng²*. A cord, a string, *a rope*; a line.

失 *Shï¹*. *To lose*; to neglect; to err, to miss; to slip; to fail.

迷 *Mi²*. To delude; to fascinate; *confused*; stupefied; blinded; infatuated.

失迷 To lose one's way; lost, confused.

迷失 The same.

泡 *P'ao¹*. A bubble, *a blister*:—See *p'ao⁴*.

小姐 *Hsiao³ chie³*. Younger sister; *Miss*,—used in the South, also in Chinese novels.

金 *Chin¹*. Metal; metallic money; gold; precious; noble, honorable.

鐲頭 *Cho² t'ou²*. A bracelet:—Les. 47.

筋 *Chin¹*. *The sinews*; the nerves; strong.

筋骨疼 *Chin¹ ku³ t'êng²*. Rheumatism.

島 *Tao³*. A hill in the sea, *an island*.

打魚 *Ta³ yü²*. To fish:—See Les. 124.

瓦 *Wa³*. Tiles; earthenware; pottery.

瓦匠 *Wa³ chiang⁴*. A mason, a bricklayer.

偏口魚 *P'ien¹ k'ou³ yü²*. The sole.

蟲 *Ch'ung²*. Worms, *snakes*, snails, insects.

長蟲 *Ch'ang² ch'ung²*. A snake.

蛇 *Shê²*. *A serpent*; treacherous, subtle.

鴨 *Ya¹*. A duck.

鵝 *Ô², é²*. The domestic goose.

攤 *T'an¹*. To open out; to share, to fall to; to divide amongst; a stall, *a stand*.

菜攤 *Ts'ai⁴ t'an¹*. A stand for selling meat and vegetables.

Digitized by Google

騾子。二爺○家你[25]把院子很寬裏那個養小哈吧狗給我抓來。○隻菜[23]妝攤裏過的着一隻牛、一匹頭隻鵝。○我[22]出了五隻野兎、兩頭鹿。跟買有一隻山雞、十隻鴨。孩[19]子底下有兩隻小雞、兒、兩隻野貓、子貓、兩匹張[24]的。○馬的力氣大呢。○手、都長蛇蟲。○冰河[21]裏有十隻公的、五隻母的。六○了一隻大[18]師傅冰冷涼。○你[17]大師傅上街買了三條大、魚。○看是這匹馬的子上掉下來、跌壞前、○有一兩隻膀胳子膊。○魚。○姜[16]瓦這匹從房襪子。○在[15]長山島前、

14 You may darn (mend) this torn stocking.

15 There are two boats fishing to the south of the Ch'ang Shan Island.

16 Chiang, the mason, fell off the house and broke one of his arms.

17 Do you think that this horse has the greater strength, or has that one?

18 The cook went on the street and bought three soles.

19 Both of the child's hands are as cold as ice.

20 Go quickly and see! There is a big snake at the foot of the south wall.

21 There are ten ducks and six geese in the river.

22 I bought seven little chickens,—two cocks and five hens.

23 On a huckster's stand were spread out five pheasants, ten rabbits (or, hares) and two deer.

24 The family of Mr. Chang the Second are in very good circumstances. They keep a cow, and a donkey, and two mules.

25 Catch that small Peking dog in the yard for me.

菜妝 *Ts'ai⁴ ch'wang³*..... The same.

山雞 *Shan¹ chi¹*..... A pheasant.

野雞 *Yie³ chi¹*..... The same.

貓 *Mao¹,²*..... A cat.

野貓 *Yie³ mao¹*. The wild cat. In Peking,—*a hare.*

兎 *T'u⁴*..... A rabbit; a hare.

鹿 *Lu⁴*..... A deer; a stag.

綽 *Ch'oɑ⁴, ch'ao¹*. Gentle, kindly; generous; spacious; vague; many.

寬綽 *K'wan¹ ch'oɑ⁴*. Wide, ample; liberal; *in easy circumstances.*

餘 *Yü²*. Overplus; remainder; remnant; the rest; besides:—Les. 172.

寬餘 *K'wan¹ yü²*. *In easy circumstances;* ample; abundant.

養 *Yang³*. To nourish; to bring up, to rear; *to support;* to provide for; to develop.

騾 *Loɑ²*..... A mule.

哈 *Ha³*. To sip; to laugh. Used as a phonetic and frequently read *hê³* and *k'a¹,⁴*.

吧 *Pa¹*..... Large-mouthed.

哈吧狗 *Ha³ pa¹ kou³*. The pug-nosed Peking dog.

吧狗 *Pa¹ kou³*..... The same.

NOTES.

1 條, applied to a man, implies that the individual is very tall, and inasmuch as 條 is not ordinarily applied to men, it suggests a tinge of ridicule.

9 Cows are generally classified either by 隻, or 頭 (24), though 條 is used in Hankow.

13 A leg is classified by 條, because it is long; and by 隻, because it is one of a pair. The latter is the more dignified.

15 When applied to hills, houses, streets, etc., 前 means *south.* Following the noun, it means *south of;*—as, 山前, *south of the hill;* when preceding the noun it means, *the south, southern;*—as, 前街, *the southern street.* In the same way, 後 means *north.*

19 冰涼 *ice cold.* See Les. 141.

25 Lit., *You take that little Peking dog in the yard, and catch him for me.*

Digitized by Google

第三十九課

擡[1]轎的來了沒有。
賬趕[3]脚的、
我[6]們的。
這[5]個酒錢。
不[4]能把
兒、僱人、
是走了
鹿要了
角個沒
子、都要做[7]的。能有。

○管○飯執事的、是不是在家、可以應要○的、要多。的我給當手藝的、刀錢。有。
○送[2]信的
好是人、的
邊衣個是
有裳。
○
○
○

伺候飯的叫擺檯子的。○你[14]是個做甚麼的人、答不懂得用兵的修理鐘表的。○我[15]是個念書的、答我是個生意人、○個做財主的、細看你[19]這個菸袋嘴子、有鍍金的。○我[16]們的茶壺、都是鍍銀的、

珍珠的、城裏的房屋和街道、都是精金的。

榮華的地方、城牆是十二樣寶石的、城門是頂呢、答是跟班的燒料的。○外[20]頭是甚麼人吵鬧。○天[21]堂是吵鬧的、

tsï, and the man who waits on table is called a pai-t'ai-ti.

14 What is your occupation? *Ans.* I am a watch-maker.

15 I am a literary man, and do not understand military affairs.

16 Our tea-pots are all silver-plated. Some of the rich have theirs plated with gold.

17 Of the five brothers, four are business men.

18 A fortune-teller has put up his stand at the side of the street.

19 At first sight, I took this pipe mouth-piece of yours to be stone; but on looking more closely, I see it is glass.

20 Who is making that disturbance outside? *Ans.* It is the servants wrangling with the carters.

21 Heaven is a most glorious place: the walls of the city are of twelve kinds of precious stones; the gates are of pearl; the houses and the streets are all of pure gold.

出力 *Ch'u¹ li⁴*. . . . To exert one's self.
砌 *Ch'i⁴*. . . . . A stone step; ornamental tiles; to . . . . . lay brick or stone, to build up.
坯 *P'ei¹, p'i¹*. . . . . Unburnt tiles or brick.
墼 *Chi³*. . . . . Sun-dried brick, mud brick.
土坯 *T'u³ p'ei¹*. . . . . Unburnt brick.
土墼 *T'u³ chi³*. . . . . Sun-dried mud brick.
廚子 *Ch'u² tsï³*. . . . . A cook.
伺 *Ts'ï⁴, sï⁴*. . . . . To wait upon, to serve.
伺候 *Ts'ï⁴ hou⁴*. . . . . To wait upon, to serve.
擺 *Pai³*. *To spread out*, to move; to scull; to sway . . . . to and fro; to strut; a pendulum.
檯 or 枱 *T'ai²*. . . . *A table*, a stage:—Note 13.
修理 *Hsiu¹ li³*. . . . . To regulate; *to repair*.
鍍 *Tu⁴*. . . . . To gild, to plate:—Note 16.
財主 *Ts'ai² chu³*. . . . . A rich man.
生意 *Shêng¹ i⁴*. . . . . Business, occupation.
算命 *Swan⁴ ming⁴*. . . . . To tell fortunes.
乍 *Cha⁴*. At first; *at first sight;* unexpectedly, ... suddenly; for the moment.
菸 or 烟 *Yien¹*. . . . . Tobacco; tobacco leaves.
菸袋 *Yien¹ tai⁴*. . . . . A tobacco pipe.

石 *Shi²*. . . . . *A stone;* a rock; hard; a picul.
玉石 *Yü⁴ shi²*. . . . . A gem, a pearl.
琉 *Liu²*. . . . . A fine kind of glass.
琉璃 *Liu² li²*. . . . . Clouded glass; glaze.
燒料 *Shao¹ liao⁴*. . . . . Clouded glass.
吵鬧 *Ch'ao³ nao⁴*. To scold and wrangle; to . . . . . make a disturbance.
班 *Pan¹*. To distribute; *a rank*, an order; a . . . . set; a troop:—Les. 140.
跟班 *Kên¹ pan¹*. Attendants, servants of an . . . . . officer.
天堂 *T'ien¹ t'ang²*. The heavenly hall, *heaven*, ... the abode of the blessed—a term introduced into China by Buddhism.
榮 *Yung², jung²*. . . . . *Glory*, splendor; honor.
華 *Hwa²*. Flowery, elegant; *glorious*, beautiful; . . . . . ornate; China.
榮華 *Glory*, splendor, effulgence, grandeur.
珍 *Chên¹*. . . . *Precious;* rare; excellent; valuable.
珠 *Chu¹*. . . . . *A pearl;* a bead; fine, excellent.
珍珠 A pearl.
房屋 *Fang² wu¹*. . . . . Houses, buildings.
街道 *Chie¹ tao⁴*. . . . . A street.

Digitized by Google

第十四課

我[1] 你[2] 生 攆 來。是 事、什伙 裏 人
說 進 不 給 不 ○ 誰 不 來、拉 隊
的 去 我[6] 進 露 抓 再 不 裏 挑
把 話、 點 去。的 去 了。 雞 ○ 出 上 出 出
你 他 出 ○ 跑 把[5] 句 叫 能 來 布 白
聽 出 來 ○ 出 鍋 子 出 沒[7] 來。不 ○ 的。來
出 來。 ○ 給 來。 有[8] 去、 先 運。 ○ ○
來 ○ ○ 我 不 掩 刷 ○ 他[10] 這[11]
門[4] 請[3] 嗎。 ○ 先 窖 出 得 的 儧儧 缸 好 瓶瓶
取倒膛 曉 藏 出 是 靛[9] 個

Translation.

1 Can you understand what I say?
2 You go in and call him out.
3 Will you please punctuate it for me?
4 The door is too narrow; it can not be carried in.
5 Empty the kettle for me.
6 My chicken has run out. I wonder who has nabbed it.
7 There is nothing hidden that shall not be revealed.
8 There will be time enough to wash up the dishes before you go on the street.
9 You can not get white cloth out of an indigo dye pot.
10 He is rejected from the company of virtuous men.

Notes.

3 Muleteers, boatmen, and all, in fact, who are hired to do transient jobs, expect, in addition to the price agreed upon, a small present, which is called 酒錢. The idea probably is that the employer in such cases ought to "treat," but this being inconvenient, he gives a few cash for the party to treat himself.

4 個 is here to be construed with 人, understood, at the end of the sentence.

7 The term here rendered "minister," means rather, *a manager,—one who has charge of some special business.* The same term is elsewhere used in the N. T. for *deacon.*

8 Sweet potatoes are of comparatively recent introduction into China, and their name is not settled. In Peking they are called both 白薯 and 紅薯; in Shantung, they are called 地瓜; in Nanking, 山芋; in Kiukiang, 蘿蔔薯 (read *shao*); and in Hankow, simply 薯.

10 當家的事情. A full construction would require 當家的的事情; but one 的 is elided, and the other made to do duty for both. The 當家的 is ordinarily the father, or head, of the family; but in case of his death or disability, another member is appointed to control the business of the family. This is generally the elder brother, but not always. The term is also frequently used by women as the ordinary designation of their husbands. 糧 is used only of buying grain.

13 攆檯的 is used to designate the servant who spreads the table and waits upon it. The term is only used in connection with foreigners.

16 Both 鍍 and 包 are used for electroplating, the terminology being as yet unsettled. To gild by fire in the old way is 鍍.

LESSON XL.

The Auxiliary Verbs 出 and 進.

出來 Come out. } As an auxiliary, 出 is nearly
出去 Go out. } always followed by 來 or 去, and corresponds in a measure to the use of the word "out" after verbs; but it is used much more freely than "out" is in English.

進來 Come in. } As an auxiliary, 進 is also
進去 Go in. } nearly always followed by 來 or 去, and corresponds in a measure to the use of the word "in" after verbs in English. It is not nearly as much used as 出.

Vocabulary.

句 *Chü*[4]. *A stop*, a period; a sentence, a phrase; ..... a line in verse. A classifier:—Les. 42.

掩 *Yien*[3]. To screen; to cover, *to conceal;* to .....hide from observation.

掩藏 *Yien*[3] *ts'ang*[2]. ..... *To hide;* secret.

露 *Lou*[4]. To disclose, to expose; *to reveal;* to ..... protrude. Also *lu*[4].

靛 *Tien*[4]..... Indigo; indigo color.

Digitized by Google

一個人花費的。○吳[21]大人的門軍太利害。

○去。那個來。○個李[19]老板的來。掌櫃的來了。雨。

好來。○他[17]姊妹那[18]要下雨了、可以把轎子打進來。

罪來。○扒[16]出來。給他吃了、出也不是。

麼壞齷齪的。○丟[14]出來。我[15]寫不賬。討賺有甚麼。

齷齪的。○扔[13]水倒去。○這一點最好的容易出來。算、怎麼。

塞梓緊、拔不出。○要把洗[12]出衣裳出來、該把把

11 The stopper of this bottle is very tight. I can not pull it out.

12 When you have washed the clothes you should pour out the dirty water.

13 Select the good ones, and throw the bad ones away.

14 This little account is very simple; how is it that you can not reckon it up?

15 I can not find that he has any fault.

16 If I should tear out my heart and give him to eat, I could not please him.

17 Of these two sisters, I can not distinguish which is which.

18 It is going to rain. You had better take in the sedan chair.

19 Mr. Li has come. *Ans.* Invite him to come in.

20 The earnings of ten men would not be enough for you to spend.

21 Gen. Wu's gate-keeper is too strict. You will certainly not get your

隊 *Twei*[4]. A rank, a file; a group, a company; ..... *a crowd.* A classifier of companies.

塞 *Sê*[1]. ... A stopper, a plug, a cork. Also *sê*[4].

梓 *Tsu*[3]. ..... A plug, a cork. (C. and S.)

齷 *Wu*[1]. ..... Small; sordid; crowded.

齪 *Ts'u*[4]. ..... To grate the teeth.

齷齪 Worried, vexed; fretful. (N.) Rubbish, filth; *dirty*, foul. (S.)

揀 *Chien*[3]..... *To select*, to choose, to pick out.

扔 *Jêng*[1,3]. To discard, to abandon; to reject, ... *to throw away.*

察 *Ch'a*[2]. To examine, *to inquire into judicially;* ..... to scrutinize; to discover.

扒 *Pa*[1]. To divide; to pull apart; *to tear* or *cut* ..... *out.* Also *p'a*[2].

姊 *Tsi*[3]. ..... An elder sister.

妹 *Mei*[4]. ..... A younger sister.

姊妹 Sisters, a sister :—Note 17.

掌櫃 *Chang*[3] *kwei*[4]. Superintendent, manager, ... head-man, boss.

吳 *Wu*[2]. ..... To talk; a surname.

軍 *Chün*[1]. ..... An army; *a soldier;* military.

門軍 *Mên*[2] *chün*[1]. A guard at a gate, a mili- ..... tary officer's gatekeeper.

稟 *Ping*[3]. To report to a superior; to receive ..... from heaven; *a petition.*

帖 *T'ie*[1,3,4]. A writing scroll, *a writing;* a billet; ..... a card; a placard:—Les. 147.

稟帖 *A petition;* a report.

受 *Shou*[4]. To receive; to contain; to endure; ..... to bear; *to suffer* :—Les. 79.

魔 *Moâ*[2]. ..... A devil, a demon.

鬼 *Kwei*[3]. The soul of a dead man before it is ..... formally enshrined or deified; a ghost; a goblin; a demon, *a devil;* any monstrous thing.

魔鬼 Devils, the devil.

惑 *Hwoâ*[4], *hê*[4]. *To delude*, to blind the mind; ..... to unsettle another's mind, to excite doubt or suspicion.

迷惑 *Mi*[2] *hwoâ*[4]. To delude; to beguile; to en- ..... snare, to befool; a delusion.

圈套 *Ch'üen*[1] *t'ao*[4]. ..... A snare, *toils.*

刑 *Hsing*[2]. To imitate; a pattern; punishment; ..... torture; castigation; penal; law.

刑罰 *Hsing*[2] *fa*[2]. ..... Punishment; torture.

實情 *Shi*[2] *ch'ing*[2]. ..... The facts, the truth.

歡喜 *Hwan*[1] *hsi*[3]. To rejoice, to be glad; satis- ..... fied; *pleased.*

叔 *Shu*[2]. ..... A father's younger brother.

大叔 *Ta*[4] *shu*[2]. ..... The senior 叔.

Digitized by Google

害、你的稟帖、必傳不進去、答我有法子能傳進去。○已[22]經受了魔鬼的迷惑、難逃出他的圈套來。○不[23]加刑罰給他、間不出實情來。○人[24]歡喜不歡喜、都可以從眼睛裏看出來。○大[25]叔若是弄得出不來進不去的。我到底不管、實在是把我

petition sent in. *Ans.* I have a plan by which it can be sent in.

22 When you have been ensnared by the devil, it is hard to escape his toils.

23 Without torturing him you will not get the truth out of him.

24 Whether a man is pleased or not, can always be seen from his eyes.

25 If you, uncle, positively will not do anything, you will put me in a very embarrassing position.

NOTES.

2 進 is here used as a principal verb. The subject of the lesson is illustrated by 出.

3 點出句子來. Lit., *point out the clauses;* i.e., *punctuate it.*

4 攆不進去. Note how the verb is left without either subject or object, both of which must be supplied from the context.

5 倒 does not here mean to lift the kettle and *pour out* the contents, but simply to *empty it.* In like manner, 取 does not mean to *take out* the kettle, but simply its contents.

7 不露出來的. The 的 here makes the clause relative, the antecedent being the clause, 掩藏的事. See Les. 23.

9 A proverb applied to one from a vicious or disreputable family.

10 A witty saying, meaning that the person referred to, so far from being a *good man*, is *refuse*, whom good men have eliminated from their company.

15 甚麼 is without emphasis. If emphasized the meaning would be, I can not find out what fault he has.

17 姊妹 means properly, *sisters*, but is often used in the singular, either of an elder or younger sister. It is also sometimes used to mean both brothers and sisters; i.e., all the children of a family.

19 In the North, 掌櫃 is generally used of *the head-man* of any business. In the South, 老板 is used in place of it, and is also heard at sea ports in the North. 掌櫃 may be, and often is, an employé, in the office of *head-man*; but 老板 is *the proprietor*. Women frequently call their husbands 掌櫃, that is the head-man of the house.

20 It really requires both 銀子 and 錢 to cover the idea of "money."

25 This sentence does not properly illustrate the subject of the lesson; but it has both 進去 and 出來 used in a very idiomatic way, 把我弄的出不來進不去的, *So circumstance me that I can neither go out nor come in;* i.e., *neither retreat nor advance.* The order is often changed to 進不來出不去的.

LESSON XLI.

THE AUXILIARY VERBS 過 AND 回.

過, as an auxiliary verb, expresses the idea of *over*, either in respect of time, or of place. It generally takes 來 or 去 after it. When followed by 來, it indicates motion *over* and *towards:* when followed by 去, it indicates motion *over* and *away from.* In many cases the original idea of *motion* is lost in that of *change.*

回, as an auxiliary, expresses the idea of *turning back.* It also generally takes 來 or 去 after it. When followed by 來, it indicates motion *back* and *towards;* when followed by 去, it indicates motion *back* and *away from.* The range of its use is more limited than that of 過.

For full list of verbs followed by each of these auxiliaries see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

竅 *Ch'iao*[4]. An orifice, an aperture; a cavity; ..... the mind; the avenues by which the mind acquires knowledge; the *key* or *clue.*

心竅 *Hsin*[1] *ch'iao*[4]. Power to comprehend, the ..... understanding.

姪 *Chi*[2]..... A nephew, the son of a brother.

賴 *Lai*[4]. To depend upon, to rely on; to assume; ..... *to pretend*, to trump up; to accuse falsely; to deny, to ignore.

賴學 *Lai*[4] *hsüe*[2]..... To play truant (s).

Digitized by Google

第四十一課

請[1]國學跑話、實在難轉開心竅。改過來。○仁[2]學中逃賴兒經不起手該的、了、該把這個錯字過來。○你[3]的姪兒是這[4]一頭不合式、該倒過來。○這[5]個人和你兩個、把式、借我還給把他找回來。○這[4]是我的東西、沒有修理好了、還這個箱子來。○那個好該拿去。梅在[7]那裏修理好了、還這個箱子來。○那個好該拿去。梅這[8]面沒有理好了、還這個箱子來。○那個好該拿去。梅你[9]好該拿去。梅他送回去。○這[11]樣的回去。○先生[10]的字、可以翻過來。○先生的字、可以翻過來。○先生的字、可以翻過來。

TRANSLATION.

1 Please correct this erroneous character.
2 When you first begin to learn Chinese it is very hard to get the clue.
3 Your nephew has run away from school. You ought to find him and bring him back.
4 This was borrowed through my instrumentality, and I will also return it to him.
5 This end does not fit. It should be reversed.
6 Go and find a man (some one) to help you move over this box.
7 When it is repaired, will you please bring it back again for me?
8 There is no such character on this page. Turn over and look.
9 Is it right (proper) for you to take Mr. Mei's steelyard weight to play with? Return it to him at once.
10 This rooster is not a match for that one in a fight.

經手 *Ching[1] shou[3]*. To have experience of; *agency*, instrumentality.

挪 *Noa[2]*. *To move;* to shift; to transfer.

梅 *Mei[2]*. A plum, a prune; *a surname.*

砣 *T'oa[2]*. A weight at the end of a string; *a steelyard weight;* a sounding lead.

鬪 *Tou[4]*. *To fight;* to contend for victory; to incite to contention; to play at.

吃飯堂 *Ch'i[1] fan[4] t'ang[2]*. Dining-room.

飯廳 *Fan[4] t'ing[1]*. Dining-hall.

傘 *San[3]*. An umbrella, a parasol.

覺 *Chiao[4]*. Sleep, the unconsciousness of sleep. See *chioa[2]*.

睡覺 *Shwei[4] chiao[4]*. To sleep; to lie down to sleep.

首 *Shou[3]*. *The head;* a chief; the beginning; foremost. A classifier:—Les. 147.

飾 *Shi[1]*. To adorn, to ornament, to set off; to gloss over; to deceive; *an ornament.*

首飾 Head ornaments; jewelry.

匣 *Hsia[2]*. A chest, a coffer, a casket, a small covered box.

定親 *Ting[4] ch'in[1]*. To settle a marriage engagement.

青 *Ch'ing[1]*. Green (of grass); *blue* (of the sky or ocean); black (of cloth); glossy.

紅 *Hung[2]*. *Red;* fiery; ruddy.

煤 *Mei[2]*. *Coal,*—especially hard coal; soot.

煤油 *Mei[2] yiu[2]*. Coal oil, kerosene.

火油 *Hwoa[3] yiu[2]*. Kerosene.

海 *Hai[3]*. The sea; marine; capacious.

上海 *Shang[4] hai[3]*. Shanghai; to go to the seashore.

朱 *Chu[1]*. Vermilion red; *a surname.*

嫖 *P'iao[2]*. Trifling, licentious: to follow lewd women; *to lead the life of a rake.*

回頭 *Hwei[2] t'ou[2]*. To turn about; *to reform.*

匪 *Fei[3]*. Illegal, seditious; robbers, brigands; dissolute, *vicious;* no, not so.

類 *Lei[4]*. Species, sort, *kind;* to class with.

匪類 Vagabonds, profligates; vice, *dissipation.*

昏 *Hun[1]*. Dusk, dark, obscure; confused, muddled; *to faint*, to become insensible.

甦 *Su[1]*. *To revive;* to come to life again.

甦醒 *Su[1] hsing[3]*. *To revive;* to regain one's senses; to rise from the dead.

衛 *Wei[4]*. To escort for protection or honor; to guard; a military station; an outpost; *a local name for Tientsin.*

Digitized by Google

我說不過他。○[12]孫師娘在飯廳裏、你去請過他來。○[13]你去的時候、可以把他的傘帶過去。○[14]那裏沒有地方睡覺、你搬過來不好嗎。○[15]先生用過飯了嗎、答偏過了。○[16]他們奪了去的、我們今天還要奪回來。○[17]南莊上拿着首飾匣子來定親、又碰回去了。○[18]他說過來說過去、到底沒說出個青紅皂白來。○[19]這把笤帚、是你從廂房拿過來的、可以再送過去。○[20]這十個煤油箱子、是在上海發錯了、我還要發回去。○[21]朱老大如今回過頭來、凡喫喝嫖賭匪類的事、一點也沒有他。○[22]那一夜他病的頂重、昏過去了、好一會子纔甦醒過來了。○[23]十個京油子、說不過一個衞嘴子。

11 With such a tongue as his, I am no match for him.

12 Mrs. Sun is in the dining-room: go and invite her over.

13 When you go over you can take along his umbrella.

14 There is no place there to sleep. Would it not do for you to move over here?

15 Have you eaten? *Ans.* I have.

16 What they took from us, we must get back again to-day.

17 The folks of the south village brought a box of jewelry to settle the betrothal, but were sent back [with a refusal].

18 He talked the business over and over, and, after all, expressed no definite opinion.

19 This broom is one you brought over from the side house. You had better take it back again.

20 These ten boxes of kerosene oil were sent from Shanghai by mistake. I must send them back again.

21 Chu Senior has now reformed, and avoids every form of dissipation and profligacy.

22 That night he was very seriously ill. He fainted, and it was a long time before he revived again.

23 Ten oily-mouthed Pekingese can not get ahead of one tonguy Tientsinese.

Notes.

2 It is a traditional idea that the mind receives knowledge through apertures in the heart, and the more of these apertures a man has, the quicker is his power of apprehension. 比干 (now canonized as the god of wealth) was reported to have seven such apertures in his heart, and the tyrant 紂王 had his heart cut out to see if it was so. 開竅 is to have these openings freed of obstruction, thus admitting the light which gives knowledge. 轉過竅來 is to have these openings turned in the right direction, that so the light may find due entrance.

10 The 難 at the close of this sentence might be omitted without detriment.

11 The more usual form is 說不過他. 說他不過 is an elegant transposition, which is also used in colloquial in some places.

12 Chinese houses have no distinctive "dining-room." The terms 吃飯堂 and 飯廳 are only used in connection with foreign houses. 請過他來 is not precisely the same as 請他過來. In the first, the stress naturally falls on the word 請; in the second, it falls on 過. The first means *to bring him over* [by inviting]; the second means simply *to invite him to come over*,—his coming, or not, being no concern of the party inviting.

15 用, as here used for *eating*, is in some places quite colloquial, and in others it has something of the stateliness of the word "partake." 偏過了 *I have the advantage of you in that I have already eaten*;—used when one happens on others while eating, or about to eat.

17 A present of jewelry to the bride elect, is always necessary to the settlement of a marriage contract. In this case the friends of the intended groom went with the presents in due form, supposing, or assuming, that the proposal was satisfactory; and were sent back again crestfallen, as is indicated by the use of the word 頂 or 碰.

18 沒說出個青紅皂白來 *did not express a blue, red, black or white*; i.e., *said nothing to the point; expressed no definite opinion or decision.*

21 凡吃喝嫖賭, etc., *has nothing to do with such vices as gluttony, drunkenness, licentiousness and gambling.* These terms are linked together as a comprehensive summary of dissipation, and are all included in the term 匪類.

23 This is a pithy fling at the people of Tientsin. 油子 and 嘴子, as here used, are slang.

Digitized by Google

第四十二課

○ ○ ○ ○ 給 一 和 六 該 請[1]
—[11] 他[10] 人[9] 我[8] 我 本 他 套。另 再
本 說 至 有 買 書、兩 ○ 記 給
千 那 少 一 十 可 個 請[4] 一 我
字 一 該 個 管 惜 把 先 本 訂
文、句 有 朋 筆、已 那 生 賬。個個一
正 話、兩 友、兩 經 張 給 ○ 字仿本
有 我 套 送 錠塊 破 牀 我 我[3]本本仿。
二 半 衣 了 墨、了。檯 講 那 ○
百 天 服、兩 五 ○ 上 講 部 給[2]
五 沒 好 張 十 今[7] 來。這 康 學
十 會 換 地 張 天 ○ 句 熙 生
句。過 着 圖 毛 你 好[6] 書。字 買
○ 意 糊漿 給 邊 出 講體 ○ 典、東
這[12] 來。洗。我。紙。去、究面 你[5] 是 西、

Translation.

1 Please make another copy-book for me.
2 When you buy things for the scholars, you should keep the account in a separate book.
3 That Kanghi's dictionary of mine is in six *t'ao*. [for me?
4 Will you please explain this sentence
5 Do you and he go and carry up that bedstead.
6 A very good-looking book: what a pity it is torn!
7 When you are out to-day, buy for me ten pens, two sticks of ink, and fifty sheets of *mao-pien* paper.
8 I have a friend who made me a present of two maps.
9 A person should have at least two suits of clothes in order to change for washing.
10 When he made that remark, it did not occur to me for half a day what he meant.
11 The One Thousand Character Classic

LESSON XLII.

Classifiers.

本 The root,—classifier of volumes of a book.

行 A row,—classifier of things in rows.

部 The sum,—classifier of books considered as wholes; i.e., as works or treatises, irrespective of the number of volumes.

張 To extend,—classifier of things presenting a large or plain surface.

管 A reed,—classifier of long tubular things.

套 A wrapper,—classifier of book covers and of things in suits, or sets.

句 A sentence,—classifier of clauses and sentences.

錠 An ingot,—classifier of pieces of silver and sticks of ink.

For full list of nouns which take these several classifiers see Supplement.

Vocabulary.

部 *Pu*[4]. The sum; a class or division; a section; a radical; a tribunal; a Board. See Sub.

錠 *Ting*[4]. A platter; an ingot; a stick of medicine or ink. See Sub.

訂 *Ting*[1]. To bind into a book. Also *ting*[4].

仿本 *Fang*[3] *pên*[3]. A copy-book.

字本 *Tsi*[4] *pên*[3]. The same.

康 *K'ang*[1]. Peace; vigorous; excellent.

熙 *Hsi*[1]. Bright, glorious; harmonious.

熙康 The emperor Kanghi:—Note 3.

典 *Tien*[3]. A canon; a statute or code; a law, an ordinance; *a precedent*, a reference; records; to mortgage, to lease; to manage.

字典 *Tsi*[4] *tien*[3]. A dictionary.

墨 *Mei*[4], *mo*[4]. *Ink;* dark, black; writings.

毛邊 *Mao*[2] *pien*[1]. A kind of heavy brown writing paper.

圖 *T'u*[2]. A diagram, a chart, *a map;* to plan, to plot; to wish for, to aspire after.

地圖 *Ti*[4] *t'u*[2]. A geographical map.

Digitized by Google

部格物入門、是木板印的。○馬[13]老爺有一
張山水畫兒、值二十兩銀子。○這[14]部化學、
該找人打一個套。○請[15]先生給我那部舊
仿格子、要八個字一行。○我[16]那部多工夫、
不知誰借去了。○用[17]不着多那部書、給我
說三五句話。○請[18]你把那學生、那部書、
來。○李[19]天保那個小書。○這[20]張桌子好
能念九十行生書。○買[21]一部形學、不得
以找甚麼起來。○起[22]來。○你給我做兩
五分洋錢。○塾我要
起過天文、個學、一
套起天可
角

has just two hundred and fifty lines in it.

12 This book of natural philosophy is printed from wooden blocks.

13 Mr. Ma has one landscape painting which is worth twenty taels.

14 You should find some one to make a *t'ao* for this chemistry.

15 Please, teacher, rule for me a *kê-tsï* with eight characters in each column.

16 I wonder who borrowed that old astronomy of mine.

17 It will not require long; I only wish to speak a few words.

18 Please put that book in the *t'ao* for me.

19 That little scholar Li T'ien Pao is certainly gifted. He can commit to memory ninety lines in one day.

20 This table is not steady. Find something to prop it up.

21 It requires seventy-five cents to purchase a geometry.

22 I want you to make for me two book-

糨 *Chiang*[1]. . . . . *To starch.* Also *chiang*[4].

漿 *Chiang*[1]. Congee; starch; broth; syrup; pus; . . . . . *to starch.*

糨洗 *Chiang*[1] *hsï*[2]. . . . . To wash and iron.

文 *Wên*[2]. Lines, veins; striæ; variegated; elegant; . . . . . civil; *literary;* scholarly; ornamental; a form,—as of prayer. A classifier:—Les. 125.

千字文 *Ch'ien*[1] *tsï*[4] *wên*[2]. The One Thousand . . . . . Character Classic.

格物 *Kê*[2] *wu*[4]. To scrutinize the nature of . . . . . things; natural science, physics.

入 *Ju*[4]. *To enter;* to penetrate; to pay in or re- . . . . . ceive; to progress; income.

印 *Yin*[4]. A seal, a stamp; to seal, *to print,* to . . . . . take an impression of.

化 *Hwa*[4]. To alter; to transform; to influence; . . . . . to melt, to transmute, *to decompose.*

化學 *Hwa*[4] *hsüe*[2]. . . . . Chemistry.

勒 *Lê*[1], *lei*[1]. To rein in; to restrain; to tie up; . . . . . to exact unjustly; to strangle.

天文 *T'ien*[1] *wên*[2]. . . . . Astrology; *astronomy.*

穩 *Wên*[3]. Firm, constant; secure, *stable;* to put . . . . . or set down; repose.

穩當 *Wên*[3] *tang*[4]. . . . . *Steady,* safe, secure.

墊 *Tien*[4]. To advance money; to make good; *to* . . . . . *wedge up,* to shore up; a cushion.

形 *Hsing*[2]. *Form,* figure, shape; body; manner, ... style; material; to give form to.

形學 *Hsing*[2] *hsüe*[2]. The science of form, geo- . . . . . metry.

案 *An*[4]. *A table,* an official desk; a case in law; . . . . . the records of a case; an affair.

書案 *Shu*[1] *an*[4]. . . . . A study table.

凳 *Têng*[4]. . . . . *A bench;* a stool; a form.

蘇 *Su*[1]. . . . . A species of thyme.

州 *Chou*[1]. A district larger than a *hsien;* a con- . . . . . tinent; a region.

蘇州 Suchow. Capital of Kiangsu Province.

相 *Hsiang*[4]. To look at; to prognosticate; *a minis-* . . . . . *ter of state;* similar. Also *hsiang*[1].

相公 *Hsiang*[4] *kung*[1]. A minister of state (an- . . . . . cient); the son of a gentleman; in Peking,—an actor.

鑼 *Lo*[2]. . . . . A gong.

鼓 *Ku*[3]. *A drum;* to arouse; to encourage; to . . . . . bulge, to swell; to warp.

鑼鼓 Gong, drum, cymbals, etc.,—used as an accompaniment in singing or acting.

瓷 *Ts'i*[2]. . . . . Glazed crockery, China-ware.

Digitized by Google

張圓桌、六條凳子、一張籐牀。○[23]我前一回到蘇州、給王三相公買了一套鑼鼓、用了十三吊四百錢、又買了三套瓷盆、兩吊二百五十個錢一套。

tables, one round table, six benches and one cane bedstead.

23 The last time I went to Suchow I bought for Mr. Wang the Third a set of brass musical instruments, costing thirteen thousand four hundred cash, and two nests of stone-ware basins, costing two thousand two hundred and fifty cash for each nest.

NOTES.

1 The use of the classifier causes the dropping of the second character of 仿本, which is the more general term. Those who decline to drop the final 本, use the general classifier above.

3 Kanghi's dictionary is so called because made in the reign, and by the order, of the Emperor Kanghi, the second and most illustrious emperor of the present dynasty. A 套 is a number of volumes enclosed in one case. Large works are usually put up in 套 of six or eight volumes each.

5 The words 兩個 are inserted to indicate that the two are to form the pair which are necessary in order to 抬 a thing. They might, however, be omitted without special damage to the sentence.

6 The first clause is a rhetorical inversion for 一本好體面書, by which stress is thrown on the 好體面.

7 The sentence might also be rendered,—*Go out to-day and buy me ten pens, etc.* Which meaning was intended would depend wholly on the pauses made and inflection used.

9 In Peking, 漿 is generally written for *to starch;* but doubtless the proper term is 糊. When read in the 4th tone it means *starch*, and in the 1st tone, *to starch*. Where hard sounds are used, the sound of 漿, being soft, is incorrect. The term 糊洗 is a singular inversion of the natural order.

10 會 here means *to apprehend*, which is one of its more unusual meanings.

11 The book called 千字文 consists of one thousand common characters, arranged in two hundred and fifty measures of four each, no character being repeated.

12 入門, *entering the door*, is a common term in the titles of books which are introductory or elementary. 木板 *a wooden block, or board, engraved with characters for printing.* 木 is added to distinguish this style of printing from that with moveable types, which are called 活板. An electrotype plate is a 銅板, a stereotype is a 鉛板.

14 化學 and 形學 (21) are names given by foreigners.

17 三五句話, *three or five clauses of words.* 三兩句, *three or two clauses*, is also sometimes used in the same way.

19 生書. A book, or portion of a book, which has not been previously seen, or learned.

21 When dollars were first used in China, there were no fractional coins, and the dollars were chopped into sectors and used instead; and from this came the term 角, which now means a dime or 10 cent piece.

22 Instead of putting their books in book-cases, the Chinese usually pile them on long tables at the side of the room.

LESSON XLIII.

THE AUXILIARY VERB 得.

得, as an auxiliary verb, expresses completion under the aspect of practicability, feasibility or propriety. With a negative it strongly reverses these ideas. It is not infrequently inserted between the principal verb and another auxiliary, in which case it adds to the force of the affirmation:—Compare Les. 31. In speaking, it is often heard *tai*, which is simply a corrupt pronunciation. 的 is sometimes substituted for it, with very little, if any, change of meaning.

VOCABULARY.

邪 *Hsie*[2]. Deflected from the right; depraved, ... corrupt, evil; heretical; corrupting; magical, demoniacal; *haunted.*

免 *Mien*[3]. *To avoid;* to escape from; to evade; ..... to let off, to excuse, to forgive.

憂 *Yiu*[1]. Grief, *sorrow;* anxiety; low-spirited, ... melancholy; mourning.

解 *Chie*[3]. To open; to untie; to extricate; *to* ..... *dissipate;* to dispel; to explain; to release. Also *chie*[4] and *hsie*[4].

渴 *K'e*[2]..... *To thirst;* to long for, to put after.

近 *Chin*[4]. *Near;* recent; soon; to approach; sim- ..... ilar.

謠 *Yao*[2]..... A tale, a *rumor;* a false report.

Digitized by Google

第四十三課

那[1]個房子、住不得。
老實。個景不得[2]看。
小不得、忍[3]一時氣、免百年憂。
脚點站得牢、不值得怕風誤老爺的事、
怨小事、不值得遠[7]水救不[8]近渴。
謠言、不得信。這[9]兩[5]句話也說不
你[10]家裏這[4]面老鼠、大驢小馬、
王法。你[12]生長在那[8]都城裏、
去。是[6]你[10]說的。
○ 謠言[11]逃不了王法。
○ 他[14]是一個不得了的。
○ 他[13]得了不得了。
○ 他[14]是一個不得了的。
○ 他[14]是一個不得了的。
○ 他[14]是一個不得了的。
○ 他[14]是一個不得了的。
○ 他[14]是一個不得了的。
○ 他[14]是一個不得了的。
○ 他[14]是一個不得了的。

TRANSLATION.

1 That house is haunted and is not habitable.
2 Do not be deceived by his outward docility.
3 Restraining momentary anger may save a hundred years of sorrow.
4 It is not worth while trespassing on your time with this trifling affair.
5 He who stands firmly on his feet, need not fear the force of a strong wind.
6 If you did not know, you are not then to be blamed for it.
7 Water at a distance will not quench (save from) thirst near at hand.
8 Those are all flying rumors unworthy of belief.
9 This mode of speech will answer the purpose.
10 With such a damp house as this, it is no wonder you have the itch.
11 You may evade the law, but you can not escape the gods.
12 You provoked him. No wonder he got angry.
13 What *shall* we do? the stable has caught fire.

謠言 *Yao² yien².* False reports, *exciting rumors,* ..... alarming stories.

潮 *Ch'ao².* ..... The tide; *damp,* moist.

濕 *Shi¹.* ..... Wet, soaked; *damp,* humid.

潮濕 Damp, humid.

怪不得 *Kwai⁴ pu⁴ tê².* No wonder, well I never, ... sure enough.

疥 *Chie⁴.* ..... A small sore; *the itch.*

王法 *Wang² fa³.* ... Statute law; the law of the ..... land; punishment, order.

鬼神 *Kwei³ shên².* Demons and gods; *the gods;* su- ..... pernatural beings in general.

惹 *Jê³.* *To provoke,* to stir up, to excite; to in- .....duce, to bring upon.

棚 *P'êng².* .....A shed, *a stable;* a tent.

疑 *I².* ..... To doubt; *to surmise;* to hesitate.

嫌疑 *Hsien² i².* ..... Suspicion.

教化 *Chiao⁴ hwa⁴.* .....Education, civilization.

上天 *Shang⁴ T'ien¹.* *Heaven* (personified), the ..... powers above, Deity, God.

瞞 *Man².* *To deceive;* to hoodwink; to conceal ..... the truth.

銅 *T'ung².* ..... Copper; *brass.*

倫 *Lun².* Regular, invariable; *natural relation-* ..... *ships;* right conduct; species, class.

人倫 *Jên² lun².* The five relations; viz.,—hus- ..... band and wife, father and son, brother and brother, prince and officer, friend and friend.

雜亂 *Tsa² lan⁴.* ..... Same as 亂雜:—Les. 32.

本分 *Pên³ fên⁴.* *Duty,* obligation; the things ..... becoming any station.

醉 *Tswei⁴.* .....Intoxicated, *drunk;* stupefied.

顧 *Ku⁴.* To attend to, *to regard;* to reflect on; ..... to assist, to patronize.

制 *Chi⁴.* To govern; to limit; to hinder; *to* ..... *cause to do,* to control; to test.

鄰 *Lin².* Near, contiguous; *a neighbor;* a neigh- ..... borhood.

舍 *Shê⁴.* To lodge; a shed, a cottage, *a dwelling;* ..... my. Also *shê³.*

鄰舍 A neighbor; neighbors.

坊 *Fang¹.* An alley; *a hamlet;* a neighborhood; .....an honorary portal; a factory.

街坊 *Chie¹ fang¹.* ..... Next door neighbors.

孝 *Hsiao⁴.* *Duty to parents and seniors;* mourn- ..... ing apparel; time of mourning.

Digitized by Google

他。不得的。事[15]急了、避不得嫌疑。○教[16]化最是少
○不得[14]了、一過神。把舊銅壺、欺[17]使得別人、得
也離得守字、是○眞[20]的、用不得人。
使得不本分、雜亂的假不得了。
不得不分、常喝醉酒。○
凡[24]人在初生的時候、一句話、他倫不有
我[18]瞞
人[21]得、
的。
那[22]個
人不得。
我[23]對你說、
那[22]的眞瞞[19]得上天。○
我[25]這二年、窮的實在過不去。
我[27]得離得使不得。○
的字人[26]父母。○
太護顧自己、
不好、
實在得見於理不得上人。下得[28]你

14 She is the youngest daughter-in-law, and nothing is under her control.
15 The business is urgent. One can not stop to guard against suspicion.
16 Education is most essential.
17 You may defraud others: you can not defraud Heaven.
18 I have an old brass tea-pot, but it is [not usable.
19 You may deceive man (or, men): you can not deceive God (or, the gods).
20 The genuine can not be made counterfeit, nor the counterfeit, genuine.
21 The human relations must not be confused.
22 That man is not fit to be used. He will not behave himself. He is continually getting drunk.
23 Will you allow me to speak a few words with you?
24 Every one, when he is first born, is dependent every moment on his father and mother.
25 I have been so poor these two years, that I really have no way of living.
26 In looking out for himself, a man

孝順 *Hsiao⁴ shun⁴*. . . . Dutiful to parents, *filial.*
盼 *P'an⁴*. *To look towards;* to long for, to expect.
盼望 *P'an⁴ wang⁴*. *To look for*, to hope for, to long for.
耀 *Yao⁴*. . . . . To illumine; effulgence, *splendor.*
榮耀 *Jung² yao⁴*. . . . . Splendor, *glory;* honor.
趁 *Nien³*. . . . . To follow after, to pursue.
拽 *Chwai⁴*. To throw away, to cast aside, to throw. Also *yie⁴*.

NOTES.

2 More literally, *It will not do to trust to his appearance of docility.*

3 A proverb somewhat *Wên-li* in style.

5 A proverbial couplet in rhyme.

6 那 may here be regarded as standing for the matter referred to, and be rendered *it;* i.e., *what you have done;* or, it may be regarded as combining with 也 to form a conjunctive adverb, meaning, *then, in that case.* The translation given combines these views. It might *seem* most natural to make it stand for the first clause, and so render, *Your not knowing, is a thing you are not to be blamed for.* This, however, is not the correct sense.

9 Note how 說 here takes three auxiliary verbs after it, each of which adds to and modifies the force of the principal verb. If the 過 were dropped out, the translation should be, *This language is admissible.*

10 疥 is the general and proper term for *itch;* but in the South it is rarely used, 瘡, which properly means a boil, or sore, of any kind, being substituted for it.

11 A common saying in the mouths of those who would exhort people to virtue. The term 鬼神 is a comprehensive classification of all spiritual beings. As a class, the 鬼 are inferior, subject to authority, uncanonized, and evil. As a class, the 神 are superior, exercise authority, are canonized, and good. A canonized 鬼 becomes a 神. The attendants and messengers of the 神 are 鬼. Used impersonally, as a philosophical term in Chinese cosmogony and metaphysics, it refers to the (supposed) inferior and superior powers of nature, viewed from the spiritual side. 陰 and 陽 characterize these same powers from the physical side.

13 了不得 is a common exclamation, used when anything disastrous or alarming suddenly occurs. It properly expresses the idea that matters are beyond all remedy, but is often used as a mere exaggeration. The addition of a 了 at the end serves still further to strengthen the expression:—See Les. 88, Vocab.

14 This might also simply mean a *young* daughter-in-law, referring to her being recently married and young.

16 The 最 is transposed for rhetorical reasons. The regular colloquial form would be, 是最少不得的 The sentence is from the Sacred Edict.

17 The use of 別人, in the first clause, shows that 上天 is regarded as personal. This use of the word 人 is the only means that Chinese colloquial has of expressing personality.

Digitized by Google

下 ○ 榮 來。的 在 的 來。快 制 制
東 那[33]耀、○ 人、 捨 街鄉 ○ 一 點 不 不
西 賊 心 我[32]那 不 坊舍、我[30]點 走、得 了
就 見 裏 如 裏 得。現 和 走、兩 怎 我 我
跑 我 歡 今 養 ○ 在 你 兩 天 麼 那 裏
了。趁 喜 盼 得 你[31]你 作 天 也 樣 去。
得 的 望 出 看 走 了 也 能 ○
很 了 天 好 不 了、十 能 回 若[29]
急、不 上 兒 孝 我 來 回 得 是
拽扔 得。的 子 順 實 年 得 是

must still keep within the bounds of reason. [fit to be seen.

27 My writing is too poor: it really is not

28 You can do nothing at all to me.

29 If you go with some speed, you can get back in two days.

30 We have been neighbors for over ten years, and now that you are going away I am very loth to give you up.

31 Look at the undutiful man. How can he bring up a good son?

32 I am now looking for glory on high, and my heart is filled with joy inexpressible.

33 The thief, seeing that I was pursuing him hotly, dropped the goods and fled.

19 If the speaker were a polytheist, he would of course be understood as using 神 in the plural; but if a monotheist, he would be understood as using it in the singular. The want of a plural form leaves all such distinctions to be inferred from the circumstances or connection. Fewer mistakes are made in consequence than one would be ready to suppose.

22 酒 is here somewhat redundant. It is added to give additional force and perspicuity.

26 In some places the accent in 護自己, is thrown on the 己, contrary to the usual custom with the term 自己. The first 得 expresses necessity, being put for 必得. When 上 and 下 are used together, they generally mean above and below. Here, however, 上 attaches to 理, and 下 is used as a principal verb.

27 見不得人 *not [fit] to be seen by men.* The logical subject; viz., 人, is made the object, thus turning the verb into the passive form. 人 is used indefinitely:—Les. 52.

28 制不了 This phrase seems to be quite *t'ung hsing*, but there is a difference of opinion as to the proper writing. Some would write 治. The form 那裏去, or, as it is often spoken, 那兒去, is Pekingese. Teachers say that its peculiar meaning in this connection comes from the custom of banishing offenders beyond the borders.

33 The sound and meaning here given to 拽 are not recognized by the dictionaries. The word is very widely used, being found in Northern, Central and Southern Mandarin, and this character is established as the most suitable writing.

LESSON XLIV.

就.

就 has already been illustrated (Les. 13) as a sign of the immediate future, and has also been several times used, meaning *at once*. It has, however, a variety of other uses, of which the following is an approximate classification:—

1. It is used as a principal verb, meaning *to approach, to take advantage of, to be ready, to accommodate one's self to.* (5) (13).
2. It is added as an auxiliary to a few verbs, giving the idea of, *ready, satisfactory.* (15) (26).
3. Before an active verb, and referring to past time, it means, *just, then, at once, etc.* (3)(6).
4. Joined with 是 it forms the much used phrase 就是, which has a variety of uses not easy to classify:—

(1) At the opening of a sentence it means, *even, even if.* (1) (14).

(2) In a subordinate clause it draws a conclusion, or states a consequence; and may be rendered, *but, but somehow, so, etc.* (4) (11).

(3) At the end of a sentence it marks a decision, coupled with a concession; sometimes having the force of such phrases as, *might as well, so I will, etc.*, but is often untranslatable. (18) (29).

(4) As a reply, it means, *that's so, all right, so be it.* (28). See Les. 70.

就 is one of the most important and ever recurring characters in colloquial Mandarin, and its skillful management marks an accomplished speaker.

Digitized by Google

第四十四課

就人。是○這○熱麼出上你[1]
是○說就[10]麼這[7]鍋都來來。就
藐就[13]不是的着。句熗温很風○是
視着出不○話點快快、你[3]生
我、你來。願人[9]就水。就怎氣、
我的○意、在是○是麼也
也掃鄭[12]也得繙他[6]太說是
不等、先要時不見冒的、無
怕。把生將的出事失。就益。
○我温就時來。情○當○
已[15]的柔一候、○不收[5]怎我[2]
經門和點。說不[8]對、拾麼實
定口平、○怎管就出做。在
規也凡他[11]麼他拿飯○惡
就掃事心樣肯起來、他[4]心、
了、一都裏就不腿可不就
到掃。肯明怎肯、來以論是
這○就將白、麼就走就做吐嘔
初他[11]俯就就樣。是了。着甚不不

TRANSLATION.

1 Even if you do get angry, it will do no good.
2 I am exceedingly nauseated, but somehow I can not vomit. [would.
3 You ought to do just as you said you
4 Whatever he does, he does very rapidly; the trouble is, he is too precipitate.
5 When you take out the rice, you can take advantage of the hot kettle to warm a little water.
6 When he saw the business was going wrong, he left without ceremony.
7 Somehow I can't translate this sentence.
8 No matter whether he is willing or not, this is the way it must be.
9 When a man is in favor [with the powers that be], whatever he says is law.
10 Even if you are not willing [to this arrangement], you should make some allowance.
11 He understands it, but somehow he can not express himself.
12 Mr. Chêng is mild and peaceable, and in every thing willing to make allowance for people.
13 I will take advantage of your broom to sweep before my door also.

惡 *È*[3]. . . . . Nausea. See *ê*[4], also *wu*[4].
惡心 *È*[3] *hsin*[1]. . . . . Nauseated.
嘔 *Ou*[1]. . . . . *To vomit*, to spit out. Also *ou*[3].
吐 *T'u*[4]. . . . . To vomit. Also *t'u*[3].
風快 *Fêng*[1] *k'wai*[4]. Quick as the wind, very quick, ... *very rapid.* Les. 149.
冒失 *Mao*[4] *shi*[1]. Rash, imprudent, *precipitate;* . . . . . fool-hardy.
熗 *Wu*[4]. . . . . To warm, to steam. See *wu*[3].
得時 *Tê*[2] *shi*[2]. . . . . *In favor*, in luck.
願 *Yüen*[4]. To wish, to desire; *to be willing;* a . . . . . vow, a votive offering:—Les. 59.
願意 *Yüen*[4] *i*[4]. . . . . Willing, agreed.
將就 *Chiang*[1] *chiu*[4]. To put up with, to tolerate, ... *to make allowance for.*
鄭 *Chêng*[4]. . . . . Serious; *a surname.*
柔 *Jou*[2]. Flexible, pliant; soft; *mild*, gentle; . . . . complaisant; a flat in music.
温柔 *Wên*[1] *jou*[2]. . . . . *Mild*, gentle, meek.
和平 *Hê*[2] *p'ing*[2]. . . . . *Peaceable*, amiable.
俯 *Fu*[3]. . . . To stoop; to bow down; *to condescend.*
就俯 *Chiu*[4] *fu*[3]. *To accommodate to;* to make . . . . . shift; to make the best of.
掃 *Sao*[4]. . . . . A coarse broom. See *sao*[3].
掃等 *Sao*[4] *chou*[3]. *A broom of coarse grass, or* . . . . . *bamboo;* the sao[4] chou[3] plant.
藐 *Miao*[3]. To slight, to look down upon, *to ex-* . . . . . *press contempt in the looks;* small.
視 *Shi*[4]. . . . . To inspect, *to look at;* to regard.
藐視 *To show contempt*, to disdain; to act superciliously; to treat scornfully.
庚 *Kêng*[1]. . . . . To alter; to bestow; *age*, years.
柬 *Chien*[3]. . . . . To select; to abridge; *a card.*
庚帖 *Kêng*[1] *t'ie*[3]. A card containing the horo- . . . . . scope of a betrothed person.

Digitized by Google

我知穿紉去着你他他。從六
和爲不不請他想說○那日、
他什上上、他的他的不[18]裏要
講麼○他話、就就妥用出下換
就他天[24]就把是就妥你來。媒庚
了、還就祥是他伶兒來○東帖
二是的不說俐、的、洗、他[17]○
百不哈來。的半怎我們這[16]
六賣。喇、○閉年麼就就件
十○我粗[23]口還他手是東
個飯[25]看拉糙無能又替要西
錢好就得八針言。念反你了就
一了百線○一復洗我的是找
斤。沒錢他酒[22]部了出的不
○有、一還席四呢。來命、着、
我[27]答尺、能已書○就我、我
不好就得就做、經嗎。他[20]是也
是了。是就預○正了。要看
喫○大是備我[21]誇○去他
你價[26]價、穿紉就就海我[19]見到
的錢不針針了、就口、和見底

14 I do not care if he does treat me with contempt.
15 It is already settled, that on the sixth of this month the betrothal papers are to be exchanged.
16 I can not find this thing anywhere. We'll see where it finally will turn up. [go and see him.
17 Even if they take my life, I mean to
18 You need not come to wash them. While I am at it, I can wash them for you just as well as not.
19 I settled it definitely with him. How is it that he has changed his mind?
20 He was simply talking large. Even if he is bright, do you think he could commit the whole of the Four Books in half a year?
21 I just took up his own words, and shut his mouth so completely that he had not a word to say.
22 The feast is quite ready; but when I went to invite him, for some reason he would not come.
23 She can still do coarse sewing. The trouble is she can not thread her needle.
24 As I look at it, eight hundred cash per foot is a high price for T'ien Shang's broadcloth; yet for some reason he will not sell. [ready.
25 Is the rice (food) ready? *Ans.* It is

媒柬 *Mei² chien³*..... A betrothal card.
就手 *Chiu⁴ shou³*. Along with, at the same .....time, *while one's hand is in.*
復 *Fu⁴*. Again, a second time; to return; to .....reply; to restore.
反復 *Fan³ fu⁴*. Back and forth; *to change the .....mind*, to go back on one's self.
誇 *K'wa¹*.....To boast, to brag; *to exaggerate.*
誇海口 *K'wa¹ hai³ k'ou³*. To brag, to boast ex.....travagantly.
四書 *Si⁴ shu¹*. The Four Books; viz., 大學, ...The Great Learning; 中庸, The Doctrine of the Mean; 論語, The Analects; 孟子, The Works of Mencius.
閉 *Pi⁴*. *To close a door;* to shut, to exclude; to .....lay up; to stop up, to obstruct.
閉口無言 *Pi⁴ k'ou³ wu² yien²*. To shut the .....mouth and be silent; nothing to say.
席 *Hsi²*..... A mat; a table; *an entertainment.*
酒席 *Chiu³ hsi²*..... *A feast*, a banquet.
糙 *Ts'ao⁴*..... Rude, *unworkmanlike;* inferior.
粗糙 *Ts'u¹ ts'ao⁴*..... *Coarse;* rude.
粗拉 *Ts'u¹ la¹*..... The same. (L.)
紉 *Jên⁴*..... To thread a needle.
祥 *Hsiang²*. *Good luck;* happiness; a favorable ..... omen from the gods.
喇 *La¹*. To talk fast; a final particle:—Les. 61. .....Also *la³*.
哈喇 *K'a¹ la¹*..... Broadcloth:—Note 24.
尺 *Ch'i³*.....The Chinese foot of ten 寸, *ts'un⁴*.
價 *Chia⁴*..... Price; value.
價錢 *Chia⁴ ch'ien²*..... Price.
心思 *Hsin¹ si¹*. Thought, *idea*, opinion; inten.....tion; to consider, to reflect.
愁 *Ch'ou²*..... Mournful, sad, apprehensive.
兒孫 *Ér² sun¹*.... Children and grandchildren.

Digitized by Google

飯長大的、你打不得、答
罵我我就打得。○若[28]是不
對我們的心思、他也不能
強留、若是不對他的心思、
我們還能強住嗎、答
就是。○我[29]也不願意常說他、他
若是到底不改、我不用他
就是了。○我[30]看你現在喫
不愁、穿不愁、兒孫又都知
道過日子、也就是了。

26 The price I have settled with him at two hundred and sixty cash per catty.

27 I was not raised on your rice: you have no right to whip me. *Ans.* If you insult me, I have a right to whip you.

28 If it does not suit our wishes, he will not constrain us to stay; and if it does not suit his wishes, shall we insist on staying? *Ans.* Of course not.

29 Nor am I willing to keep constantly scolding him. If, after all, he does not change, I will just discharge him.

30 You have no anxiety about food or clothing, and your children and grandchildren are all doing well; it seems to me you ought to be satisfied.

NOTES.

2 惡心 properly means a *wicked heart*, but is put figuratively for nausea.

6 拿起腿來走了, *took up his legs and left*;—a colloquial phrase, meaning that he left suddenly and without notice. It is sometimes shortened into 拿腿走了.

9 得時 is here applied to one who is in the confidence and favor of a superior, so that his advice prevails and he can get whatever he wishes.

12 將就 and 就俯 are not precisely equivalent. 將就 is *to tolerate or make allowance for the peculiarities of others*; while 就俯 *is to adapt or accommodate one's self to the peculiarities of others*. In many places 就俯 becomes 俯就.

13 This sentence is an indirect apology for taking the broom. The use of 也 implies that the owner of the broom had just finished sweeping before his own door.

15 這初六日. The use of 這 points to the 6th of the *current* month. The 庚帖 is a folded card of red paper, on which is written the proposal, or its acceptance, as the case may be. The age of the party is given by means of the eight characters, marking the year, month, day, and hour of his (or her) birth; hence the name, *age card*. See Les. 117, Note 31. The exchanging of these cards by the hands of the go-betweens (媒人), constitutes the marriage engagement. The 媒柬 is a similar paper, and is used for the same purpose, but does not generally contain the eight 庚字 or *age characters*. 柬帖 is another name for the same.

16 就 here expresses the speaker's impatience with a peculiar elegance and force, which the translation fails to convey.

19 就就, as here used, is not entirely *t'ung hsing*; it means *to the point of perfect readiness*, and differs slightly in meaning from 妥妥. The order of the last clause would more regularly be, 他怎麼又反復了. The 怎麼 is put first in order to give it additional emphasis.

20 誇海口, *brags with a mouth like the sea.*

21 就 is here repeated, but not as in the 19th sentence. The emphasis there required, is very different from that required here. The first 就 is an adverb, the second a verb.

22 The fact that 酒席 is the common, and in fact the only, colloquial term for a feast, is very significant. The second part of the sentence is only intelligible in view of the Chinese custom of sending round, when the feast is all ready, to invite the guests a second time.

24 哈喇 is probably the result of an attempt to say "cloth." The pronunciation of 哈 is very various. In Nanking, cloth is called *ha la*.

25 Of the three forms given, 得 is Pekingese, the other two are Central and Southern. 飯 may refer to rice specifically, or it may include the whole meal.

30 喫不愁穿不愁 is an inversion of the more natural order, 不愁喫不愁穿, made for the purpose of giving emphasis to the words 喫 and 穿. 知道過日子 *know to make a living*; i.e., they are not lazy or dissipated, but diligent and thrifty.

LESSON XLV.

那 WITH THE CLASSIFIERS.

那, which? is joined with all the classifiers. An — is often inserted between the 那 and the classifier, and *properly* belongs there in all cases. When emphasis is desired it is always inserted.

Thus used, 那 is not always strictly interrogative, but passes into the declarative form in the same way, and very much in the same circumstances, as "which" does in English.

Digitized by Google

第四十五課

那[1]個人生來就是惡人呢。
你看一塊中到底那硯臺是
秦你合式、那條個是他的。
套秦你[4]○說這[3]呢。
衫套兒的、兒子、你[6]要四○
做衫子、這些生[5]找條個誰[2]
來掛席、一件用個姓狗、知
來請坐那席、那個呢。道
認先生看、那個呢。
認這些筆、一是件的。
把○呢。坐赴那一位
的把○[9]○○好
來椅子[10]實在那[8]你[7]
認請你學格物、現在學那一本

TRANSLATION.

1 Who is by birth a bad man?
2 Who knows which inkstand is his?
3 Which of these four pups do you fancy?
4 You say you want to find a man by the name of Ch'in; but which of the Ch'ins?
5 Just use whichever *t'ao* is suitable.
6 Of the sewing of these two large gowns, which is better?
7 Which gentleman is it that you have come to invite to the feast?
8 Examine these pens and see which is yours.
9 I really do not know which one of these three chairs is his.
10 Which volume of the natural philosophy are you now studying?

VOCABULARY.

硯臺 *Yien⁴ t'ai²*. An ink stone.
看中 *K'an⁴ chung⁴*. To be pleased with; *to prefer*.
秦 *Ch'in²*. An ancient kingdom; name of a dynasty; *a surname*.
衫 *Shan¹*. An unlined garment,—coat, shirt or jacket.
赴 *Fu⁴*. *To go to*, to repair to; to attend; to hasten.
赴席 *Fu⁴ hsi²*. To attend a feast.
坐席 *Tsoǎ⁴ hsi²*. To sit at a feast, to go to a feast.
辯 *Pien⁴*. To dispute; *to argue;* to criticize; to discriminate.
辯論 *Pien⁴ lun⁴*. To discuss, *to debate*.
希 *Hsi¹*. Rare, seldom; sparse; to expect; *to delight in;* almost, nearly :—Les. 57.
罕 *Han³*. *Rare*, scarce; seldom, infrequent.
希罕 Rare, uncommon; *to prize*, to delight in.
圈 *Chüen⁴*. An enclosure; a prison; *a fold;* a snare. See *ch'üen¹*.
正 *Chêng¹*. The first (month). See *chêng⁴*.
芽 *Ya²*. A germ, *a sprout;* the beginning.
白菜 *Pai² ts'ai⁴*. Cabbage.
黃芽菜 *Hwang² ya² ts'ai⁴*. Cabbage.
獎 *Chiang³*. To exhort. to encourage; *to commend;* to praise, to laud.
誇獎 *K'wa¹ chiang³*. To praise, to eulogize; to boast, *to brag*.
葡 *P'u²*. The vine (grape).
萄 *T'ao²*. Used for its sound in 葡萄.
葡萄 The grape, grapes.
棗 *Tsao³*. The buckthorn or jujube, commonly called "*date*" in China.
彙 *Hwei⁴, lei³*. *A class*, a series; to sort.
字彙 *T'si⁴ hwei⁴*. A vocabulary, an abridged dictionary.
獅 *Shi¹*. The lion.
虎 *Hu³*. *The tiger;* brave, fierce, cruel.
老虎 *Lao³ hu³*. A tiger.
熊 *Hsiung²*. *The bear*. (L.)
種 *Chung³*. A seed; a sort, *a kind*. See *chung⁴*.
獸 *Shou⁴*. *A wild animal*, a beast; brutal.
野獸 *Yie³ shou⁴*. A wild beast.
兇 *Hsiung¹*. Inhuman; cruel; *fierce*.
猛 *Mêng³*. *Fierce;* resolute; cruel; severe; suddenly, unexpectedly :—Les. 115.
兇猛 *Fierce*, savage, ferocious, raging.

Digitized by Google

個人辯論、是那[14]一個有理。○我[13]聽他的話、無論那一句
都有滋味。○你看那匹馬好、你就騎那匹。○這[15]三張畫
兒、你喜歡那一張呢。○今[17]日是正月那一天、管去看看、那[18]一隻
肥就宰那一隻。○白菜黃芽菜兩頭兒都好、你要那一頭兒呢。○你[19]常誇獎
的那個學生、是那一個、管就是那個頂小的。○這[20]裏有兩部
葡萄、也有棗兒這顧意喫那一樣呢。○書[21]舖裏有兩部
字彙、一部新的、一部舊的、先生要買那一部呢。○獅[22]子、
老虎、熊、這三種野獸、無論那一種都是最兇猛的。

呢。○這[11]些銀子、你嫌那一錠成色不足。○先[12]生聽這兩

11 Which of these pieces of silver is it with the quality of which you are dissatisfied?

12 Of the two whom you have heard debate, which do you think is in the right?

13 To my ears, every word he said was interesting.

14 Just ride whichever horse you like best.

15 Which of these three pictures do you prize the most (prefer)?

16 Go and look among the flock of sheep and dress whichever one is fat.

17 What day of the first month is this? *Ans.* The thirteenth.

18 Both ends of this load of cabbage are good. Which end do you want?

19 Which is the scholar you are always bragging about? *Ans.* That smallest one.

20 Here are both grapes and dates. Which would you prefer to eat?

21 There are two dictionaries in the book-store; one new one, and one second-hand. Which do you wish to buy?

22 The lion, the tiger and the bear; all these three kinds of wild beasts are very fierce.

NOTES.

1 If the 呢 were omitted, this sentence would more naturally be taken to mean, "*That man was by birth a wicked man.* The two meanings might of course be distinguished by careful emphasis, even without the 呢. Every interrogative sentence in this lesson *might* end with a 呢; and if the language were regular and consistent with itself, would do so. As it is, some do, and some do not. The sentences are just as the Chinese teachers have made them.

2 Perspicuity would seem to require 呢 at the end of this sentence. Its meaning, as written, is entirely uncertain. It might be translated just as truly, *Who would have thought it? That inkstand was his!* As spoken, the meaning would be indicated by the emphasis.

4 The first 個 is here used somewhat as we use "one," meaning a man named so-and-so. The use of 到底 implies that there had been some misunderstanding about the person.

6 The Chinese here makes the comparison by simply asking which is good:—See Les. 58.

9 Note how far the auxiliary 來 is separated from 出, and from the principal verb, 認.

11 Lit., *These [pieces of] silver, you dislike which piece [because] its touch is not full.*

13 Lit., [As] *I heard his words, no matter which, all were interesting.*

20 棗子 is Southern; 棗兒 is universally used in the North.

LESSON XLVI.

THE COMPOUND RELATIVE.

所 A place,—a compound relative pronoun meaning *what, that, who, that which, the things which.* The clause it introduces usually comes between the subject and the predicate, and in all such cases ends with 的. In other cases the 的 is sometimes omitted, or replaced by 着.

Digitized by Google

第四十六課

我[1]所練的、所讀念的書、都忘記了。○他[2]所說的都是實話。○你[3]所提的、所見聞的事、我已經知道了。○老[4]年人所經過的事、多半都是要緊的。○少[5]年人所見所聞的、不過比他喫的鹽多、喫的米還多。○我[7]所奇怪的、是你[6]經手辦的事、不得了、他所虧空的、是把我[8]所有的東西都變賣了、也不清楚。○他[9]欠的債、是我該還的、我不能不還。○這[10]是他的章程、安排的妥當、你[11]所鋪排的、我[13]不敢預備。○那一位[12]小令郎打的糧食、這樣圓全。○這一點也沒說的麼。○那一位小令郎打的嗎。○這就是所做的甚麼。○這就是我[14]不得了。○

Translation.

1 I have forgotten all the books I learned.
2 Every thing that he says is true.
3 What you have mentioned I already knew.
4 The experience of old men is large, and their observation, wide.
5 He who has little experience has many surprises.
6 You have eaten more salt than he has rice.
7 What surprises me is that he tells his lies with such proficiency.
8 What I learned was but little, and what I remember is not distinct.
9 Even if he should sell off all he has, it is not enough to pay off the debts he owes.
10 This is something that he should attend to. Why do you come bothering me about it?
11 The plan you proposed will not work, I fear.
12 Is this your little son that you spoke of?
13 He did not examine me on any thing that I had prepared.

Vocabulary.

所 *Soǎ*[3]. A place, a locality; the cause by which:—see Sub. A classifier:—Les. 125.

讀 *Tu*[2]. To read aloud; to read carefully; *to study.* Also *tou*[4].

練 *Lien*[4]. To experiment on; *to practice;* to train, to drill; to select.

經練 *Ching*[1] *lien*[4]. Experience.

見聞 *Chien*[4] *wên*[2]. Observation.

廣 *Kwang*[3]. Broad, *wide;* spacious; extensive; large; liberal; Cantonese.

奇 *Ch'i*[2]. Extraordinary, *surprising,* wonderful; strange; unnatural. Also *chi*[1].

奇怪 *Ch'i*[2] *kwai*[4]. Remarkable, wonderful, *surprising.*

全 *Ch'üen*[2]. *Complete;* entire; unbroken, perfect; all, the whole:—Les. 158.

圓全 *Yüen*[2] *ch'üen*[2]. Complete.

限 *Hsien*[4]. A limit: a restriction; a few, *a little;* to limit, to set bounds to; to assign.

變 *Pien*[4]. To transform, *to change;* a turn in affairs; a revolution; metamorphosis.

變賣 *Pien*[4] *mai*[4]. To sell off, to turn into money.

欠 *Ch'ien*[4]. To be deficient; *to owe;* wanting.

債 *Chai*[4]. A debt, an obligation.

囉 *Lo*ǎ[2]. Prattle; *troublesome.*

囉唆 *Lo*ǎ[2] *so*ǎ[1]. Troublesome, embarrassing; *to bother,* to trouble, to worry.

排 *P'ai*[2]. To place in order, *to arrange;* to adjust; to stretch; a row, a line.

安排 *An*[1] *p'ai*[2]. To arrange, to dispose; *to propose, to plan,* to intend.

鋪排 *P'u*[1] *p'ai*[2]. To arrange, to distribute; *to plan.*

章 *Chang*[1]. A statement; statutes, *rules;* an essay; a chapter, a section; variegated.

程 *Ch'éng*[2]. A rule, a pattern; *a regulation;* a task; a road, a stage; to estimate.

章程 *A plan;* a set of rules; procedure; policy.

Digitized by Google

半年喫的。○他[16]所應許的、都落了空。○我們知道的、我們所見証了的、是我們看見的。○我[17]花的錢、也該記賬。○你[18]我們在那邊所說的私體話、我在這邊都聽見了。○他[19]年中所出的錢多、所入的錢少、還能不拉虧空嗎。○那[21]一夜進去一些個強盜、把他所積攢的、三個錢。○我[20]所算的數、和你所算的、正差十三個錢。○他[22]都搶了去了。○人所說的話、所作的事、所連心攢的、所不存的意思、沒有所不知道的。○天主[23]是無所不在、無所不知、無所不能的神。

14 The grain gathered in one year is not sufficient for a half year's food.
15 Even what you spend yourself, you ought to keep an account of.
16 What he promised all came to nothing.
17 We speak that which we know, and testify to that which we have seen.
18 I heard here all the private conversation you had over there.
19 The expenditures of the year exceeded the receipts. How could he help running into debt?
20 The amount, as I have reckoned it, differs from your count by just thirteen cash.
21 That night some thieves broke in and robbed him of all he had saved.
22 There is nothing that a man says, nothing that he does, not even any of the thoughts of his heart, that God (or, the gods) does not know.
23 The Lord of Heaven is the omnipresent, omniscient and omnipotent God.

令 *Ling⁴*. A law, an order; to command, to bid; .....to cause, to cause to do:—Les. 71; *good, worthy;* your:—a term of honor:—Les. 171.
郎 *Lang²*. A young gentleman; a son; *a term* ..... *of respect;* masculine; strong.
令郎 Your son, a son.
糧食 *Liang² shi²*..... Grain (garnered).
空 *K'ung¹*. Empty, void; a hole, an opening; the .....firmament; *emptiness.* See *k'ung⁴*.
落空 *Loa⁴ k'ung¹*..... To come to nothing.
見証 *Chien⁴ chêng⁴*..... *To testify;* testimony.
體己 *T'i³ ch'i²*. *Private,* personal; secret, con- .....fidential:—Note 18.
私 *Si¹*. *Private;* selfish; partial; secret; under- .....hand; illicit.
防 *Fang²*. A dyke, a levee; a defense, a .....protection; to ward off; *to guard against.*
私防 Illicit savings; *private,* secret.
虧空 *K'wei¹ k'ung⁴*..... Debt, deficiency.
拉饑荒 *La¹ Chi¹ hwang¹*. To run into debt. ....
拉虧空 *La¹ k'wei¹ k'ung⁴*..... The same.
盜 *Tao⁴*..... *A robber,* a highwayman; to rob.
強盜 *Ch'iang² tao⁴*..... A robber, a bandit.
積 *Chi¹·²*..... To accumulate; *to store up.*
攢 *Tsan³, ts'wan²*..... To collect, to pile up.
積攢 To amass; *to accumulate;* to hoard.
天主 *T'ien¹ Chu³*..... The Lord of Heaven.

NOTES.

2 Or, *Everything that he said was true.*

6 A forcible way of expressing, that one is a great deal older and more experienced than another.

11 要 See Les. 13, Note 19.

18 體己 is widely used, but is not *t'ung hsing.* Note that 己 is here read *Ch'i³*. In Peking the phrase is heard *t'i³ hsi¹*, but the writing of *hsi¹* is not apparent.

21 搶了去了 We have here one 了 added to the principal verb, and another to the auxiliary. This is often done for emphasis, but is not elegant. Both the 了 should be spoken *la³*.

22 This sentence was made by a Christian teacher.

23 In these neat phrases 所 may be taken, either in its original sense as a noun meaning *place,* or as a relative pronoun meaning *that which,* and the sense will remain the same; thus showing how the 所 passes from the one meaning to the other.

Digitized by Google

第四十七課

我[1] 打 ○ 給[4] 他。的 指 今今[3]頭 日疼。 天陰 ○ 你[2] 天、陰 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
的 ○ 有[6] ○ 了 ○ 一 鞋[5] 了 ○ 少。 ○ 大 ○ 頭。 厭。 ○ ○ 喫
指 ○ 路[7] 還[8] 沒 買 這 大 必 一 天日 陰天 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
頭 ○ 一 鞋[5] 了 ○ 少。 ○ 大 ○ 頭。 厭。 ○ ○ 喫
今今[3] 他 小 隻 上 沒 還[8] 路[7] 一 鞋[5] 了 ○ 少。 ○ 大 ○ 頭。 厭。 ○ ○ 喫
日疼。 天陰 ○ 大 必 一 天日 陰天 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
天陰 ○ 大 ○ 頭。 厭。 ○ ○ 喫
陰天、你[2] 大 加 塊 陰天 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
大 ○ 頭。 厭。 ○ ○ 喫
看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
頭。 厭。 ○ ○ 喫
不 該 拿 拳 頭
厭。 ○ ○ 喫
該 拿 拳 頭
○ ○ 喫
拿 拳 頭
○ 喫
拳 頭
喫
頭

我[1] 的 指 頭 疼。 天陰 ○ 你[2] 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
的 指 頭 疼。 天陰 ○ 你[2] 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
指 頭 疼。 天陰 ○ 你[2] 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
頭 疼。 天陰 ○ 你[2] 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
疼。 天陰 ○ 你[2] 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
天陰 ○ 你[2] 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
陰 ○ 你[2] 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
○ 你[2] 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
你[2] 看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
看 不 該 拿 拳 頭
不 該 拿 拳 頭
該 拿 拳 頭
拿 拳 頭
拳 頭
頭

Translation.

1 My finger hurts.
2 You ought not to have struck him with your fist.
3 It is cloudy to-day. The sun is not visible.
4 I gave him a large piece of bread, and yet he is dissatisfied.
5 These shoes are small. It will be necessary to stretch them with a last.
6 A large steamer has just come alongside the wharf.
7 These small stones on the road are very annoying.
8 I have not yet bought a plow-share. How can I plow?
9 The old lady has two maid-servants to wait on her.
10 I have in the house a kettle of taros cooked. Are you fond of them?

LESSON XLVII.

The Specific Suffix 頭.

頭 The head,—is added to many nouns to specialize them. No rule can be given as to what words will take 頭 after them. In general it may be observed, that words involving the idea of a lump, or of a point, take 頭 after them. Whenever the addition of 頭 makes any special modification of the meaning the combination is defined; in other cases it is not.

For full list of words taking 頭 after them, see Supplement.

Vocabulary.

揎 *Hsüen*[4]. . . . *A last;* to stuff, to fill in a cavity.
碼 *Ma*[3]. Weights; a yard (meas.); an emporium, ... a mart, *a jetty;* abbreviated numerals.
碼頭 *Ma*[3] *t'ou*[2]. . . . . A jetty, *a wharf;* a mart.
火輪船 *Hwoă*[3] *lun*[2] *ch'wan*[2]. A steamship, a . . . . . steamboat.
犁 *Li*[2]. . . . . *A plow;* dark; piebald.
鏵 *Hwa*[2]. . . . . A spade; *a plow point* or share.
鑱 *Ch'an*[1]. . . . To carve, to chip; *a coulter point.*
鑱頭 *Ch'an*[1] *t'ou*[2]. . . . . A plow point, a coulter.
犁頭 *Li*[2] *t'ou*[2]. . . . . The same.
耕 *Ching*[1], *kêng*[1]. . . . . To till; to plow.
丫 *Ya*[1]. . . . . A fork; *a slave girl;* a daughter.
舌 *Shê*[2]. . . . . *The tongue;* the clapper of a bell.
脣 or 唇 *Ch'un*[2]. . . . . The lips.
嘴脣 *Tswei*[3] *ch'un*[2]. . . . . The lips.
腫 *Chung*[3]. . . . . *To swell,* swollen; boastful.
波 *Poă*[1]. . . . . A wave, a ripple; ruffled; vast.
稜 *Lêng*[2]. . . . . A corner, an edge; an angle.
羅 *Loă*[2]. A net; a sieve; gauze; to spread out, ... to arrange; to bolt,—as flour.
波稜蓋 *Poă*[1] *lêng*[2] *kai*[4]. The knee; the knee- . . . . . pan.
波羅蓋 *Poă*[1] *loă*[2] *kai*[4]. . . . . The same.
間 *Chien*[1]. A space, an interval; between; *in the* . . . . . *midst of;* in, during; to set apart. A classifier:—Les. 68. Also *chien*[4]. [midst.
中間 *Chung*[1] *chien*[1]. . . . . Between; in the
節 *Chie*[3]. . . . *A joint,* a knot, a length:—See *chie*[2].
枕 *Chên*[3]. *A pillow;* a rest for the back; a sock- . . . . . et. Also *chên*[4].
枕 *Chên*[4]. *To pillow on,* to lean on; contiguous. . . . . See *chên*[3].
駒 *Chü*[1]. . . . . A colt,—under two years.
韁 *Lung*[2]. . . . . A halter.

Digitized by Google

頭、把這個火爐墊起來。○他[12]的舌頭有病、連嘴脣子都腫了。○波稜蓋兒、是腿中間兒的骨頭節兒。○這[14]個枕頭太高。○人[15]子沒有枕頭的地方。○那[16]個騾駒子、把鞦頭掙壞了。○這[17]個堵頭小一點、要一個大些的。○他[18]的對頭利害、誰敢多嘴管這閒事。○這[19]事的盡頭就是死。○王[20]日新在濟南府車行裏當把兒頭、一年掙五十多吊。○他[21]家裏有個碓臼、就是沒有杵頭子。○他[22]借了二十吊錢、給人三畝地作押頭。○我[23]要鑢四條桌子腿、用甚麼木頭好呢、答曰、那裏知道、不帶轡頭、就是沒有法子騎他。○這[24]麼一匹小高麗馬、怎麼必得帶轡頭呢、答曰、那木就好。○

11 Get four pieces of brick and put them under the feet of this stove to raise it up.
12 His tongue is diseased, so that even his lips are swollen.
13 The knee is the joint in the middle of the leg.
14 This pillow is too high.
15 The son of man hath not where to lay his head.
16 That mule colt has broken his halter.
17 This end piece is a little small. I want one somewhat larger.
18 His opponent is violent. Who would venture to meddle in this business which does not concern him?
19 The end of these things is death.
20 Wang I Hsin is acting as head-man in the stage company in Chinanfu at a salary of over fifty thousand cash a year.
21 He has a mortar in the house, but is short a pestle.
22 He borrowed twenty thousand cash and mortgaged three acres of land as security.
23 I want to turn four table legs: what wood is the best to use? *Ans.* Walnut is the best.
24 What necessity is there for having a bridle for such a little Korean pony? *Ans.* But you see, without a bridle it is impossible to ride him.

堵 *Tu*[3]. To obstruct; *to close up*, to stop; to fill in. A classifier:—Les. 140.

堵頭 *Tu*[3] *t'ou*[2]. A shutter, a plug; the end of a coffin, end of a drawer, etc.

懷 *Hwai*[2]. To cherish; to think of; to put or carry in the bosom; to harbor, to remember against; the bosom, the heart.

懷頭 *Hwai*[2] *t'ou*[2]. The ends of a coffin; a stop-gap; *an end piece.*

對頭 *Twei*[4] *t'ou*[2]. An opponent.

多嘴 *Tod*[1] *tswei*[3]. To intermeddle with the tongue, to criticize the affairs of others.

閒事 *Hsien*[2] *shi*[4]. *Anything extraneous to duty;* an unimportant affair, a private affair.

車行 *Ch'ê*[1] *hang*[2]. A cart company:—Note 20.

把頭 *Pa*[3] *t'ou*[2]. A head-man.

碓 *Twei*[4]. A mortar; a pestle. A foot-pestle. (s.)

臼 *Chiu*[4]. A mortar.

碓臼 A mortar,—of wood, stone or metal.

杵 *Ch'u*[3]. A pestle, a beater.

碓頭 *Twei*[4] *t'ou*[2]. A pestle (s).

押頭 *Ya*[1] *t'ou*[2]. Property or goods given in pledge.

鑢 *Hsüen*[4]. To turn in a lathe.

楸 *Ch'iu*[1]. The catalpa:—Les. 147, Note 15.

麗 *Li*[4]. Elegant, graceful; beautiful, bright.

高麗 *Kao*[1] *li*[4]. Korea.

轡 *P'ei*[4]. A bridle; the reins of a bridle.

Digitized by Google

第四十八課

你[1]賣 答盤 改買、裏吊 ○
手了來 ○繮。一的、我 改買、子。 先[11]錢。
裏多幾了 ○ 改沒我 年○ 生
有少多十 先[5]就見 還得要[10] 多 是
幾錢。生 行他給 多少 行
個○有。了的 你少 差差 答池
栗他[3]○ 幾○ 信。多幾 耗 我
子。老[4]位 已[7] 多少 費、一 是點、
兄來○ 令經 你[8]錢。 答 排也
了還那[2] 有幾隻 若○ 幾多 行不
個花犂 多[6]多 千多 爺七 第要
人、牛牛、 少少 日錢 家百 九。緊。

Translation.

1 How many chestnuts have you in your hand?
2 How much did that black piebald cow sell for?
3 How many of their men have come? *Ans.* Over ten have come.
4 How much travelling money have you still?
5 How many sons have you?
6 By altering it slightly it will answer.
7 I have had no letter from him for a long time.
8 I will give you as much as you paid for it.
9 How much do you require for home expenses per year? *Ans.* I need six or seven hundred strings of cash.
10 If it misses by a little, no matter.
11 Which of the brothers are you? *Ans.* I am the ninth.

Notes.

2 There is no indication of time in this sentence. It might also be rendered, *You ought not to strike him with your fist.*

5 鞋小 These two words here illustrate how, under certain circumstances, the Chinese language can be exceedingly brief.

8 This sentence might with equal propriety be rendered, *How can I plow when I have not yet bought a plow point?* Which construction was intended would be indicated by the manner of speaking. Of the three terms for *plow point*, the first is Pekingese, the second Central, and the third Southern. The article referred to is a triangular point of cast iron, which serves in place of both coulter and share. A Chinese plow is one of the rudest of their many rude implements.

11 In the North a 磚頭 is a brickbat, or piece of a brick, but in the South it is a whole brick.

13 Of the two terms for knee, the first is Northern and the second Southern. In neither term are the first two characters properly significant. There are also other colloquial terms for knee. The book term is 膝 *hsi*[1].

15 This sentence is introduced to illustrate, by contrast, the use of 枕 as a verb, with 頭 as its object.

20 A 車行 is an association of carters, which controls the whole business of carting in a city. They generally exact a fee from all carts entering the city which are not connected with them. 把頭 is variously used in different places, but always means a head-man of some kind. In the South 包頭 is used instead.

21 杵 is the proper word for a pestle, but is not used in the South. 碓 is rather the stone head on the wooden handle of the pestle than the whole pestle.

23 楸 is used with different prefixes for several kinds of trees. 核桃楸 is walnut.

LESSON XLVIII.

Numeral Adjectives.

幾個 How many? some, a few. Any special classifier may be substituted for 個. As an interrogative, 幾 is generally applied to comparatively small numbers.

多少 How many? how much? a little, slightly (6); much, a great deal (18).

幾多 How many? Used in the South instead of 多少, but never heard in the North.

若干 How many? how much? a good many, a great many. Rarely used interrogatively in Mandarin.

數 Some, several, a few.

第 A series,—prefixed to a number makes it an ordinal.

Digitized by Google

那件事、不知操了多少心。

實在不知多少足。[18]

辦妥當。○[17]

起身我還有若干事情、沒能

幾歲、[答]五歲。○[16]

個燒火餅、[15]

要緊拿着幾個孩子今年

的、不過有數人。○[14]

打算卸五噸。○會[13]

○你[12]打算卸多少煤、[答]我

12 How much coal do you propose to take? *Ans.* I propose to take five tons.
13 There are only a few men of ability in the society (church).
14 When you start, be sure to take a few cash to buy some biscuits.
15 How old is your child this year? *Ans.* Five years.
16 I can not start to-morrow, I have a lot of business not yet arranged.
17 You are a beggar that does not know when he has enough.
18 I can not tell how much anxiety of mind I have had on account of that affair of his.

VOCABULARY.

幾 *Chi*³. How many? how much? a little, several:—see Sub. Also *chi*¹.

干 *Kan*¹. A shield; to offend; to provoke; arms; concerning; consequence; a stem, the ten stems or horary characters,—甲, 乙, 丙, 丁, 戊, 己, 庚, 辛, 壬, 癸; *a few, some.*

第 *Ti*⁴. A series, *an order;* a degree; a section; but, yet, merely:—see Sub.

栗 *Li*⁴. *The chestnut;* firm, durable.

老兄 *Lao*³ *hsiung*¹. Sir,—a term of respect.

纏 *Ch'an*². To bind up; to bandage; to involve; to implicate; to bother.

盤纏 *P'an*² *ch'an*². Road money.

耗 *Hao*⁴. *To spend;* to consume, to use up; to make void; a rat, a mouse.

耗費 *Hao*⁴ *fei*⁴. To expend; expenses.

池 *Ch'i*². A pond, a tank; a moat. *Regular, even.* (L.)

差池 *Ch'a*¹ *ch'i*². Different from. (C. and S.)

卸 *Hsie*⁴. To lay aside; to put off, to undo; to vacate; *to unload;* to take delivery of.

噸 *Tun*⁴. A ton,—a new character made to express the foreign word "ton."

餅 *Ping*³. A cake; a biscuit.

燒餅 *Shao*¹ *ping*³. A baked cake.

火燒 *Hwoă*³ *shao*¹. A baked cake.

知足 *Chi*¹ *tsu*². To be satisfied, contented.

操 *Ts'ao*¹. To hold; to manage; to drill; to exercise, *to put forth;* to restrain. Also *ts'ao*⁴.

操心 *Ts'ao*¹ *hsin*¹. To take trouble, to charge the mind with, *to be anxious.*

兌 *Twei*⁴. *To exchange,* to barter.

舖底 *P'u*⁴ *ti*³. Shop fixtures, outfit.

生財 *Shêng*¹ *ts'ai*². The same. (S.) To make money, to grow rich.

醫 *I*¹. To heal; to cure; *medical.*

醫道 *I*¹ *tao*⁴. *Medicine;* the practice of medicine, medical science.

糶 *T'iao*⁴. To sell (only used of grain).

春 *Ch'un*¹. *Spring,* vernal; joyous.

乾 *Ch'ien*². Heaven; superior; a father; stable, firm. See *kan*¹.

隆 *Lung*². High, eminent, surpassing; exalted; abundant, rich.

乾隆 K'ienlung,—the fourth emperor of the present Tartar dynasty.

皇 *Hwang*². Great, imperial, august; a sovereign, *an emperor.*

皇上 *Hwang*² *shang*⁴. The emperor; His Imperial Majesty.

劉 *Liu*². To kill; *a surname.*

墉 *Yung*¹. A redoubt; an adobe wall.

劉墉 A high official under the emperor K'ienlung, a native of Southern Shantung.

街市 *Chie*¹ *shï*⁴. A market street.

目 *Mu*⁴. The eye; a principal man, a leader; *an index;* the mind; to designate; to eye.

題目 *T'i*² *mu*⁴. A text, a theme, a subject.

翰 *Han*⁴. A pencil, a quill; writings.

約翰 *Yoă*¹ *han*⁴. John.

脚力 *Chioă*³ *li*⁴. Freight, carriage.

Digitized by Google

○我[19]還有若干的貨沒賣、又不知得等多少日子、纔能把舖底兌出去。○請[20]掌櫃的生財盤給人看看、我還欠着幾多少銀子、算算多少也不過十兩八兩的。○他[21]在醫道上、用了數十年的工夫。○秦[22]三不知有多少糧食、直糶了一春、家裏還有若干。○乾[23]隆皇上、問劉墉說、你看這街市上、有多少人呢、劉墉說、也不過是名利兩個人。○題[24]目在約翰第一書、第二章、第三節。○買[25]價若干、脚力若干、請賜一回音。

19 I have still a great many goods unsold, and I can not tell how long it may be before I can dispose of my shop fixtures.

20 Please, cashier, look and see how much I still owe. *Ans.* It is not much,—not over eight or ten taels.

21 He has spent several tens of years at medicine.

22 I wonder how much grain Ch'in the Third has. He has been selling all the spring, and he still has a great deal left.

23 The Emperor K'ienlung asked Liu Yung, saying, "How many people do you think there are on this market street?" Liu Yung answered, "Only the two men, Fame and Gain."

24 The text is in first John, second chapter and third verse.

25 Please write me a reply stating the price and the freight.

Notes.

1 Note that 栗, *a chestnut*, takes 子 after it, as also 李, *a plum*, but 梨, *a pear*, does not take 子 after it.

2 犂牛 is not used in the South, and 花牛 is not its exact equivalent. 犂牛 is a black cow with white spots, and 花牛 is a spotted cow of any color.

4 The meaning of 盤纏 is probably derived from the custom of carrying money in a belt encircling the waist. In colloquial the combination 盤纏錢 is often heard.

11 行 here refers to the order of succession in ages. It is sometimes confined to own brothers, and sometimes includes cousins of the same family name.

12 卸 We say, "How much will you have?" or, "How much will you take?" but the Chinese attribute to the buyer the act of the seller, and say, *How much will you unload?* In like manner they say of meat or cloth, *How much will you cut?* and of silver, *How much will you weigh?*

13 事 is here used as a verb meaning to *transact or manage business.*

14 火燒 are unleavened cakes, baked on both sides in a small oven. They are round, about an inch thick and from four to six inches in diameter. They are sometimes made with sugar or dates in the inside. In the South 燒餅 is applied to the same kind of a cake, but in the North it is only applied to such as have sugar in them, or sesame seed on the outside. The usage varies very much in different places.

15 In inquiring ages 幾 is only used of children, or of young persons in their teens.

17 Not to know 多少, is not to know the quantity befitting the circumstances. If 知足 is here equivalent in meaning to 不知多少 (of which I am not sure), then it is used somewhat out of its usual sense. The use of 你這個 gives a tinge of impatience.

19 兌 Here means to sell or dispose of as a whole, instead of selling off in detail.

20 We say "eight or ten;" the Chinese say *ten or eight.* The 兩 has to be inserted twice, otherwise the *ten or eight* would be eighteen. 的, at the end, is really superfluous. It gives to the Chinese something like the force of the English expression, "a matter of eight or ten taels."

21 It is worthy of note that 數 is thus used only with the round numbers ten, hundred, thousand, and myriad. When it precedes the number, as here, it means *several* tens, *several* hundreds, etc.; but when it follows, as in (3), it means *over or upwards* of ten, but usually *about* a hundred or a thousand.

23 不過 *not over, only*:—See next Les., Sub.

25 The style of this sentence is not colloquial, but such as would be used in a letter. 請賜一回音, *Please give one return word;* i.e., *Please write me a reply.*

Digitized by Google

第四十九課

不你你[11]是裏二一憑。個光[1]
過不父重、只字。句○牲你
走肯親若帶○實只[5]口。自
了呢。和是的着他[8]話有○己
五○你不二光沒一他[3]來
十第[12]哥管百說有。篇光了
里三哥他、錢。好○沒會嗎。
路。日都怕○話、人[7]謄挑○
○頂願要那[10]不過起眼。我[2]
不[13]頭意、成個作日來。○們
可風怎個學好子、○光[4]兩倆
但很麼結結生事。只他[6]你個
聽大、單吧吧背○在淨說只
一一顯子。書我[9]勤扯撒不僱
面天着○寡光腰儉謊謊足一

Translation.

1 Are you the only one that has come?
2 We two will only hire one donkey between us.
3 He does nothing but find fault.
4 Your word alone is not sufficient proof.
5 There is only one leaf not yet copied.
6 He is always lying, there is no truth in him.
7 Making a living depends wholly on two things; viz., diligence and economy.
8 He always talks well, but never does well.
9 I have brought only two hundred cash in my pocket.
10 That scholar is given to repeating when he recites his lesson. If he is not controlled, I fear he will become a stutterer.
11 Why do you put forward your dissent, when your father and older brother are both willing?
12 The third day there was a very strong head wind, and we only went fifty *li* during the whole day.

LESSON XLIX.

Restrictive Particles.

只 Only, merely, nothing but, wholly. Also used as a conjunction:—Les. 95.

光 Only, alone, nothing but, given to, even. **光** is colloquial, but entirely *t'ung-hsing*.

寡 Only, etc.,—the same as **光**. Used chiefly in Central and Southern Mandarin.

淨 Simply, only, nothing but.

單 Only, simply, nothing but.

單單 Simply, solely, specially.

但 Only, simply, merely. As here used, **但** is not appreciably different from **單**, save that its use seems to be limited to certain connections. It is also used as a conjunction:—Les. 95.

不過 Not exceeding, nothing more than, only.

Vocabulary.

只 *Chi*[3,1]. Only, merely, nothing but; but, yet, ... however.

寡 *Kwa*[3]. Few, seldom; rare; alone; a widow; ..... but, only:—see Sub.

單 *Tan*[1]. Single, alone; odd,—as a number; a ..... bill, a receipt; only, but, simply.

但 *Tan*[4]..... Only; simply; but, yet; whenever.

倆 *Lia*[3]..... Two,—an abbreviation for **兩個**.

挑眼 *T'iao*[1] *yien*[3]..... To pick flaws.

憑 *P'ing*[2]. To lean on, to trust to; *proof*, evi- ..... dence; according to:—Les. 83.

篇 *P'ien*[1]. *A leaf*,—of a book; a section; books. .....A classifier:—Les. 147.

松 *Sung*[1]..... The pine; enduring.

勤 *Ch'in*[2]..... *Diligent;* attentive; laborious.

儉 *Chien*[3]..... Temperate, frugal, *economical.*

背書 *Pei*[4] *shu*[1]. To turn the back to the teacher ..... and recite a lesson, to repeat.

重 *Ch'ung*[2]. To double; *to repeat*, to do over; .....again. See *Chung*[4].

結吧 *Chie*[1] *pa*[1]..... To stutter, to stammer.

顯 *Hsien*[3]. Manifest, conspicuous; to exhibit, *to* .....*make manifest;* to render illustrious.

頂頭 *Ting*[3] *t'ou*[2]..... Opposing, contrary.

Digitized by Google

之詞。○不[14]用提人情枉費、就是光喫也不穀。○先[15]生單單喫這一樣、不喫別的嗎。○那[16]個不可託、你怎麼單單託他呢。○他[17]天天淨在烟館裏、正經事一點不幹。○他[18]不過對你說玩話、你不要信他。○你[19]單顧眼前、不顧背後。○我[20]只知道一件事、就是知道自己不知道甚麼。○這[21]幾天他們不講究別的、淨講究怎樣得功名。○欒[22]老四說話太利害、光吹鬍子瞪眼的。○凡[23]事不求有功、只求無過。○劉[25]先生取人、是但看人的外貌。○吊錢的票子。○我[24]手下沒有現錢、只有兩吊

13 It will not do to listen only to one side.
14 It is not enough for food alone, to say nothing of the claims of society and other incidental expenses.
15 Do you only eat this one kind, and eat nothing else?
16 Rather entrust it to anybody than to him.
17 He spends every day in the opium den and pays no attention whatever to legitimate business.
18 He is only talking in fun to you, you must not believe him.
19 You regard only the present moment, caring nothing for the future.
20 I know only one thing,—that is, I know that I myself do not know anything.
21 These few days they talk of nothing else save of how to get a degree.
22 Lwan the Fourth talks too violently. He is all the time vociferating with glaring eyes.
23 Seek for merit in nothing; it is enough if you do not offend.
24 I have no ready money at hand; I have nothing but a two thousand cash bank-note.

詞 *Ts'i²*. An expression, a phrase; words, language; a poem; a writing.

人情 *Jên² ch'ing²*. Natural feeling, mercy; goodwill; *the presents and acknowledgements which express good-will.*

枉 *Wang³*. To do or suffer wrong; a wrong, a grievance; *needless*, to no purpose.

枉費 *Wang³ fei⁴*. To spend to no purpose; money spent for unnecessary things; *incidental expenses.*

正經 *Chêng⁴ ching¹*. *Legitimate*, proper, right; really, verily.

玩話 *Wan² hwa⁴*. Jesting, *in fun.*

眼前 *Yien³ ch'ien²*. Before the eyes, in the presence of; *the present*, now:—See Les. 118, Sub.

背後 *Pei⁴ hou⁴*. Behind the back, in private; hereafter, *the future.*

功名 *Kung¹ ming²*. An honorary degree.

欒 *Lwan²*. A common surname.

吹 *Ch'wei¹*. *To blow*, to breathe; to praise.

鬍 *Hu²*. The moustache, the beard.

葫 *Hu²*. A gourd, a calabash.

蘆 *Lu²*. A reed, a hollow-stemmed plant.

葫蘆 A gourd, a calabash.

瞪 *Têng⁴*. To raise the eyebrows and stare; to *glare on.*

現錢 *Hsien⁴ ch'ien²*. *Ready cash;* coin.

票 *P'iao⁴*. A warrant; a ticket; *a bank-note.*

貌 *Mao⁴*. Outward mien; style, form, *appearance;* the face, the visage.

財命 *Ts'ai² ming⁴*. Luck in business.

增 *Tsêng¹*. *To add*, to increase, to augment.

增光 *T'sêng¹ kwang¹*. To increase one's reputation, to shed lustre on.

疑惑 *I² hwo⁴*. *To suspect*, to doubt; in suspense.

勞心 *Lao² hsin¹*. *To weary the mind*, mental toil; study.

勞力 *Lao² li⁴*. *To weary the body;* physical toil; to labor.

Digitized by Google

光不勞力、不勞心。

不勞力、他的事情、是光勞心、

我[29]的事情、是我偷的呢。○

疑惑是我偷的呢。

個人在家裏、怎麼單

都增光。○[28]不只我一

家增光、就是一村也

是進了學、不但你一

他的財命怎樣。○若[27]看

掙[26]他的錢不掙錢、那但

25 In choosing men, Mr. Liu is wholly guided by their appearance.

26 Whether he makes money or not, depends entirely on what luck he has.

27 If you get a degree, you will not only add lustre to your own family, but you will shed lustre on the whole village.

28 I was not the only person at home. Why do you specially suspect me of stealing it?

29 My business wears only on my mind, not on my body: his wears only on his body, not on his mind.

NOTES.

2 倆. This contraction is not used in the South.

3 The use of 會 here is a little peculiar. It conveys the idea that the person is addicted to finding fault, or that this is his "forte."

6 Or, *what he says is all lies, there is not a word of truth in it.*

8 好事 commonly means *benevolent* or *charitable acts*, the accent being on 好; but here it means *to do right*, the accent being on 事.

9 的 and 着 are here practically equivalent, the grammatical structure being, however, somewhat different. The Chinese frequently wear in front, connected with their girdle, a broad quilted or leather pouch, which answers the double purpose of a pocket and a purse. Its proper name is 跨兜子 K'wa⁴ tou¹ tsi³. It is often referred to, as here, by the term, 腰裏, *on the waist*. A string of cash is often carried by simply hanging it across the ordinary belt.

12 五十里路 *fifty li of road.* The 路 is added for euphony.

13 一面之詞 is a book phrase adopted into the colloquial; hence the use of 之.

16 Lit., *Who can not be trusted? Why do you specially entrust it to him?* That is, is there no one else to whom you could entrust it, that you go out of your way to entrust it to him? This is the Chinese interrogative way of expressing the idea given in the translation.

22 吹鬍子 *to blow the moustache,*—to talk so excitedly that the saliva is blown out on the moustache. 吹葫蘆 *to blow a gourd,*—to talk in a loud vociferous way.

23 This is a popular ethical principle, attributed to some of the Taoist philosophers. It would hardly commend itself to a Western mind.

25 取人 *to take a man;* i.e., to choose, to select, to form an opinion of.

LESSON L.

QUALITY BY OPPOSITES.

When two adjectives of opposite meanings are joined together they form an abstract noun of quality; thus, much-little means quantity, far-near means distance, etc. The same principle is also applied to verbs, as come-go for intercourse, buy-sell for business, etc. The lesson illustrates nearly all the common nouns thus formed. Not all opposites joined together are used in this way. They are often joined for enumeration 22, or for contrast 23,—of which the lesson contains a number of examples.

VOCABULARY.

是非 *Shi⁴ fei¹.* Right-wrong; *moral;* strife; ..... trouble; criticism.

好歹 *Hao³ tai³.* Good-evil; character; sense, ... propriety; *somehow*, any way.

糊弄 *Hu² lung⁴.* To sham, *to stave off;* to make ..... believe; to befool, to cozen.

小米 *Hsiao³ mi³.* ..... Millet, canary seed.

粥 *Chu¹, chou¹.* Soft boiled rice or millet, congee, *gruel.*

熬 *Ao²,¹.* *To cook by boiling;* to simmer, to decoct; to endure, to persist.

稀 *Hsi¹.* Loose, open; thin, scattered; *thin,* ..... fluid; very, fully.

稠 *Ch'ou².* ..... *Thick*, dense; viscid, stiff.

稀稠 Thin-thick, thickness, *consistency*, viscidity.

津 *Chin¹, ching¹.* ..... A ford; saliva; sap.

天津 *T'ien¹ chin¹.* ..... Tientsin.

Digitized by Google

第十五課

人[1]都有個是非之心。○好[2]歹糊弄起來就得是得天[4]好。○我敢信、你[5]若不稱不厚正稀的熬的粥、上海的大。○你[6]能駝得[7]上這個馱子、和你的賭個輸贏。○我在門外聽了一回、一點動靜沒有。○包管來回。○包用回換。○水[9]路和旱路買[8]賣、能差訛這一半。○包[10]你怎麼說話一路和旱路的遠近、都是了。○這[3]個小米粥、煮的熬不的稀稠不厚正好。○還不知尊卑上下、一點輕重緩急、沒有正合式。○他[13]做什麼、一點緊慢沒有。○你[11]這麼大、年紀、還不知道輕重緩急、沒有把兒。○你[14]粗細先

Translation.

1 All men have a moral faculty.
2 Stave the matter off somehow or other, and it will be all right.
3 This millet gruel is cooked to exactly the right consistency.
4 The business of Tientsin is not so great as that of Shanghai.
5 If you don't believe, I am ready to lay a wager with you.
6 How can a donkey carry such a load as this? Have you not tried the weight?
7 I listened a while outside the gate; there was not the least sound [stir].
8 All who buy our goods have the privilege of returning them.
9 The distance by water and by land differs by as much as (just) one half.
10 How is it that you speak without the least judgment?
11 As big as you are, and yet you do not understand the respect due to your seniors!
12 The handle of this ax is exactly the right thickness.
13 He never gets in a hurry in what he does.

輸贏 *Shu*[1]. . . . To overturn; *to lose*, to be defeated. *Ying*[2]. An overplus; profit, gain; to conquer, ... *to win;* to excel.

輸贏 Lose-win; a venture; a chance, *a wager.*

駝 *T'oâ*[2]. . . . . A camel; *to carry*,—as a beast.

馱 *Toâ*[4]. . . . . The load carried by an animal.

掂 *Tien*[1]. To heft in the hand, *to lift and estimate* . . . . . *the weight;* to bob up and down.

輕重 *Ch'ing*[1] *chung*[4]. Light-heavy; *weight;* . . . . . *judgment;* discretion.

動靜 *Tung*[4] *ching*[4]. Motion-rest, motion; stir; . . . . . noise; *sound.*

包管 *Pao*[1] *kwan*[3]. To warrant, to assure, to . . . . . *guarantee.*

來回 *Lai*[2] *hwei*[2]. Go-return; the round trip; . . . . . *return of goods.*

包用 *Pao*[1] *yung*[4]. To guarantee a thing to be . . . . . suitable.

回換 *Hwei*[2] *hwan*[4]. To return, to send back; to . . . . . revert; *to exchange.*

旱 *Han*[4]. . . . . Drought; dry; *land travel.*

遠近 *Yüen*[3] *chin*[4]. . . . . Far-near; *distance.*

訛 *Oâ*[2], *é*[2]. To deceive, to defraud; false, errone- . . . . . ous. *To differ.* (s.)

卑尊 *Pei*[1]. . . . . Base; plebeian; *inferior;* humble.

尊卑 *Tsun*[1] *pei*[1]. High-low, rank, position; *the* . . . . . *respect due to age.*

粗細 *Ts'u*[1] *hsi*[4]. Coarse-fine; size, *thickness;* . . . . . fineness; coarseness.

緊慢 *Chin*[3] *man*[4]. Activity-indolence; *hurry,* . . . . . excitability; for the time being.

探 *T'an*[4]. To feel and search; to explore; to . . . . . sound; *to try;* to spy out, to inquire.

深 *Shên*[1]. *Deep;* profound, abstruse; old, long; . . . . . intense; very, extremely.

淺 *Ch'ien*[3]. *Shallow;* superficial; light,—as a . . . . . color; easy, simple.

深淺 Deep-shallow; *depth.*

大小 *Ta*[4] *hsiao*[3]. Big-little; *size;* capacity; cal- . . . . . ibre, station, *place.*

軟硬 *Jwan*[3] *ying*[4]. Soft-hard; hardness; *stiff-* . . . . . *ness,* rigidity.

Digitized by Google

下去探探水的深淺。○你[15]穿穿這件馬褂子、看看大小怎麼樣。○這[16]管筆軟硬怎麼樣呢。○貨[17]要他會過日子。○長[20]短和標[19]致醜俊○這[18]兩句詩、意思很好、就是平仄不對。○標致醜俊不在乎衣裳、要光聽賣多少錢。○不窄不寬。○中[21]國的冷熱、南北不同。○看[22]他身量寬窄不一樣、的高矮、沒有二十歲、也有十八九了。○損[23]益兩有、若不留心分別、那就不知好歹了。○我[24]看他很是緊、只管看他的大毛病、就是作事不知進退。○人[25]若不能自己的心驕傲、不知自己的大小、必常惹出是非來。

14 Do you go down first and try the depth of the water.
15 Put on this short coat and see how [about its size.
16 How is this pen for stiffness?
17 Goods differ in quality. Do not merely regard the price asked.
18 The sentiment of this couplet is very good, but the tones are not correct.
19 Looks are of no great importance, only so that she is thrifty.
20 The length and thickness are both sufficient, but the width is not sufficient.
21 The temperature of China is not the same in the North and in the South.
22 Judging by the height of his stature, if he is not twenty, he must be eighteen or nineteen.
23 When a man takes no pains to distinguish between loss and gain, he may be said to be without common sense.
24 In my opinion he has one serious fault; viz., he has no idea of prudence in what he does.
25 If a man is proud in mind and without a just estimate of himself, he is sure to be constantly getting into trouble.

低 *Ti*[1]. To lower; to droop; to sink; *low;* be-.....low; humble; common.
高低 *Kao*[1] *ti*[1]. High-low; height; rank; *qual-... ... ...ity;* station.
仄 *Tsê*[4].... Aslant, oblique, inclined, *deflected.*
平仄 *P'ing*[2] *tsê*[4].... ... Level-deflected; *tone.*
醜俊 *Ch'ou*[3] *chün*[4]. Ugly-pretty; beauty, come-...|... ...|.. liness; *looks.*
陋 *Lou*[4].....Low, mean; *ill-favored;* sordid.
醜陋 Ugly, *homely,* unsightly, repulsive.
長短 *Ch'ang*[2] *twan*[3]..... Long-short; *length.*
厚薄 *Hou*[4] *po*[2]..... Thick-thin; *thickness.*
枵厚 *Hsiao*[1] *hou*[4]..... Thin-thick; *thickness.*
寬窄 *K'wan*[1] *chai*[3]. Wide-narrow; *width,* am-... ... ... plitude, breadth.
冷熱 *Lêng*[3] *jê*[4].... ... Cold-hot; *temperature.*
高矮 *Kao*[1] *ai*[3].... ... High-low; *height,* size.
損 *Sun*[3]. To diminish; to abridge; to wound; to ... ... spoil; to injure; *loss;* damage.
分別 *Fên*[1] *pie*[2]..... To separate, to distinguish.
退 *T'wei*[4]. To draw back, *to retreat;* to back out, ... to refuse; to excuse; to yield.
進退 *Chin*[4] *t'wei*[4]. Advance-retreat; *prudence;* ... ...judgment.
居 *Chü*[1]. To live in, to reside; *to remain in a* ... ... *condition;* dwelling.
居心 *Chü*[1] *hsin*[1]. To have or maintain a cer-... ... ...tain state of mind.

NOTES.

1 之 takes the place of 的, because 是非之心 is a book construction.

2 It is a question whether 好歹, as here used, illustrates the subject of the lesson. The sentence, however, illustrates an important principle of Chinese polity.

3 Though the two forms are somewhat different, the idea expressed is the same. The first, or right hand form, might be rendered more literally, *The consistence to which this millet is cooked is just right;* and the second, *This millet gruel is so cooked that it is neither too thin nor too thick, but just right.* This method of using two negatives with words of opposite qualities, is a common way of expressing that a thing is medium, or just right.

Digitized by Google

第十五課

就 結 堅 說 眼[6] 我[5] 艱 眼 書、 應[1]
是 實 固。 話。 看 願 難、 淚、 怎 當
後 了。 ○ ○ 兩 意 最 把 麼 愛
悔、 ○ 找[8] 他[7] 週 生 憐 能 衣 會 惜
也 女[9] 鎚 的 歲 日 憫 磨 裳 寫 光
不 兒 子 主 的 誰、 煉 都 字 陰。
能 已 來 意、 孩 就 人 濕 呢。 ○
更 經 打 砸 一 子、 憐 的 了。 ○ 你[2]
改。 過 一一 點 還 憫 心 ○ 他[3] 沒
○ 了 打 砸、 也 不 誰。 性。 困[4] 哭 有
這[10] 門、 就 不 會 ○ ○ 苦、 的 念

Translation.

1 You ought to improve your time.
2 If you have never been to school, how can you write?
3 The tears he wept wet all his clothes.
4 Poverty and hardship are very effective in disciplining a man's character.
5 Whom I wish to have mercy on, I will have mercy on.
6 A child almost two years old, and yet not able to talk!
7 His resolution is not at all stable.
8 Get a hammer and pound it and it will be firm.
9 When a girl is once married, there is no undoing it, even if she does repent.
10 Verily, it is fatiguing to travel in this hot season.

4 天津. The proper and general pronunciation of 津 is *chin*[1], but in this name the general custom in Chili is to pronounce it *ching*[1].

6 The original reading of 馱 was t'uŏ, and its meaning, *to carry a burden*; but it is now rarely used in this sense, being superceded by 駝. It is generally read and used as given in the vocabulary,

8 包管來回 is a set form for expressing the idea that goods are sold with the privilege of returning them, if not satisfactory. The expression 包用回換 is Southern, and means to guarantee the exchange of an article unsuitable in size.

9 能 and 正 give a different sense. 能 implies a sort of estimate or opinion of the speaker, approximately expressed by the phrase *as much as*; while 正 fixes it at *just* this amount.

11 Not to know, in this case, implies censure. The 上下 repeats the idea of 尊卑, and is added both for emphasis and for rhythm.

13 一點緊慢沒有, *He has not the least fast or slow*; that is, he neither can nor will hurry.

18 Tones are divided into two classes, called 平 and 仄. The former includes the 上平聲 and 下平聲, that is the two *level* tones; and the latter, the 上聲, 去聲 and 入聲, that is the three deflected tones. The rules of Chinese versification require that level tones should be rhymed together, and deflected tones together.

19 會過日子 is a very expressive phrase. It includes the ability, diligence and thrift which make the most of every thing.

LESSON LI.

Definitive Combinations.

Chinese being a monosyllabic language, and the number of syllables limited, the consequent repetition of the same syllable renders it absolutely necessary that some means should be adopted to distinguish the different meanings of the same syllable. This is done to the eye in writing, by the different composition of the characters, analogous to different spellings in English, as *here* and *hear*. In speech it is done by combining with the given syllable another defining syllable or word, this combination forming, practically, a dissyllabic word.

There are three principal classes of these combinations.

First.—A word of similar meaning is added, so that each serves to distinguish the other. This device is used, with verbs,—as in 看見; with nouns,—as in 規矩; and with adjectives,—as in 明白.

Second.—The object is added to the verb where it would not otherwise be needed, and where other languages would regard it as redundant,—as in 說話, 吃飯, etc.

Third.—A defining word is prefixed,—as in 頭髮. English has a somewhat similar use in a few words,—as in *eyebrow*, *wheel-barrow*.

Illustrations of all these classes have occurred in previous lessons, as it was impossible to avoid such constantly recurring forms. This lesson has been deferred to this place that the student might be better able to understand and appreciate its principles. The constant use of these combinations in Mandarin forms one of the prime distinctions between it and Wen-li.

Digitized by Google

他呢。實說給覺、酒、蜜章、伏
一○在壞他這還的、一天
點你[18]少話、聽是不要點走
兒。知教我就個能八次路、
○道訓、很是大喫十序實
外[19]頭他你厭了。事。飯嗎。個錢沒有。在辛
常怎惡○○嗎。錢有。辛
天陰生麼他。李[16]不[15]○一○苦。
陰天、氣、這○老用他[14]夜黑夜○上街[12]○
有要樣你[17]八寫夜裏你[13]有書[11]內
月緊輕這常信。不不倆雜
亮要薄個常我能能賣亂
也躲先東給述說睡喫喝蜂無
看避生西、人

11 The book is all in confusion; there is not the least order in it.
12 There is a man on the street selling honey. He asks eighty cash per catty.
13 If you can not drink wine, can you not eat?
14 His not being able to sleep at night is a serious matter.
15 It is not necessary to write a letter. I will tell it over to him which will answer every purpose.
16 Li the Eighth is continually slandering people. I thoroughly detest him.
17 You scape-grace! You are certainly ill-bred. How is it that you are so disrespectful to your teacher?
18 Knowing that he is given to getting angry you should by all means keep out of his way.
19 It is cloudy out of doors; you can not see, even with the moon.

VOCABULARY.

愛惜 *Ai⁴ hsi¹*. To love fondly; to spare; to ..... begrudge; *to improve* time.
光陰 *Kwang¹ yin¹*..... Time.
困 *K'un⁴*. Exhausted, wearied; distressed; *needy;* ..... to go to sleep; to besiege; to enslave.
困苦 *K'un⁴ k'u³*..... *Poverty;* trouble.
艱 *Chien¹*..... Difficult; distressing; *hardship.*
難 *Nan⁴*. *Difficulty;* embarrassment, adversity, ... suffering. See *nan²*.
艱難 Difficulty, straits, trials, *hardship.*
磨煉 *Moŏ² lien⁴*. *To discipline;* to train; to refine; to learn by experience.
性 *Hsing⁴*. Nature, *disposition*, spirit; property, ... quality; faculty.
心性 *Hsin¹ hsing⁴*. Natural temper; *character*, ... disposition.
憐 *Lien²*..... *To pity*, to commiserate.
憫 *Min³*..... To mourn for; *to pity.*
憐憫 To pity; *to have mercy on;* to commiserate.
週 *Chou¹*..... To revolve, to turn round; *a year.*
週歲 *Chou¹ swei⁴*..... A full year.
堅 *Chien¹*. *Stable*, firm, strong; durable, lasting; ..... resolute, constant.
固 *Ku⁴*. Secure; constant; pertinacious; *fixed;* ..... assuredly.
堅固 *Firm, stable*, immovable, fixed.
鎚 *Ch'wei²*..... *A hammer;* a mallet; a club.
砸 *Tsa²*. *To pound;* to knock; to crush; to shiver to pieces.
過門 *Kwoŏ⁴ mên²*. To get married (of the woman).
後悔 *Hou⁴ hwei³*. To be sorry for, to repent; to ..... change the mind.
更 *Kêng¹*. To change, to alter; to repair, *to amend.* Also *kêng⁴*, and *ching¹*.
更改 *Kêng¹ kai³*. To alter, to change; to amend; ..... *to undo.*
辛 *Hsin¹*..... Bitter, *toilsome;* grievous.
辛苦 *Hsin¹ k'u³*. Toil, weariness, *fatigue*,—especially that of a journey.
內 *Nei⁴*. Inner, *internal*, interior; *in;* inclusive; ..... among; a wife.
次 *Ts'ŭ⁴*..... Second, inferior; *order;* a time.
序 *Hsü⁴*..... *Order*, precedence, a preface.
次序 *Regular order*, order of precedence.
蜂 *Fêng¹*..... *A bee;* a hornet, a wasp, etc.
蜜 *Mi⁴*..... *Honey;* nectar; honeyed.
蜂蜜 Honey.
述 *Shu⁴*..... To narrate; *to tell in order.*
述說 *Shu⁴ shwoŏ¹*. To tell over in order, to ..... rehearse.
惡 *Wu⁴*... To hate, *to dislike;* averse to. See *oŏ⁴* [and *ê³*.
厭惡 *Yien⁴ wu⁴*..... *To detest*, to abominate.
訓 *Hsün⁴*..... To instruct; *instruction*, precepts.

Digitized by Google

知不覺就快樂、若有悲傷。

覺就悲傷。

就樂、有歡喜的事、不知不覺。

樂、有悲傷的事、不知不覺。

有悲傷的事、不知不覺。

事。强、心心了。見惡狠温不
○一的○面、毒毒柔見。
個形人[22]他事和○
若[24]有柔軟像。的的來平、看[20]
有柔軟弱、○言頭呢。那這
歡弱、他[23]語髮○能人
喜不們行和不[21]眉眼過做的
的能一倆、爲、眉眼過出外
事、一塊一就毛眉三這貌、眞
不塊兒個是都年樣的是
知兒辦剛人內白沒的

20 Judging from this man's appearance he is eminently kind and peaceable. How could he do so cruel a thing as this?

21 It is not over three years that I have not seen him, and his hair and eyebrows are all white.

22 A man's words and deeds are the counterpart of his mind.

23 They two,—the one firm and the other yielding, can not do business together.

24 When one has cause for rejoicing he unconsciously becomes joyful, and when he has cause for sorrow he unconsciously becomes sad.

教訓 *Chiao⁴ hsün⁴.* To teach, *to instruct* (with authority), to discipline.

輕薄 *Ch'ing¹ poâ².* *To treat disrespectfully*, to condemn, to slight.

躲避 *Toâ³ pi⁴.* To avoid, *to keep out of the way of*, to shun; to flee from.

月亮 *Yüe⁴ liang⁴.* The moon.

狠 *Hên³.* *Cruel*, harsh; intractable.

狠毒 *Hên³ tu².* *Cruel*, relentless; savage.

惡毒 *Oâ⁴ tu².* *Cruel*, savage, brutal

眉 *Mei².* The eyebrows.

眼眉 *Yien³ mei².* The eyebrows. (L).

眉毛 *Mei² mao².* The eyebrows.

形像 *Hsing² hsiang⁴.* Likeness; image; *counterpart*, figure.

剛 *Kang¹.* Hard, *unyielding;* intrepid; sharp (music); recently, just now; Les. 65.

剛强 *Kang¹ ch'iang².* *Firm*, resolute; headstrong; violent.

弱 *Joâ⁴, jao⁴.* Weak, feeble; pliable, *yielding;* decayed.

軟弱 *Jwan³ joâ⁴.* Weak, yielding; infirm; delicate; debilitated.

柔弱 *Jou² joâ⁴.* *Pliable;* tender; delicate.

快樂 *K'wai⁴ loâ⁴.* Glad, *joyful*, happy.

悽 *Ch'i¹.* Grieved, *sad*; vexed.

慘 *Ts'an³.* Hard-hearted, cruel; *wounded in mind;* miserable.

悽慘 *Sorrowful*, sad; grieved; melancholy.

悲 *Pei¹.* To feel for; *grieved*, sorrowful.

傷 *Shang¹.* To injure, to wound; to distress, *to grieve*, mortified.

悲傷 Distressed in mind, sorrowful, *sad.*

Notes.

2 Or, *You have never been to school; how can you write?*

11 雜亂無章 is a book phrase meaning *without order or method; in confusion.* Adding a word of opposite meaning with a negative, is a common rhetorical device of Chinese style.

12 蜂蜜 is honey, but 蜜蜂 is a honey bee.

13 When one has declined wine, this language is used by way of insisting on his eating the more.

15 "*Which will answer every purpose,*" is an approximate paraphrase of 就是了.

16 給人說壞話 *To disseminate evil reports about a man, or to speak evil of a man privately, so as to do him an injury.*

17 少教訓 expresses the idea that the boy has not been properly taught by his parents or teachers, and also that he has not profited by his teaching; hence it means *ill-bred, unmannerly.* 訓 is sometimes omitted and 少教 used alone. 少調教 is also used in some places. The tone of 教 is in violation of the distinction of tones usually made. See *chiao¹* and *chiao⁴*. My Peking teacher says in explanation that simply *to teach* is *chiao¹* but that *to teach with authority* is *chiao⁴*.

19 Judging by analogy from 日頭, we would expect to find 月頭 instead of 月亮—which however is never used; again, judging by analogy from such words as 眼淚, we would expect 月亮 to mean moonlight, while in fact it simply means the moon. It illustrates the principle of the lesson, but not any of the three classes specified.

22 內 is doubtless added to 心 in order more clearly to distinguish it from 身, the body, which in many places has the same sound as 心.

Digitized by Google

第二十五課

老婆子、王婆婆。
他善會挑唆人、打架。
他[13]要多帶東西、路上光是[16]事不人人[15]人、
人、不能讓他[13]要多帶東西、路上光是[16]事不人人[15]人、
他[1]騙人是好手。
他[2]這正是吾[3]不[4]人[5]話。
[6]我支吾[7]這個大胖子、[8]打[9]他糊弄[10]死[11]那[12]學[14]不着。

Translation.

1 He is an adept at swindling.
2 This language is purely evasive.
3 He can not wrong any one.
4 You should not injure others to benefit yourself.
5 Are you not thus purposely stirring up anger?
6 I am incapable of doing anything to befool people.
7 This great fat baby is truly captivating.
8 When you strike, strike hard; and when you help, help effectively.
9 These brothers are constantly insulting people.
10 If you are not respectful at home, you will not be respected abroad.
11 He is simply deceiving you, there is not a shadow of such a thing.
12 What good is there in learning to worry people?
13 We can not allow him to impose upon us in this way.
14 Do not take along many things, they are only an incumbrance on the road.
15 The old woman Wang is very clever at stirring up a fight.

LESSON LII.

人 as a Personal Suffix.

The word 人 is added to verbs to generalize them. It may sometimes be rendered *people*, or *a man*, but is generally untranslated; or rather, its force is comprehended in words which express the idea of the verb and it combined. When a contrast is expressed or implied, it is equivalent to *others*. When joined to verbs expressing emotions, they become causative; as 氣人, in (5,) and 希罕人, in (7.) Sometimes both uses are found in the same word,—as 恨人, in (27,) and in (28.) This use of 人 is very extensive. It may in fact, if occasion require, be added to almost any transitive verb.

Vocabulary.

騙 *P'ien*[4]. To take advantage; to cheat; *to swindle;* to defraud; to straddle.

好手 *Hao*[3] *shou*[3]. Skilled in any art; an expert, *an adept.*

吾 *Wu*[2]. I, my (w.); to excuse; *to delay.*

支吾 *Chi*[1] *wu*[2]. *To evade;* to make excuses; to prevaricate.

糊倒 *Hu*[2] *tao*[3]. *To make all sorts of excuses;* to tergiversate.

虧負 *K'wei*[1] *fu*[4]. To be deficient; *to wrong,* to defraud.

利己 *Li*[4] *chi*[3]. To benefit oneself, to act selfishly.

特 *T'ê*[4]. A mate; single; special; *purposely;* specific:—Les. 159.

特意 *T'ê*[4] *i*[4]. *On purpose;* specially.

難爲 *Nan*[2] *wei*[2]. To harrass; *to worry,* to annoy; to maltreat; difficult.

好處 *Hao*[3] *ch'u*[4]. *Good,* benefit, advantage:—Les. 98.

詡 *Hsiung*[1]. To scold, to abuse, *to browbeat;* trouble, calamity.

累 *Lei*[4]. To involve, to implicate; *to trouble; to encumber;* to embarrass. Also *lei*[3].

纏磨 *Ch'an*[2] *mo*[2]. *To pester,* to tease.

Digitized by Google

怕人沒好事。○你[17]這個纏磨人的毛病、眞討人嫌。○[18]碰攤着那樣無用的老婆、你說愁人不愁人呢。○你[19]輕看人、人還能重看你嗎。○他[20]看[21]他那個要笑人的脾氣、到老也不能改。○沒[22]有體貼人的心、那能作出照應人的事來呢。○這[23]種藥不可多喫、多喫能殺傷人。○恭[24]敬人、是交朋友頂要緊的道理。○我[25]懶怠去見他、他光是吹呼榜人、和人沒來往。○[26]他牢籠人的法子、百發百中。○[27]哄人是最容易犯的兩樣毛病。○[28]從

16 Virtue does not fear the light; that which fears the light is not virtuous.
17 This habit you have of pestering people is exceedingly offensive.
18 But doesn't it worry a man to have such a worthless wife as that fall to his lot?
19 When you look down upon others, will others esteem you?
20 That disposition he has to make fun of people, he will not amend as long as he lives.
21 It is really pitiable to see him suffering so from the cold.
22 How can one show kindness to others when he has no feeling of sympathy for them?
23 This kind of medicine should not be taken in large doses; if taken in large doses it is injurious (poisonous).
24 The most important principle in our intercourse with friends is to be courteous.
25 I am loth to go to see him; he is given to storming at people.
26 His methods of entrapping people are invariably successful.

輕看 *Ch'ing¹ k'an⁴.* To look down upon, to despise, to esteem lightly.

重看 *Chung⁴ k'an⁴.* To have regard to, *to esteem.*

耍笑 *Shwa³ hsiao⁴.* To ridicule, *to make fun of;* to hoax.

脾 *P'i²*..... The spleen; digestion; *disposition.*

脾氣 *P'i² ch'i⁴. Disposition,* temperament, idiosyncrasy, peculiarity.

可憐 *K'ê³ lien²*.....To pity, to have mercy on.

應 *Ying⁴.* A response; an echo; to fulfil, *to respond;* to promise: See *ying¹.*

照應 *Chao⁴ ying⁴.* To protect; to care for; *to show kindness;* to entertain.

能彀 *Nêng² kou⁴*..... *Can;* able to.

恭 *Kung¹.* To treat with veneration; to revere; *to show respect;* decorous, reverent.

恭敬 *Kung¹ ching⁴. To show respect,* to reverence, to honor.

怠 *Tai⁴*..... Rude, idle; *lazy;* remiss.

懶怠 *Lan³ tai⁴*..... Disinclined, loth.

呼 *Hu¹.* An expiration; to call out to; *to speak to;* to invoke; to cry aloud.

吹呼 *Ch'wei¹ hu¹.* To talk loud, *to storm at,* to blow up.

榜 *Ch'êng¹*..... To rebuff; to insult; *to scold.*

牢籠 *Lao² lung².* *To entrap;* to dupe; to impose upon; to victimize.

恨 *Hên⁴. To hate,* to dislike; to be indignant; spite; vexed, sorry.

犯 *Fan⁴.* To offend; *to transgress,* to violate; to be exposed; to assault; an accused criminal; worth while:—Les 91.

躁 *Tsao⁴.* Hasty, flurried; nervous, irascible; damp, muggy.

急躁 *Chi² tsao⁴. Worried;* irritable; out of patience.

歇息 *Hsie¹ hsi²*..... *To rest;* to stop.

催 *Ts'wei¹*..... *To urge,* to press; to importune.

量 *Liang².* To measure; to estimate, to consider; the quantity or size of; *to think over.* See *liang⁴.*

體量 *T'i³ liang².* *To feel for,* to sympathize with.

巫 *Wu¹*..... *A sorceress,* a witch, a medium.

Digitized by Google

見這樣累人的孩子、一時也不下手懷、眞是恨人。○問[29]了半天、也沒問出一句話來、實在急躁人。○來[30]家還沒歇息過來、你就又催他走、怎麼這麼不體量人呢。○古[32]語說、善門難開、善門難閉、你看賙濟人是個容易事嗎。○人[33]若有了作賊的名聲、不但自己本家丟人、就是親友、也都跟着丟人。○我[34]們從外國乍來的時候、一句話也不會說、實在急悶人人。

27 To deceive and to hate are two faults very easily committed.

28 I have never seen such a troublesome child; it will not leave one's arms for a moment. Truly it is vexatious.

29 I am out of all patience; after questioning him for half a day I have found out nothing.

30 He has just got home and is not yet rested, and you forthwith urge him to go again? Why are you so inconsiderate?

31 His wife is a sorceress and well versed in the art of deceiving.

32 The old saying is: The door of charity is difficult to open, and equally difficult to shut. Do you think relieving the poor is an easy thing?

33 When a man has the reputation of being a thief, not only is his own family disgraced, but his relations and friends are involved in the disgrace.

34 When we first arrive from the foreign country we can not speak a single word, which is very embarrassing.

巫婆 *Wu*[1] *p'oa*[2]..... *A sorceress*, a witch.
愚 *Yü*[1,2]. Simple, stupid, rustic; used in letters .....for the pronoun I; *to cheat*, to befool.
愚弄 *Yü*[2] *lung*[4]..... *To deceive*, to befool.
惑弄 *Hwoa*[4] *lung*[4]..... To beguile, to befool.
古 *Ku*[3]..... Ancient, *old;* of old; antiquity.
古語 *Ku*[3] *yü*[3]..... *An old saying;* a tradition.
賙 *Chou*[1]..... To give alms.
賙濟 *Chou*[1] *chi*[4]. To give alms, to relieve the .....poor.
名聲 *Ming*[2] *shêng*[1]..... *Reputation;* fame.
本家 *Pên*[3] *chia*[1]. Original home; native place; ..... *own family.*
丟人 *Tiu*[1] *jên*[2]. To disgrace oneself, to be put ..... to shame.

NOTES.

4 損人利己 is a neat and expressive book phrase, often heard in colloquial. The 損人 carries with it a telic force, so that the proper connection is not *and*, but *in order that*. When 人 is correlated with 己, it always means *others*.

5 這 here refers to whatever the person in question had been doing or saying. 氣, which is usually a noun, is here used as a verb and, as expressing an emotion, is used causatively.

6 The inability here is such as depends on moral causes.

8 Approximately equal to *what is worth doing at all is worth doing well*. Note the force of 個.

9 他, being in apposition with 弟兄們, is plural. The 們 may be said to be added to both words at once.

15 In 老王婆子, the 老 is placed first to emphasize it. When 善 is used in the sense of *skilful*, it is nearly always followed by 會.

18 老婆 is here used somewhat depreciatingly for *wife*. Marriage is regarded as a lottery, as is intimated in the use of the word 攤. The Chinese has a touch of grim humor which the translation does not bring out.

23 能穀 is quite *t'ung-hsing*, but is much more used in Northern than in Central and Southern Mandarin.

26 百發百中 *In a hundred arrows, a hundred hit the centre*,—a ready-made Wen-li phrase, expressing with equal elegance and force the idea of *invariably*.

28 下 is used as a verb. 下手 does not form a phrase as it usually does. 恨 is used causatively and conveys very strongly the idea of *vexation*.

31 A 巫婆 is a sorceress who, by burning incense, making motions and repeating prayers and incantations, induces her patron divinity to visit her and give the assistance or information which she desires.

32 The difficulty in beginning charity is that the clamors of the beneficiaries will not allow one to stop. These clamors, if not responded to, easily pass into violence.

33 In this sentence, which is from the Sacred Edict, 親友 is Wen-li rather than Mandarin. For Mandarin it should be expanded into 親戚, 朋友.

Digitized by Google

第五十三課

我[1]被你害苦了。○我[2]的腿教叫狗咬了。○
太[3]陽被雲彩遮了。○好[4]人常被壞人蹧○
他[5]被叫我說的閉口無言。○劉[6]先生慣
我說罪了。○兩[7]個孩子、都被你砸折了。
得他[8]聽不動刀的、必被刀所殺。○他[10]叫我
我叫踢。○我的凡[9]動刀說姜瓦匠的腿、教石頭砸
被叫踢。○我的凡[9]動刀說姜瓦匠的腿、教石頭砸
了。被叫踢。○我的凡[9]動刀說姜瓦匠的腿、教石頭砸

的李[13]笑。罵○了。被叫踢。太[3]我[1]被
銀大○的凡[9]○我○陽被
子、有好[12]不動聽[8]得他[5]被叫你
被輸好輕。刀的、必說罪了。我彩遮了。
強了一○的、姜瓦○說的了。○我[2]的
盜官部書、不[11]要被匠的兩[7]個閉口好[4]人腿教叫
槍去、功名也叫話、免○石都無言。常被狗咬
心裏很被蟲子得他[10]頭被你慣壞了。
憂革了。蛀咬被叫砸折先人蹧○
愁。了。人我辱了。壞生
○○我[15]他[14]○嗤

Tra

1 I have been gr
2 My leg has be
3 The sun is hid
4 Good men are
by the wick
5 I reproved hi
6 Liu Hsien Shê
(or, I offend
7 Both children
you.
8 I hear that (
has been br
9 Every one tha
be killed by
10 He was roundl
11 Do not talk l
avoid being
12 What a pity
should be w
13 Li Ta Yu lost
was also tak
14 He was very
his silver wa

LESSON LIII.

Passive Forms.

被, to suffer,—is used to form the passive, and is the regular and proper passive form of the language. In the North its use is largely confined to the more stately language of books and of literary men. In the South it is much more extensively used, being the ordinary form used on all occasions.

教, to teach, or 叫, to call,—is also used to form the passive, and, in the North, is the generally used colloquial form. It is only occasionally used in the South. Peking teachers generally use 叫, while Shantung teachers prefer 教. In purely Chinese Mandarin books the two characters seem to be used indiscriminately.

教 is the older, and 叫 the more modern form.

Vocabulary.

被 *Pei*[4]. A bed quilt or comforter; to suffer; ..... by, from; sign of passive:—see Sub.

雲 *Yün*[2]..... *Clouds*, fog; shaded; numerous.

彩 *Ts'ai*[3].... *Variegated*, colored; beautiful, gay.

雲彩 A cloud.

遮 *Chê*[1]. To screen; to shade; *to hide*, to intercept; to protect.

慣 *Kwan*[4]. Habitual, accustomed to; addicted ..... to; inured to; *to indulge*.

辱 *Ju*[4,2]. To insult; to dishonor; *to rail at;* to ..... outrage, to debauch.

辱罵 *Ju*[4] *ma*[4]..... To rail at, *to berate*.

嗤 *Ch'i*[1]..... To laugh; to laugh at.

嗤笑 *Ch'i*[1] *hsiao*[4]. To laugh at; *to ridicule;* to ..... sneer at.

蛀 *Chu*[4]. Insects that eat books or furs; *to eat as ..... these insects do.* (L.)

官司 *Kwan*[1] *si*[1].... *A lawsuit*, a case in court.

革 *Kê*[2]. Skin, hide; armor; to change; to de- .....grade from office; *to strike off*.

憂愁 *Yiu*[1] *ch'ou*[2]..... *Grieved*, sorry, sad.

Digitized by Google

的袍子、被火燒了一個大窟洞窿。○醋[16]瓶不知叫誰打碎了。○王[17]老四眞有本事、你們都被他哄了。○人[19]善被人欺、馬可惜[18]你聽他的話、教他耽誤了。○善被人騎。○若[20]不被人挑唆、他不能這樣生氣。○他[22]叫我打了一拳、我等叫他踢了一脚。○若[23]以後教人間起王[21]長通那個酒徒、已經被衙役捉拿去了。○在[24]這裏有一本聖書、我們有甚麼話回答呢。○多日沒見、必是叫誰拿去了。○所告的人、叫作被告。○皂[26]班的王頭、私下訛詐原告、二十吊錢、現在被人揭告了。○不[27]知誰家的狗、進

15 A large hole (or, cave) was burned in my gown by the fire.
16 I wonder by whom the vinegar bottle was broken.
17 Truly Wang the Fourth is sharp; you were all deceived by him.
18 It is a pity you listened to his advice, and thus were hindered by him.
19 When a man is good he is imposed upon, and when a horse is good he is ridden.
20 If he had not been stirred up by some one, he would not have gotten so angry as this.
21 That drunkard Wang Chang T'ung has already been arrested by the constables.
22 I struck him a blow, and he gave me [a kick.
23 If hereafter we are questioned by any one, what have we to say?
24 There was a Bible here, but I have not seen it for a long time; it must be that some one has taken it away.
25 The man who brings suit is called the plaintiff, and the man against whom suit is brought is called the defendant.
26 Wang, one of the head lictors, illicitly extorted twenty thousand cash, and is now being prosecuted for it.
27 A dog whose owner I do not know,

袍 *P'ao²*. . . . . A long dress coat.
窟 *K'u¹*. . . . . A cellar, *a hole* in the ground.
窿 *Lung²*. . . . . A cavity, an orifice.
窟窿 An orifice, a hole.
洞 *Tung⁴*. A cave, a dell; a gorge; a cavity, *a hole;* to see through.
醋 *Ts'u⁴*. . . . . Vinegar, pickle.
徒 *T'u²*. A follower, a disciple; a retainer; *a low fellow;* empty; futile, in vain.
酒徒 *Chiu³ t'u²*. . . . . A drunken fellow.
衙 *Ya²*. . . . . *A court-house*, a tribunal; an office.
役 *I⁴*. To minister to, to serve; *underlings*, policemen.
衙役 Official attendants; underlings in a yamên, *constables.*
捉 *Cho¹*. . . . . To seize; *to arrest;* to catch;
回答 *Hwei² ta²*. . . . . *To answer*, to respond.
聖 *Shêng⁴*. Intuitively wise and good, *holy, sacred;* sage, wise.
聖書 *Shêng⁴ shu¹*. The Holy Scriptures, the Bible.
原 *Yüen²*. A plateau; *origin*, beginning; natural; originally, really:—Les. 126.
原告 *Yüen² kao⁴*. . . . . The plaintiff.
被告 *Pei⁴ kao⁴*. . . . . The defendant.
皂班 *Tsao⁴ pan¹*. . . . . Policemen; *lictors.*
私下 *Sï¹ hsia⁴*. . . . . Private, *illicit*, clandestine.
訛詐 *Oû² cha³*. To accuse falsely; to extort, to squeeze.
揭 *Chie¹*. To lift up,—as a cover, to raise up; to bring to mind; to state to superiors.
揭告 *Chie¹ kao⁴*. To reveal and accuse, to charge, *to prosecute.*
偷嘴 *T'ou¹ tswei³*. . . . . To steal food.
棍 *Kun⁴*. . . . . *A stick;* a club; a knave.
索 *Soû³*. . . . A cord, a *rope*. Also *soa²* and *soa⁴*.

Digitized by Google

來偷嘴、教我打
了一棍子、[28]趕出
去了。○劉
眞明明教
的是實話、對
明是謊話。他
白說還
[29]疑頭
了、富
去了。一
了一回被
了一回蛇
了一回咬
黑了、
第一惑
索、
也
是
害
怕
的。

came in to steal something to eat, when I struck him a blow with a stick and drove him out.

28 Liu Kwoă Fu has been deceived until he is over suspicious. Even when you tell him the plain truth he suspects it is a lie.

29 He who is once bitten by a serpent, is startled the next time at the sight of a black rope.

Notes.

7 慣壞 To spoil by indulging in the practice of vicious habits.

12 蛀 is more or less *wên*, **咬** being largely used in the same sense.

15 洞 as here used is exclusively Southern. It is used in the North of a rat hole, or of any hole or cavity in a solid, which is used to contain or secrete something, but not of a hole which perforates.

19 A common saying made humorous by a play on the words **欺** and **騎**, which have the same sound, differing only in tone.

22 The active form gives the sense accurately and briefly. The sentence may be translated passively thus: *He was struck a blow by me, and I was struck a kick by him.*

26 皂班 is one of the divisions or classes of underlings in a *yamên* whose business it is to act as lictors or executioners. The classes are usually divided into sections, each having a head. These headmen are distinguished by their surnames. Hence **王頭** is that one of the headmen of the lictors whose name is Wang.

27 偷嘴 *to steal a mouth;* i.e., *to steal something to put in the mouth.*

28 哄怕了 applied to one who from being repeatedly deceived, becomes excessively suspicious.

LESSON LIV.

The Instrumental Verbs 使 and 用.

使 and **用** are both in common use as instrumental verbs. They may sometimes be translated as verbs, but are generally best rendered by an instrumental preposition. In most cases the sense is quite the same whether **使** or **用** be used, though there is often a choice in regard to rhythm; also in certain phrases or connections one is used and not the other. In Southern Mandarin **用** is used almost exclusively, **使** being rarely heard.

Vocabulary.

枟 *Hsien*[1]. . . . A pole; *a wooden shovel*, a shovel.

雪 *Hsue*[3]. . . . . *Snow;* snowy; to whiten.

撮 *Ts'oă*[1,4]. To take with the fingers; to gather . . . . . up, *to scrape up;* to manipulate; to make a resumé; a pinch; a handful.

碗 *Wan*[3]. . . . . A deep dish, a bowl.

舀 *Yao*[3]. . . . . To bale out; *to dip up or out.*

裁 *Ts'ai*[2]. *To cut out garments;* to cut, to trim; . . . . . to diminish; to regulate, to plan.

縫 *Fêng.*[2] . . . . . *To sew*, to stitch. Also *fêng*[4].

裁縫 A tailor.

鐵裁縫 *T'ie*[3] *ts'ai*[2] *fêng*[2]. A sewing machine. . . . . .

文章 *Wên*[2] *chang*[1]. . . . . A literary essay.

調 *Tiao*[4]. A tune; rhythm, *style;* to transfer, to . . . . . move:—See *t'iao*[2].

鉸 *Chiao*[3]. . . . . A pivot, to shear, *to cut off.*

摩 *Moă*[1]. *To stroke with the hand;* to handle; to . . . . . feel for. Also *moă*[2].

掌 *Soă*[1], *sa*[1]. . . . . To rub in the hand.

摩掌 *To stroke affectionately;* to toy with.

搓 *Ts'oă*[1]. *To rub between the hands*, to twist; to . . . . . scrub by rubbing.

摩搓 *Moă*[1] *ts'oă*[1]. *To stroke with the hand*, to . . . . . fondle, to toy with. (s.)

鉋 *Pao*[4]. . . . . *A plane; to plane*, to level off.

推鉋 *T'wei*[1] *pao*[4]. . . . . A carpenter's plane.

Digitized by Google

第五十四課

鉛呢。子、○說。用這包○可[1]
字○就寫[10]○慣裏、起西[3]以
活這[13]用信你[9]了沒來。國用使
板塊手給若這有○做木
印板摩摩先再個石洗[5]針枕、
的、不搓掌生、用調頭臉線、把
你平、他必左兒。砌有用這
看用的該手○牆、愛鐵些
清鉋推頭。用使他[8]都用使裁雪
楚子鉋○張剪是是熱縫鄧撮
不給捨[12]講體子、用用水的出
清我不究面我電土的、多。去。
楚鉋推得紙。就線打有○○
呢。鉋推。使○給打牆。愛請[4]用[2]
○○好王[11]你的○用使你個
若[15]這[14]筆、老剪鉸信、我[7]冷涼把碗
是本怎爺下不做水水這留
胰書能歡個能文的。些一
子就寫喜指樣章、○藥、點
刷是好這頭樣就我[6]用水
不用字孩來。細是們紙來。

TRANSLATION.

1 Take the wooden shovel and clear away this snow.
2 Take a bowl and dip up some water.
3 In western countries most people do their sewing on sewing machines.
4 Please take some paper and wrap up these medicines.
5 For washing the face some like to use hot water, and some like to use cold.
6 We have no stones here for building walls; all our walls are made of pounded earth.
7 In writing essays, I have become habituated to this style.
8 He sent word by telegraph, and could not go into particulars.
9 If you use the scissors with your left hand again, I will cut off one of your fingers.
10 When you write to your teacher, you should use a sheet of nice paper.
11 Wang Lao-yie was pleased with the child and stroked its head with his hand.
12 When you are too stingy to use a good pen, how can you do good writing?
13 This board is not level (even); take a plane and plane it for me.
14 This book was printed with movable lead type. See how distinct it is.
15 If it will not brush clean with soap, then try a little acid on it.

活板 *Hwoă*[2] *pan*[3]. A form or page of movable ..... type, movable type.
强水 *Ch'iang*[2] *shwei*[3]..... Mineral acids.
試 *Shï*[4]. *To try;* to experiment; to test; to ..... tempt; to examine; trained.
本地 *Pĕn*[3] *ti*[4]..... *Native;* this place.
紅花 *Hung*[2] *hwa*[1]..... The safflower.
染 *Jan*[3]. *To dye;* to taint; to infect; to catch a ..... disease; to soil; to imbue; to vitiate.
品紅 *P'in*[3] *hung*[2]..... Aniline red.
風爐 *Fĕng*[1] *lu*[2]..... A small earthen furnace.
糞 *Fèn*[4].... Ordure, dung; *manure;* vile, refuse.
膠 *Chiao*[1]. *Glue;* gum; *to glue;* sticky; obsti- .....nate; stupid.
粘 *Chan*[1], *nien*[2]..... To paste, to stick, *to glue.*
天文鏡 *T'ien*[1] *wĕn*[2] *ching*[4]..... A telescope.
星 *Hsing*[1].....A star, *a planet;* a spark; a dot.
土星 *T'u*[3] *hsing*[1]..... The planet Saturn.
環 *Hwan*[2]..... *A ring;* a bracelet; to encircle.
戒 *Chie*[4]. To warn, *to caution;* to guard; to re- .....frain from; precepts.
戒尺 *Chie*[4] *ch'i*[3]..... *A ferule;* a ruler.
戒方 *Chie*[4] *fang*[1]..... *A ferule;* a ruler. (s.)
體統 *T'i*[3] *t'ung*[3]. *Dignity,* propriety; becom- .....ing, decorous.
知府 *Chï*[1] *fu*[3]. The magistrate who presides ..... over a 府, *a prefect.*
捐 *Chüen*[1]. To subscribe money, to contribute; .....*to buy a title or an office.*
科 *K'ē*[1]. A class; a rank; a gradation; a rule; ..... to classify; *an examination.* Les. 68.
科甲 *K'ē*[1] *chia*[3]. Literary graduates above the ..... the rank of 舉人; viz., 進士 and 翰林.

Digitized by Google

淨、可以再用一點强水試一試。○本[16]地的好紅布、都是用紅花染的、不會用品紅染。○手[17]中一個大錢沒有、還想着買這個買那個、你使甚麼買呢。○大[18]一個人做飯喫、是用火爐子便宜。○種[19]莊稼不使糞、怎能長出好莊稼來呢。○不[20]用使釘子釘、用膠粘上就行了。○用[21]天文鏡看土星、見外邊有一個大光環套着、實在好看。○先[22]生打學生、該用戒尺、戒方若是拳打脚踢、就失了先生的體統了。○如今的人、有錢就有功名、你看仲經堂、硬用銀子捐了一個知府、那些窮科甲、還[23]能做甚麼呢。

16 All native cloth of good red color is dyed with red flowers. We do not know how to use aniline red.

17 You haven't a cash on hand, and yet you want to buy this and buy that. What will you buy it with?

18 Cooking for one person is most conveniently done with a furnace.

19 When you farm without using manure, how can you grow a good crop?

20 You need not nail it; gluing it will answer the purpose.

21 When you look at Saturn with a telescope, you see around it a large ring of light which is very beautiful.

22 When a teacher whips a pupil he should do it with a ferule. If he strikes with his fist and kicks with his foot, he loses his dignity.

23 With people nowadays, to have money is to have a degree. Look at Chung Ching Tang, how he bought, out and out, the office of prefect. What can these impecunious graduates do?

Notes.

1 For *shovel* some would write 掀, but the balance of authority is in favor of the character in the text. There is great diversity in regard to the word meaning *to shovel*. As used in eastern Shantung, 撅 expresses the idea perfectly, but its use is local. 撮 is widely used, but it means *to scrape up* (usually into a dust pan or 簸箕), rather than to shovel. Chinanfu teachers reject both words and write 除, while Kiukiang and Hankow teachers write 鏟.

4 Lit., *Please take these medicines and wrap them up with paper.*

8 In scientific books the telegraph is generally called 電報. When it was introduced into China the people dubbed it 電線.

9 Chinese parents constantly threaten their children in just such a reckless way as this. The children soon learn to know what such threats amount to.

10 Note how this sentence, as also the 12th, 19th, 21st and 22nd, all have hypothetical clauses introduced in the translation by "when," without in any case having a hypothetical particle.

14 The translation does not fully bring out the force of 就. Its use implies that the subject had been referred to before, and the speaker takes this opportunity of showing a specimen of the printing: as when we say, "there, this book, etc."

18 The "furnace" here referred to is the small earthen furnace used by the Chinese, having holes in the bottom, and a raised rim for supporting a tea-kettle or a stew-pan. These furnaces burn either charcoal or grass and sticks and are fanned or blown with a small bellows; hence the name, *wind furnace*, which is used in the South.

20 The translation only *implies* the instrument, which is fully *expressed* in the Chinese.

22 戒尺 means *a ferule*, both in the North and in the South, but in the South it is only applied to the ferules used by officers, while 戒方 is applied to the ferule used by a teacher.

23 硬 here means, *sole, sheer;* that is, the party bought his office by the sheer use of money, overriding all the proprieties of the case. The theory of Chinese examinations is that they are for the purpose of bringing to light the talented men, and a high degree is theoretically a passport to office. As is generally the case in China, theory and practice differ. Money will get almost any office without a literary degree, and the degree without the use of money rarely, if ever, procures an office. The government openly sells its titles and offices, and the money paid for them is facetiously spoken of as *contributed*. 甲, being the first of the ten stems, or cyclical characters, is used to denote first in rank, meaning that they excel the others with whom they are examined, and hence are rewarded with a degree.

Digitized by Google

第五十五課

如[1]病○託[5]他耶將今正在將成未成的時候。○他[2]的
今將○你[6]我不道理、將好。成未成的時候。○他[2]的
正在伸手摑我的頭、將來○你[3]們待要待得回去。○
在將來必天還○託[5]○病如[1]
將還要將要待得你[6]他耶將今
近能還要打磨伸手摑我不道不在
三有清。下我拳頭摑路膊理、能將
十大○雨。嗎。摑髀子放心、將好。成
年出你[9]○○看[7]風的必得我自天回去。○
了。息想請[8]你寬雨做得傳要待要
○嗎。他你風子來必你[3]們的
聽[11]○從寬雨的必得要們的時
他他[10]小容表做得我傳要待候。
的到就我、這甚麼自天回○
口中自我樣麼呢、己下。去他[2]
氣、國、是、將下落降、你去。○嗎。的
將現將來

Translation.

1 It is just now on the point of being settled.
2 He probably can not get well of his disease.
3 Are you about to return?
4 The Christian religion will certainly be preached in all the world.
5 I am not satisfied to entrust it to him. I will probably have to go myself.
6 What are you showing your fists and rolling up your sleeves for? Are you going to strike me?
7 Judging from the way the barometer is falling, it is just going to rain.
8 Please have patience with me and I will pay thee all.
9 Seeing he has been so self-willed from his youth, do you think there is any great outcome in him?
10 It is now nearly thirty years since he came to China.
11 Judging from his talk, he is intending

LESSON LV.

將,待 AND 得 INDICATING FUTURITY.

In addition to its use as an instrumental verb, (Les. 28,) 將 is also used to express the near future, combining with it more or less of the idea of probability. It generally takes 來 after it, which does not sensibly modify its meaning (2)(9.) The combination, however, often takes after it either 必 (17,) or 要 (11,) or 必要 (4,) by which the meaning is modified in each case.

When 將 is used alone with an intransitive or neuter verb, it expresses simple proximity (10,) (16,)(23,)

待 is used in some places to express futurity, including the idea of purpose or oughtness. In other places 得 is used in the same way. In a general way it may be said that 待 is used in Central and 得 in Southern Mandarin. 待 is used occasionally in the North, but is always followed by 要.

The use of both 待 and 得 is quite colloquial, albeit they frequently give a shade of meaning which no other word will quite replace. It is a question whether 待 is not in this case simply a mispronunciation of 得.

VOCABULARY.

未 *Wei*[4]. *Not yet*, never; the hour from 1 to 3 o'clock P. M.—Les. 152.

遍 *Pien*[4]. Everywhere; *all*, the whole; entire; to go around, to pervade:—Les. 64 and 86.

摑 *Lu*[1]. *To strip;* to wipe off; to rub down.

風雨表 *Fêng*[1] *yü*[3] *piao*[3]. A barometer.

下落 *Hsia*[4] *lao*[4]. To fall, to descend.

下降 *Hsia*[4] *chiang*[4]. To descend.

寬容 *K'wan*[1] *jung*[2]. To be lenient, *to be merciful*, to be indulgent.

自是 *Tsï*[4] *shï*[4]. Self-opinioned; self-*willed;* arrogant, overbearing.

口氣 *K'ou*[3] *ch'i*[4]. Manner of speaking, *talk*, phraseology.

追 *Chwei*[1]. To pursue; *to trace or follow up;* to press for a debt; to overtake; to reflect on.

追究 *Chwei*[1] *chiu*[1]. To follow up; *to investigate;* to ferret out.

養活 *Yang*[3] *hwo*[2]. To nourish; *to support.*

啞 *Ya*[3]. Dumb, silent.

Digitized by Google

他 水 水、的 有 啞 門 只 子兒 來
要待 龍 是 時 苦 吧 的 能 的 是
住 的。用 候、難、虧。親 花 事 要
下 ○ 擔扁 差 我 ○ 戚、錢、情、做
我 隨[18]杖擔、人 也 我[15]還將 將 要待還 買
也 他 繩 把 不 有 能待 來 追 賣、
不 的 子、他 幫 苦 怎 誰 究 不
攆 便、轆 拏 助 難、麼 養 甚 打
他。他 轤、去 他。他 樣 活 麼 算
○ 要待 水 了。○ 不 呢、你 呢。多
這[19]走 車、○ 初[16]幫 只 呢。○ 念
件 我 將 現[17]九 助 好 ○ 你[13]書。
事 也 來 在 日、我、喫 —[14]不 ○
左 不 必 中 天 將 他 個 能 沒[12]
右 留 有 國 將 來 這 沒 掙 有
兩 他、換 打 亮 他 個 過 錢、影

to go into business, and does not propose to carry his education very far.

12 What is there to investigate? There isn't a shadow of such a thing.

13 You can not earn money; you only know how to spend it. By and by who is going to support you?

14 What can I do with one who is a prospective relative? I will just have to bear the loss in silence.

15 When I am in trouble he will not help me: by and by when he is in trouble I shall not help him.

16 Just before daylight on the ninth, he was arrested by the officers of the law.

17 In China, at present, water is raised with a carrying pole, a rope, a windlass, or a water-wheel; by and by some will certainly change to pumps.

18 Let him follow his own convenience. If he wishes to go I will not keep him, and if he wishes to stay I will not send him off.

啞吧 *Ya³ pa¹*. . . . . Dumb, *silent.*

苦難 *K'u³ nan⁴*. . . . Distress, *trouble*, calamity.

差 *Ch'ai¹*. To send (a person); to commission; one . . . . . sent; *an official messenger;* a waiter. See *ch'a¹*, also *ts'i²*.

差人 *Ch'ai¹ jên²*. *An official messenger;* a con- . . . . . stable.

打水 *Ta³ shwei³*. *To draw water* and carry it to . . . . . the place where it is wanted.

扁 *Pien³*. . . . *Flat*, thin; to flatten; a signboard.

扁擔 *Pien³ tan⁴*. . . . . A flat carrying stick.

杖 *Chang⁴*. . . . . A staff, a cane; a club; *a pole.*

擔杖 *Tan⁴ chang⁴*. A carrying stick with a chain . . . . . and hook at the ends.

轆 *Lu⁴*. . . . A grooved wheel; a pulley; a *roller.*

轤 *Lu²*. . . . . A windlass; a pulley.

轆轤 A windlass.

水車 *Shwei³ ch'ê¹*. A chain or elevator pump:— . . . . . Note 17.

龍 *Lung²*. . . . *A dragon*, a sea serpent; imperial.

水龍 *Shwei³ lung²*. . . . *A pump;* a fire engine.

攆 *Nien³*. To expel summarily, to put or turn . . . . . out, to drive out.

默 *Mo⁴*. . . . . Dark; secret, *quiet;* in the mind.

悄默聲 *Ch'iao³ mo⁴ shêng¹*. *To keep quiet;* on . . . . . the sly; *silence!*

好 *Hao⁴*. To love, *to be fond of;* to be addicted . . . . . to. See *hao³*.

帶累 *Tai⁴ lei⁴*. *To encumber*, to obstruct; to . . . . . clog, to impede.

陷 *Hsien⁴*. To fall into, to sink; *to involve;* to . . . . . entrap, to enveigle.

帶陷 *Tai⁴ hsien⁴*. . . . . To encumber, impede.

舉 *Chü³*. To raise with the hands, to lift up; *to* . . . . . *recommend;* to begin; to move; a proposition, an affair; all, the whole.

薦 *Chien⁴*. . . . . To introduce, *to recommend.*

舉薦 To recommend, to mention with favor.

丟臉 *Tiu¹ lien³*. To lose face, to be put to . . . . . shame.

推脫 *T'wei¹ t'o¹*. *To make excuse;* to evade; . . . . . to draw back, to shirk.

然 *Jan²*. Certainly, yes, *so;* but, then, however:— . . . . . added to many words to give emphasis or express certainty:—see Les. 94, 97, 115, 116.

不然 *Pu⁴ jan²*. Not certainly, no; *otherwise;* . . . . . if not.

一時 *I¹ shi²*. At one time, at once, on the spur . . . . . of the moment.

接待 *Chie¹ tai⁴*. . . . . To receive; *to entertain.*

Digitized by Google

難、不知將來怎麼辦纔好。○我[20]待要要回他幾句話、又怕得罪他、待要不默聲兒的、眞就是咽不下去。○待[21]你這樣好喫懶做的、將來要帶累薦舉你丈夫窮一輩子。○待[22]我要不舉薦他、他又怕他給我丟臉、○待[23]你們將到的時候、可以坐下喫兩袋菸、先差人給他個信、不然、去這麼些人、怕他一時沒法接待。

19 This business is beset with difficulties. I do not know how it will be best to manage it.

20 If I should make any reply to him, I fear I should offend him; yet I really can not swallow it in silence.

21 So gluttonous and lazy as this, you will most likely keep your husband poor all his life.

22 I am afraid to recommend him, lest he puts me to shame; yet if I do not, I have no way of excusing myself.

23 When you get nearly there you can sit down and smoke a couple of pipes of tobacco, while you send some one forward to give him word; otherwise, I fear he may find it difficult to entertain so many on the spur of the moment.

NOTES.

7 下落 or 下降 is an inversion of the usual order, the auxiliary being made the principal verb. The difference is, that the usual order is commonly transitive, while the inverted order is always intransitive.

14 一個沒過門的親戚, *a relative who has not yet crossed the door*; i.e., the young lady through whom the affinity is to take place is not yet married. 他這個啞吧虧. *this dumb loss of his*; i.e., this loss which he has inflicted on me, and which I must bear in silence. By a characteristic metonymy the dumbness and loss, which really pertain to the speaker, are construed with the other party.

15 The 也 might be represented in the translation by an *also*, but the sense is better expressed and the sentence smoother without it.

17 When wells are shallow, the bucket is let down on the hook of the *tan chang* into the well, and drawn up by hand. When the well is too deep to reach the water in this way, a rope is tied to the bucket and the water drawn up hand over hand. In watering gardens and in case of deep wells, a windlass is used. In raising water from a river or canal for irrigation, a species of inclined chain pump is used. It is usually driven by a large horizontal wheel with cogs, turned by an ox or donkey.

21 The phrase 好吃懶做, *hankering after good eating and lazy at work*, is most commonly applied to girls and young women. It expresses the worst fault a virtuous woman can have.

23 Note the different use of 差人 from that in 16. The two words there form a phrase; here they do not.

LESSON LVI.

THE DISJUNCTIVE CONJUNCTION.

或 is the regular word meaning *or*, but is not nearly so much used as we use *or* in English. In many, perhaps in the majority of, cases the disjunctive idea is implied in the structure of the clauses, as (11); numerous such cases have already occurred in previous lessons. 是 is often joined with 或 for the sake of rhythm.

Whether—or, is formally expressed by 或 repeated, but is also frequently expressed by correlate clauses, without any special word (9), (15.)

Either—or, is sometimes expressed by one 或 (14); sometimes by two (6), (8).

或者, *or else*, is a Wen-li phrase, but not unfrequently used in Mandarin. It also means *perhaps, possibly*.

When a double question is asked, giving an alternative, the second clause is often introduced by 還, which, in such cases, means *or*, (4), (13), (16). It generally gives a slight preponderance to the second alternative.

Digitized by Google

第五十六課

或[1]去、或不去、等明天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
非肥皂、就或不去、等明天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
肥皂、就或不去、等明天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
皂、就或不去、等明天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
就或不去、等明天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
或不去、等明天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
不去、等明天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
去、等明天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
等明天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
明天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
天再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
再說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
說。○用[2]一點鹼、或是
○用[2]一點鹼、或是
用[2]一點鹼、或是
一點鹼、或是
點鹼、或是
鹼、或是
或是

該給他幾個銀子、買[3]一天要現錢去問問他、或是
該給他幾個銀子、買[3]一天要現錢去問問他、或是
該給他幾個銀子、買[3]一天要現錢去問問他、或是

體補還下病人看、他們是真要打仗的輕、還是病的重。○上大王說得留嗎、點
這樣軟弱、應該多喫一點好飯、或是喫一點
補藥。○聽[13]說你[14]們那裏口要開銀礦、
是假的頭頭呢。說你[14]們那裏口要開銀礦、
當押頭或是找出個保人來。白空話不行、必
下個了、押頭的呢。○你[14]們那裏口要開銀礦、
還是病了、個是假的頭頭呢。說你[14]們那裏口要開銀礦、
補藥。○聽[13]說你[14]們那裏口要開銀礦、
體這樣軟弱、應該多喫一點好飯、或是喫一點

不[19]知他念書是圖成名呢、還是要預備做生
必是逛遊景逛呢。○他[18]素不是失信的人、
去你[17]是看了、也沒告訴是找病的個保人來。白話話不這是真的喫一點
人病下還補藥。○假的頭頭呢。說你[14]們那裏口要開銀礦、
病了、個是假的頭頭呢。說你[14]們那裏口要開銀礦、
當押頭或是找出個保人來。白空話不行、必
下個了、押頭的呢。○你[14]們那裏口要開銀礦、
還是病了、個是假的頭頭呢。說你[14]們那裏口要開銀礦、
補藥。○聽[13]說你[14]們那裏口要開銀礦、
體這樣軟弱、應該多喫一點好飯、或是喫一點

13 I hear that you people are going to open a silver mine. Is it true? or is it false?

14 Mere empty talk will not do. You must either leave a pledge or find security.

15 The letter simply said he was sick, not telling whether his sickness was severe or not.

16 In Your Excellency's opinion are they really going to fight? or are they simply making a feint?

17 Do you want to go to the temple of the god of war to hear a theatrical play? or do you want to go to P'êng Lai Kwoă to saunter about (enjoy the view)?

18 He is ordinarily not a man who breaks his word. His not coming to-day must be owing to sickness, or else some important business has turned up so that he can not leave.

19 I do not know whether he is studying in order to get a degree, or whether he is preparing himself to go into business.

失信 *Shï[1] hsin[4].* To break one's word, to violate a promise.

遇 *Yü[4].* To meet; to occur, to happen.

遇見 *Yü[4] chien[4].* To meet; *to happen on.*

脫身 *T'oă[1] shên[1].* To escape; to find leisure; *to leave.*

需 *Hsü[1].* Required, needful; usual; necessary.

圖需 *T'u[2] hsü[1].* To desire; to want; *to aim;* to seek after.

希圖 *Hsi[1] t'u[2].* To desire; to seek for; *to scheme.*

成名 *Ch'êng[2] ming[2].* To get a degree.

付 *Fu[4].* To give to, *to hand over*, to pay.

交付 *Chiao[1] fu[4].* To transfer; to deliver to; to hand over to; *to commit to.*

音信 *Yin[1] hsin[4].* News, word,—specially that which comes by word of mouth.

壽 *Shou[4].* *Age*, years; birthday; aged.

壽數 *Shou[4] shu[4].* Age in years; *life.*

天命 *T'ien[1] ming[4].* Fate, *the decree of Heaven;* the endowment of heaven.

稱呼 *Ch'êng[1] hu[1].* To designate, to call; *to address.*

上帝 *Shang[4] ti[4].* The Ruler Above, *the Supreme Ruler.* Used by many for God.

NOTES.

1 The translation implies that the person to go was the person addressed. The Chinese, however, leaves this quite undecided. It might also mean, *whether I go or not, wait till to-morrow to consider.*

4 Bank-notes are largely used in China, but their circulation is entirely local. Usually they are only current in the city in which they are issued.

7 或東或西 *whether east or whether west;* i.e., *either this or that.*

10 The water in which rice has been boiled is much used as a drink,—especially just after meals. It is usually called 飯湯.

14 The 空 is twice used for emphasis. The Southern form replaces the second 空 with 白, but in other connections 說白話 means *to fib, to tell "white" lies.*

17 關帝, *the Chinese god of war*, also called 武帝.

Digitized by Google

天主、或稱呼上帝、都可以。呢、答○或稱呼天父、或稱呼。定。的壽數長短、都是天命所[22]人。或不亮的時候、他可以回家、把丈夫交付天主、盼望天。冷或不冷、也[21]不熱、我願你或。意。○我[20]知道你的行爲、你

20 I know your works, that you are neither cold nor hot, I would you were either cold or hot.

21 Hannah made up her mind to commit her husband to God, hoping that by daylight he would come home, or else that she would get word from him.

22 Whether a man's life be long or short, is fixed by the decree of Heaven.

23 How is the true God to be addressed? *Ans.* Either Heavenly Father, or Lord of Heaven, or Supreme Ruler, may be used.

His name as a man was 關羽. He lived in the second century, in 解州, in the province of Shansi, and is reputed to have been originally a seller of bean-curd. He subsequently joined Liu Pei, and in course of time became a celebrated general. He was finally taken prisoner and put to death by beheading. He was canonized by Hwei Tsung, of the Sung Dynasty, in the 12th century A.D., and in the Ming Dynasty was raised to the rank of 帝. The present dynasty has put especial honors upon him, conferring on him the pompous title 協天大帝 *The Great Sovereign (or God), Peer of Heaven*, and causing many temples to be built to him. He has a temple in nearly every village. Theatricals are generally held in connection with temples. Each temple has some set day in the year, on which special worship is offered and theatrical performances are given. These theatrical displays are in fact a part of the worship, being supposed to be pleasing to the gods.

蓬萊閣 A noted temple at Têngchow, built on a high rock overlooking the sea. 逛景 does not form a phrase in the same way as 遊逛, which consists of two verbs of similar meaning. 逛景 is a verb with its object, and means, *to look at the view, to survey the scenery.*

22 或 might be twice inserted; thus, 人的壽數或長或短, which would make the meaning more explicit. In order to make the meaning clear as the sentence stands, it is necessary to speak the words 長短 slowly and emphatically, each with its proper tone, and with a distinct pause between them.

LESSON LVII.

APPROXIMATION.

Mandarin has a large variety of words to express the general idea of approximation, each having its own peculiar use and shade of meaning. In regard to a number of these phrases the usage differs in different places, and some of them are decidedly colloquial.

差不多 Almost, about.

差不許多 Almost, very nigh, very little difference. (N. and C.)

差不幾多 Almost, very little difference. (S.)

差不離 Nearly, somewhere about, near the mark, fair, passable.

差不離形 About, not far from the mark.

差不來往 or 不差來往 Approximately.

希乎 or 希乎希 Nearly, all but.

差一點 Nearly, within a little.

差不着一點 / 差沒一點 } Almost, all but, within a hair's breadth.

不錯 Correct, all right, no mistake:—Les. 70.

不離 Not far off, fairly good, all right.

不離經 The same.

不大離 Not very far off, not so bad, fair, near the mark.

不大離經 The same. (S.)

不大離形 The same. (N. and C.)

不大差什麼 No great difference, about the same.

幾乎 or 幾幾乎 Nearly, almost, well nigh, [very near.

Digitized by Google

第五十七課

這[1]件子太破了、那一件還不大離經。○你[2]是多日沒見他的字、這以後寫的眞正不錯。○我[3]看你二位的年紀、差也不多。○我[4]的烟袋、昨日差一點瞎了。叫人拔了去。○別[5]的莊稼都不離經、就是蕎麥差不離形、我就賣給你。○[11]不大離。○不大離經、就是蕎麥差不離形、我就賣給你。○[11]差不多許多往來。○[12]我們纔到了河中間、回來回來、你再添一點、添、藝不大差甚麼樣呢、答差不多。○他們兩個的手藝、不差不離。○這[9]一路紙、比那一路紙、怎麼差也要得不差不離。○一樓梯上掉下來、幾幾乎跌斷了氣。○就[8]是不能背了。○如[6]今英文、○差不多。○前[7]天榮喜從蹭瞎

TRANSLATION.

1 This [garment] is too ragged; that one is fairly good.
2 You have not seen his writing for a long time; of late he has been writing very well indeed.
3 I judge the ages of you two gentlemen differ very little, if they differ at all.
4 Yesterday a man very nearly snatched away my pipe.
5 All the other crops are fairly good, but the buckwheat is a failure.
6 The English language is now current almost all over the world.
7 The day before yesterday Yung Hsi fell down stairs and was stunned almost to death.
8 Even if you can not repeat it exactly, yet you ought to come very near it.
9 How does this class of paper compare with that? *Ans.* They are approximately the same.
10 There is no considerable difference in their skill; they are both good workmen.
11 Come back, come back! Add a little more, and if you come anywhere near the price, I'll sell to you.
12 Just when we had reached the middle of the river, a great rise of water

VOCABULARY.

幾 *Chi*[1]. A few; *nearly*, almost; minute; subtle; ..... chance; to be near, to approximate. See *chi*[3].

乎 *Hu*[1,2]. A final interrogative particle expressing doubt, or surprise, but often used as a mere expletive.

眞正 *Chên*[1] *chêng*[4]..... Really, truly, *indeed*.

蕎 *Ch'iao*[2]..... Buckwheat.

麥 *Mai*[4], *mo*[4]..... Wheat.

蕎麥 Buckwheat.

瞎 *Hsia*[1]. Blind; ignorant; reckless. *To fail*, to .....come to nought, to miscarry. (N., C.)

英文 *Ying*[1] *wên*[2].....The English language.

通行 *T'ung*[1] *hsing*[2].....Everywhere current.

梯 *T'i*[1].... A ladder; *stairs;* a step-ladder, steps.

樓梯 *Lou*[2] *t'i*[1]. A stairway, a ladder to an ..... upper story or loft.

絕 *Chüe*[2]. To cut off; to interrupt; to sever; *to exterminate;* very, extremely:—Les. 116.

沖 *Ch'ung*[1]. To strike or dash against; *to carry* ..... *away* (by water); to steep.

傳言 *Ch'uan*[2] *yien*[2]..... A report, a rumor.

寸 *Ts'un*[4].....An inch (Chinese); a very little.

家當 *Chia*[1] *tang*[4]. Patrimony, property, *wealth*, ...fortune.

家私 *Chia*[1] *si*[1]..... The same.

撞 *Chwang*[4], *ch'wang*[4]. To pound; to beat upon; ..... *to strike or run against;* to cheat.

撞倒 *Ch'wang*[4] *tao*[3]. To strike and overturn, to ..... push over:—Les. 91.

崖 *Ai*[2], *yai*[2]..... A precipice; *a bank;* a shore.

坡 *P'o*[1]. A declivity; a slope; a hill; a ter..... race, *a bank*.

趕緊 *Kan*[3] *chin*[3]. *Diligent*, assiduous; to hurry, ...to push.

上緊 *Shang*[4] *chin*[3]..... The same.

估 *Ku*[1]. *To estimate*, to reckon, to consider, to set ..... a price, to appraise. Also *ku*[4].

Digitized by Google

孔、了着、不的了。死。聽年就
和一做着一家○○見半下
王會不一點口論[16]不[15]一年來
作兒、起點多他用個的了
清、說來掉一弟再傳人、大
在來也在點。兄寬言就水、
場說不坡崖○兩二說、是差希
中去、差子兩[17]個寸、他沒有乎
的差甚底個的我在一希
文一麼。下。孩家家看路五點
章點○○子、私當、再上十被
怎弄弄鬧昨[19]若[18]都也寬翻歲、水
麼結扭掙天上趕叫差一了也沖
樣了。晚緊緊牲不寸、車、差差去。
呢、○上、的口多、就幾希不不○
答你[20]我做、撞就不乎叫多多。那[13]
不看和我倒是大叫車。○不
離、劉他估了、老離車我是
都希說量差差大經形壓[14]一

came and we were all but carried away.

13 That man is not in his teens; if not fifty, he is not very far from it.

14 I heard a report that on the way his cart upset, and he came very near being crushed to death.

15 It need not be two inches broader. If it is one inch broader it will, I think, be about right.

16 As to wealth, the two brothers are about the same, but the elder has somewhat the larger family.

17 Both children were knocked down by the animal, and came within a very little of falling down the bank.

18 If we work diligently, I calculate we can finish, or at least come very near it.

19 I talked with him a while yesterday evening, and our talk came very near ending in a quarrel.

20 What do you think of the essays Liu Hsi K'ung and Wang Tsoă Ch'ing wrote for the examinations? *Ans.* Very fair. Both have a prospect of getting their degree.

估量 *Ku[1] liang[4].* To consider, *to calculate,* to .....guess, to appraise.

扭 *Niu[3].* *To twist,* to wrench; to wring; to sprain; ..... to wriggle.

鬧掙 *Nao[4] ning[2].* ..... To get into a quarrel.

弄扭 *Nung[4] niu[3].* ..... The same. (C.)

弄結 *Nung[4] chie[1].* ..... The same. (S.)

孔 *K'ung[3].* ..... Excellent; the peacock.

場 or 場 *Ch'ang[3].* An open plot of ground; *an* ..... *arena* for drill, examinations, theatricals, etc. Also *ch'ang[2].*

指望 *Chi[3] wang[4].* ..... Hope, *prospect.*

自從 *Tsi[4] ts'ung[2].* ..... From the time.

元 *Yüen[2].* First, original, primary; *large, great;* ..... a dollar.

元寶 *Yüen[2] pao[3].* A shoe or ingot of silver con- .....taining about fifty taels.

象 *Hsiang[4].* The elephant; *form,* image; an em- ..... blem, a resemblance.

氣象 *Ch'i[4] hsiang[4].* ..... *Aspect,* mien, air.

舉動 *Chü[3] tung[4].* Actions; *bearing,* behavior; ..... a move.

親事 *Ch'in[1] shï[4].* *A marriage alliance,* matri- .....monial affairs.

炸 *Cha[4].* To burst, *to fly to pieces;* bits. Broken ..... coal (N.) Also *cha[2].*

裂 *Lie[4].* ..... To crack open; *to split;* to tear.

炸裂 To split in pieces, to burst, *to fall through.*

癨 *Hwoă[4].* .....The rapid disease, the cholera.

癨亂病 *Hwoa[4] lwan[4] ping[4].* ..... Cholera.

瘋 *Fêng[1].* Leprosy; palsy; *rabid;* insane, dement- .....ed; any nervous disease.

合算 *Hoă[2] swan[4].* To reckon up, to take the .....aggregate; *on the whole;* profitable, paying.

圍 *Wei[2].* To surround; to invest; *to besiege;* a .....wall round a village, a fortification.

一連 *I[1] lien[2].* One after the other, *consecutive,* .....together with; even also:—Les. 105.

Digitized by Google

有進學的指望。○[21]世上眞有些會說話的人、差不離的話、叫他一說、就說活了。○[22]自從他兒子捎了兩個元寶來、就大改氣象、在舉動言語之間、覺着正經不錯。○[23]這門親事、若不是我去的早、差不多又炸裂了。○他[24]纔得了家信說、他父親前日害癢亂病、幾乎死了。○正[25]走到十字路口、從南來了一條大瘋狗、差一點把我咬着。○請[26]問老兄、這兩條路走那條好呢、答南路近一點、北路好走一點、合算起來、差不幾許多。○長[27]毛來的時候、我那莊上的圍子、被他一連困了五天、幾幾乎就困破了。

21 Truly there are some men in the world who know how to talk. They will take up almost anything, and say it so as to make it seem real.

22 Ever since his son sent him the two ingots of silver, his aspect has greatly changed; both in his bearing and in his talk he feels himself decidedly worthy of regard.

23 If I had not gone early, this marriage proposal would, most likely, have fallen through again.

24 He has just received a letter from home, saying, that the day before yesterday his father was seized with cholera and came very near dying.

25 Just when I had reached the street crossing, there came from the southward a large, rabid dog, and he came very near biting me.

26 Will you please tell me, my friend, which of these roads I had better go? *Ans.* The south road is a little nearer, the north road is a little better; but, on the whole, there is very little difference.

27 When the rebels came, they besieged the wall of our village for five consecutive days, and came very near breaking it.

NOTES.

1 The classifier 件 is here put for the noun, and hence takes the 子. Such an abbreviation is only allowable in colloquial.

3 差也差不多、*Differing, still do not differ much,*—a common idiomatic form.

7 跌斷了氣 *To fall so as to break or stop the breath;* i.e., *the life.* For a temporary suspension of breathing, a different word is commonly used. 斷 and 絕 are auxiliaries, used with only a few verbs. Pekingese prefers 掉斷了.

9 The second 紙 might be omitted without detriment to the sentence.

11 This is the language of one who has just refused an offer, and the customer has started to go.

13 一年半年, an exaggerated form of expressing that one is not young.

15 再 does not here mean *again*, but *in addition.*

17 It is worthy of note that 差一點 means practically the same as 差沒一點 or 差不着一點, notwithstanding the fact that the one *seems* to say the opposite of the others.

21 差不多的話 *Words which are almost*; i.e., almost any story or incident which has even the least semblance of truth or reality. 說活了, lit., *to speak alive*; i.e., they can talk so well that in their mouths the most improbable things put on the aspect of reality.

22 舉動言語之間 is a Wên-li phrase which use has made intelligible, although it would be somewhat pedantic, if used in addressing an uneducated man. 正經不錯, lit., *proper and no mistake*; i.e., *both self-satisfied and self-important.*

23 門 is the classifier of 親事, and its use as a classifier is almost limited to this one thing. 炸裂 is usually pronounced as if written 炸離.

24 家信 may be either a letter from home, as in this case, or a letter addressed to those at home. 害 is to be taken passively.

25 十字路口, *the place where two streets cross,*—the term being derived from the character 十. In some places 路 is omitted, and in others 街 is substituted for it.

26 請問老兄 is a polite manner of addressing a stranger, when asking for information of any kind.

27 長毛 is abbreviated from 長毛賊, *long-haired robbers.* This is the name generally given by the Chinese to the adherents of the great Taiping rebellion of 1850 to 1865. They were so called because they did not shave their heads, as the Chinese are all required to do by the present Tartar dynasty. In some parts of China—notably in Shantung, the larger villages generally have adobe walls around them, as a protection against armed robbers. In some cases walls (generally of stone) are built for greater protection on the tops of hills by several villages in common, and to these the people flee with their valuables in case of danger. 我那莊, *that village of ours.*

Digitized by Google

第五十八課

他[1]明白、你更明白。
我[2]比不上他的能幹。
參[3]有一塊[5]這個强。
○ ○
我[4]綿襖不及皮襖暖和。
○ ○
你[6]貴的、那個[7]是洋的。
○ 大規。○ 人[7]洋娘
錢、有、比比不如自己有。
點[9]是錢、比比不如自己有。
蠟燭萬物塊[8]火[8]
用[11]蠟燭萬物塊[8]火[8]
及用[11]蠟燭萬物塊[8]火[8]
城錢燭萬物塊[8]火[8]
外感不物塊[8]火[8]
的情、及更强。
好。不點尊○有。
燈貴你[6]○○
上合的。看綿[4]我[2]
算算。○那襖比
西○火[8]個不
作[10]棍强、及上
體面。首兒答皮他的
間、○領短、我襖能
城[12]的、强看暖和。幹。
裏更似這和。○○
上的不手個强。這[5]參[3]
風可撥强。這[5]參[3]有
氣、犯攔。○塊有
的。個○大規。○人[7]洋娘他[1]
○房打[14]不○點[9]是錢、有、明
要[17]子他、及用[11]蠟比比不白、
叫好不城錢燭萬那如你
這多如外感不物塊自己更
個了。拿的情、及更强。己明
人○個好。不點尊○有。白。
回可[16]理○如燈貴你[6]○○
頭、以去我[13]送上合的。看綿[4]我[2]
比多和看東算算。○那襖比
登做他他西○火[8]個不
天一講。的體作[10]棍强、及上
還點○學面。首兒答皮他的
難。飯、這[15]間、○領短、我襖能
○膳個趕城[12]的、强看暖和。幹。
他[18]下房不裏更似這和。
的强子、上的不手個○○
病、其似比你風可撥强。這[5]參[3]
眼不那的。氣、犯攔。○塊有

Translation.

1 He understands, but you understand better.
2 I can not compare with him in ability.
3 For your father or mother to own a thing is not so good as for you to own it yourself.
4 A wadded coat is not so warm as a fur coat.
5 This dollar is better than that one.
6 Which do you think is the better? *Ans.* I think this one is the better.
7 Man is more exalted than all things else.
8 A short poker is better than to stir the fire with one's hand.
9 It is not as economical to burn candles as it is to burn a lamp.
10 Still more should not one who is a leader violate the rules.
11 To return a favor with money is not so genteel as to send a present.
12 The air in the city is not nearly so good as it is outside.
13 I do not think his scholarship comes up to yours.
14 To beat him is not so good as to try the effect of reason.
15 This house is much better than that one.
16 You may cook a little more rice. It is better to have some left, than not to have enough.

LESSON LVIII.

The Comparative Degree.

Formal comparison is made with 比, of the use of which there have been frequent instances in previous lessons. There are, however, a variety of other words and ways, by which comparison is effected.

更 To change,—as a comparative, is equal to *more*, or to the termination *er*. It precedes the adjective which it qualifies. It is often used in connection with 比, (1), (19).

强 Violent,—as a comparative, *better, superior*. (5). It follows the noun it qualifies, and is generally used in connection with 比 (5), or joined with 如 or 似 or 其, as below.

更强 Still better, much better; better. (19.)

似 Like,—is often used to form a direct comparison. It follows the adjective with which it is joined. (24.)

其 That,—is used colloquially in the same way as 似, but is not *t'ung hsing*. (24)

如 As,—may also be used alone in the same way, but usually takes 强 before it, or is joined with a negative, as below.

强其 (16)
强似 (8)(35)
强如 (28)
} Better than, superior to. The first form is local, the other two are general.

不及 Not as good as, inferior to,—a much used form.

不如 Not equal to, not up to. (4) (9)

多 or 得多 following an adjective is equal to *much*,—much better, much higher, etc. (15) (29)

赶不上
跟不上
} Not equal to, not up to. (13) (21)

Comparison may also be effected without any special word. (20)

Digitized by Google

看着一天比一天好了。○[19]爲甚麼但揀那個、這個不比那個更强[20]好嗎。○我[21]好歹是在各人跟前說出來。○前[29]院子那井天背地裏十事在他[24]如那我看上着、個、這水筆好使。○像[22]這個好。○我[23]沒有看這個、那些弟兄們、連外人都不如。○不上算、還要緊。○俗[27]語說、十個。○一層深似一層。好[25]的不如壞的。○分這四層意思、一層比一層强。○上面、往下一個、一個不如一個。○分這四層意思、一層比一層强。○禽獸了。○好使。○沒有更好。○有眞正的人、眞心實意的人、都不上算、○我那些弟兄們、連外人都不如。○不上算、○我那些弟兄們、連外人都不如。○不上算、○我那些弟兄們、連外人都不如。○

靜、時你你失器婿兒[31]件有
又勢、身的的時做孝。子事後
少莫莫上心的的○孝、很院天
得强妙一血鳳滑光用[32]不纏子井
罪似於塊更凰錫滑。手如手、大、
多凡肉重、不○做媳不前
少事更去如得[33]的婦及院天
人不疼。你雞。意傢孝、你子井
呢。管、○一○的伙、女親小
自我[35]個你[34]黧總兒自得
己看大看貓不孝、去多
多現錢、財歡及不看了。
麼在比帛、似用如看。○
清的割比虎、機女○這[30]

29 The front court as large as the back court! The front court is much smaller.

30 This business is very much involved. It would be better for you to go in person and see about it.

31 A dutiful daughter-in-law is better than a dutiful son. A dutiful son-in-law is better than a dutiful daughter.

32 After all, tools made by hand are not so nicely finished as those made by machinery.

33 A bridled cat in high spirits disports itself like a tiger: a phœnix in unpropitious circumstances is not equal to a chicken.

34 You regard money as of more value than your heart's blood. To take away a cash hurts you more than to cut out a piece of your flesh.

35 It seems to me that in the present state of affairs, the best way is to decline all responsibilities. What an amount of trouble it saves, and how many people it saves offending.

天井 *T'ien[1] ching[3]*. A court between two houses, ... a court-yard.

纏手 *Ch'an[2] shou[3]*. Intricate, *involved*, embar- ..... rassing.

機 *Chi[1]*. Change; origin; moving power; natural ..... cause; contrivance; *a machine;* a loom; a stratagem; opportune.

器 *Ch'i[4]*..... A vessel; *a tool*, an implement.

機器 *A machine*, an instrument; apparatus.

錫 *T'ang[4]*..... To smooth, to polish.

滑錫 *Hwa[2] t'ang[4]*. Smooth; slippery; polished; ..... *finished.*

得意 *Tê[2] i[4]*..... *In good spirits;* satisfied.

黧 *Li[2]*..... A blackish yellow color, dun.

失時 *Shï[1] shi[2]*. Out of luck or favor; *in unfa-* ..... *vorable circumstances.*

鳳凰 *Fêng[4] hwang[2]*. A fabulous bird of felici- ..... tous omen, the phœnix.

帛 *Poŏ,[4,2]*..... White silk; *wealth.*

財帛 *Ts'ai[2] poŏ[2]*..... Money, wealth.

血 *Hsüe,[4] hsie[3]*..... *Blood;* related by blood.

時勢 *Shï[2] shi[4]*..... The times; *state of affairs.*

莫 *Moŏ[4]*. Do not, no need of:—Les. 82; per- ..... haps; *not so;* nothing; nothing like.

妙 *Miao[4]*. *Excellent*, wonderful, admirable; sub- ..... tle, mysterious; supernatural.

Notes.

1 The "but" in the translation is implied by the connection. The sentence might also be taken hypothetically, and be rendered, *If he understands, you still more.*

9 蠟燭, *wax candles*, is the most general and most perspicuous term for candles. Chinese candles are usually made of a mixture of tallow and lard, by dipping, and are finally dipped once or twice in wax, thus giving them a thin skin of wax, which protects the soft inside and forms a cup to retain the molten grease. In some places, as in Peking, candles are called simply 蠟, *wax;* in other places they are called 蠟燈, *wax lamps.*

11 感情 sometimes forms a phrase, meaning *to stir up or influence others*, but here 感 is the verb and 情 its object. 情 properly means affection, but is here put for the favor, or present, which expresses affection.

14 個 is used to specialize the particular reason, or principle, involved in the case.

17 登天 *ascend to heaven*,—an expression to denote something that is impossible. 登 is used in Mandarin only in set phrases.

18 一天比一天好了, *one day compared with one day good; i.e., improving day by day.* Note that the Chinese says the *disease* is improving.

Digitized by Google

第五十九課

誰[1]誰願意爲他白効勞呢。○若[2]不爲喫穿二字、
受打、是願意、你請自己甘心願意、沒有情願甘心
的情幹管活[3]生呢。○你[3]是願受罰[4]呢。○
小還肯幹管活[3]生呢。○你[3]是願受罰[4]呢。○
答不情願甘心願意、你請自己甘心願意、沒有情願甘心
不不甘心情願呢。○進[5]教是在自己甘心願意、沒有情願甘心
強逼人進教的。○進[5]教是在自己甘心願意、沒有情願甘心
起來、我不愛那些大可[6]以用幾個小紙撚兒。○說[7]和事的、給訂
他斷了三百吊錢、他又情願讓他二十吊。○說[7]和事的、給訂
—[8]年二百兩銀子的東脩、你還讓他二十吊。○說[7]和事的、給訂
想要掙多少呢。○不[9]用理他、你還不肯住、就下這個
麼樣、不愛願意也是這麼樣。○我[10]不管他愛願意他心焦

TRANSLATION.

1 Who is willing to work for him for nothing?
2 If it were not for the sake of food and clothing, who would be willing to work?
3 Would you prefer to be beaten, or to be fined? *Ans.* I would prefer to be fined.
4 If fined to the extent of feasting one table, would you be willing or not?
5 Joining the church must be of your own free will. No one joins the church by compulsion.
6 Use some small paper cords and bind it [the book] up. I do not like those coarse paper cords.
7 The arbitrators awarded him three hundred tiao, and even of this he, of his own accord, abated twenty tiao.
8 Getting a salary of two hundred taels a year, and yet you will not remain! How much do you expect to earn?
9 Pay no attention to him: so it must be, whether he likes it or not.
10 I do not care whether he is worried or not. I can not suffer him to treat me so rudely as this.

21 The 旱筆, or 乾筆, is a pen of which only a very small portion is wet with the ink, and it is allowed to dry when not in use. In the case of the 水筆, the whole head of the pen is wet, and is kept from drying when not in use by being covered with the brass tube or "cap" provided for the purpose. The "dry pen" is used chiefly in the South.

24 The translation gives the sense. A more literal translation would be,—*each division is more profound than the preceding one.*

29 天井 means properly a narrow court between two houses, in allusion probably to the patch of sky seen from the bottom of a well. It has, however, come to be used in many places instead of 院子, *yard*. In other parts of the country it is scarcely used at all.

33 Paraphrase thus:—"When in the mood, a brindled cat will put on the air and mien of a tiger; while the *fêng hwang*, though naturally a magnificent bird, is, when in unfavorable circumstances, no better than a chicken." The meaning is, that everything depends on circumstances.

LESSON LIX.

ASSENT AND DISSENT.

願 and 愛, and their combinations, are chiefly used to express willingness or assent; but various other words are used with a negative to express unwillingness or dissent.

願意 Willing, to acquiesce, to agree. (1) (5)
情願 Of one's own free will, voluntarily. (7)
愛意 Willing; inclined, disposed. (9)
甘願 Freely, of one's own accord. (15)
甘心 Satisfied, willing, assisting. (4)
甘心樂意 Freely, cordially. (13)
不肯 Unwilling, dissatisfied. (8) (11)
不服 To dissent, to demur, to protest. (12)
不讓 To disallow, to restrain, to resent. (14)
不依 To disallow, to withstand; to demand satisfaction. (18)
不答應 To refuse, to resent, to demur. (18)
不受 or 不受頭 To refuse to submit. (10)

Digitized by Google

了。裏我騙心裏你[12]我頭應。不
○是的人、樂就是但打○這[11]焦心
我[16]我名子不意、不是了焦、
也甘子用不不他他就他這
不願去掛可服。的的是這樣
愛送撞我出○威孩子、他打唐衝
踢給騙、的於人[13]風、滅他了突撞
毬他、我招幌勉孝滅再我我、
兒、是一牌子、強。順我的不的我
也他定若○父母、志肯孩就
不硬不是你[14]出應氣、干子、不
愛強讓、再出去當我休。若能
打拿○指着撞甘心○是受答
毬去那[15]

11 In this case, it is he that struck my child. If I had struck his child, he would never have been willing to drop it.

12 You are all the time boasting of his power, in order to weaken my resolution, but I am determined not to yield.

13 A man should honor his parents of his own free will, and not as the result of constraint.

14 When you set out to swindle people, I don't want you to hang out my sign. If you ever again attempt to swindle people in my name, I will certainly make it hot for you.

15 I give it to him of my own accord! He took it away by main force.

16 I do not like to play shuttlecock, nor to play ball; the thing I like is to play chess.

Vocabulary.

甘 *Kan*[1]. Sweet; pleasant, agreeable; luscious; ..... delightsome; *willing, voluntary.*

効 *Hsiao*[4]. *To toil*, to labor earnestly, to exert .....oneself; exertions.

効勞 *Hsiao*[4] *lao*[2]..... To toil, *to work for.*

逼 *Pi*[1]. To press upon; *to urge or force arbitra-* ..... *rily;* to ill-use.

强逼 *Ch'iang*[3] *pi*[1]..... To compel, to force.

進教 *Chin*[4] *chiao*[4]. To join the Church, to be- .....come a Christian.

撚 *Nien*[3]. To fumble over; to toy with; *to roll* .....*and twist with the fingers.*

紙撚 *Chi*[3] *nien*[3]. *A twisted paper string or cord;* ..... a lamp-lighter.

束 *Su*[4], *shu*[4].....To bind, to restrain, to coerce.

脩 *Hsiu*[1]..... Dried meat; to prepare.

束脩 A teacher's salary.

焦 *Chiao*[1]..... Scorched; anxious, *worried.*

心焦 *Hsin*[1] *chiao*[1]..... *Worried*, vexed.

衝 *Ch'ung*[1]. *To rush against;* to excite; to col- .....lide with.

衝撞 *Ch'ung*[1] *chwang*[4]. To butt against; to .....interfere with; to offend; *to treat rudely.*

突 *T'u*[4], *tu*[4]. Abruptly; to rush; *insolent*, audacious:—Les. 115.

唐突 *T'ang*[2] *t'u*[4]..... *To treat rudely.*

答應 *Ta*[1] *ying*[4]. To reply; to respond; *to assent,* ..... to agree to.

受頭 *Shou*[4] *t'ou*[2]..... *To submit to.* (L.)

休 *Hsiu*[1]. To rest; *to cease;* to desist; to divorce; ..... prosperous; stop, do not:—Les. 82.

千休 *Kan*[1] *hsiu*[1]. To quit, *to drop*, to relinquish; ..... to submit.

逞 *Ch'êng*[3]. To presume on, to rely on; *to boast;* ..... presumptuous, reckless.

威 *Wei*[1]..... Majesty; grave, *imposing*, lordly.

威風 *Wei*[1] *fêng*[1]..... Majesty; *prowess.*

志 *Chi*[4]. The will; inclination; purpose, *determi-* ..... *nation*, aim; topographies; annals.

志氣 *Chi*[4] *ch'i*[4]. Determination, *resolution;* will; .....courage.

樂意 *Lo*[4] *i*[4]..... *Heartily; willing*, cordial.

出於 *Ch'u*[1] *yü*[2]..... To proceed from.

勉 *Mien*[3]. To force oneself, *to constrain;* to .....urge; to animate.

勉强 *Mien*[3] *ch'iang*[3]. *To constrain;* to compel; .....to insist on.

撞騙 *Chwang*[4] *p'ien*[4]. To cheat, to humbug, *to* .....*swindle.*

幌 *Hwang*[3]. A curtain, *a sign*, an advertisement.

招 *Chao*[1]. To beckon; to invite; to excite; to ..... confess, to admit; *a sign-board.*

Digitized by Google

就是愛下棋。○保[17]子參、孩子不直肯鬧、快來抱他去、我好弄做飯。○北[18]莊李有年的女兒、是這東莊趙四的媳婦、前日叫他婆婆惡暴打了一頓、氣的吊死了、他的街坊鄰居、通統不服、都願意李有年來不依他、把趙四盤折蹬弄的水盡鵝飛、這纔甘心、以後經人調處調說了、趙四只拿出三十吊錢、李有年就肯了、若是這件事挪在我身上、就是給我三百吊、我也是不答應的。

17 Pao-tsï's papa, the baby is very cross; come and carry him out while I get the dinner.

18 The daughter of Li YuNien, of the village to the north, is daughter-in-law to Chao the Fourth, of the village to the east. Day before yesterday her mother-in-law gave her a violent beating, and she got so angry that she hanged herself. The neighbors were all up in arms, and were anxious that Li YuNien should take the matter up, and not be satisfied till he had squeezed out of Chao the Fourth every cash he had. Afterwards, through the intervention of middle-men, Li YuNien agreed to let off Chao the Fourth on payment of only thirty thousand cash. If it had been my affair, I would not have assented if he had paid me three hundred thousand cash.

招牌 *Chao¹ p'ai²*. . . . . A signboard, a sign.

一定 *I¹ ting⁴*. *Certainly*, positively, inevitably: . . . . . —Les. 116.

硬强 *Ying⁴ ch'iang³*. *By force*, compulsory, per- . . . . . emptory.

毽 *Chien⁴*. . . . . A shuttlecock.

踢毽 *T'i¹ chien⁴*. To play shuttlecock,—using . . . . . the foot as a battledoor.

毬 *Ch'iu²*. . . . . *A (play) ball;* a balloon.

打毬 *Ta³ ch'iu²*. . . . . To play ball.

棋 *Ch'i²*. . . . *Chess;* checkers, fox and geese, etc.

下棋 *Hsia⁴ ch'i²*. . . . . To play chess, etc.

暴 *Pao⁴*. A scorching heat: stormy; cruel, *vio-* . . . . *lent*, oppressive.

暴打 *Pao⁴ ta³*. . . . . To beat violently.

惡打 *O⁴ ta³*. . . . . To beat cruelly.

頓 *Tun⁴*. To bow the head, to stamp; a resting . . . . . place; to rest; a meal; a turn, *a time;* a stop, a period; staccato:—Les. 64.

鄰居 *Lin² chü¹*. . . . . A neighbor, neighbors.

折蹬 *Chê² têng⁴*. To harass; to persecute; *to* . . . . . *use up*, to destroy.

盤弄 *P'an² nung⁴*. To coil up; to entangle; to . . . . . embarrass; to use up.

飛 *Fei¹*. . . . . *To fly*, to go swiftly; sudden.

處 *Ch'u³*. To dwell; to occupy the place of; *to at-* . . . . *tend to;* to do what is proper. See *ch'u⁴*.

調處 *T'iao² ch'u³*. To rearrange; *to adjust or* . . . . . *compromise a quarrel.*

調說 *T'iao² shwo¹*. To arrange terms of com- . . . . . promise, to make peace.

NOTES.

3 罰 usually means simply punishment, but here, being contrasted with 打, it is used to signify *a fine*. It is not an uncommon thing for officials to give light offenders the choice of a beating or a fine.

4 This is the language of one who is acting as mediator. It is a common thing for the offender to make amends by giving a feast to the parties interested.

6 紙撚 here refers to the little paper strings which all Chinese teachers know how to make, and which they use to bind small books for temporary use.

8 束脩 is only applied to the salary of a teacher. It is derived from the ancient custom of making presents of meat, etc., instead of paying a salary in money.

10 心焦 不焦 is the Central and Southern form. In this case 心焦 does not form a phrase, as it does in the other form.

14 不讓 here means, as it often does, *to resent forcibly, to call to account and demand satisfaction.*

15 The force of 那裡 is very hard to transfer to writing in English. It can only be expressed by the tone of surprise and indignation given to the English words.

16 Chinese boys play ball very little. Their chief game with a ball consists simply in striking the ball with the hand time after time, so as to keep it rebounding from the ground.

17 Chinese women generally speak of, or to, their husbands through the names of their children. 不肯 is a forcible way of expressing that the child is unmanageable.

18 水盡鵝飛 *Water exhausted and goose flown,*—a figure to express the utter exhaustion of resources; *bankrupt.*

Digitized by Google

第十六課

○ 你隨[13]有今、罷。罷。做、答靜悄[1]
打[16]快你黙說○○我請。靜悄
死走罷、症也你[9]有[7]不○兒
他、罷。你候無放話能想[4]的
不○看罷。益。心快讓是罷。
過壺[15]着○○罷、快你、有○
償裏好陰[12]你[11]不的答人你[2]
他的就凉這能說你得管
的水好。兒樣哄罷。不罪你
命殼○裏黃黑你。○讓他的
罷不這[14]坐皮乾○他[8]罷。了罷。
了。殼、裏着刮枯罷[10]實○罷。○
○答是凉凉瘦瘦了、在改[6]○請[3]
閒[17]殼住凉快的、事不日你[5]兩
着了家罷。必到借、再這便
再罷。的、○是如就見麼罷、

Translation.

1 Keep quiet.
2 Do you mind your own business.
3 Well, good day. *Ans.* Good day.
4 I think some one must have offended him.
5 If you act in this way I will have to demur. *Ans.* Demur as much as you like.
6 We will see each other again.
7 If you have anything to say, say it quickly.
8 If he positively will not lend, so be it.
9 Do not be alarmed, I shall not deceive you.
10 Let it go. After the matter has come to this pass, it would be useless to speak of it.
11 You have such a sallow and shrivelled look. It must be that you have some ailment.
12 Sit down in the shade and cool off.
13 As you like: if you are content, it is all right.
14 This is a private house. Please go out at once.

LESSON LX.

The Final Particle 罷.

罷 is a final particle of great expressiveness, and with a wide variety of uses. It does not always stand at the close of a sentence, but it generally, if not always, marks the end of an idea. The following is an approximate classification of its uses:—

1 It emphasizes an injunction (9), or an invitation (12), or command. (1) (14)

2 It softens a command. (34) (38)

3 It asks a question which is coupled with a doubt. (20) (38)

4 It modifies an assertion by suggesting a doubt, (15) (38), or a query. (4) (28)

5 It marks a conclusion more or less definite. (13) (19)

6 When specially emphasized it marks a peremptory decision (8), or expresses defiance. (5)

7 Followed by 了, it emphasizes a decision. (10) (16)

8 When repeated (sometimes trebled), it becomes an exclamation expressing impatience (32), or a concession. (36)

9 Repeated with 了, it expresses impatience (26), or surprise. (40)

10 When followed by 呀, it becomes a term of importunate, or peremptory entreaty. (29)

Though the use of 罷 is well recognized in general Mandarin, yet its use in Western Mandarin is limited. In the larger number of the sentences in the lesson a Chung-k'ing teacher changed the 罷 to 嗎, the propriety of which it is impossible to reconcile with general Mandarin.

Vocabulary.

罷 *Pa*[4]. To cease, to stop; to discontinue; to ..... finish. A particle used to emphasize a command, etc.:—see Sub.

改日 *Kai*[3] *ji*[4]..... Another day, *again.*

枯 *K'u*[1]... Decayed, rotten; withered, *dried up.*

枯瘦 *K'u*[1] *shou*[4]..... Lean, *shrivelled,* thin.

刮 *Kwa*[1]. To pare, *to scrape;* to rub; to even ..... off; to scrape by or against.

Digitized by Google

是 來 ○ 了、逞 試 ○ 可 願 來
罷。了 誰[28]你 强。看 你[22]以 意、說
○ 罷。說 眞 ○ 罷、的 罷。就 話
快[30]○ 話 算 現[25]若 病 ○ 是 罷。
拉 罷[29]這 好 成 是 好 你[21]這 ○
倒 呀 麼 的。的 不 了 實 麼 不[18]
罷、老 大 ○ 便 行 沒 在 樣着 用
管 爺、的 不[27]飯、再 有、不 罷。送、
閒 限 喉嚨用 將 說。答 肯、○ 都
事 我 嚨子、着 就 ○ 現 有 今[20]請
還 十 必 急、喫 過[24]在 甚 兒 回
有 天 是 再 點 的得 算 麼 夜 罷。
甚 的 那 少 兒 去 好 法 裏、○
麼 期限 個 等 罷。就 了 子 我 若[19]
上便 罷、討 一 ○ 罷 罷。你 住 是
算宜 答 厭 會 罷[26]了、○ 去使 在 你
嗎。好、的、兒 了 不 先[23]使去 這 們
○ 就 又 罷。罷 可 試 罷。裏 都

15 Is the water in the kettle sufficient? *Ans.* I think so.
16 If I kill him, I have only to give my life for his.
17 When you have time come again and [chat a while.
18 You need not escort me. Please return.
19 If you are all willing, so let it be.
20 Can I stay here over night?
21 If you are still dissatisfied; then go and do your uttermost.
22 Are you quite recovered from your illness? *Ans.* Yes, practically.
23 First try it, and if it will not work we'll consider further.
24 If you can at all put up with it, it will be better to drop the matter and not push it to extremes.
25 Common fare, ready to hand. Waive a point and eat a little.
26 Well done! Good for you!
27 Do not get impatient; wait just a little longer.
28 Who is it that is speaking with such a stentorian voice? It must be that that hateful fellow has come again.
29 Come now, Your Excellency, allow me ten days time. *Ans.* All right. So be it.

黑乾枯瘦 *Hē*[1] *kan*[1] *k'u*[1] *shou*[4]. Sallow and ..... shrivelled.

黃皮刮瘦 *Hwang*[2] *p'i*[2] *kwa*[1] *shou*[4]. Yellow and ..... thin.

症 *Chêng*[4]..... A chronic disease, a malady.

症候 *Chêng*[4] *hou*[4]. Disease, *ailment;* complaint; ..... malady.

陰凉 *Yin*[1] *liang*[2]..... Shade, shady.

凉快 *Liang*[2] *k'wai*[4]. *To cool off:* cool; refresh- ..... ing; chilly.

償 *Ch'ang*[2]. To pay back, to indemnify; to atone; ..... *to replace.*

請回 *Ch'ing*[3] *hwei*[2]. Please return; good day, ... good-bye.

逞强 *Ch'êng*[3] *ch'iang*[2]. To rely on one's strength ..... or prowess; *to push to extremes;* to stake on one supreme effort.

便飯 *Pien*[4] *fan*[4]..... Ordinary food.

嗓 *Sang*[3].... *The throat;* larynx; the windpipe.

呀 *Ya*[1].... A final emphatic particle:—Les. 61.

期 *Ch'i*[1,2]. A set or fixed time; *time,* period, ... season; to expect, to hope for.

拉倒 *La*[1] *tao*[3]. To desist, to give up, to drop; to ..... cease, to be all over with; stop it, enough! begone!

颺 *Yang*[2]. Driven by the wind; whirled; *to win-* ..... *now;* to publish; to waft.

場 *Ch'ang*[2]. *A threshing floor;* a time:—Les. 64. ..... A classifier:—Les 100. See *ch'ang*[3].

颺場 To winnow the grain on the threshing floor by tossing it up in the face of the wind, which thus blows the chaff away from the grain.

簸 *Po*[3]..... To clean grain with a 簸箕.

簸 *Po*[4]..... *A winnowing fan;* a dust pan.

箕 *Ch'i*[1], *chi*[1]..... *A wicker scoop,* a dust pan.

簸箕 *A wicker scoop for cleaning grain;* a dust pan.

罷休 *Pa*[4] *hsiu*[1]. To cease, to give up; to drop, ... *to pay no attention to.*

饒 *Jao*[2]. Abundant; surplus; indulgent; to favor, ... to excuse, *to overlook;* to pardon.

瑟 *Sê*[4]..... A lute.

約瑟 *Yüe*[1] *Sê*[4]..... Joseph.

趁 *Ch'ên*[4]. To avail of, to embrace, to improve ..... an opportunity.

一面 *I*[1] *mien*[4]. One face, one side; *once.*

Digitized by Google

該[31]給你多少錢、纔算公道、答不要緊、先生看着罷、○罷[32]要罷罷、就在這裏住下罷。○我[33]要不待他罷、又怕他來、待等他罷、又怕他不來。○沒[34]有風怎麼颳場呢、答實在沒有風、就用簸箕簸罷。○知[35]道就說知道、不知道就說不知道罷了、撒謊作甚麼呢。○他[36]罵你、你就罷罷休了嗎、答知道罷了、他是喝醉了、看他父親的面上、饒了他罷。○孩[37]子在外頭哭、你去叫他來家來罷。○燒[38]的水開了沒有、答開了罷、回開了就拿來罷。○聽[39]說街上的魚很便宜、我去買幾斤罷、答好、若是眞便宜、買個十來斤罷。○罷[40]了罷了、我兒子約瑟還在、趁着我還沒死、要去見他一面。

30 Drop it at once. Is there anything to be gained by meddling in other people's business?

31 How much do you consider that I ought in justice to give you? *Ans.* It is not important: whatever you please.

32 So be it then. Let us stop here.

33 If I do not wait for him, I fear he may come. On the other hand, I fear if I wait for him, he may not come after all.

34 How can one winnow without wind? *Ans.* If there really is no wind, then use a winnowing fan to clean it.

35 If you know, then say so; and if you do not know, say so. Why do you lie about it?

36 When he reviles you, do you pay no attention? *Ans.* Oh, he's drunk. For his father's sake I will overlook it.

37 The child is out of doors crying. Do you go and call him into the house.

38 Is the water you are heating boiling? *Ans.* I think so. *Reply.* If it is, then bring it in.

39 I hear that in the market, fish are very cheap. Shall I go and buy a few catties? *Ans* All right; if they are really cheap, you may buy ten or more catties.

40 Well, well; my son Joseph is still alive. I will go and see his face before I die.

Notes.

3 This is a polite form of leave taking, but is not much used in common life. The meaning is, let each follow his own convenience.

4 Or, *It must be that some one has offended him.*

6 Another form of leave taking, more or less indicative of friendship. The first two characters are often omitted, and 再見罷 used alone. The Chinese affords no words answering to our admirable words, "good-bye," and "farewell."

11 症候 is used in some places in the sense of *a plague or contagious disease*, but its general use is as given above.

12 This is the greeting of one sitting in the shade, to a passer-by.

14 住家 *Live home*, i.e., *a private residence.*

16 Such foolish and reckless language as this is not infrequently heard from the Chinese.

17 The common language of a woman to a caller who is about to leave.

18 This is the language of a guest, politely declining the honor of being escorted to the gate (or further) by the host. The 都 is not distinctly given in the translation. Its use implies that several persons were addressed.

21 使去 In this case 去 is not an auxiliary verb, but both 使 and 去 are principal verbs, so that 使去 and 去使 are quite equivalent. In Shantung 使 would generally be used alone, without 去.

23 In conversation the 若是 would often be omitted.

24 得 is the more common and more correct form.

25 This is the language of a housewife, or a host, to a casual guest happening in at meal-time.

26 This style of speech might also be used ironically. in which case it should be translated, *Yes, yes, no doubt you're a prodigy.*

29 We have illustrated in this sentence how 就是 is used in a reply. See Les. 44, Sub.

33 罷 here expresses most forcibly the indecision and hesitation of the speaker.

36 The double 罷 in the reply has a peculiar force, which no one English word will express. It marks the apologetic purpose of the speaker to let the matter pass.

38 燒的水 is put for 你所燒的水, *the water which you are heating.*

40 罷了罷了 renders Jacob's expression of mingled satisfaction and surprise with admirable force.

Digitized by Google

第十六課

我[1]得要是[5]快裏[8]家不[7]早着開[12]日給[12]叫
走[1]那是都[5]快念[4]我[4]的[4]們[4]的[4]在[4]就[4]是得[4]
喇。麼的[2]罷。你[2]生○[2]要[2]管[2]你[2]的[2]話[2]起[2]身[2]走[2]頂[2]哪、[2]
○[2]着的先[2]○[2]背[2]我[2]你[2]誰[10]的說[2]書[2]們[2]的[2]在[2]就[2]是得[2]
好[3]父來[3]○[3]去[3]回[3]答[3]他[9]去回[3]的[3]○[3]
○[3]快[3]縫[6]上[3]咯。[3]
○[3]快[3]要[3]背[3]我[3]你[3]
○[3]天[3]是[3]得[3]
你[2]○[2]生罷。[2]
○[2]說你啊。[2]
偏[2]响[2]罷。[2]會喇、好罷。麼喇。[2]
午[2]○[2]
西[2]錯我[11]罷得[2]
你、中得了、幾咧。趕不[7]要[2]
你喇、可句[2]
聽你以話誰[10]的說書們的[2]
明去起把敲走喇、咧喇。在就[2]
白罷。身他門啊。你[2]
喇。○走頂哪、○快纔[6]上咯。[2]
○若[14]喇。回答他[9]去回的○[2]
家[15]再○去我不罷。來父好[3]
裏來、已[13]咯。啊、過○嗎、啊。啊、

Translation.

1 I must go (or, I am going).
2 It will be enough for you to attend to your own business.
3 All right. So let it be.
4 Our Father which art in heaven.
5 Get your lesson quickly. The teacher is just now going to hear it.
6 Have you just now returned? Are they all well at home?
7 Stop talking and go at once.
8 It is getting late; you should be off immediately.
9 He simply depends on his fluency of speech.
10 Who is knocking? *Ans.* I am. Make haste and open the door.
11 With a few words I silenced him.
12 It is past noon. We had better be going.
13 Having given you this much, you ought to be satisfied. Be off with you.
14 If you come again, I'll have the policeman drive you off. Do you understand?

LESSON LXI.

Euphonic Endings.

Mandarin abounds in final particles, used to round off the close of the sentence, or to emphasize certain ideas and emotions. It is very difficult to define or distinguish these particles accurately in English. Their proper use can only be acquired by imitation, and by close attention to the manner in which the Chinese use them. The usage also varies not a little in different places. Few, if any, foreign speakers use them as much as the Chinese do.

喇 A final particle indicating completion. It is not essentially different from 了, when 了 is used as a simple final at the end of a clause or sentence and pronounced (as it always is in practice) *la*. There is in fact no certain principle to guide as to which character should be used in any given case, and the usage of different places and teachers differs widely.

咯 A final particle indicating certainty, but in practice not distinguishable from 喇. Teachers vary much in the use of this character.

啊 A final sound having a variety of uses:—
1 It concludes a formal address or an invocation. (4) (29)
2 It concludes an inquiry. (6) (17)
3 It emphasizes an injunction or a declaration. (8) (30)

哪 A final particle very nearly if not quite equivalent in meaning and use to 啊. Careful observation of the use of this particle points to the conclusion that it is simply a variation in sound from 啊, occasioned by the preceding word ending in the letter *n*. Notice how in (29) and (30) the two words change places, for no apparent reason save the ending of the preceding word.

咧 A euphonic ending which in the North is used only after 罷. (9) (19) In the South it is sometimes used instead of 喇. (5)

哩 A final particle found occasionally in books, but not used colloquially in the North. It is sometimes heard in the South instead of 喇. (16) (26)

呀 A final particle giving a strong emphasis, either to an inquiry (21), or to an assertion. (25)

哇 A final particle sometimes used instead of 啊, to emphasize an assertion or an injunction.

Digitized by Google

○麼話算不出○你[17]門鎖着
你[23]俊罷、是按去你[18]要都進門哪、
沒俏、你豎伸着晾看和我去坐罷、我
喫麻是得道理這些衣塊兒走啊、媽帶
早俐、願大理行些衣裳、兒罷、答着
飯能意拇行○他[19]裳、都答鑰匙
罷、幹、呀、指嗎。也長我們走
答料是頭○是了不坐着
沒理不的像[20]個還是哩、請[16]
家呢、家願喇。你人霧翳白要喇。○
那務、意○這翳毛毛先走
裏眞呀。請[21]樣的咯、快哪。
有是○說爽爽人、還拿○
哇、好他[22]快可能
○喇。這撇

15 The house is locked up and my mother has gone away with the key.
16 Will you please walk in and be seated? Thanks; we will not sit down.
17 Do you wish to go with us, or do you prefer to go ahead?
18 See, these clothes are all moldy. Take them out at once and air them.
19 He also is a man. Will he then act contrary to reason?
20 A man like you may be considered as having a will of his own.
21 Please speak to the point. Are you willing or not willing?
22 She is so graceful, so quick and so capable, and manages the household admirably.
23 Have you not had your breakfast? *Ans.* No. Where have I anything to eat?
24 A youth becomes a man at sixteen, and he is now seventeen; can he then be considered small?

VOCABULARY.

咯 *Lo*[4]. A final particle taking the place of ..... 喇:—see Sub.

啊 *A*[1], *E*[1]. ... A common final particle:—see Sub.

咧 *Lie*[1,3]. The chatter of birds; a final particle:—see Sub.

哪 *Na*[1,4]. ..... A final particle:—see Sub.

哩 *Li*[1,4]. A final particle found in books, and ..... used in South China.

哇 *Wa*[1]. To retch, to vomit; a final particle:— ..... see Sub.

趕快 *Kan*[3] *k'wai*[4]..... Quickly, make haste.

轟 *Hung*[1]. Any rumbling noise—as thunder; .....to blast, to explode; to hustle or *drive off*; to eject; to blow up.

翳 *I*[1]. To screen, to intercept; to overshadow; .....a screen; *a flake, a pelliele, a coat.*

霉 *Mei*[2]. ... Humid, damp; *moldy*; mildew.

霉翳 Mold.

翳毛 *I*[1] *mao*[2]..... Mold.

白毛 *Pai*[2] *mao*[2]..... Mold.

晾 *Liang*[4]..... To dry in the open air, to air.

拇 *Mu*[3]..... *The thumb*, the great toe.

大拇指頭 *Ta*[4] *mu*[3] *chi*[3] *t'ou*[2]. The thumb, the ..... great toe.

爽撇 *Shwang*[3] *p'ie*[1]..... Quick, prompt. (s.)

俏 *Ch'iao*[4]. Similar; handsome, *pretty*; sprightly, ...nimble.

俊俏 *Chün*[4] *ch'iao*[4]. Handsome, pretty, elegant, ... *graceful.*

麻 *Ma*[2]..... Hemp; *quick*, sprightly, lively.

麻俐 *Ma*[2] *li*[4]..... Ready; *quick*; clever.

料理 *Liao*[4] *li*[3]..... *To manage*, to regulate.

務 *Wu*[4]. To labor strenuously, to attend to; con- ..... cerns; duty, *affairs*; must; necessary.

家務 *Chia*[1] *wu*[4]. *Household affairs*, family du- ..... ties; family.

沒家 *Mo*[4] *chia*[1]. A corrupt form of 沒有:— .....Note 23.

手爐 *Shou*[3] *lu*[2]. A brazier for warming the ..... hands.

老成 *Lao*[3] *ch'éng*[2]. Experienced, prudent, *dis- ..... creet, staid.*

穩重 *Wen*[3] *chung*[4].....Sedate, gentle, *steady.*

姻 *Yin*[1]. A bride, a betrothed girl; *affinity*; rela- ..... tionship.

姻緣 *Yin*[1] *yüen*[2]. The fate or affinity which ..... brings lovers together; *a match.*

天理 *T'ien*[1] *li*[3]. The law of heaven, the prin- ..... ciples of right, moral truth.

Digitized by Google

十[24]六歲成丁、他現在已經十七喇、這還算小嗎。○王[25]大哥在家裏嗎、答沒在家呀、問沒在家上那裏去喇、答趕集去喇。○那[26]個人講究的很哩、喫要喫好的、穿要穿好的。○聽[27]說你四百錢買了一個手爐、是新的啊、是舊的呢、答是個半新不舊的。○那[28]撒毋耳、少年老成、也聰明、也穩重。你若把女兒給他、眞是好姻緣喇。○李[29]四啊、爲人都有個天理良心哪、你這樣蹧蹋好人、是有罪的呀。○張[30]三哪張三、我們姓張的臉、都叫你自己丟了啊。

25 Is brother Wang at home? *Ans.* No, he is not at home. *Ques.* If he is not at home where has he gone? *Ans.* He has gone to market.

26 That man is very stylish; he insists on having high living and fine clothes.

27 I hear you have bought a hand stove for four hundred cash. Is it a new one or an old one? *Ans.* It is second hand, but as good as new.

28 That young man Samuel is discreet, clever and steady; if you give him your daughter it will certainly be an excellent match.

29 Li Sï! all men have a heaven-implanted conscience for the guidance of life. In thus wronging a good man you are committing a sin.

30 Chang San! Chang San! Alas, you have brought disgrace on our whole Chang family.

NOTES.

2 and **13**. The use of 得, as in these sentences, is decidedly Pekingese, though understood elsewhere, and occasionally used. 中 is used in many places in the same way, but is not *t'ung-hsing*.

5 背書 usually means *to recite*, but here it is used causatively, meaning to cause to recite; i.e., *to hear the recitation*.

9 In speaking the words 說罷咧, the two latter must be joined closely to the first and to each other, like a word of three syllables accented on the first.

11 頂回去. It is implied that the other party came with a plausible story, when a few words served to "shut him up."

14 轟你. *Shoot you out;* i.e., *drive you out or off.* A Northern word.

20 伸得大拇指頭 *To put up an erect thumb.* The Chinese hold up the thumb as a sign of resolution or of defiance; hence the meaning of this phrase.

21 In many places two 呢 would take the place of the final particles here used.

23 沒家 is a corrupt form of 沒有 used as a reply, the 家 being in most places pronounced *ka* or *ké*. It is much used in Central Mandarin. 沒呢 is used in many places in the North, but is not *t'ung-hsing*. See Les. 89.

24 成丁 *To become a man.* A youth is supposed to attain to manhood at sixteen,—to be capable of taking a wife, bearing arms, etc.

26 講究 is here used, as in the South, in the sense of 體面.

27 A 手爐 is a small brazier with a perforated cover for holding live coals. It is used for warming the hands in cold weather

LESSON LXII.

相 THE AUXILIARY OF RECIPROCITY.

相 To inspect,—is placed before the verb to which it is auxiliary. It may be joined with any transitive verb, and in most cases gives the idea of *mutual or reciprocal*. In some cases it is reflexive, and in others it simply strengthens the idea of the verb and makes up the euphony of the sentence. The idea of reciprocity is often strengthened by the addition of 互. As an auxiliary 相 is used both colloquially and in books.

Digitized by Google

第六十二課

我[1]來有一點事相求。
兩個人的面貌相似。
該[5]定規在那個地方相會。
相反。不[7]許身的他們都是相打。
相商。○[9]那[10]過去、有的事正○這[3]
做相隔不遠。這[11]兩個脈、相通的。
說好人、看[12]我的話。
意就罷、多[13]一點也不能[14]
差不過一寸。○[15]
○老[17]兄所說的、他[16]和我的意見相同。○
能相二相人、該○話、在半路上相合。
夫[14]妻目相個人、○一[8]請[8]老[10]兩[2]
怒[11]目兩個人、○我[6]的爺性、過和你相遇、
這[11]兩個人、○坐的着談談、很相合。
的事正○這[3]
他[2]們倆人、互相安慰。
大[4]家互相慰。
○
○

Translation.

1 I have come to make a request of you.
2 They two mutually comfort each other.
3 These two persons' faces resemble each other.
4 They all sat down and talked together very agreeably.
5 We should decide where we will meet.
6 My natural disposition is exactly the opposite of yours.
7 Do not allow them to rail at and fight with each other.
8 Will your honor please go over? There is something to be consulted about.
9 The circulation of the blood is connected throughout the whole body.
10 Those two places are not far apart.
11 The language of those two men does not at all agree.
12 Do you look upon me angrily because I am good.
13 Meeting on the road as we did, we could not speak at length.
14 Husband and wife should mutually help each other.
15 If you are not willing, that is the end of it: I will not force you.
16 The two sisters do not differ in height by more than an inch.
17 What you say agrees with my opinion.

Vocabulary.

相 *Hsiang*[1]. To inspect; mutually, reciprocally; .....by turns:—see Sub. See *hsiang*[4].

互 *Hu*[4]..... *Reciprocal, mutual;* responsive; with.

慰 *Wei*[4]... To soothe, *to comfort*, to tranquilize.

安慰 *An*[1] *wei*[4]..... To appease, *to comfort.*

面貌 *Mien*[4] *mao*[4]. *The face*, countenance, physiognomy, looks.

相似 *Hsiang*[1] *si*[4]..... Similar, *to resemble.*

相得 *Hsiang*[1] *tê*[2]. Pleased; *agreeable;* suited, gratified.

秉 *Ping*[3]. To grasp, to maintain; imparted by Heaven; *natural.*

秉性 *Ping*[3] *hsing*[4]. Nature; *natural disposition*, temperament.

脈 *Mo*[4]..... *The pulse;* streaks or veins; descent.

血脈 *Hsüe*[4] *mo*[4]. The blood, *the circulation of the blood;* race; life blood.

怒 *Nu*[4]..... *Anger*, passion, rage; incensed.

怒目相看 *Nu*[4] *mu*[4] *hsiang*[1] *k'an*[4]. To look at angrily. (w.)

意見 *I*[4] *chien*[4]..... *Opinion*, idea, notion.

妻 *Ch'i*[1]..... A wife, a consort. Also *ch'i*[4]

反悔 *Fan*[3] *hwei*[3]. To break a contract or promise; *to repudiate.*

天然 *T'ien*[1] *jan*[2]..... Natural, *instinctive.*

性情 *Hsing*[4] *ch'ing*[2]. Disposition, temper; *nature;* properties.

相好 *Hsiang*[1] *hao*[3]. *Friendly*, on good terms, intimate.

端 *Twan*[1]. The origin, the end, the extremity; elementary principles; *correct*, upright; grave, modest. A classifier:—Les. 140.

Digitized by Google

常[18]在一塊兒辦事、不可相欺。○那[19]是兩相情願的事、
還能反悔嗎。○他們[20]大家都是相親相愛的。○父[21]母
和兒女相親、這是天然的性情。○我[22]已經給他賠過
不是、如今照常相好。○你[23]和有益的朋友相交、將來
品行就端方了。○弟[24]兄們有了東西、應該相讓、不該
相爭。○你[25]的忠言、和他的私慾、兩不相投。○前[26]言不
達後語、就是說、前後的話不相符合。○凡[27]是相敬相
信的朋友、來往都是相迎相送。○今[28]有張王二人、同
時起身、走一條路、張姓一天走八十里、王姓一天走
七十五里、問過了五天、二人相隔若干里。

18 Constantly doing business together, we should not deceive one another.

19 That is something we mutually agreed to, and can it be repudiated?

20 They all love one another.

21 That parents and children should be attached to each other is an instinct of nature.

22 I have already made an apology, and now we are as friendly as ever.

23 If you associate with helpful friends your deportment will become correct.

24 When brothers get anything [in common] they should mutually prefer one another and not quarrel.

25 Your faithful words and his selfish desires do not harmonize.

26 Former words are inconsistent with subsequent language; that is to say, the first and last assertions do not agree.

27 All honored and faithful friends when visiting always meet each other on arrival and escort each other on departure.

28 Two men, Chang and Wang, started together to travel the same road. Chang traveled eighty *li* per day, and Wang seventy-five *li* per day; after five days how many *li* were they apart?

端方 *Twan*[1] *fang*.[1] . . . *Correct*, upright, proper.

忠 *Chung*[1]. Loyal, *faithful;* sincere; unselfish; . . . . . honest, upright.

慾 *Yü*[4]. . . . . Inordinate desire; lust; *covetous.*

私慾 *Sï*[1] *yü*[4]. . . . . Lust, desire; *selfishness.*

投 *Tou*[2]. To throw down or into; to deliver to; . . . . . to cast off; to have recourse to; to intrust; *to harmonize* with; to bid for.

達 *Ta*[2]. To pass through; to penetrate; *to corres-* . . . . . *pond;* to inform; to transfer to; to advance; all, everywhere.

符 *Fu*[2]. A check, a voucher; to correspond with, ... *to agree;* to verify; a charm.

符合 *Fu*[2] *hê*[2]. . . . . To correspond, *to agree.*

迎 *Ying*[2]. *To meet and receive as a guest;* to . . . . . meet, to occur; a meeting.

NOTES.

1 The use of 相 here implies that the request is one that concerns both the speaker and the person spoken to.

6 秉性 is slightly *Wên*.

12 怒目相看 is an expression in the book form, not used in colloquial.

15 能 here indicates moral ability, hence it is rendered *will*.

19 兩相情願 The introduction of 兩 intimates that there were two parties, both of whom were willing. The euphony of the sentence joins 相 with 兩 rather than with 情願 with which it is logically connected.

20 The compound verb 親愛 is here separated, and 相 used with each part. This is a common and very forcible idiom.

23 The sentiment of this sentence is based on a saying of Confucius in the Analects, 益者三友, 友直, 友諒, 友多聞, "*There are three friendships which are advantageous;—friendship with the upright; friendship with the sincere; and friendship with the man of much information.*"

26 前言不達後語 is *Wên* in style. Note how 言 and 語 are correlated.

27 If you know that a guest is coming, it is polite to go out and meet him, and when he leaves, politeness requires you to accompany him to the door, or to the gate, or, in special cases, a short distance on his way.

Digitized by Google

第六十三課

我[1]應我和
們當他不
兩[7]相聽[9]。幫○○帮。喇誰訴
彼此[8]我○[5]們的家、他也○是
兩彼此相分[4]你○[2]這麼一辦、
莊的人彼此愛。彼此。
他[11]沙口供、此沒○有照正是應。拉穿們彼此換。彼此我[8]○此都要將就一點○[3]朋友
的事、○肯人○們的家、彼此相愛。彼此。○你[4]這麼一辦、彼此我[8]○此都要將就一點○[3]朋友
也他[15]上彼沙[11]的人彼此愛。彼此。○你[4]這麼一辦、彼此我[8]○此都要將就一點○[3]朋友
要們坐。此景口彼此沒○有照正是應。拉穿們彼此換。彼此我[8]○此都要將就一點○[3]朋友
彼兩○對潤供、此沒○有照正是應。拉穿們彼此換。彼此我[8]○此都要將就一點○[3]朋友
此個、我[14]看、和正照是應。拉穿們彼此換。彼此我[8]○此都要將就一點○[3]朋友
包心先沒黃是應。拉穿們彼此換。彼此我[8]○此都要將就一點○[3]朋友
容裏把有桂彼○扯換。彼此我[8]○此都要將就一點○[3]朋友
忍彼你話香、此我[8]○此都要將就一點○[3]朋友
而[1]。此的說。彼相刁們當[6]倆、把要將就一點○[3]朋友
○懷話、○此賴賴。倆、把要將就一點○[3]朋友
常[17]恨。如他[13]賠○彼善將就一點○[3]朋友
在○此們禮、大[10]此事就一點○[3]朋友
一夫[16]如彼已家很彼一點○[3]朋友
塊妻彼此經彼合對此點○[3]朋友
兒、中都推和此脾勁談兒。朋[3]友
彼有告讓、好相氣兒。論。○友

Translation

1 There is no distinction of *meum* and *tuum* between us (i.e., all mine is his and his is mine).
2 By this arrangement both are satisfied.
3 Friends ought mutually to love each other.
4 You must forbear a little with each other.
5 Our two firms have no dealings with each other.
6 We should converse together on some profitable theme.
7 The people of the two villages assist each other.
8 We two are very well mated in disposition.
9 Judging from their testimony, they are just recklessly accusing each other.
10 They mutually help one another.
11 Sha Ching Jun and Hwang Kwei Hsiang mutually made apologies and were reconciled.
12 They all looked at each other but had nothing to say.
13 Each one declined in favor of the other, no one being willing to take the upper seat.
14 I first gave him a detailed account of what you said.
15 In their hearts they two hate each other.
16 When differences occur between

LESSON LXIII.

彼此, The Pronominal of Reciprocity.

When the words 彼 and 此 are used separately they mean, *that* and *this*, *there* and *here*, *then* and *now*, etc.; but joined together, as in this lesson, they mean *mutually*, *reciprocally*. They are much used in connection with 相, of the last lesson, one form strengthening the other. When followed by 都, they may be rendered *both*. There is no accounting for the order of these words. The natural order would certainly seem to have been 此彼. When they are separated, as in (14), the natural order asserts itself.

Vocabulary.

彼 *Pi*[3]. ... That, those; there; the other.
穿換 *Ch'wan*[1] *hwan*[4]. *Dealings*, intercourse, communication.
拉扯 *La*[1] *ch'ê*[3]. ... The same.
談論 *T'an*[2] *lun*[4]. *To converse*, to discuss, to argue, to debate.
勁 *Chin*[4]. Muscular, strong, robust; stiff; *disposition*, character. Also *ching*[4].
對勁 *Twei*[4] *chin*[4]. To suit, to be fitting; *agreeable*, appropriate.
供 *Kung*[1]. To confess; to testify; to declare; to make a deposition. Also *kung*[4].
口供 *K'ou*[3] *kung*[1]. ... *Testimony*, witness.
刁 *Tiao*[1]. Perverse, seditious; unscrupulous, *reckless;* wicked, artful.
刁賴 *Tiao*[1] *lai*[4]. *To accuse recklessly*, to recriminate, to implicate others.

Digitized by Google

此那能一點錯過錯過沒有呢。○他[8]們彼此的事、根本來歷我都曉得。[19]這個說是這麼樣、那個說是那麼樣、彼此都有話說。○海[20]角天涯、是彼此相隔很遠的意思。○那[21]時候、必有許多人厭棄我的道理、彼此互相陷害、互相怨恨。○—[22]家子、大是大、小是小、上是上、下是下、彼此相安。○無[23]論甚麼事情、若是太有理、人就不相信、剌你看我和李九那件事、明明他是無故的欺負我、到我去遞呈子的時候、官說必是我先得罪了他、兩家彼此有仇、他纔打我、後來那個呈子、到底不准。

husband and wife they should mutually bear and forbear.

17 Being constantly together, how can they avoid giving some little offence to each other?

18 I know perfectly the origin and history of their mutual affairs.

19 One says it was this way, and the other says it was that way; each has his own story.

20 "The corner of the ocean and the limit of heaven," expresses the idea that things are very widely separated.

21 At that time many shall reject my doctrine, and shall betray one another and hate one another.

22 When in a family great and small, superiors and inferiors, keep their places there is mutual harmony.

23 No matter what it is, if it be too plausible, men will not believe it. Look at that affair between me and Li the Ninth. Manifestly he abused me without cause; yet when I went to enter suit against him, the magistrate said I must have previously offended him so that there was enmity between us, on account of which he beat me; and so finally he refused to entertain the suit.

沙 *Sha*[1]. . . . Sand, gravel; reefs; gritty; friable.

潤 *Jun*[4]. To moisten, to bedew; to instill into; . . . . . to enrich, to benefit; increase, profits.

桂 *Kwei*[4]. . . . . Cinnamon; cassia.

香 *Hsiang*[1]. Fragrant; reputable; perfume; in- . . . . . cense. Much used in names.

賠禮 *P'ei*[3] *li*[3]. . . . To make amends, *to apologize.*

推讓 *T'wei*[1] *jang*[4]. To yield the precedence, to . . . . . give way to, *to decline.*

懷恨 *Hwai*[2] *hên*[4]. *To hate*, to cherish enmity, ... to hold spite.

包容 *Pao*[1] *jung*[2]. To be generous, to make al- . . . . . lowance for, *to forbear.*

過錯 *Kwoò*[4] *ts'oò*[4]. A fault, a transgression, *an* . . . . . *offence.*

錯過 *Ts'oò*[4] *kwoò*[4]. . . . . The same.

根 *Kên*[1]. Root; origin, source; cause; the base; . . . . fundamental. A classifier:—Les. 68.

根本 *Kên*[1] *pên*[3]. *Origin*, source; foundation; . . . . . proof, evidence.

歷 *Li*[4]. To pass over or through or away; to expe- . . . . . rience; arranged in order; *successive.*

來歷 *Lai*[2] *li*[4]. . . . Antecedents; *history;* annals.

涯 *Ai*[2], *yai*[2]. . . . . Bank, shore, water line; *limit.*

棄 *Ch'i*[4]. To throw away, *to reject;* to discard; . . . . . to abandon.

厭棄 *Yien*[4] *ch'i*[4]. *To reject with disdain*, to cast . . . . . off, to throw away.

陷害 *Hsien*[4] *hai*[4]. To victimize; to implicate; . . . . . *to betray.*

怨恨 *Yüen*[4] *hên*[4]. . . . . *To hate*, to detest.

遞 *Ti*[4]. . . . To transmit; *to hand in;* to change.

呈 *Ch'êng*[2]. To state to a superior, to present; . . . . . a plea, a suit, *an accusation.*

准 *Chun*[3]. To permit, to authorize, *to allow;* to . . . . . approve, to grant,—as a petition.

Digitized by Google

第六十四課

我[1]跑一喇[6]這都不可。了點
已了趟一○次。肯藍。以○鐘
經一喇[5]他。遭了。聽○○前[10]怎
商。邊○殺我○—[9]五麼
議○這[4]我叫我[7]頭[8]番年只
他兩欺下了子負回。○我太書、一眼一砸下
淨[2]不了。珠頓、回。煩還
白只鍋○子他算數兩[11]

Translation.

1 I have already consulted with him twice.
2 I had the whole trip for nothing.
3 He has imposed upon me not only this once.
4 I have lost my living this time.
5 I gave him a *meal* of disgrace.
6 He made me so angry this time that my eyeballs turned blue.
7 I exhorted him once, but he would not listen.
8 As a first effort at preaching it is very fair.
9 Time after time, it is too troublesome.
10 I came once five years ago.
11 It is two o'clock, how is it that it struck only one?

Notes.

1 To hold all you have at the service of your friend is the ideal friendship.

2 The 一 may be omitted, but the sentence is much more forcible with it.

5 家 is here used as "house" is used in English, to designate a business firm. 穿換 is used of the intercourse of business firms. Social intercourse is expressed by 來往. In some places 來往 is used in both senses.

8 The two forms here given are not precisely synonymous. 對勁兒 includes suitability in other respects besides disposition, to which 脾氣 is limited.

13 上坐 *To take the higher or more honorable seat.*

14 如此如彼 *As this as that;* i.e., *one by one in order.*

16 The use of 也 implies that the sentence is in addition to something which preceded it. It is from the Sacred Edict.

20 海角天涯 is a book phrase, occasionally heard in colloquial.

22 子 is not infrequently added to 家. 大是大小是小，上是上下是下 *Great is great and small is small, upper is upper and lower is lower;* i.e., *each knows and keeps his proper place.* This peculiar form of repetition represents a common idiom.

LESSON LXIV.

Adverbial Numerals.

一回 One return,—one time, once.

一次 One order,—one time, once.

一遭 One meet,—once. Much used in Northern and Central Mandarin, but rarely heard in the South.

一番 One repeat,—one turn or time, once.

一邊 One course,—one time, one. Often written 一轉. Authorities differ as to which is the proper character.

一下 One down,—a time, a stroke; at once.

一下子 At one time, at once.

一頓 One meal,—a spell, a time, once.

一合 One union,—a round, an onset, a tilt. Used chiefly in books, and applied to horsemen.

一發 One send off,—a time, once.

一程子 One road,—a spell, a while, a stage; the distance from one stopping place to another.

一陣 One burst,—a spell, a time.

一遍 One whole,—a round, a time, once.

一向 One direction,—a while, for some time; formerly.

一氣 One breath,—a spell, a heat, once.

一磨 One rub,—a time, once.

一場 One arena,—a time, a bout, a round.

These several terms are to some extent interchangeable, yet each has its own shade of meaning, and its appropriate place can only be learned by experience.

Other numerals than *one* may be joined with any of these words.

Digitized by Google

我[12]從小只看見過一回遭海市。○這[13]一遭我算認得你喇。○我[14]頓水餃子把肚子饊壞了。○我[15]看了一遍、不大難學。○我[12]從小只看見過一回遭海市。○這[13]一遭我算認得你喇。○我[14]頓扁食、把肚子饊壞了。○我[15]看了一遍、不大難學。○—[16]長毛賊第二番來、比頭一番還利害。○是[17]在這裏住下呀、還是再走一程呢。○二[18]位將軍、大戰了三十二合、沒分勝敗。○—[19]回相見一回老、能得幾時爲弟兄。○人[20]能點個翰林、也算不枉念了一回書。○他[21]做了一程氣出子買賣、把本錢都賠淨了。○我[22]種了一回牛痘、後來又生了一年這麼一遭、能不給大爺爺磕幾個頭嗎。○—[24]你[25]的心口還疼嗎、答早晨疼了一陣、現在又好了。○—[26]遭

12 From my youth I have only once seen the mirage.
13 I rather think I know you this time.
14 That mess of meat dumplings has overloaded my stomach.
15 I looked over it once, it is not very hard to learn.
16 The second time the long-haired robbers came they were worse than the first time.
17 Shall we stop here, or shall we go on another stage?
18 The two generals fought thirty-two tremendous tilts, and the victory was still undecided.
19 Each time we meet we are older; how little time there is for the enjoyment of fraternal affection!
20 If a man can attain the degree of Han-lin, he may consider that his life of study has not been in vain.
21 He went into business for a time, and lost all his capital.
22 I was vaccinated, and afterwards had the small-pox the natural way.
23 I wonder where brother Chang has drifted to by this time.
24 Should we not once in a year knock heads to your honor?
25 Does your stomach still pain you? *Ans.* It pained me a spell this morning, but is now well again.

VOCABULARY.

遭 *T'ang*[4]. To pass by; to fall; the track in ..... which horses run; *a time, a heat, a course, a row.*

番 *Fan*[1]. To repeat; to change; *a time, a turn;* ..... rude, uncivilized; foreign.

羞辱 *Hsiu*[1] *ju*[4]. To put to shame, to insult, *to* ..... *disgrace;* to outrage.

藍 *Lan*[2]..... *Blue;* indigo.

講書 *Chiang*[3] *shu*[1]. To expound the classics; to ..... discourse on a text; *to preach.*

數 *Soa*[4]. Worried, flurried, *distracted:*—see *shu*[4], ... and *shu*[3].

煩數 *Fan*[2] *soa*[4]..... Involved; *troublesome.*

響 *Hsiang*[3]. To resound; *to ring;* noise, clamor, ... echo.

海市 *Hai*[3] *shi*[4]..... The mirage.

扁食 *Pien*[3] *shi*[2]..... Meat dumplings.

餃 *Chiao*[3]..... Meat dumplings.

饊 *Ch'êng*[1]. To gormandize; the sense of op- ..... pression caused by eating too much, *to overload the stomach.*

將軍 *Chiang*[1] *chün*[1]. A commandant, *a general,* ..... a chieftain.

戰 *Chan*[4]..... *To fight,* to join battle; war.

勝 *Shêng*[4]. To get the victory; to excel; to rise ..... superior to, to sustain; adequate.

翰林 *Han*[4] *lin*[2]. A graduate of the third de- ..... gree, *a Han-lin.*

本錢 *Pên*[3] *ch'ien*[2]..... First cost; *capital.*

痘 *Tou*[4]..... The small-pox.

牛痘 *Niu*[2] *tou*[4]..... The cow-pox; *vaccine.*

Digitized by Google

兩遭熟、三遭就是老主顧。○這[27]一程走的太快、把我弄累乏倦了。○你[28]這一程子往那裏去來、怎麼沒有見你呢。○我[29]看他這一次來、比前一次還胖一點。○這[30]樣做一會歇一會、不如一氣做完了。○姓[31]張的那個老婆子、一磨一磨的常來聒擾我。○我[32]只打了他一下、他就儘量罵了我一頓、我也沒法兒還口。○[34]那一場麥子、已經打了兩遍、還沒打淨。○你[33]不用掛心、我先和他鬧一場再說。○[35]彗星出現、有幾年一次的、有幾十年一次的、有幾百年一次的。○這[36]孩子眞沒有個記性、昨兒個他媽爲他撒賴、打了他一大頓、今兒個他又忘記了。

26 The first time a stranger, the second time acquainted, and the third time an old customer.
27 I (or, we) have gone this stage too fast, I find myself quite wearied.
28 Where have you been for some time? How is it that I have not seen you?
29 In my opinion he is somewhat fatter than he was the first time.
30 This way of working a while and resting a while is not as good as to finish at one heat.
31 That old woman Chang comes constantly, time after time, and worries me.
32 I struck him only one blow, whereupon he exhausted his whole vocabulary of abuse upon me, and I was unable to get the better of him.
33 You need not be concerned; after I have had a bout with him we'll talk about it.
34 I have threshed that wheat on the floor twice, and it is not yet clean.
35 Comets appear, some once in several years, some once in several tens of years, and some once in several hundreds of years.
36 Truly this child has no memory. Yesterday his mother gave him a sound beating for his contrariness, and to-day he has forgotten it.

天花 *T'ien¹ hwa¹*..... The small-pox.
天喜 *T'ien¹ hsi³*..... The small-pox.
流 *Liu²*. To flow; to circulate, to diffuse; *to wander*, to become reckless; vagrant, shifting; a class, a set.
流落 *Liu² lo⁴*. To wander, to rove, to roam, *to drift;* a prodigal.
心口 *Hsin¹ k'ou³*.....The pit of the stomach.
主顧 *Chu³ ku⁴*..... *A customer;* a patron.
倦 *Chüen⁴*..... Tired, fatigued, *wearied.*
聒 *Sao¹*. To disquiet; to fidget; perturbed, ... grieved; the male of animals.
擾 *Jao³*. To incommode, *to embarrass;* to confuse, to annoy.
聒擾 *To harass*, to annoy; to embarrass.
儘量 *Chin³ liang⁴*. To carry to the uttermost, *to exhaust;* to do one's best.
腔 *Ch'iang¹*. A tune; the brogue or dialect of ..... a place; conceited, vain.
反腔 *Fan³ ch'iang¹*. To turn the tune, *to get the better of.*
還口 *Hwan² k'ou³*. To answer back, to retort, ... to rejoin.
回嘴 *Hwei² tswei³*..... The same.
掛心 *Kwa⁴ hsin¹*. To be anxious, *to be concerned about.*
彗 *Hwei⁴*..... A besom; *a comet.*
彗星 *Hwei⁴ hsing¹*. *A comet;* a star of ill omen.
出現 *Ch'u¹ hsien⁴*. *To appear;* to come forth, ... to manifest.
記性 *Chi⁴ hsing⁴*..... Memory.
撒賴 *Sa¹ lai⁴*. To pretend to be injured; to ..... impose upon, to levy blackmail; to importune; *to act contrarily.*

Digitized by Google

第六十五課

彊剛眞子彊剛青見說氣好。我[1]
纔纔不喇。會州一曹嗎、○出
走湊○說上起個操、這你[2]門
喇。巧、李[6]話、馬馬信曹幾纔纔
○他奇如○兒操年知回
他[7]等文今我[5]說、就還道來、
這了哥已纔學學到。强他家
麽你在經來臺院○的有裏
大一這成的初我[4]多個還
的點裏了時三方喇。倔沒
年多嗎、大候、日纔○彊安安
紀、鐘、答漢他從聽纔剛[3]脾置排

Translation.

1 I was away and have just returned, and have not yet put the house in order.

2 Have you just now found out that he is stubborn? He is much improved these last few years.

3 As soon as you speak of Ts'ao Ts'ao, he is at hand.

4 I have just now heard a report that the examiner will leave Ch'ing-chou [for this place] on the third.

5 When I first came he was just able to talk; now he has come to be a full grown man.

6 Is Mr. Li Ch'i Wên here? *Ans.* How very unlucky! He waited for you over an hour, and has just now gone.

Notes.

2 淨 is here translated *all*.

4 Lit., *I have smashed the kettle this time.* In China everything is cooked in a kettle, and to smash this kettle means nothing to eat. Used when one loses a position or opportunity on which his living depends.

6 The Chinese assert that when a man is filled with suppressed anger his eyes turn *blue*.

12 海市 *A sea market;* i.e., streets and people pictured in the clouds over the sea.

13 Said to one by whom you have been cheated, and meaning that you will be on your guard against him in the future.

14 For meat dumplings, 扁食 is the more proper and widely used term. 水 is added to 餃 because the dumplings are boiled in water. They are also called 煮餃子, and in Shantung *ku*[1] *tsi*[3]. 肚子 usually means the bowels rather than the stomach, but is here used indefinitely for both. It requires both *overloaded* and *disordered* to convey the meaning expressed by 饟壞了.

19 A saying which originated in the words of a celebrated official, reproving two brothers for going to law about the division of their father's estate.

20 The prime idea of seeking an education in China is to get a degree, and by this means become an official, and so get rich.

22 In many places the more familiar term for vaccination is 種花.

24 大爺 here means, not an uncle (as it usually does), but simply a man of wealth or high standing who has servants and other employés. In speaking, the accent is thrown on 爺. In the South 大爺爺 is used in the same way. "Your Honor," is only an approximate rendering. The occasion of the *k'ŏŭ t'ou* is probably the New Year, and is insisted on in expectation of a present.

26 The language of a shop-keeper to a new customer.

34 一場 does not here illustrate the lesson, being used in its primary and literal sense.

35 Comets are colloquially called 掃箒星, *broom stars*.

LESSON LXV.

The Immediate Past Limited by the Present.

纔 Just now, immediately preceding. In previous lessons **纔** has already been used in the sense of *before; in order that.*

剛 Just this moment. Not often used alone.

剛纔 or **纔剛** Just, just now, just this moment. The two forms are interchangeable. The former, perhaps, indicates the more immediate present. The former is preferred in the South, the latter in the North.

方 A little ago, just now; recently. **方** is not quite as colloquial as **纔**. It is also used like **纔** to mean *before; in order that.*

方纔 Just now, just a moment ago.

剛剛 Just this very moment. For still further emphasis the **剛剛** is sometimes preceded by **纔**, and sometimes followed by it. **方** and **纔** are not doubled as **剛** is.

彊 is used in the South in the same way and with the same sense as **剛** in the North. In Central Mandarin both forms are used, **剛** predominating:—See Les. 177.

Digitized by Google

他女人怎麼纔二十多歲呢、答這是後續婚弦。○我[8]昨天眞是好時運、一天也沒給叫雨淋着、纔剛到家、就[9]出屉鍋的饅頭、喫兩個再走罷。○借[10]光老先生、有一個背包袱的、從[11]多少日子、你就剛剛纔過去喇。答剛剛纔過去了沒有、嚷嚷吵吵着說媳婦、現在說中妥了沒有、答那裏說中妥了呢、剛纔有點邊兒、又叫仇人打了一頓、打破了頭楔喇。○你[12]這麼樣、他是不肯給出力的、必得在他手裏還[13]就是不怕拉饑荒、方纔已的行點賄賂纔行。○你又拉了這麼些、若[14]有知已的大離喇、你行點賄賂、就這麼樣、他是不肯給出力的、必得在他手裏還

7 When he is so old as this, how is it that his wife is just in her twenties? *Ans.* This is a second marriage.

8 I was very fortunate indeed yesterday. It did not rain on me the whole day; but I had barely gotten home when it began to rain heavily.

9 Rolls just from the kettle;—eat a couple before you go.

10 May I trouble you, old gentleman? Did a man carrying a bundle on his back pass by here? *Ans.* He has just this moment passed by.

11 You have been stirring round this long time to get a wife. Is it now satisfactorily settled? *Ans.* It is far from settled. Just when it was in a fair way to be arranged, it was broken up by an enemy.

12 Simply leaving matters thus, he will not make any exertion. It will first be necessary to put a bribe in his hand.

13 You are not the least afraid to run into debt. Having just now fairly paid up, you go again and contract all this debt.

VOCABULARY.

置 *Chï*[4]. To dismiss, to put aside; to establish; ..... to place, *to arrange;* to buy, to lay in.

安置 *An*[1] *chï*[4]..... To arrange, *to put in order.*

倔 *Chüe*[2,4]..... Obstinate, perverse, opinionated.

彊 *Chiang*[4]. *Stubborn*, impracticable, obstinate. ..... The same as 强. Also *chiang*[1].

倔彊 *Stubborn*, impracticable, mulish, headstrong.

彊 or 强 *Chiang*[1]. Barely; nearly, almost; scarcely, just, just now:—See *chiang.*[4] Peking teachers often write 將 for the meanings here given to 强, but 將, being everywhere *soft*, is not allowable where hard sounds are used.

曹 *Ts'ao*[2]. Officials; judge of appeals; a company, ... a class; sign of the plural in *Wên-li.*

曹操 *Ts'ao*[2] *Ts'ao*[1]. A famous brigand and ..... general:—See Note 3.

學院 *Hsüe*[2] *yüen*[4]..... A literary chancellor.

學臺 *Hsüe*[2] *t'ai*[2]..... The same.

青州 *Ch'ing*[1] *chou*[1]. A departmental city in ..... central Shantung.

婚 *Hun*[1]..... A bridegroom; to marry; *marriage.*

後婚 *Hou*[4] *hun*[1]..... A second marriage.

續 *Hsü*[4]. To second; to join on; to keep up; ..... tied together, continuous.

弦 *Hsien*[2]..... A lute or fiddle string.

續弦 To marry a second wife.

運 *Yün*[4]. To revolve; to move in a circuit; to ..... transport; a turn, a chance; luck, *lot.*

時運 *Shï*[2] *yün*[4]..... *Fortune*, luck.

淋 *Lin*[2]. To drop; *to wet,—as by rain;* to ..... sprinkle. Also *lin*[4].

沥 *Toa*[4]..... To drop, to drip; to wet, *to rain on.*

借光 *Chie*[4] *kwang*[1]. May I trouble you, please ..... Sir.

楔 *Hsie*[1]..... A wedge.

破頭楔 *P'o*[4] *t'ou*[2] *hsie*[1]. A wedge driven into ..... a crack or split.

搗 *Tao*[3]. To beat with a mallet, to pound in a ..... mortar; to reel, *to wind.*

搗翻 *Tao*[3] *fan*[1]. To tangle, to jumble, *to thwart,* ..... to knock to pieces.

賄 *Hwei*[4]..... Riches; *a bribe*, hush money.

賂 *Lu*[4]..... To bribe, to corrupt.

Digitized by Google

人、方可託他帶去、若沒有就罷。○我[15]病了剛
纔起來、身上一點力氣沒有、好歹扎掙着纔
走了去了。○我們今天走的早一點、起身的
時候、日頭彊剛彊剛出來。○聽[17]說那塊壞骨頭、跌
斷了腿、把我歡喜的沒法、這纔眞是現報喇。○纔
來的那位馬老爺、是個甚麼前程呢、答
是個世襲的守備。○人[19]當血氣方剛的時候、
應當自戒、不可和人爭鬥。○他[20]纔要伸手拿、
我就喝了一聲、一下把他嚇獃了、嘴裏亂哦
哦、也說不出句話來。

14 If you have a confidential friend, you may entrust it to him to bring; if not, no matter.

15 I have been ill and have just gotten up. I have no strength at all. It was only by special exertion that I was able to come.

16 We started a little earlier to-day. When we left the sun had but just appeared.

17 I am delighted beyond measure to hear that that worthless villain has fallen and broken his leg. Without doubt this is a manifest retribution.

18 What rank has that Mr. Ma who has just now come? *Ans.* He is a hereditary major.

19 When a man first attains the strength of his manhood, he ought to restrain himself, and not fight with people.

20 When he was on the point of putting forth his hand to take it, I gave one shout, which frightened him out of his wits. He muttered something with his lips, but was unable to say anything.

賄賂 *A bribe,* a present intended as a bribe.

拉空 *La*[1] *k'ung*[4]. ... To run in debt.

拉饑荒 *La*[1] *chi*[1] *hwang*[1]. To contract debts with ... no means of paying.

扎 *Cha*[2]. To brace up, to put forth effort, to ...strain. Also *cha*[1].

扎掙 *Cha*[1] *chêng*[4]. To brace oneself for a vig- ...orous effort, to put forth all one's strength; to try one's best.

現報 *Hsien*[4] *pao*[4]. Immediate and manifest ret- ...ribution.

前程 *Ch'ien*[2] *ch'êng*[2]. Honorary degree, rank, ... previous standing.

襲 *Hsi*[3]. Double, repeated; to attack by stealth; ...to plagiarize; *hereditary.*

世襲 *Shi*[4] *hsi*[3]. ... Hereditary rank.

守備 *Shou*[3] *pei*[4]. ... A military title, a major.

血氣 *Hsüe*[4] *ch'i*[4]. *Physical vigor,* constitution; ... the animal feelings, the flesh.

自戒 *Tsi*[4] *chie*[4]. *To restrain oneself;* temper- ... ance; watchfulness.

爭鬥 *Chêng*[1] *tou*[4]. ... *To fight,* to brawl.

哦 *Oa*[1]. ... To chant, to hum; *to mutter.*

NOTES.

3 曹操 was a noted usurper of the Han dynasty. For military strategy and unprincipled artifice and usurpation, he is the most noted character in Chinese history. The sentence is a saying analogous to, "Speak of the devil and he will appear."

4 起馬 or 上馬. *To start;*—a term only applied to officials, and no doubt fixed in the language when it was the custom of mandarins to travel on horseback. They now ride in chairs with four or eight bearers. Although not so said, it is fairly implied, that the examiner was starting *towards* the place of the speaker.

9 飛 is here used of the platter on which the rolls are laid in the kettle while steaming. The sentence is the call of a huckster by the wayside.

10 A question or inquiry preceded by some polite expression, such as is here used, will nearly always elicit a respectful reply. An abrupt question often fails to do so.

11 從多少日子 *From many days;* i.e., *for a long time.* 打破頭楔 *To make a crack or split by driving in a wedge,*—used metaphorically of one who interferes and breaks up or defeats any business or scheme. A Peking expression.

Digitized by Google

第六十六課

中[1]國每五年閏兩個月。
國孩子每五人親。
每各人各[4]每八三門。逢[3]你[2]各[2]
子門。逢[3]你[2]各[2]
你[7]八每[4]各
八每[4]各
每放樣人
放樣人
各[6]點兒。逢[3]
點兒。逢[3]
多式兒。逢[3]
式各○來○
少各○來○
各○來○
錢。樣衙[5]就各[2]
樣衙[5]就各[2]
的門該人
門。該人
○
人
我[8]都每敲叫的中[1]
們有。逢門。孩國
是○三○子每
你[7]八每[4]各五
各[9]多式兒。逢[3]
他[9]多式兒。逢[3]
他[9]多式兒。逢[3]
他

六、人 答 我[21]相 逢 這[17]就 把[14]各
我 從 我 們 同。三 個 咳 這 人。
要 那 那 這 ○ 六 事 嗽。幾 ○
算 兒 做 裏 我[20]九 情、○ 綹 王[13]
賬。分 莊 是 要 操 得 將[16]線、老
○ 手、兒 逢 賞 演。你 軍 各 爺
坡[24]各 上、四 你 ○ 自 不 歸 很
上 走 是 九 們 中[19]自己 各 下 各 憐
有 各 逢 趕 每 外 兒 馬、色。恤
王 路。五 集、人 各 去。各 ○ 人、
家 ○ 排 你 一 國、○ 自 每[15]有逢
的 每[23]十。們 塊 人 軍[18]奔 逢 求
花 逢 ○ 貴 洋 情 營 前 冬 必
園、禮 兩[22]莊 錢。自 中、程。天、應。
內 拜 個 呢、○ 然 每 ○ 我 ○

the audience room waiting on [his master's] call.

12 The teacher explains first principles; to practise them rests with the person himself.

13 Mr. Wang is very compassionate; he responds to every plea.

14 Take these few skeins of thread, and assort them according to their colors.

15 I have a cough every winter.

16 The generals did not dismount, but each pursued his own road.

17 This business requires that you should go yourself.

18 In the encampment they drill every third, sixth and ninth day.

19 In all countries, Chinese and foreign, human nature is necessarily the same.

20 I wish to make you each a present [of a dollar.

21 We here, hold markets on every 4th and 9th. How is it in your honorable village? *Ans.* In my unworthy village the markets are set for every 5th and 10th.

22 From that time the two separated, and each one went his own road.

綹 *Liu*[3]. . . . . A skein of silk.

冬 *Tung*[1]. . . . . *Winter;* the end; to store up.

咳 *K'ê*[2]. . . . . *To cough,* to hack. Also *hai*[1].

嗽 *Sou*[4]. . . . . *To cough;* to expectorate.

咳嗽 *To cough,* to hack and cough.

奔 *Pên*[1,4]. To run, to go; *to hasten;* to follow; . . . . . to be busy with; to fly, to hurry.

軍營 *Chün*[1] *ying*[2]. . . . . An encampment.

演 *Yien*[3]. Ample, extended, *to practise,* to ex- . . . . . ercise; to perform; to drill.

操演 *Ts'ao*[1] *yien*[3]. . . . . *To drill,* to parade.

自然 *Tsï*[4] *jan*[2]. That which exists or acts of . . . . . itself; natural, *necessary,* spontaneous; certainly, of course.

賞 *Shang*[3]. *To give a reward,* to confer on; a . . . . . prize, a reward.

做 *Pi*[4]. Bad; *unworthy;* a demeaning term for . . . . . *my, mine;* to stop, to close:—Les. 171.

分手 *Fên*[1] *shou*[3]. To go apart, *to separate;* to . . . . . take leave of.

異 *I*[4]. Different, diverse; unusual, *rare;* hetero- . . . . dox; to regard as strange, to marvel at.

酒病 *Chiu*[3] *ping*[4]. *Given to wine,* intemperate.

喝醉 *Hê*[1] *tswei*[4]. *To get drunk,* to become in- . . . . . toxicated.

佛 *Fê*[2], *Fu*[2]. . . . . Buddha.

忌 *Chi*[4]. To shun, *to avoid,* to keep aloof from; . . . . to dread; to dislike, to be jealous.

忌口 *Chi*[4] *k'ou*[3]. To refrain from eating meats, ... to fast.

戒口 *Chie*[4] *k'ou*[3]. . . . . The same.

揭短 *Chie*[1] *twan*[3]. *To find fault with;* to re- . . . . . proach for a fault; to publish the shortcomings of others; to slander.

防備 *Fang*[2] *pei*[4]. To prepare for; *to be on guard* . . . . . *against;* to be beforehand with.

巡 *Hsün*[2]. *To go round and inspect;* to patrol; . . . . . to cruise.

撫 *Fu*[3]. To rub, *to quiet;* to soothe; to cherish; . . . . to manage; to play,—as on a lute.

巡撫 The governor of a province.

閱 *Yüe*[4]. To examine, *to inspect;* look over; to . . . . . read over carefully.

閱邊 *Yüe*[4] *pien*[1]. To make a tour of inspection. . . . . Note 30.

公館 *Kung*[1] *kwan*[3]. An official stopping place, ... *a reception room;* a pub-

Digitized by Google

予 眞 敬 縣、倫 得 不 五、酒 有
過 有 意。都 也 病 可 就 就 各
日 守 ○ 得 就 就 彼 必 喝 種
予 節 三[31] 預 是 不 此 戒忌 醉 異
就 的 嫂 備 了。輕。揭 口口。了。草
是 心、予 公 ○ ○ 短。○ ○ 奇
了。我 不 館、巡[30] 我[29] ○ 各[27] 佛[26] 花。
每 要 大 撫 們 不[28] 人 道 ○
年 爲 小 下 各 常 說 兩 他[25]
帮 喫 官 來 自 有 出 家、有
你 穿 員、閱 防 病 各 每 個
五 作 也 邊、備、的 人 逢 酒
十 難、要 各 不 人、的 初 病、
兩 你 行 府 被 每 理 一 逢
銀 若 黜 州 他 逢 來、十 喝

23 I wish to settle accounts regularly every Saturday.
24 On the declivity is the flower garden of the Wang family in which is every kind of rare plant and curious flower.
25 He has a weakness for wine, so that every time he drinks it he is certain to get drunk.
26 The two sects, Buddhists and Taoists, require to abstain [from meat] every first and fifteenth of the month.
27 Let each man state his own case, and not each find fault with the other.
28 When one who is generally healthy gets sick, his sickness is always severe.
29 It behoves us each to be on his guard that he does not steal from us.
30 When the governor goes round on a tour of inspection, it is necessary for every prefect and magistrate to prepare reception rooms for him, and officers of all grades are expected to make presents.
31 My third sister-in-law, do not be troubled about food and clothing. If you really desire to remain a widow, I will help you each year, to the extent of fifty taels.

lic hall; the head-quarters of a company or society.

員 *Yüen*[2]. . . . . Any officer civil or military.

官員 *Kwan*[1] *yüen*[2]. *Officers of all ranks;* . . . . . grandees.

敬意 *Ching*[4] *i*[4]. An expression of respect, *a* . . . . . *present,* a largess.

嫂 *Sao*[3]. *An elder brother's wife;* a woman, a . . . . . lady, a matron.

作難 *Tsoo*[4] *nan*[2]. *To be in trouble,* to be embar- . . . . . rassed, to be in straits.

守節 *Shou*[3] *chie*[2]. To remain a widow, to be true . . . . . to a deceased husband.

Notes.

1 The month, in China, is determined by the changes of the moon, thus giving only about three hundred and fifty-four days to twelve months. In order to make up the loss, a month is intercalated as often as necessary,—about two in five years. The month intercalated varies, being settled by the Astronomical Board in Peking.

5 每逢三八; that is, the 3rd, 8th, 13th, 18th, 23rd and 28th of every month. This is the established custom in all yamêns. An indictment *may* be presented at other times by paying a special fee.

8 人 is to be understood after each 各. If fully expressed it would be 各人管各人的事.

12 The original reference is to the cultivation of virtue, but the sentence is often used, by accommodation, of ordinary learning, and even of manual skill.

16 This sentence, from a standard novel, is often quoted and applied to the affairs of ordinary life, 前程 being taken in its metaphorical sense.

21 In North China, markets are held in the cities and in all large villages once in five days, and those in the same vicinity are arranged so as not to come on the same days. Note the different form of expression when the market occurs on the fifth and tenth. This form is probably used to avoid the juxtaposition of five and ten, which would make fifty. When the month has only twenty-nine days, the market that would have come on the 30th comes on the first of the following month.

24 異草奇花 is a book expression but, as used in this connection, would be understood by most people.

26 家 here means a school or sect. When spoken of as a religious observance, 忌口 means to abstain from meats, but when used in connection with the administration of medicine, it means to abstain from anything that may be incompatible with the medicine. Abstinence from meats on the 1st and 15th is mostly confined to the priests, and is not always observed by them.

29 Lit.,—*that we are not stolen by him.* The meaning is, however, *that our goods are not stolen by him.* 也就是了 *The best we can do, etc.*

30 The 府, 州, 縣, are three grades of cities in a descending series. Each governor is expected to make a tour of

Digitized by Google

第六十七課

他[1]處不肯給人方便。
處不知不覺、都是往不清楚、多少差不多在月掙八吊錢、句張字年還得聽拉賬嗎。眞切的說話、回遭月[6]實回遭回[8]你[3]天人[2]
人都是那裏去眞是假。這[4]種[5]簾紙、整囫圇壯的過、說、
我們南沒有醜[9]事家可利、圖慣了。好人都能說的句句都是他[7]是。○話、○○○

中的大旨、我還記得、要章章都背出來、節節都講

就是說人要精於那一理。○俗[18]語說、必得專於那一樣件通、樣件樣件樣件樣件書[19]

下萬國、處處都是一樣。○俗[18]與[17]極必衰、衰極必與、天

家戶戶沒有不知道的。○我[16]本處人、都傳說他的事、家

的形勢、一一畫清。○然常常太平。○天下自然

兒子、好兄弟、天下的像、就和照的像差不多。○劉[13]景清很會畫畫、他所畫

的人、個個都齊鬍子。○若[14]天下個個是都是好

我都犯了、我的罪愆、高過我的頭頂。○凡[12]在回教

京的平常話、人人都這樣講。○神[11]的十條誡、條條

10 *T'si ti* is a common phrase with us in Nanking; every one uses it.

11 I have broken all the ten commandments of God. My sins have gone over the top of my head. [square.

12 Every Mohammedan cuts his beard

13 Liu Ching Ch'ing is very good at painting pictures. The portraits he paints are almost equal to photographs.

14 If all in the world were good sons and good brothers, the world would, of course, be always peaceful.

15 A map is a distinct drawing of the several features of the earth.

16 His affairs are reported among all our people; there is not a family or household that does not know them.

17 When anything has flourished to the utmost, it must decline; and when it has declined to the utmost, it must begin to flourish. Throughout the world, the same principle everywhere prevails.

18 The saying runs, "He that is jack of all trades is master of none": that is to say, he who would excel in anything must give his whole attention to it.

19 The general scope of the book I still

敢保 *Kan³ pao³*. To guarantee, to assure, to warrant, to wager.

丟醜 *Tiu¹ ch'ou³*. To expose oneself to contempt, to disgrace oneself.

平常 *P'ing² ch'ang²*. Ordinary, *common*, usual, customary.

凡常 *Fan² ch'ang²*. The same. (s.)

回教 *Hwei² chiao⁴*. The Mohammedan religion:—Note 11.

誡 *Chie⁴*. *A command*, a precept; a warning.

愆 *Ch'ien¹*. A fault, *an error;* a failure.

罪愆 *Tswei⁴ ch'ien¹*. A transgression, *a sin*, a short-coming.

頭頂 *T'ou² ting³*. The top of the head.

太平 *T'ai⁴ p'ing²*. *Peaceful*, quiet.

形勢 *Hsing² shi⁴*. Aspect; outline, contour; shape; *configuration.*

傳說 *Ch'wan² shwo¹*. *To report*, to pass from mouth to mouth; a rumor; a tradition.

興 *Hsing¹*. To rise, *to flourish;* prevailing, fashionable; to hoax. Also *hsing⁴*.

極 *Chi²*. *The utmost point*, the extremity; extremely; to reach the end, to exhaust.

旨 *Chi³*. Intention, purpose; *scope*, sense; imperial will, a decree, an order.

筆直 *Pi³ chi²*. Straight, *straight as a line*, direct:—Les. 149.

一直 *I¹ chi²*. *Straight*, direct; forthwith, immediately:—Les. 162.

疃 *T'wan³*. A village, a hamlet. Used only in Central and Western Mandarin.

岔 *Ch'a⁴*. A fork in the road; a branch, a divergence; to mistake, to go wrong.

批 *P'i¹*. *To criticize*, to revise; to give judgment on a communication from an inferior.

號 *Hao⁴*. *A mark*, a sign; a style or appellation; a signal, a call, a summons; to mark; to label. A classifier:—Les. 147. Also *hao²*.

記號 *Chi⁴ hao⁴*. *A mark*, a sign; a token, a motto.

Digitized by Google

點的那圈國直直北呢、這出
點。就是的、書的走、答裏來、
圈批是上、就一出上我
圈、書什有去點了辛實
次的麼點喇。岔村疃、店、在
一記意點○道步打不
等號、思的、我21沒步那能。
的最呢、有、見有、往裏○
就好答圈中一筆西走從20

remember, but to repeat every chapter and expound every verse, is really more than I can do.

20 Which way do you go from this to Shin Tien? *Ans.* When you get out of the town, go on directly northwest; there is no fork in the road, just go on straight as a line (pen).

21 I notice dots and circles on Chinese books; what is the meaning of them? *Ans.* They are the marks of the critic. Where the style is very good he makes circles, where it is not quite so good he makes dots.

NOTES.

3 都 here refers to the number of times, and hence, means *always*.

4 種 is dropped out in the translation. If you should translate, as would seem natural, *this kind of jwan lien paper, etc.*, you would miss the meaning, which is not that this particular kind of *jwan lien* paper is faulty, but that *jwan lien* paper in general, is faulty.

9 他 here refers to some one who had been mentioned before. 强 is commonly used for "better" in Central and Northern Mandarin, but is not often so used in the South.

10 此地 is generally used by the non-mandarin dialects south of the Yang-tse for 這裡. It is sometimes used in the North, but its constant use marks any dialect as, by so much, an impure Mandarin. The use of 講 for 說 is also characteristically Southern.

12 The classifier is repeated instead of the noun. Almost any classifier *may* be thus repeated instead of the noun, though, in many cases, the general classifier, 個, is substituted for the specific classifier. Mohammedans are commonly designated as 回回教, but they, generally, speak of themselves as 在教, which accounts for the phraseology here used. They are also called 回子, but this term is not considered respectful.

13 畫畫 is a repeated word, but does not illustrate the lesson. It is introduced here to put the learner on his guard. The first 畫 is a verb, and the second, a noun. The Chinese language, especially the *Wên-li*, is very partial to this form of expression. See also 21.

15 一一 *One by one*, that is, each one in order,—the common form of expressing this idea.

17 This sentence sets forth a stock idea of Chinese philosophy.

18 This proverb is the exact equivalent of our "Jack of all trades and master of none," and is more briefly and elegantly expressed.

20 打那裡 *By which way?* As here used, 打 is quite *t'ung hsing*, but a number of other forms are in use in various places. I have heard 把 and 跟 and 起, also *ma* and *man* and *ka*. 從 also, is properly used in this sense, though not often so used colloquially.

LESSON LXVIII.

CLASSIFIERS.

棵 Classifier of trees.

科 A class or order,—classifier of herbs, grains and shrubs. There is much confusion in the use of these two classifiers. I have given the distinction which seems most natural, and which is commonly observed.

乘 A span or team,—classifier of sedan chairs and vehicles other than those on wheels.

雙 Double,—classifier of things in pairs.

口 Mouth,—classifier of members of a family, kettles, hogs, etc.

副 An assistant,—classifier of buttons and of things in sets, also of doses of medicine. In writing, 付 is not infrequently used instead of 副.

劑 A dose,—classifier of doses of medicine (S).

間 A partition,—classifier of rooms or compartments. Note 28.

根 Root,—classifier of strings, sticks, and, generally, of things long and narrow.

堆 A pile,—classifier of things in heaps.

疋 Classifier of pieces of cloth.

輛 A chariot,—classifier of wheeled vehicles.

Digitized by Google

第六十八課

日 衣 錢、堆。根 金 後[7] 我[5] ○ 我[1]
子。裳。買 ○ 頭 銀 園 典 還[3] 有
○ ○ 了 —[12] 髮 花、裏、了 少 十
再[16] 他[15] 一 根 捻揑 實 有 三 兩 雙
過 一 副 草、下 在 十 間 雙 絨
三 科 釦鈕 有 來。香。二 房 筷 襪
天、莊 子。一 ○ ○ 棵 子。子。子。
我 稼 ○ 根 石[11] 他[9] 糊 ○ ○ ○
要 沒 今[14] 草 頭、兩 菓 可[6] 保管[4] 李[2]
回 有、天 的 是 口 樹、以 管保 潤
家、就 我 露 二 子 八 抽 一一 發
可 是 要 水 千 要 棵 一 劑副 家
以 仗 用 養。八 分 梨 根 藥 裏、
給 着 這 ○ 百 家。樹。錢 就 有
我 手 口 八[13] 斤 ○ ○ 給 好 八
僱 藝 鍋 個 爲 把[10] 這[8] 我。了。口
一 過 煮 大 一 那 科 ○ ○ 人。

Translation.

1 I have ten pairs of woollen stockings.
2 Li Jun Fa has a family of eight.
3 We are still short two pairs of chopsticks.
4 I will guarantee that one dose of medicine will cure him.
5 I leased a house of three rooms.
6 Draw out a thread and give me.
7 There are twelve apple trees and eight pear trees in the back yard.
8 This honeysuckle is exceedingly fragrant.
9 The two heads of the family are going to separate.
10 Pluck out that hair.
11 Two thousand eight hundred catties of stone make one cord.
12 Every blade of grass has its own dew to nourish it.
13 I bought a set of buttons for eight cash.
14 I intend to use this kettle to-day to boil the clothes.
15 He hasn't a stalk of grain, but depends entirely on his trade for a living.

Vocabulary.

雙 *Shwang*[1]. A pair, a couple; both; double; even:—see Sub. Also *shwang*[4].

副 *Fu*[4]. An assistant, a deputy, a vice, an alternate; a duplicate:—see Sub.

棵 *K'ê*[1]. Used only as a classifier:—see Sub.

堆 *Twei*[1]. A pile, a heap, a mound; to heap up, to store:—see Sub.

乘 *Ch'êng*[4]. A span, a team:—see Sub. Also *ch'êng*[2].

疋 *P'i*[3]. Used only as a classifier:—see Sub.

輛 *Liang*[4]. A chariot:—see Sub.

絨 *Jung*[2]. Floss; velvet; woollen cloth; *worsted;* nap, down; punk.

筷 *K'wai*[4]. Chopsticks.

劑 *Chi*[4]. To trim, to cut even; to portion out; *a dose*, a prescription:—see Sub.

保管 *Pao*[3] *kwan*[3]. Same as 管保.

綫 *Hsien*[4]. The same as 線.

糊 *P'in*[2], *p'ing*[2]. A water plant.

菓 *Kwo*[3]. Fruit, berries, nuts, etc.

糊菓 A species of apple—quite large, but spongy and insipid.

梨 *Li*[2]. Pears—of which there are many kinds in China.

揑 *Nie*[1]. To take with the fingers, to pluck; to knead; to fabricate, to trump up.

捻 *Nie*[1], *nien*[3]. To pinch, *to nip*, to hold with tongs or nippers; to twist.

金銀花 *Chin*[1] *yin*[2] *hwa*[1]. The honeysuckle.

分家 *Fên*[1] *chia*[1]. To divide the inheritance; *to live separately.*

兩口子 *Liang*[3] *k'ou*[3] *tsi*[3]. Husband and wife.

露 *Lu*[4]. *Dew*, mist; to bless:—See *lou*[3].

露水 *Lu*[4] *shwei*[3]. Dew.

苫 *Shan*[2], *chan*[1]. To thatch; a coarse grass used for thatch; a mat.

苫子 A rude mule litter covered with matting.

騍轎 *T'uô*[2] *chiao*[4]. A mule litter.

紗 *Sha*[1]. *Silk gauze;* crepe.

顏 *Yien*[2]. Countenance, visage; *color*, hue.

顏色 *Yien*[2] *sê*[4]. *Color*, hue.

光潤 *Kwang*[1] *jun*[4]. Smooth, polished; shining, *brilliant.*

Digitized by Google

芽 只 月季 疋 的。門。在[20]十 鮮光 乘
菜、這 紅 灰 ○ ○ 家 科。明潤 苫駝
用 一 兩 色 你[22] 山[21] 裏 ○ ○ 子轎。
錢 口 科 紬 今 東 穿 我[19] 我[18] ○
六 鍋 玫 子。天 娶 着 看 南 你[17]
十 弄做、瑰、○ 出 親、這 見 山 看
文、實 一 前[23] 去、有 雙 他 上 那
八 在 科 院 可 用 舊 圈 的 一
根 科 不 牡 子 以 兩 鞋 裏、穀、叫 疋
葱、方 丹。有 給 乘 頂 罷、養 紅
用 便。○ 五 我 轎 那 着 你 的 紗、
錢 ○ 十[24] 科 買 的、雙 兩 的 顏
十 買[25] 來 花 三 疋 有 新 口 牛 色
二 了 口 兒、疋 用 的、大 喫 了 兒
文、兩 人 兩 白 布、乘 頂 留 肥 豬。二 鮮光
○ 科 喫 科 布、乘 頂 着 豬。二 明潤
王[26] 黃白 飯 月月 一 轎 出 ○ 三 不

16 In three days I am going home. You may hire a mule litter for me.
17 Look at that piece of red silk gauze; is not the color brilliant?
18 Twenty or thirty stalks of my millet on the south hill were eaten up by your cow.
19 I saw that he kept two big, fat hogs in the sty.
20 Wear this pair of old shoes at home, and keep that pair of new ones to go out with.
21 At weddings in Shantung, some use two sedan chairs and some, four.
22 When you go out to-day, you may buy for me three pieces of white cotton cloth, and one piece of ash colored silk.
23 There are five flowering bushes in the front yard,—two monthly roses, two red roses and one shrub peony.
24 With upwards of ten persons to eat and only this one kettle to cook in, the cooking is very inconvenient.
25 I bought two heads of cabbage for sixty cash and eight onions for twelve cash.

鮮 *Hsien*[1]. Fresh, new; *bright*, clean. Also ..... *hsien*[3].

鮮明 *Hsien*[1] *ming*[2]. New, *bright*, brilliant, re- ..... splendent.

穀 *Ku*[3]. ..... Grain; cereals; *millet*.

豬 or 猪 *Chu*[1]. ..... A hog, a pig.

娶親 *Ch'ü*[3] *ch'in*[1]. ..... To take a wife.

紬 *Ch'ou*[2]. *Coarse silk*, pongee; a clue, a thread; ..... to investigate, to follow up.

季 *Chi*[4]. A season of the year, *a period;* a ..... younger brother.

月季 *Yüe*[4] *chi*[4]. ..... The monthly rose.

月月紅 *Yüe*[4] *yüe*[4] *hung*[2]. ..... Same. (s.)

玫 *Mei*[2]. ..... A bright red pearl, a garnet.

瑰 *Kwei*[1]. ..... A red pearl; rare, admirable.

玫瑰花 The red rose.

牡 *Mu*[3]. The male of quadrupeds, of a few birds, ... and of some plants; a bolt, a piston.

丹 *Tan*[1]. *Carnation color;* cinnabar; a medicinal ..... concoction, a pill; sincere, loyal.

牡丹花 The shrub peony.

葱 *Ts'ung*[1]. ..... Onions.

大車 *Ta*[4] *ch'ê*[1]. ..... A freight cart.

轎車 *Chiao*[4] *ch'ê*[1]. ..... A passenger cart.

小車 *Hsiao*[3] *ch'ê*[1]. ..... A wheelbarrow.

黃泥 *Hwang*[2] *ni*[2]. ..... *Clay*, earth.

聘 *P'in*[4]. ..... To ask; *to betroth;* to espouse.

聘禮 *P'in*[4] *li*[3]. ..... Betrothal presents.

定禮 *Ting*[4] *li*[3]. ..... Betrothal presents.

戒指 *Chie*[4] *chi*[3]. ..... A finger-ring.

墜 *Chwei*[4]. To sink, to descend; to fall, to crum- ..... ble; a pendant, *an ear-ring*.

鉗 *Ch'ien*[2]. Pincers, nippers, tongs; *a clasp:*— ..... see Note 29.

耳挖 *Êr*[3] *wa*[1]. ..... An ear-pick or scoop.

簪 *Tsan*[1]. A pin or skewer to fasten the hair, ... a hair-pin.

陪 *P'ei*[2]. To assist; to accompany; *to match;* ..... to act as second or mate.

被擱 *Pei*[4] *kê*[1]. A low cabinet on which the bed- ..... ding is laid during the day. It stands across the head of the *k'ang* or bed.

燈臺 *Têng*[1] *t'ai*[2]. *A lamp stand;* a lamp-post; ..... a light-house.

鋪蓋 *P'u*[1] *kai*[4]. ..... Bedding.

Digitized by Google

太太拿着一些頭繩子、給大學生每人一根黑的、小學生每人一根紅的。○西[27]邊車店裏、今日兒晚上、來了八輛大車、五輛轎車、十三輛小車。○在[28]他大門外、有九堆石頭、一堆黃泥、一堆細沙、聽說要蓋兩間廂房。○他[29]都送的什麼聘禮呢、答有兩疋藍粗洋布、一疋紅洋機布、一副鋼鐲子。○四個戒指、兩副鉗子、一根耳挖子、三根簪子。○兩副[30]那頭陪送的甚麼呢、答一口大櫃、一口小櫃、兩個皮箱、兩把椅子、一個被摺子、一個大鏡子、再是銅盆、燈臺、鋪蓋、枕頭、樣樣都有。

26 Mrs. Wang took some hairstrings and gave the large pupils each a black one and the small pupils each a red one.

27 There arrived this evening at the cart inn to the west, eight freight carts, five passenger carts and thirteen wheelbarrows.

28 Outside his front gate are nine piles of stone, a heap of clay and one of fine sand. I hear he is going to build two side rooms.

29 What all did they bring for betrothal presents? *Ans.* Two pieces of strong blue foreign cloth, one piece of fine red foreign cloth, one pair of bracelets, two pairs of finger-rings, two pairs of ear-rings, one ear-pick and three hair-pins.

30 What outfit was given with the bride? *Ans.* One large clothes press, one sideboard, two leather trunks, two chairs, one cabinet and one large mirror, besides wash-basin, lamp stand, bedding and pillows, all complete.

Notes.

1 Woollen stockings are of foreign manufacture. The Chinese do not *knit* their stockings, but make them of cotton cloth.

5 *Lease* is not quite an accurate translation of 典. which is an indefinite lease in consideration of a round sum paid down at the first, but the property is subject to redemption by the owner at any time, or after the lapse of some specified time, usually three years. If not redeemed within forty years, it is not redeemable except in the case of land with graves on it. 典 is not properly (as sometimes translated) to *mortgage*, which is expressed by 押, although in drawing a mortgage the term 典 is used, for the reason that 押 is illegal. There is in this case, however, no possession given as in the case of a real 典. Thus a *mortgage* in China is a lease given, but held in abeyance by the lessee, with power to take possession in case of failure to pay as promised.

9 口 may here be regarded either as a classifier of 家 understood, or as a noun standing for *member of a family*. 分家 properly means to divide the inheritance between brothers, but is sometimes used, as here, of the separation of husband and wife.

12 The idea is that in the economy of nature, man included, the wants of everything are provided for.

14 Or, *I want to use this kettle, etc.* Which meaning was intended would be indicated in speaking by the stress put on 用. Boiling clothes, in washing them, is a foreign custom.

16 The 苦子 is used only in North China, and there only in hilly country where carts cannot be used.

21 In the case of two chairs, one is for the bride, the other for the groom. In the case of four, the two extra chairs are, one for the 將迎客, the other for the 送迎客. The former, who rides in the front chair, is an elderly woman of the groom's friends, the latter, who rides in the rear chair, is an elderly woman of the bride's family. For 頂 as a classifier see Les. 125. It was not intended to introduce it here, but the Pekingese called for it.

26 The Chinese say *head strings* for hair strings.

27 Wheelbarrows are extensively used in North and West China for the transportation of goods.

28 A pile, or cord, of building stone is in some places understood to mean a definite quantity of from 2,400 to 2,800 catties, in other places it is like a pile of earth or sand, quite indefinite. 兩間廂房 *a side building of two rooms*. 間 does not necessarily nor properly mean *a room*, but, rather, the space enclosed between two girders in the roof which are supported by posts in the wall, and with which the partitions usually coincide. The size of houses is indicated by the number of these *chien*.

29 洋機布 is, in some places, a particular quality of foreign cotton cloth, fine and strong, in other places it simply means foreign cotton cloth of any quality. Ear-rings are called 鉗子 in Peking, because they clasp into the ear.

Digitized by Google

第六十九課

前[1]幾天、我教蔣炳文好罵。○你[2]不看眼目神行事、前

不是去趣、時候、容易[17]說你去借一條口袋來、我明天好好的[18]還你、不[19]用代託[20]別人、就是[16]不容易[15]知道我[14]看你[13]給你[12]現在疼的輕一點、就不[11]得花、眞好小氣器。○

不早上起疼了一陣子、不敢勞駕。○我給你拾着送去罷。呢。○他。○這些[10]東西、都是[9]我的、你[8]不[7]必[6]客氣、[5]我[4]不[3]敢[2]當、[1]不[0]起、

11 He even grudges to spend these few cash. Really, he is niggardly.
12 The pain is a little lighter now, but this morning it was awfully severe for a while.
13 Let me take it for you. *Ans.* Thanks, I could not think of troubling you.
14 It seems to me you are wholly wanting in a sense of the fitness of things. Why do you stand there and laugh when others are weeping?
15 Dinner will be ready before long. Wait and eat a little before you go.
16 Is it so easy to make a friend that you should lightly offend him?
17 You go and borrow a bag, so that I can attend market to-morrow.
18 I beg pardon for pushing you. *Ans.* Not at all. I am sorry to have inconvenienced you.
19 The other matters can be readily arranged, but there is no one to whom I can entrust these children.
20 First try to persuade him, and if he

擺設 *Pai³ shê⁴*. To spread out in order, *to arrange*, to display.

齊整 *Ch'i² chêng³*. Uniform, even, *neat*, orderly, regular.

薔 *Ch'iang²*. A red rose.

薇 *Wei²*. A kind of fern, greens.

薔薇 A climbing rose, the cinnamon rose.

逢 *P'ang²*. A surname. See *fêng²*.

羣 *Ch'ün²*. A flock, a herd; a company, *a multitude;* the whole.

混 *Hun⁴*. Mixed, disorderly; *to do or act in a heedless or reckless manner*, to shift, to eke out, to slur over. See *hun²*.

混帳 *Hun⁴ chang⁴*. Unreasonable; vicious, reckreant; worthless.

膽 or 胆 *Tan³*. The gall; courage, *boldness*.

鵬 *P'êng²*. A fabulous bird.

小器 *Hsiao³ ch'i⁴*. Mean spirited, narrow minded, stingy, *niggardly*.

小氣 *Hsiao³ ch'i⁴*. Same.

早起 *Tsao³ ch'i³*. The morning.

駕 *Chia⁴*. A chariot; to drive or sit in a chariot; to mount, to ascend; *to avail of*.

勞駕 *Lao² chia⁴*. To trouble one,—a polite phrase of apology.

輕易 *Ch'ing¹ i⁴*. For small cause, *lightly;* rarely, seldom:—Les. 161.

口袋 *K'ou³ tai⁴*. A bag, a wallet.

催促 *Ts'wei¹ ts'u⁴*. To drive, to urge; to dun, *to push;* to insist on.

交代 *Chiao¹ tai⁴*. To deliver to, to hand over; *to entrust to.*

交託 *Chiao¹ t'oa¹*. To put in the hands of, *to entrust to;* to consign to.

漓 *Li²*. Water dropping, the pattering of rain.

漓溜囉唆 *Li² liu¹ loa² soa¹*. Prolonged and confused, complicated.

囉裏囉唆 *Loa² li³ loa² soa¹*. Same.

蔡 *Ts'ai⁴*. A small feudal state; *a surname.*

惠 *Hwei⁴*. Kindness, grace, *liberality;* charity, favor; to be kind to, to bestow.

卿 *Ch'ing¹*. A noble, a lord.

淵 *Yuen¹*. A whirlpool; an abyss; *vast.*

博 *Poa²,⁴*. Ample, spacious; intelligent, *learned;* to barter; to gamble.

淵博 Profound in learning.

提拔 *T'i² pa²*. To raise up, to assist, *to help.*

情趣 *Ch'ing² ch'ü⁴*. Taste, savor, relish, satisfaction.

Digitized by Google

一許不蔡[25]幾封候。說話、也
課多錯。惠吊起○話、敢還
很的○卿錢、來。把[23]說保不
不不我[26]先答○信起不遲。
好是、花生、好這[24]寫來、能○
做、一毒錢好錢塲好囉嗦不請[21]
也想思費淵體哪、官了、裏溜答放
不起事博面花司、可囉囉應。心
知來、的的了他以唆唆、○罷、
好好提學四也念沒那[22]那
學沒拔問、十不給有個個
不情滋他、寫多過我說人人
好趣味。還的吊花聽完就很
學。○落字咧。了聽、的是好
這[27]了也○十再時好說

positively refuses, it will be time enough to agree to pay damages.

21 Please do not worry. That man is very reasonable. I guarantee you he will be willing.

22 That man is an inveterate talker; when he once begins, he strings it out without end.

23 When you have finished writing the letter, read it to me before you seal it up.

24 He did not spend more than ten or fifteen thousand cash in this lawsuit. *Ans.* He didn't, eh? He spent over forty thousand.

25 Mr. Ts'ai Hwei Ch'ing is a man of very fine scholarship; his handwriting, also, is quite good.

26 I spent money and effort to help him along and yet a great deal of fault is found with me. I feel vexed whenever I think of it.

27 This lesson was very hard to make. I don't know whether it will be easy to learn, or not.

NOTES.

2 Although no interrogative form is expressed, the interrogation is implied in the first clause. In Chinese, reproof is generally in the interrogative form. The sentence might, of course, be taken in the direct indicative form, but, in that case, would hardly justify the emphatic expression that follows.

3 八仙桌 *Eight fairy table*, a high sounding name for a square table that will seat eight persons. 泰山椅子 *Tai Shan chairs*, high backed chairs with arms at the sides. *Tai Shan* is used as a fancy name in allusion to the high back of the chair.

7 There is here a play on the word 好,—*a good rascal*; i.e., one that is fully up to the standard of ordinary rascality, *a grand rascal*.

9 The name is made emphatic by being put in this peculiar way.

10 一號 *one mark*; *i.e.*, *one lesson*. Chinese teachers usually mark lessons by pasting a small strip of red paper at the point to which the lesson extends. This paper is called a 號, and is put for the lesson which is marked by it. A different phraseology prevails in the South where 上 is used for setting a lesson, but there is no way of expressing the noun "lesson." Hence the Southern teacher insisted on recasting the whole sentence as given,—avoiding, as will be noticed, the use of the noun "lesson." 好一頓打 and 一頓好打 express the same idea. Teachers differ in their choice of the two forms.

13 The term 抬, here used, implies that there was a third party who carried the other end of the pole. 好說 is the common response to a compliment, or to expressions of thanks or of self-depreciation. 不敢勞駕 *not venture to trouble your carriage*,—the word carriage being put by metonomy for the person. People worthy of honor are supposed to ride in carriages.

16 The meaning, strange to say, is substantially the same whether the negative be used or not.

17 The word 一 is elided colloquially before 條.

18 不說催促你喇 This is the language of one who, having vigorously urged payment, now receives the money. The force of 不說 is,—I will omit the usual apologetic forms for having inconvenienced you by my urgency. The sentence may also be used of a borrowed article.

22 好說話 Notice the different meaning of this phrase in this, and in the preceding sentence; also the different tone of 好.

23 可以 is omitted in the translation. It is often used in Chinese when its equivalent is not needed in English. It serves to soften what might otherwise seem too much like a command.

24 好錢賜 A very idiomatic expression not readily analysed. It is, perhaps, put for 好多錢. The translation gives the exact force.

25 The Southern teachers reject 體面 and substitute 淵博, which, in the North, is decidedly *Wén*. If it be used, the translation should be *profound* instead of *respectable*.

Digitized by Google

第十七課

請[1]好叫烟熏[2]把這我寫個信皮兒、好不好、先生給帶[3]今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

請問太太、喇、把答是個帽子、信皮兒收着、不好、要答

叫烟熏○把這我寫個信皮兒、好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

好啊。○太太、喇、把答是個帽子、信皮兒收着、不好、要答

烟熏○把這我寫個信皮兒、好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

○把這我寫個信皮兒、好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

這我寫個信皮兒、好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

我寫個信皮兒、好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

寫個信皮兒、好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

個信皮兒、好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

信皮兒、好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

皮兒、好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

兒、好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

好不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

不好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

好、先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

先生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

生給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

給帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

帶今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

今好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

好子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

子、帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

帽個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

個喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

喇。○兒張收着、不好、要答

○兒張收着、不好、要答

兒張收着、不好、要答

張收着、不好、要答

收着、不好、要答

着、不好、要答

不好、要答

好、要答

要答

答

TRANSLATION.

1 Would you be so kind, sir, as to address an envelope for me? *Ans.* Certainly.

2 Put this hat carefully away, and do not allow it to become tainted with smoke. *Ans.* All right.

3 The Chang family have their funeral to-day. We would enquire if you, madam, wish to go and see the display. *Ans.* I believe I will.

4 The ancients all said that the sun revolved [round the earth]. After all, does the sun not revolve? *Ans.* No.

5 Would you be willing to lend me your boots to wear on my wedding day? *Ans.* Certainly. They are at your service.

6 Will the gentleman please examine whether this manner [of doing it] will answer? *Ans.* Yes, it will answer very well.

LESSON LXX.

YES AND NO.

是 Yes. The Chinese use the substantive verb 是 as their most common affirmative. It corresponds more nearly than any other word in the language to our word *yes*, though in many places it will not replace *yes*.

是的 Yes. This form is generally used in the South, and sometimes, in the North.

是是 Yes, yes. An emphatic assent. It is generally used by inferiors assenting to the commands of superiors—Aye, aye, sir. It is also used to indicate impatience—yes, I know.

就是 So be it, all right. See Les. 44.

喳 or **喳喳** Yes, sir, or madam,—a Manchu word. It is rarely heard away from Peking, save in yamêns, where everybody apes it.

好 or **好啊** A cordial assent,—very well, all right.

行 or **行啊** It will do, it will work. Often marks a concession more or less reluctant.

中 or **中啊** It will do, so be it; that will do, that's enough. 啊 is generally added to 好, 行 and 中, and sometimes to 是, but is spoken lightly.

可以 A qualified assent, that is, *consent*, you may, all right. This term has given rise to the pidgin English phrase, "can do."

對 That's so, you're right. An emphatic assent.

是喇 The 喇 is added sometimes for euphony, and sometimes for emphasis. It is added in like manner to 好, 行, 中, and especially to 對.

不 No. It applies to the present and the future. When past time is referred to, 沒 or 沒有 is used instead. A light 啊 is often added to 不.

不是 No. Generally less emphatic than 不 without 是.

不行 Won't work, cannot allow it, "no go."

不中 Won't do, cannot allow it. Used in Shantung but is not *t'ung hsing*.

不錯 No mistake, that's so, of course.

一點不錯 Not the least mistake, precisely, to be sure.

那是不錯 That's certain, that's so, of course.

也好啊 } The use of 也 marks some change
也可以 } of thought or idea, in consequence of which the assent is given.

Affirmation and negation are often expressed by simply repeating the principal verb of the interrogative sentence, with or without 不, as the case may be, as in 你懂得官話嗎答懂得, *Do you understand Mandarin? Ans. I do.* This principle is in fact illustrated in (1), (5), (6).

Digitized by Google

他、答是是的。○你[8]要慢慢的套他、若是逼問的急了、他還不曉得你是什麽心思、你想他敢告訴你嗎。答不錯。○還[9]是二分利嗎、我聽說是分半利、答不。○你[10]只管拿給他看看、若是如意、他就留下、不如意、還是我的東西、答就是。○若[11]事中沒有他的牽連、瓜葛怎麽每逢提起來、他就吃驚呢、答一點不錯。○婆[12]婆不苦待媳婦、也就殼了、還能叫媳婦倒管着嗎、答那是不錯的。○你[13]若不和他立下合同、以後他必反覆、答對喇、我早聽說、他有那樣的毛病。○在[14]這裏要玩幾天再走罷、答不咯啊、明天是我堂上他兄的三週年、今天必得家去。○他[15]不給錢、我們不好上

7 When he comes, you may tell him what I said. *Ans.* Yes, I will.

8 You will have to pump him gradually. If you interrogate him too eagerly, he will not know what your purpose is, and do you think he will tell you? *Ans.* Of course not.

9 Is the interest two per cent [per month]? I heard it was one and a half per cent. *Ans.* No.

10 Don't hesitate to bring it for him to see. If it pleases him, let him keep it; and if it does not please him, he need not take it. *Ans.* All right.

11 If he were not concerned in the affair, why should he be alarmed every time it is mentioned? *Ans.* That's so.

12 It is sufficient if the mother-in-law does not abuse her daughter-in-law; can she be expected to let her daughter-in-law rule over her? *Ans.* Of course not.

13 If you do not have a written agreement with him, he will certainly go back on you. *Ans.* That's so. I have heard that he has that weakness.

14 Stay here and recreate a few days before you go. *Ans.* No, I must go home to-day. To-morrow is the third anniversary of my cousin's death.

VOCABULARY.

信皮 *Hsin⁴ p'i²*. The outside of a letter; the paper in which a note is enfolded and which serves as an envelope.

熏 *Hsün¹*. Vapor, fumes; to fumigate, *to smoke;* to perfume; to suffocate.

燐 *Ch'iao³*. *To smoke,* to soil.

請問 *Ch'ing³ wên⁴*. *To enquire;* a polite form of question,—please tell me.

瞧 *Ch'iao²*. *To look at,* to glance at, to take a peep at.

轉 *Chwan⁴*. A revolution; to turn round, *to revolve,* to circulate; to go round a corner. See *chwan³*.

靴 *Hsüe¹*. A boot.

逼問 *Pi¹ wên⁴*. *To interrogate,* to cross question; to demand an answer.

只管 *Chi³ kwan³*. Only, simply; *without hesitation,* freely, just:—Les. 83.

牽 *Ch'ien¹*. To drag along; to pull,—as a boat, to lead, to induce; *to implicate.*

牽連 *Ch'ien¹ lien²*. *To be concerned* or implicated in, connected with.

瓜葛 *Kwa¹ kê²*. *Concerned,* entangled in, involved, implicated.

苦待 *K'u³ tai⁴*. To treat with severity, to maltreat, to abuse.

驚 *Ching¹*. Frightened, terrified, *alarmed.*

吃驚 *Ch'i¹ ching¹*. Startled, *alarmed.*

覺驚 *Chioa² ching¹*. To feel alarmed; *to manifest alarm:*—Note 11.

合同 *Hê² t'ung²*. *Agreement,* contract, indenture, covenant.

堂兄 *T'ang² hsiung¹*. A first cousin of the same family name.

週年 *Chou¹ nien²*. A full year, the whole year, *anniversary.*

Digitized by Google

館子去請客、和他頂賬嗎、答一點不錯、這就是個好法子。

答是對的。○聽[21]說他的功課很忙、從早到晚、一點閒空沒有、是嗎、答至多用六百錢、答不行、這正是個忙時候、六百錢沒有去的。○你[22]拿不了、就把這個蒲

意、答可以、你去請他來罷。○我[20]看六十里路、僱兩個牲口、要借兩吊錢的盤費、託我來商議、先生願意借給他不願的就罷了、還能賠着賣給他嗎、答那是不錯的。○李[19]文運

去喇、先生看看這個房子、行不行、答行啊。○我[18]們不賺他的賣治你們、答是喳喳、大老爺的恩典。○上[17]房已經叫別人包佔

○館[16]我再限你們三天的限期、若再拿不了人來、我要重重的

15 If he will not pay, suppose we get up a company and go to his restaurant and have a feast on account. *Ans.* To be sure: that is a good idea.

16 I will give you three days more. If you then fail to produce the man, I'll punish you severely. *Ans.* Aye, aye, your honor is very gracious.

17 The best room is already occupied. Please, sir, look at this room and see if it will answer. *Ans.* It is all right.

18 It is enough if we do not make anything off him; we can not sell to him at a loss. *Ans.* Of course we can't.

19 Li Wên Yün wants to borrow two thousand cash for travelling expenses, and asks me to speak with you and ask whether, or not, you are willing to lend it to him. *Ans.* Well, yes. Go and call him in.

20 It seems to me that six hundred cash, at the most, should hire two animals for sixty li. *Ans.* It can't be done. This is a very busy time. No one is willing to go for six hundred cash.

21 I hear that his studies keep him very busy, so that he has no leisure from morning till night. Am I correct? *Ans.* You are indeed. That he has no leisure is emphatically true.

館 *Kwan*³. ..... Same as 館.

請客 *Ch'ing*³ *k'ê*⁴. To invite company, to make .....a party, *to have a feast.*

抵 *Ti*³. To oppose, to ward off; to sustain, to .....bear; *to substitute for*, to atone.

頂賬 *Ting*³ *chang*⁴. *Against a debt*, in lieu of .....the money, in settlement.

抵賬 *Ti*³ *chang*⁴. *In settlement of an account*, to .....compound a debt by property given instead of money.

賣 *Tsê*². To reprove, to reprimand; *to punish*, to ..... fine; a charge, duty, responsibility.

賣治 *Tsê*² *chï*⁴. ..... *To punish*, to chastise.

喳 *Cha*¹. ..... Yes, sir. See Sub. Also *ch'a*¹.

恩 *Ên*¹. ..... Favor, *grace*, mercy; kindness.

恩典 *Ên*¹ *tien*³. Favor, bounty, *grace*, mercy. .....

上房 *Shang*⁴ *fang*². The rooms which in an inn .....face the entrance.

佔 *Chan*⁴. To usurp, to trespass upon, to arrogate; ..... to take possession of, *to occupy.*

盤費 *P'an*² *fei*⁴. .....Travelling expenses.

功課 *Kung*¹ *k'ê*⁴. .....*Studies*, lesson, task.

閒空 *Hsien*² *k'ung*⁴. ..... Spare time, *leisure.*

蒲 *P'u*². ..... The cat-tail rush, calamus.

團 *T'wan*². A lump, a mass; *round*, globular; .....to collect, to group; to surround; united, agreeing together.

蒲團 A rush mat, a [round] mat of any kind; specially the mat on which priests sit when they *recite prayers.*

蒲墊 *P'u*² *tien*⁴. A rush mat, a mat of any ..... kind.

智 *Chï*⁴. *Wisdom*, knowledge, prudence, discre- .....tion.

Digitized by Google

一得人了來到十　答答團墊
智、自騙貨、說、八吊不也子
那己得去秤月錢、行中好可留
能墊不幹不再這那、啊以。下、
再上、多、別離還個些○以
有　答若的砣、好月錢—[23]後
第是是事客不先買吊我
二是、再嗎、不好、還不五給
回不有這離　答你了。百你
呢。經第一貨、也六○錢帶捎
一二回、你行好吊、我[24]你去
失事、回、幸　可啊。那欠賣不
不你虧好以○四你不好
長必叫離從[25]吊的賣、嗎、

22 If you can not take all, had you not better leave this mat and I will send (take) it to you by and by? *Ans.* Well, all right.

23 Will you take fifteen hundred cash? No, that money will not buy it.

24 Of the ten thousand cash I owe you, I will pay six thousand this month, and then, may I wait till the eighth month to pay the other four thousand? *Ans.* Yes, that will do.

25 It has always been said, "The steelyards can not be separated from the weight, nor the merchant from his goods." Is it proper for you to leave the goods, to look after other things? This time, fortunately, not much was taken, but if you do so a second time, you will have to make it good yourself. *Ans.* All right. "Without experience (mistakes) no wisdom is gained." I will not do so a second time.

NOTES.

11 覺驚 This phrase is widely used, but it is hard to see how it can apply to external appearance, as it does here. Some would write 脚驚 and others (where soft sounds prevail) 着驚.

14 On the first three anniversaries of any one's death paper money is burnt at the grave and also at home in front of the tablet. The first and third anniversaries are regarded as the most important.

16 This is the language of an officer to his underlings urging them to catch some transgressor.

17 The 上房 is the most desirable room in an inn. The term must be carefully distinguished from 廂房.

22 As used in the North, 帶 would here necessarily mean that the party was going himself and would *take the mat along*, whereas 捎 means to send by another.

25 客 Here, the merchant or agent who has goods in charge and who travels with them. In Peking 事 and 失 are read nearly or quite alike, and which should here be used is more or less doubtful, as either will give a good sense. In eastern Shantung 事 is *Sï*[4] and 失 is *Shï*[3], and the latter is unequivocally the correct word.

LESSON LXXI.

THE CAUSATIVES 教, 使, 令 AND 給.

教 or **叫**, in addition to its primary meaning, and its use to form the passive (Les. 53), is also much used as a causative. This causative sense is often modified so as to include the idea of instruction or direction to do or act. In the North the idea of causing often passes over to that of permitting or allowing as (2), (3).

使, in addition to its use as an instrumental verb (Les. 54), is often used causatively. Its causative force is a little stronger than that of **教** and it is a little more bookish.

令 To command, is used in certain connections only, for **教**. It is always followed by **人**, or by a pronoun, and is only used in connection with the expression of some emotion.

給 (read kê) is largely used in Southern Mandarin in a causative sense, taking the place to some extent of both **教** and **使**. It is never so used in Central or Northern Mandarin.

Digitized by Google

第十七課

誰[1]能明天早一早上工。不[4]要緊。你不管他、他[10]愛怎麼調弄人、我不[5]許他[7]上街。王[16]嗎。○世官、來[15]

能教你吃這樣麼做。○先[2]生不許叫上街。我[3]不

教你這樣麼辦呢。○能教[9]我預備下。實叫生不

明天早一早上工。不[4]要緊。你不管他、他[10]愛怎麼調弄人、我不[5]許他[7]上街。王[16]嗎。○世官、來[15]

廚房出來。把飯工。○做。○你[6]要先[2]生不

聽不房出來。些早吃這樣麼做。○先[2]生不許叫

弄人、不出來。些早吃這樣麼做。○先[2]生不許叫

我人、不出來。些早吃這樣麼做。○先[2]生不許叫

怎人、不出來。些早吃這樣麼做。○先[2]生不許叫

壞了。怎人、不出來。些早吃這樣麼做。○先[2]生不許叫

的。壞了。怎人、不出來。些早吃這樣麼做。○先[2]生不許叫

Translation.

1 Who directed you to act so?
2 The teacher does not allow you to go on the street.
3 I cannot allow you to suffer loss.
4 Do not grieve your father and mother.
5 Have him go to work early tomorrow morning.
6 You have caused me deep mortification.
7 Let the cook prepare the meal a little earlier.
8 Ts'wei Ying talks in such a way that one cannot understand her.
9 In my opinion, it would be better to let him have his way.
10 His arts of deception are such that one cannot guard against them.
11 According to your idea, what would you have me do?
12 Your not controlling him is the very cause of his ruin.
13 You must not allow any one to know what we have just been saying. *Ans.* No, I will not.
14 Do you do just whatever he wants you to do?

Vocabulary.

擔 *Tan*[1]. To carry with a pole; *to bear*, to sustain; to undertake; to be responsible for. See *tan*[4].

擔憂 *Tan*[1] *yiu*[1]. To be heavy-hearted, *to grieve*, to mourn.

一早 *I*[1] *tsao*[3]. Early in the morning.

上工 *Shang*[4] *kung*[1]. To begin work, to go to work.

翠 *Ts'wei*[4]. The feathers of the kingfisher.

瑛 *Ying*[1]. The lustre of pearls.

聳 *Sung*[3]. To excite, to stir up, to egg on.

調弄 *Tiao*[4] *nung*[4]. To cozen, to bamboozle, to befool, *to deceive*.

弄聳 *Lung*[4] *sung*[3]. To cozen, *to dupe*, to practise upon.

可恨 *K'ě*[3] *hên*[4]. Hateful, *detestable*, abominable:—Les. 180.

舒 *Shu*[1]. To unroll, to open out; tranquil, at ease; lax, easy; *comfortable*.

坦 *T'an*[3]. A level place; *tranquil*, quiet.

舒坦 *Comfortable*, pleasant, at ease.

受用 *Shou*[4] *yung*[4]. *Comfortable*, at ease.

屈 *Ch'ü*[1]. To bend, to stoop; to contract; to subject; *to wrong*, to oppress.

受屈 *Shou*[4] *ch'ü*[1]. To suffer wrong; to be subjected to injustice.

莫非鴉 *Moŏ*[4] *fei*[1] *ya*[1]. Morphia.

難受 *Nan*[2] *shou*[4]. Distressed, pained, grieved; *uncomfortable*, miserable.

安穩 *An*[1] *wĕn*[3]. *Quiet*, peaceful, tranquil; steady, stable.

殺威 *Sha*[1] *wei*[1]. *Severe*, austere, harsh, imperious, commanding.

殺氣 *Sha*[1] *ch'i*[4]. A severe expression, a harsh appearance; *murderous*.

回信 *Hwei*[2] *hsin*[4]. A letter in reply, an answer, a response.

掛念 *Kwa*[4] *nien*[4]. To be anxious, to be solicitous.

觸 *Ch'u*[4], *ch'oŏ*[4]. To butt, to gore; to push; to run against; to offend; to oppose; to excite, *to quicken*.

觸動 *Ch'oŏ*[4] *tung*[4]. To stir up, to excite, *to quicken;* to provoke.

Digitized by Google

這樣聰明。○我[25]的父母、也叫你的靈機、不[24]是上天觸動、今[23]到如[22]今沒有見我[21]他回信、他臉上有殺威、教我不能令人請問師師母娘

一點正經事不做、眞令人可恨。○

一教我[15]這[16]他[17]

要仔細告訴他、叫[18]他[19]

一點不[20]

舒坦幾日、盡給使兒子的放心。○你

受用這[15]

15 So many have come that I have no way of providing for them.
16 Wang Shī Kwan has no legitimate business at all. He is truly a detestable fellow.
17 You must tell her carefully so as to relieve her mind.
18 Only by making your father and mother comfortable for a season will you be discharging your duties as a son.
19 I certainly cannot allow myself to be wronged by you in this fashion.
20 Give him a little morphia to make him sleep, and he will be all right.
21 He made me feel badly, and I'll take care that he doesn't get much comfort.
22 He had a severe (murderous) expression on his face so that whoever looked at him felt afraid.
23 Up to this time I have had no answer [to my letter] so that I cannot help feeling anxious about him.

靈 *Ling*[2]. The spiritual part, spirit; ethereal, *intelligent;* efficacious; powerful.

靈機 *Ling*[2] *chi*[1]. The "intelligent machine," the mind, the springs of thought; *the faculties.*

惦 *Tien*[4]. To think of, to remember.

惦記 *Tien*[4] *chi*[4]. To think of, to call to mind, to bear in remembrance.

扛 *K'ang*[2]. *To carry on the shoulder;* to withstand, to sustain, to bear.

杠 *Kang*[4]. A pole, a cross-bar, a lever.

詳 *Hsiang*[2]. To examine; to discourse upon; minutely, *in detail.*

詳細 *Hsiang*[2] *hsi*[4]. Carefully, minutely, *in detail;* trusty, reliable.

臊 *Sao*[4]. Bashful, ashamed. Also *sao*[1].

害臊 *Hai*[4] *sao*[4]. *Ashamed,* mortified.

害羞 *Hai*[4] *hsiu*[1]. Put to the blush, *ashamed,* mortified.

蘭 *Lan*[2]. Orchideous plants; scented, elegant; joyous, delightful; adopted.

褥 *Ju*[4]. *A mattress,* a cushion, a rug.

安歇 *An*[1] *hsie*[1]. *To rest,* to go to rest, to sleep peacefully.

均 *Chün*[1]. In eqnal parts, just, *even;* all, altogether; to adjust.

勻 *Yün*[2]. Eqnal, *even;* a little; to divide off, to allot.

均勻 Alike, equal, uniform, *even;* seasonable.

拈 *Nien*[2]. To take in the fingers, to pick up, *to draw,*—as a lot.

鬮 *Chiu*[1]. A lot, a cut, a ticket.

拈鬮 To cast lots, to draw cuts.

碰命兒 *P'êng*[4] *ming*[4] *êr*[2]. To run the risk, to take one's chance.

命兒攤 *Ming*[4] *êr*[2] *t'an*[1]. Same.

運氣 *Yün*[4] *ch'i*[4]. *Chance,* luck, fortune, lot, fate.

遺 *I*[2]. *To will,* to bequeath; to leave behind, to forget, to neglect; surplus.

遺命 I[2] *ming*[4]. Dying commands, *a will,* a testament.

長孫 *Chang*[3] *sun*[1]. The eldest grandson in the male line.

效 *Hsiao*[4]. To imitate, to copy; to verify; *effect,* efficacy; result.

功效 *Kung*[1] *hsiao*[4]. Efficacy, *effect,* result; merit.

變化 *Pien*[4] *hwa*[4]. To change, to transform.

吉 *Chi*[2]. Fortunate, *auspicious;* prosperous.

吉利 *Chi*[2] *li*[4] *Auspicious,* lucky, propitious, hopeful.

喪 *Sang*[4]. To lose; to be bereft of; forgotten, lost; to die; to ruin; *unlucky,* baneful. Also *sang*[1].

喪門 *Sang*[1] *mên*[2]. *Unlucky,* ill-omened:—Note 35.

Digitized by Google

他 功 留 均 了 ○ 叫 他 怎 安好、
一 效、的 勻、話、這[30] 你 慢 麼 答
句 就 遺 可 戶 件 害 慢 扛 謝
不 是 命、以 蘭 事 羞躁。就 了 謝、
說、能 叫 拈抓 給 實 ○ 說 一 叫
淨 變 除 鬮鬮 他 在 背[29] 明 根 他
說 化 出 憑叫 鋪 難、着 白 杠 們
一 人 三 他他 上 叫 人 了。子 悵 想記
些 心、十 們們 褥 我 拿 ○ 來 記
喪 使 畝 各各 子、一 東 我[28] 呢。着。
門 得 地、人人 叫 黜 西、打 ○ ○
話、人 給 的命碰 他 主 不 你、請[27] 我[26]
叫 敗 長 運兒命 安 意 給教 不 先 叫
人 惡 孫。氣攙兒。歇。沒 人 是 生 你
不 爲 ○ ○ ○ 有。知 要 詳 去
願 善。耶[34] 我[33] 若[32] ○ 道、叫 細 找
意 ○ 穌 父 實 二[31] 這 你 一 一
聽。吉[35] 教 親 在 人 就 疼、黜 根
利 的 臨 分 說 是 是 講、扁
話、大 死、不 完 偷。要 叫 擔、

24 It is Heaven that has quickened your faculties so that you have this wisdom.

25 My father and mother, also, send their kind regards. *Ans.* Thank you. They are very thoughtful.

26 I sent you to get a *pien-tan*, how is it that you come carrying a *kang-tsï?*

27 Please explain it in detail, and let him hear it step by step, and he will understand.

28 I whip you, not to make you suffer pain, but that you may be ashamed.

29 Stealing is the taking of people's things behind their backs and without their knowledge.

30 This is a very embarrassing affair. I haven't the least idea what to do.

31 When the two were done talking, Hu Lan spread mattresses for them and bade them [lie down to] rest.

32 If you positively cannot divide it evenly, you may draw cuts and let each one take his chance.

33 Just before his death, my father made a will directing that thirty mow of land be set apart for his eldest grandson.

34 The chief effect of Christianity is that it is able to change the heart, causing men to turn from evil and become virtuous.

35 He did not speak one auspicious word, but just a lot of ill-omened talk which we were loth to hear.

Notes.

2 The Southern form 許, is entirely *t'ung hsing* and in very common use. It is a little stronger than the other form, differing from it much as *permit* does from *allow*. See Les. 130.

3 This sentence might also mean, *I will not cause you to suffer loss.* The meaning intended will depend on the connection.

5 一早, *one early*, is emphatic. It means *very early*, or as early as the circumstances will permit.

7 Kitchen is put by metonomy for cook. This is a common idiom; thus heaven 天 for *God*, audience hall 朝廷 for *Emperor*, learning court 學院 for *examiner*, etc.

18 受用 may also be used in the North.

19 Lit., *Your causing me to suffer wrong in this way, will certainly not go down.*

22 殺威 is more or less local. 殺氣 is more general, and its meaning is much stronger.

26 A 扁擔 is a pole for one person to carry over the shoulder with burdens suspended from the ends; the 杠子 is a pole for two persons to carry a burden suspended between them.

32 拈鬮 is the book form, while in the North 抓鬮 is the form commonly used. They differ in meaning, much as "cast lots" differs from "draw cuts." The latter part of the sentence expresses a very common idea, yet I found it impossible to get two teachers from different places to agree as to how to say it. 碰命兒 is the Peking form, 命兒攙 is the Shantung form, while the Nanking teacher rejected both and recast the whole clause.

33 遺命 is a book expression. There is no legal provision in China for either making or executing a will. The case referred to here was probably nothing more than verbal directions.

35 According to the meaning here used 喪 should be read *Sang*[4], it is, however, generally read *Sang*[1].

Digitized by Google

第七十二課

你[1]整成天家
兒看[4]走的時時節節不[3]要忘了[6]他[5]二姨姨
母是勤的時時你。○家作甚麼。○人[2]家都冷眼
婆家是個事奉家節、○他們二人乾親家。
短喇。沒個財主兩個家。○你的的家。鎖門。○
○這[10]個○有。○兩個人、他[9]有。○
○說[11]了半天、叫大家小的家時節、是舌頭窗。
我[12]常想着做買賣、就是個兒內行不着嗎。
○

TRANSLATION.

1 What are you all the time doing?
2 Everybody looks coldly upon you.
3 They two are sworn relatives.
4 When you go, do not forget to lock the door.
5 You ought to minister diligently to the old folks.
6 Her second maternal aunt is wealthy.
7 Is your oldest daughter betrothed?
8 When you are in debt to a man, your tongue is short.
9 They two were schoolmates when they were young.
10 None [of us] can put up with this fellow.
11 After all this talk you turn out to be an expert, eh!
12 I have been waiting this long time to go into business, but cannot find a monied partner.

LESSON LXXII.

THE ENCLITIC 家.

The character 家 is added to certain words for the purpose of merging the individual in the family or class, thus generalizing them. It is added to man, woman, and to all terms denoting family relationships, to various offices, to time, etc. It may be compared to "kind" used as a suffix in such words as mankind, womankind, etc.; but is by no means equivalent to it.

VOCABULARY.

成天家 *Ch'êng² t'ien¹ chia¹*. Continually, all the time:—Les. 108.

整天家 *Chêng³ t'ien¹ chia¹*. Same:—Note 1.

親 *Ch'ing⁴*. A relative by marriage:—Note 3. See *ch'in¹*.

親家 *Ch'ing⁴ chia¹*. A relative by marriage.

乾親家 *Kan¹ ch'ing⁴ chia¹*. A relative by adoption:—Note 3.

人家 *Jên² chia¹*. Others in contrast with oneself, other people; *everybody;* the person referred to.

冷眼 *Lêng³ yien³*. To look on with displeasure, *to look coldly at*, askance.

時節 *Shi² chie²*. A time, the time which, a period of time.

時家 *Shi² chia¹*. Same:—Note 4.

殷 *Yin¹*. Abundant, full; particular; *diligent.*

殷勤 *Yin¹ ch'in²*. *Diligent*, attentive.

奉 *Fêng⁴*. To receive respectfully; to deliver to; to reverence; *to serve;* obediently.

事奉 *Shi⁴ fêng⁴*. To wait upon, to serve, *to minister to.*

姨 *I²*. A mother's sister, a maternal aunt.

姨母 *I² mu³*. Same.

婆家 *P'o² chia¹*. Mother-in-law, mother-in-law's family.

大家夥 *Ta⁴ chia¹ hwo³*. The whole company, all concerned. (L.)

行家 *Hang² chia¹*. One skilled in any art, an expert.

內行 *Nei⁴ hang²*. Versed in the secrets of a business or art, expert.

搶嘴 *Ch'iang³ tswei³*. Forward to talk, impertinent, *unmannerly.*

搶頭 *Ch'iang³ t'ou²*. Same.

搶先 *Ch'iang³ hsien¹*. Same (S.)

Digitized by Google

東家。私[13]下裏的事情、也是半公半
私的家。○如[13]今官家的事情、也是半
了。○怎[14]麼一個家、[15]人家自己的孩子、[16]他
○[15]人家自己的孩子、[16]他
—[16]個男都麼惡、[17]他
個家都麼惡、[17]他
男都麼惡、[17]他
子厭惡、[17]他
厭惡、[17]他
惡、[17]他
他、[18]他
他、[18]他
他、[18

一 蓮。娘 兒 的。那 派 張 ○ 家
筆 ○ 家 配許 ○ 裏、幾 桌 他[23] 典、
勾 從[28] 姓 給 我[26] 張 個 子 們 是
消、前 李、他 和 家 老 上。倆 子
如 我 我 兒 他 長、管 ○ 是 弟、
今 待 的 子、結 李 家 大[24] 寃 仇 人
和 他 小 乳 很 親 家 檢 戶 家、家
我 的 名、對 作 短、黠。人 不 敗、
成 好 叫 心 親 說 ○ 家 可 也
了 處、作 思。家、白 他[25] 搬 請 讓 是
寃 他 李 ○ 把 道 正 家、在 子
家 算 翠 我[27] 女 黑 綠 在 必 一 弟。

22 The prosperity of a family depends on the rising generation, and, also, the decadence of a family proceeds from them.

23 They two are enemies, and must not be invited to sit at the same table.

24 When wealthy families move, they always appoint several old stewards to oversee.

25 He is over there criticising this one and that one, defaming people's characters.

26 For me to contract a marriage alliance with him, giving my daughter to his son, suits my wishes exactly.

27 My mother's name was Li, and my little name was Li Ts'wei Lien.

28 He wholly ignores all my former kindness, and has now become my enemy.

尙 *Shang*[4]. To esteem, to honor; to control; ..... still, furthermore, yet.

和尙 *Hê*[2] *shang*[4]. A Buddhist priest. Read *hê*[2] ..... *ch'ang*[4] in some places.

出家 *Ch'u*[1] *chia*[1]. To take a vow of celibacy, ... to enter the priesthood.

僧 *Sêng*[1]..... A Buddhist priest; a lama.

僧家 *Sêng*[1] *chia*[1]. Priests, the Buddhist priest- ..... hood.

俗家 *Su*[2] *chia*[1]..... The laity, *the world.*

誼 *I*[2]. That which is right, proper or fit, *friend-* ..... *ship*, acquaintance.

情誼 *Ch'ing*[2] *i*[2]..... *Favor*, kindness.

獎賞 *Chiang*[3] *shang*[3]..... *Reward;* prize.

國家 *Kwoâ*[2] *chia*[1]..... State, *country.*

政 *Chêng*[4]..... To rule; *government*, laws.

儒 *Ju*[2]..... Scholars, literati, the learned.

儒家 *Ju*[2] *chia*[1]. The learned class, *Confucianists,* ..... the literati.

欲 *Yü*[4]. To wish for, to long for; aspiration, ... hopes; lust, *appetite,* passion.

NOTES.

1 成天家 or **整天家** Both forms of this much used phrase are regarded as correct. In some places the aspirated form is chiefly used, and in some places the unaspirated. In some places, both North and South, **成天** is frequently used without the **家**, and, in the North especially, **的** is often substituted for **家**. See Les. 108, Sub.

3 親 is read Ch'ing[4] only when followed by **家**. **乾親家** *Dry relatives;* i.e., relatives not really such, but made such by adoption. The Chinese practise a species of adoption in the case of brothers and sisters, also parents and children. It is simply a mutual choice, accompanied by the giving of presents, and implying a promise or vow of mutual faithfulness. The vow is sometimes formally expressed, and ratified by a feast. When a member of one family enters into such a relationship with a member of another family, the two families become **乾親家**.

4 時家 though not often used in the South, is readily understood. In the North it is more used in some places than in others. It may be applied to any verb or noun indicating time. Where not used, **時節** takes its place, but requires a **的** before it, which the **時家** does not. The construction of **了** is, *Do not forget to have locked the door.*

5 老人家 is a respectful way of referring to any one's parents. It is also used as a term of respect when addressing any elderly person (30).

6 This sentence might with equal propriety, and without perceptible change of meaning, be given **他二姨家是財主**.

7 Lit., *Has your eldest daughter a mother-in-law?*

10 這個人 is used emphatically, and expresses a shade of contempt. **大家夥兒** *all the persons concerned,* is much used in some places, but is not *t'ung hsing.*

11 行家 One thoroughly versed in any business, art, or profession, *an expert.* The conversation had disclosed what the speaker had not previously suspected, viz., that the party addressed was an expert.

17 承吃承穿 *Receive food and receive dress,* that is receiving all and doing nothing, only thinking of food and dress.

22 子弟 *Sons and younger brothers,* including also *their* sons—a general term including all of the family younger than oneself, but primarily supposed to be used by the eldest brother, who is regarded as the head of the family.

23 讓 means properly *to yield or give place to,* hence as used by the host with reference to guests, it means *to seat or place at table.*

24 大戶人家 *A family with a large doorway,* that is a large and wealthy family.

25 張家長李家短 etc., **說** must be supplied. **張** and **李** being very common names are used at large for

Digitized by Google

都功的是獎[31]情叫爲出了。
是夫、功皇賞誼、你俗家、○
清是夫、上是叫老家。自薙[29]
心煉是的國我人○稱頭
寡氣、養恩家怎家爲[30]爲當
欲養氣、典。的麼受我僧和
的氣道○善報駕、的家、倘、
意煉家儒[32]政、呢。這事稱就
思。氣、的家也○個情、人叫

29 To shave the head and become a Buddhist priest is called, "leaving the family." They call themselves the priesthood, and call others the world.
30 That you, good sir, should be worried on account of my affairs, is a favor I am wholly unable to requite.
31 Rewards conferred promote the good government of the country, and are, at the same time, an expression of imperial favour.
32 The effort of Confucianism is to nourish the vital principle; the effort of Taoism is to refine the vital principle; both aim at purifying the heart and diminishing the appetites.

any one, as we say Jones and Brown. It is not easy to see why 黑 should not always be used, yet 綠 is used in many places. 道 is used in the sense of 說.

27 小名 is the colloquial, 乳名 is the book form.

29 Buddhist priests shave the entire head, and in this respect differ from Taoist priests, some of whom (those who marry) wear the hair as other Chinese do, others (those who do not marry) allow *all* the hair to grow, and wear it in a knot on the top of the head. Buddhist priests are not allowed to marry, hence the phrase 出家.

32 氣 refers here to the divine essence which is held to constitute the soul, and of which the physical breath is the emblem and vehicle. This divine essence, or vital principle, the Confucianist regards as good, and seeks to *nourish* and preserve it as the path to virtue and longevity. The Taoist regards it as evil, especially as being corrupted by association with the body, and seeks to *purify* and refine it, as the passport to immortality. 清心寡欲 is a ready-made book phrase. 清 and 寡 are to be taken as verbs.

LESSON LXXIII.

發 EXPRESSING DEVELOPMENT.

發 To send forth,—is joined with many words to express the idea of becoming, developing, etc. It is especially joined to such words as express qualities perceived by the senses. It may often be rendered by *become*, or *grow*, or *get*. In many cases English affords no exact equivalent.

發黃 To be or become yellow.
發家 To enrich one's family:—Note 2.
發財 To make money, to get or grow rich.
發亮 To appear lustrous, to shine.
發紅 To be or become red, to grow red.
發壞 To become addicted to vicious practices, to develop a vicious character; to spoil, to ferment.
發亂 To become confused, to be in a state of confusion.
發狂 To become or grow reckless, or violent.
發瘋 To suffer an attack of convulsions, to be subject to fits.
發怯 To be or become timorous, to give way to fear.
發怒 To become or grow angry, to get in a passion.
發軟弱 To become or grow weak, to betray weakness.
發誓 To take an oath, to swear.
發笨 To become stiff, to grow clumsy.
發花 To become or grow dim or indistinct (of the eyes).
發慌 To become excited or confused, to grow nervous.
發悶 To feel gloomy; to have a sense of distress or uneasiness.
發利害 To grow severe; to become unruly; to storm, to make an ado.
發威 To become violent, to rage; to assume an air of authority and anger.
發硬 To become hard; to grow stiff.
發傻 To be or become obstinate; to grow stiff, to be clumsy.

Digitized by Google

第七十三課

要瘋外人、事壞說[5]財。發你[1]
害發死財最多、的起○家。的
怕怯。了。不容心地來、好[4]○舌
○○發。易裏方、他墨這[3]頭
有[12]該[11]○發發沒臉寫樣發
人大我[10]狂。亂。有上的買黃。
發起的○○我。發字賣、○
怒、膽外人[9]年[8]○紅。發不外[2]
就來、甥、不輕他[7]○亮。能財
和不發抽得的的發[6]○發不

TRANSLATION.

1 Your tongue is yellow.
2 Illegitimate gains do not advance a man's estate.
3 It is impossible to get rich at this kind of business.
4 Writing done with good ink, shows a lustre.
5 When you speak of it, his face grows [red.
6 I am free from vicious practices.
7 His mind is confused with the multitude of his affairs.
8 It is very easy for the young to become reckless.
9 Without illegitimate gain, no one gets rich.
10 My nephew died of epilepsy.
11 You should brace up your courage, and not yield to fear.

發虛 To feel languid or exhausted.

發現 To become manifest; to be aroused or awakened (of conscience).

發飽 To have a feeling of distention or fulness, flatulence.

作飽 The same:—Note 24.

發酸 or 作酸 To be or become sour; to have a sour taste.

發心口疼 To have or suffer an attack of dyspepsia or indigestion.

發凉 To become cold, to feel cold.

發冷 To seem or feel cold:—Note 26.

發暈 or 作暈 To be or become or feel dizzy.

發乾 or 作乾 To be or become or feel dry.

發慈悲 To be compassionate, to show pity, to be moved with a feeling of compassion.

發驕傲 To be or become or grow proud.

發瘧子 or 發瘧疾 To have or suffer from ague.

發熱 To be or feel hot or feverish.

發痲 To become or feel numb.

發糊塗 To become foolish or silly; to be stupefied; to become bewildered.

發齁 To wheeze, to be asthmatic.

發脹 To be distended, to feel a sense of fulness.

發板 To be or feel stiff; to be or grow intractable.

For further list of words joined with 發, see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

外財 *Wai⁴ ts'ai².* *Illegitimate gain;* money acquired by a stroke of good fortune.

甥 *Shêng¹.* Relatives of a different surname.

外甥 *Wai⁴ shêng¹.* The children of one's own sisters and wife's sisters.

抽瘋 *Ch'ou¹ fêng¹.* *To fall in an epileptic fit,* attacked by convulsions.

怯 *Ch'ie⁴.* *Timorous;* nervous.

酵 *Chiao⁴.* Yeast, leaven.

發酵 *Fa¹ chiao⁴.* To raise, to ferment; baking powder, *bicarbonate of soda.*

蘇打 *Su¹ ta³.* Bicarbonate of soda.

誓 *Shï⁴.* *To take an oath;* a vow, an oath.

慌 *Hwang¹.* Hurried, *nervous,* frightened; to move unsteadily, to wabble.

消停 *Hsiao¹ t'ing².* To do leisurely, *to do at one's ease* or convenience.

發作 *Fa¹ tsoa⁴.* *To get in a passion,* to storm; to inflame and swell, to become acute :—Note 20.

Digitized by Google

答不飽○難[20]不不慌、了。事加猛
嘴作不我[23]以不發發只手情。上獸
裏飽、那寫發作管脚○一一
常答時字。威利起消發先[16]點樣。
作發天艮○害來、停笨、生發蘇○
酸。天心你[22]他着眼不酵打。這[13]
○夜發這是做睛要○一
昨[26]裏現、樣不罷。也信你[15]回
天作發覺發能○發他、若的
新飽。得虛、怕我[19]花。他不饅
媳媳○罪該的。這○發發頭、
子婦嘴[25]重、吃○兩到[18]暫軟沒
發害裏○一冬[21]天、了是弱、發
心作發你[24]點天心塌假就好。
口酸酸肚補人裏裏、的。沒○
疼、不不子藥手發不○有可[14]
手作、作發慪發悶。要人[17]這以
脚酸飽好。僵硬、○發老些再

12 Some men when they get angry, are like wild beasts.
13 The bread, this time, did not rise well.
14 You may add a little more soda.
15 If you had betrayed no weakness, there would have been none of these things. [takes is false.
16 Do not believe him, sir, the oath he
17 When a man is old, his hands and feet become stiff, and his eyes, dim.
18 When you reach the examination hall, do not get nervous, but write [your essay] at your ease.
19 I am feeling gloomy these few days.
20 If you do not storm, he will not be afraid.
21 In the winter one's hands grow stiff, so that writing becomes difficult.
22 In this exhausted condition, it would be well for you to take a little tonic.
23 At that time my conscience was aroused, and I felt the weight of my sins.
24 Does your belly feel distended? *Ans.* It feels so every night.
25 Do you have a sour taste in your mouth? *Ans.* I constantly have a sour taste in my mouth.
26 Yesterday the bride had a pain in her stomach, so that both her hands and feet became cold.

冬天 *Tung¹ t'ien¹.* Winter, the winter season.
僵 *Chiang¹.* Prostrate; *stiffened.*
難以 *Nan² i³.* Hard, difficult.
酸 *Swan¹.* *Sour*, acid; irritating, grieved; numbness or weakness of the muscles.
暈 *Yün⁴.* A halo; foggy; obscure; *dizzy.*
慈 *Ts'i².* Maternal affection; kindness, *tenderness;* mercy.
慈悲 *Ts'i² pei¹.* *Compassion*, forbearance, mercy.
救主 *Chiu⁴ chu³.* A saviour, the Saviour (a Christian term).
前進 *Ch'ien² chin⁴.* To advance; *advancement*, promotion.
瘧 *Yao⁴, yoə⁴, yüe⁴, nüe⁴.* Intermittent fever, ague.
疾 *Chi².* Sickness, disorder, ailment.
瘧疾 Intermittent or remittent fever, ague.
汗 *Han⁴.* Sweat, perspiration.
出汗 *Ch'u¹ han⁴.* To perspire, to sweat.
賭氣 *Tu³ ch'i⁴.* *To resolve or vow in anger to do a thing*, to do in spite of all hindrances, to do with the might.
永 *Yung³.* Perpetual, *everlasting;* final.
永遠 *Yung³ yüen³.* Endless, *everlasting*, eternal.
齁 *Hou¹.* *To breathe hard*, asthma; a special intensive:—Les. 148.
齁病 *Hou¹ ping⁴.* Asthma:—Note 35.
傷風 *Shang¹ fêng¹.* To take cold.
脹 *Chang⁴.* To swell up, to enlarge; dropsical; tenseness, *fullness.*
罐 *Kwan⁴.* *A jar*, a crock, a mug, a cruse.
火罐 *Hwoə³ kwan⁴.* A small cup used for cupping, also to hold medicines.

Digitized by Google

都發了涼。○[27]猶了這些日子、起來不能不作發暈。○

我[28]嘴裏作發乾、請給我[29]一點水喝。○天災大發慈悲、給人一位救主、○人[30]發驕傲、最容易耽誤自己的前進。○人[31]發癌疾子、是有時發冷、有時發熱。○我[32]的兩條腿、都不出汗、常覺着發痲。○他[33]病的不輕、好幾天淨發糊塗、說話也不清楚。○我[34]大哥賭氣、上了關東、他說不發大財、永遠也不回來。○你[35]這麼喘、是有個發勢的病嗎、答沒有勢病、是傷了風。○我[36]沒有甚麼大病、就是腦子發脹、身上發板、用火罐子給我拔一拔、就好了。

27 Having been confined to your bed all these days, you cannot but feel dizzy when you first get up.

28 My mouth feels dry, please give me a little water to drink.

29 Our Heavenly Father in His great compassion gave unto men a Saviour.

30 When a man becomes proud, he is very apt to hinder his own advancement.

31 When one has ague, he sometimes feels cold, and sometimes hot.

32 Both my legs are destitute of perspiration, and constantly feel numb.

33 His illness is not slight; for several days he has been constantly in a stupor, his speech, also, is indistinct.

34 My eldest brother went off to Manchuria in a fit of anger, saying that unless he made a fortune, he would never return.

35 Is your shortness of breath on account of asthma? *Ans.* No, I have no asthma; I have caught a cold.

36 I have no illness of any consequence, but I have a fullness in my head, and my body feels stiff. If you will cup me, I shall be all right.

NOTES.

1 In this sentence, the translation fails to convey the force of 發. It might be paraphrased, *your tongue has developed a yellow color.*

2 發家 *To advance the interests of the family:* riches are held by families rather than by individuals. This use of 發 is not quite analogous to its use in this lesson.

6 Lit., *Becoming bad place has not me*, that is I am free from all participation in any kind of vice. The more usual and natural order would be, 我沒有發壞的地方. The inversion is for the purpose of throwing emphasis on the clause, 沒有我.

9 財 is to be understood after 發. The explanation of the seeming inconsistency between this and the second sentence seems to be that this is the sentiment of the average man who believes that dishonesty is the best policy, while the first is the sentiment of the virtuous man who believes in a righteous providence; or the inconsistency may be explained, by taking this sentence to mean, *without a stroke of extra good fortune, no one gets rich.*

10 抽瘋 is more widely used than 發瘋.

11 大 is here made to do service as a verb.

13 發 is here used of the raising of bread, and does not illustrate the principle of the lesson. The same is true of 發酵 in the next sentence.

18 Although not distinctly so stated, the "arena" here referred to is evidently the examination hall, and the thing to be done is the writing of a literary essay.

20 發作. In this phrase 發 takes the accent, which shows that it is used as a leading verb, and not as in other places in this lesson.

21 In this connection, 僵 is much more widely used than 硬.

24 作飽 *To become full.* This use of 作 for 發 is very common in Southern Mandarin, but is never heard in the North. 發飽不 is put for 發飽不發飽. The word or words that would follow a negative are not infrequently dropped in this way, and emphasis is thrown on the negative. This is especially the case in Central and Northern Mandarin.

26 In general, Southern Mandarin shows a strong predilection for 冷. The distinction which most teachers in the North would give to the two words in this connection, is that 發涼 means *feels cold to others*, and 發冷 means *feels cold to the person himself.*

27 In the South 睡 is used as a euphemism for prolonged sickness, and 躺 in the North.

31 It is a singular fact that in Pekingese the syllable to which this character 癌 belongs has a great variety of readings. In eastern Shantung this character and others of its class have but one reading, viz., yoă.

35 哮病 is asthma in Shantung, as also in the South. In Peking asthma is 咳喘.

Digitized by Google

第七十四課

把[1]散切開這[9]這○○可不生
這開。開開這[11]叫[13]這以給
張丁。○紙[6]這子匣個把那麼
不剪[4]可孩子打開開的大他[16]
開用以[15]用老○[8]要拿[10]不滾
嘴。○斯[2]那剪離[8]要○我[18]
的[12]把燙把這這[12]把[14]剩個
信、[17]開開。燼烙正開他[15]天。
不走路[5]拿○[7]叫丟些個的人
知開車。○來[3]雲彩都瓜[7]把
叫誰拆開看了。

Translation.

1 Cut this sheet of paper in two.
2 That road is not wide enough for a cart.
3 The clouds have all scattered.
4 You can cut it apart with scissors.
5 Bring a knife and cut the watermelon.
6 This child never leaves its mother.
7 Call the carpenter to open this box.
8 If you would return to the right path, you should give up the world.
9 This key will not open it.
10 Bring a smoothing iron and iron out these wrinkles.
11 I want that boy to make himself scarce.
12 Open the lid of this box.
13 So strong a wind, and yet not clear up the sky!
14 The dollar that is left, you may divide between the two.
15 The two are fighting, and I cannot part them.
16 Spread the table cloth, and set out the dishes.
17 I have a sore on the corner of my mouth, so that I cannot open my lips.
18 I wonder who opened my letter and read it.

LESSON LXXIV

The Auxiliary 開.

開 to open, is added as an auxiliary to such verbs as will take the qualifying idea of opening or spreading out. It frequently carries with it an inceptive force. For list of words taking this auxiliary see Supplement.

Vocabulary.

剪 *Chiao*³. To cut with shears, to shear. Same as 鉸.

世俗 *Shi*⁴ *su*². Common or worldly customs.

熨 *Yün*⁴. To smooth out by heat, *to iron.*

斗 *Tou*³. A measure of ten 升,—varying in different places from about a gallon to over a bushel; a vessel; the great dipper.

熨斗 A hollow smoothing iron heated by a charcoal fire inside.

摺 *Chê*². To double up; a fold, a crease, *a wrinkle;* a folded paper or book; a mat bin, a long strip of matting; a memorial, a dispatch.

滾 *Kun*³. To bubble; to boil; *to roll over and over*, to tumble.

盒 *Hê*². A small box with a cover, a casket.

剩 *Shêng*⁴. What is left, another form of 賸.

劈 *P'i*¹. To cut open, to split; *to divide.*

桌單 *Choa*¹ *tan*¹. A tablecloth.

檯布 *T'ai*² *pu*⁴. Same. (s.)

拆 *Ch'ai*¹, *ts'e*⁴. *To break open;* to take to pieces, to take apart; to rip; to pull down, to destroy.

Digitized by Google

很親、一時也離不開。○我[33]請人寫了一副對聯、你上[31]先生急等茶喫、就是水開○先[32]看看酒了。

○開眼喇。○凡[30]能喝、脫得了○我[29]想法子推開。

幾條板凳、坐不開。○都總可以兒很推睜。

○四[27]音聲、會分開。○我今以分得開。不

不清、算不分了。○這[26]個寬仇、就是神仙[25]也解開。

你[24]給人家說的事情、說開了。○他們的賬目。

可以分開。○誰[23]欵開了。○風颳的開了。

不[21]必找剪子、用手就開。○是所合的、人不

三[19]間房子、怕住不開。○把[20]這塊板、從這裏鋸截開。○

19 I fear three rooms will be insufficient to accommodate us.
20 Take this board and saw it in two at this place.
21 It is not necessary to get scissors, you can tear it with your hand.
22 Whom God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.
23 Who left that door open? *Ans.* The wind blew it open.
24 Did you get the business arranged which you undertook to settle for them?
25 Their accounts are not clear. They are unable to get a settlement.
26 Even the divine genii could not break up this fend.
27 Are you able to distinguish the four tones? *Ans.* I can distinguish all the four tones.
28 These few benches will not seat so many people.
29 I am very sleepy to-day, I cannot keep my eyes open.
30 Everything that can possibly be evaded, he is sure to find a way to evade.
31 The teacher is impatient for his tea, but, somehow, I cannot get the water to boil.

截 *Chie*[2]. To cut off, *to saw off;* to obstruct, to intercept, to keep in check.

鋸 *Chü*[4]. A saw; *to saw;* to mend with clamps or staples.

撕 *Si*[1]. *To tear*, to rip, to rend.

配合 *P'ei*[4] *hê*[2]. To match, *to mate;* suitable, fit.

敞 *Ch'ang*[3]. A high level space; spacious; to display; *to open.*

說開 *Shwo*[1] *k'ai*[1]. To begin to speak; to open out on, to enlarge on; *to arrange any business by exhortation or argument.*

賬目 *Chang*[4] *mu*[4]. Accounts.

寃仇 *Yüen*[1] *ch'ou*[2]. Enmity, animosity; *a feud;* a deadly enemy.

神仙 *Shên*[2] *hsien*[1]. Divine genii, immortals:—Note 26.

板凳 *Pan*[3] *têng*[4]. A bench, a stool.

睏 *K'un*[4]. To sleep, to nod; *sleepy.*

睜 *Chêng*[1]. To open the eyes; to stare.

聯 *Lien*[2]. *Connected,* associated; to combine, to join in order.

對聯 *Twei*[4] *lien*[3]. Parallel mottoes or distiches written on scrolls.

進京 *Chin*[4] *ching*[1]. To go to or visit the capital.

閃 *Shan*[3]. To flash; to evade, to dodge; *to make room for.*

世面 *Shi*[4] *mien*[4]. New or strange things, *the sights,* the world.

綾 *Ling*[2]. Thin silk damask, lining satin.

綾羅 *Ling*[2] *lo*[2]. Silk gauze.

綢 *Ch'ou*[2]. To bind, to wrap round; *thin fine silk,* levantine.

緞 *Twan*[4]. Satin.

綢緞 Silk and satin, silks generally.

粳 *Ching*[1], *kêng*[1]. Long white rice, unglutinous rice.

粳米 *Ching*[1] *mi*[3]. Same.

麪 *Mien*[4]. *Flour* of wheat or other grain; dough; vermicelli.

白麪 *Pai*[2] *mien*[4]. Wheaten flour

Digitized by Google

街上遇見、自然躲開。
米白麪、那些的穿粗布舊衣的人在大街上。
貫人家、穿綾羅綢緞、吃的是精粮。
時候、些罷。我要進京來、一定有[38]富貴的人、見了官、可以走呢、○快閃開。
開些條路、你[37]將怎麼樣走、這是甚麼去處。
大直去、和他講明、有[35]這[36]個緣故。
頭不和他講、○怎麼說開。
書、擱不開。
擱開看看、○你[34]怎麼不看看。
放打開看看好不好。
打開看看好不好呢。○
看看好不好呢。○
看看好不好呢。○

32 I see you are very fond of wine. You cannot do without it at all.

33 I got a man to write a pair of scrolls for me. Open and look at them: what do you think of them?

34 Why did you put that book on top of the bookcase? *Ans.* It will not go into the bookcase.

35 If you have anything to say, why do you keep it to yourself? Better go directly to him, and tell him plainly.

36 Why is it that with such a wide road as this, you yet insist on going here? Give place at once.

37 When I have time, and can get away, I am going to make a visit to the capital and see the sights.

38 The rich dress in silks and satins, and feast on white rice and wheaten flour. When those who wear coarse and dingy clothes meet one of them in the street, they naturally give way to him.

Notes.

2 車 is the real subject of the verb, yet it comes after it. The sentence shows how completely Chinese sometimes inverts the English order.

6 老 as here used, is peculiar to Pekingese.

7 開開 The first 開 is the principal verb, the second, an auxiliary, or the two may be taken as a duplicated verb :— Les. 33.

10 Most Chinese teachers will insist that to iron ought to be 熨 yü, and not 熅. The fact is, however, that the word is not spoken yü but yün, and on this account, no doubt, 熅 has superceded 熨, and rightly so.

11 滾 as here used is highly contemptuous. Why it should be so, is not readily explained. The translation is not a whit more forcible, nor more wanting in dignity, than the Chinese.

26 神仙 According to Taoist mythology there are five classes of 仙, viz., 鬼仙, 人仙, 地仙, 神仙 and 天仙.

27 Nanking says 音 for "tone," but the more general term is 聲. The modesty of the speaker accounts for the use of 可以.

28 板凳 is properly *pan³ têng⁴*, but in Peking is frequently spoken *pan³ t'êng⁴* and in other places *pan³ ts'êng⁴*.

31 等 often means, as here, *to need, to want immediately.*

35 講明說開 is a rhetorical reduplication. Chinese abounds in such forms.

LESSON LXXV.

The Auxiliary 住.

住 To live, to endure,—is added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of enduring, or sustaining continuously. For list of words taking this auxiliary, see Supplement.

Vocabulary.

揪 *Chiu¹*.... To seize, *to hold;* to pinch and pull.

擋 *Tang³*. To impede, to obstruct, *to stop;* to .....withstand, to screen, to ward off.

捶 *Ch'wei²*..... To beat, *to pound*, to cudgel.

糨 *Chiang⁴*..... Starch, paste. See *chiang¹*.

糨糊 *Chiang⁴ hu²*..... Same.

力量 *Li⁴ liang²*..... *Strength*, vigor, ability.

搽 *Ch'a²*..... *To rub on;* to paint, to smear.

持 *Ch'i¹*. To seize hold of, to grasp; to hold on, ...*to maintain;* to manage; to resist.

支持 *Chi¹ ch'i²*. *To withstand*, to bear up .....against; to direct.

Digitized by Google

第七十五課

我[1]的。這[6]快、散誰住把都能個
一個人的什麼事拿[4]個人心是靠不住
是不住把住自己的時候、怕[11]藏不住、
賊[2]叫官兵擋住加住了。
○ ○ 壓○ 底[5]
糊○ 厚馬支。 ○ 勒能塊了。
糟 糊子、下 ○ 本○ 上○ ○ 就
板布楸 石、不 住把住 他。他他。
難 ○ 都 ○ 遮勤 ○ 小、殷[13]呢。事情、棰
槽 ○ 喫[18]不人、
底 這[20]了住一
子。也的○ ○
下 這[9]必[7]住
了。
○ 厘[16]不量、匹得
住。 ○ 持口糟
我[14]不硬、
住。我纔
住 ○ 收
不事、逢[12]不貼板○
敵 揉住。住。子、人[3]
上○ ○ 就心
藥、你[10]你[8]托是
就能的住靠
○ 扛忍堵嘴了。不
那[15]不住太○ 住
那[21]怎我

TRANSLATION.

1 I cannot hold him alone.
2 The rebels were stopped by the imperial soldiers.
3 The human heart is unreliable.
4 Put the mangle on it to press it down.
5 It can be supported by putting a board underneath.
6 This little affair is not sufficient to trouble him.
7 It will require thick paste in order to hold it.
8 You are too communicative, you cannot keep anything to yourself.
9 This horse is hard in the mouth, I cannot hold him.
10 Whose mouth can you shut up?
11 I fear my own strength will not bear the strain.
12 Every time the medicine is applied the pain is intolerable.
13 A diligent man cannot endure to be idle a moment.
14 My abilities are no match for his.
15 That umbrella is too small; it will not shelter one.
16 It is uncertain whether the year will be a plentiful one or not.
17 Never fear: I can remember it all.
18 I took a dose of pain-killer, but it did not stop the pain.
19 This piece of wood is too slender; it is quite insufficient to bear the strain.
20 This is a dangerous and important place; I am not able to guard it alone.
21 That man is too communicative, he cannot keep a single thing.

年景 *Nien*[2] *ching*[3]. The harvest, the season, *the year.*

止 *Chi*[3]. *To cease*, to desist; to remain, to wait; but, only; conduct.

險 *Hsien*[3]. A precipice; *dangerous*, hazardous.

險要 *Hsien*[3] *yao*[4]. Perilous; *a dangerous but important juncture or position.*

把守 *Pa*[3] *shou*[3]. *To guard*, to defend.

盛 *Ch'êng*[2]. To fill into a vessel; *to hold*, to contain. Also *shêng*[4].

圈籠 *Ch'üen*[1] *lung*[2]. To surround, *to entrap*, to ensnare.

才 *Ts'ai*[2]. Talent, *endowment*, ability, genius.

口才 *K'ou*[3] *ts'ai*[2]. The gift of speech, *eloquence.*

成家 *Ch'êng*[2] *chia*[1]. To take a wife; to set up for oneself.

立業 *Li*[4] *yie*[4]. To attain a competency, to make one's fortune.

摘 *Chai*[1], *tsê.*[4] To pick, as fruit, *to pull;* to deprive of; to choose; to select.

牙 *Ya*[2]. *A tooth*, a tusk; a bud; an agent

挨 *Ai*[2], *yai*[2]. To suffer, to bear, to endure, *to stand.* Also *ai*[1].

董 *Tung*[3]. To store up, *a surname.*

涵 *Han*[2]. To steep, to submerge; capacious; large-hearted, lenient.

昌 *Ch'ang*[1]. Brilliant, elegant, prosperous.

兇手 *Hsiung*[1] *shou*[3]. A murderer.

Digitized by Google

○ 他[23]想之用圈圈籠套我、那能圈籠得住呢。○我[24]看你大大的
對不住我。○用這[25]圈子籠套大的風燈籠那能黏得住呢。○說[26]話能戀
業的。○摘[28]個牙能有多麼疼呢、我不信我挨不住。○殺[29]董涵
得住人、纔算眞有口才。○人[27]若能守得住、再沒有不成家立
昌的那個兇手、已經拏住了。○國[30]若自相分爭、國必站立不
住。○他[31]的脾氣不好、一個朋友也交不住。○[32]白日還不怎麼
樣、就是夜黑夜裏受不住。○這[33]永遠受不完的苦、我怎能忍得住
呢。○我[34]的妹夫、受得了一個雞爪瘋、大小東西、都拿不住。○若[35]
眞有喜樂的事、誰也禁不住笑、眞有悲傷的事、誰也禁不住
哭。○俗[36]語說、一不拗扭衆、我一個人、怎能拗扭得過衆人呢。

22 You are the father, and yet cannot govern your own child!
23 He proposes to entrap me, but he will not succeed in doing it.
24 I consider that you have treated me very badly.
25 With such a strong wind how can you expect to keep a lantern lighted?
26 A man is accounted really eloquent when he can so speak as to captivate people.
27 If a man can preserve what he inherits, he will not fail to advance his fortunes.
28 What great pain can there be in having a tooth pulled? I do not believe that I cannot stand it.
29 The murderer who killed Tung Han Ch'ang, has been arrested.
30 A kingdom divided against itself cannot stand.
31 His disposition is so bad that he cannot retain a single friend.
32 In the daytime it is not so bad, night is the time that I cannot endure it.
33 This suffering which never ends, how can I endure it?
34 My brother-in-law has the chicken-foot palsy. He can hold nothing either large or small.
35 When there is anything really joyful, no one can help laughing; when there is anything really sorrowful, no one can help crying.
36 The proverb says, "One cannot hinder all." How can I, a single person, obstruct [the business of] all?

分爭 *Fên[1] chêng[1].* To dispute, to quarrel, *to contest.*
站立 *Chan[4] li[4].* ... ... *To stand;* to endure.
白日 *Pai[2] ji[4].* ... ... Daytime, daylight.
天裡 *T'ien[1] li[3].* ... ... Same. (s.)
夜裡 *Yie[4] li[3].* ... .A night, in the night.
妹夫 *Mei[4] fu[1].* ... ..A younger sister's husband.
爪 *Chwa[3], chao[3].* *Claws,* talons; to scratch; to ... ... hold in the claws.
雞爪瘋 *Chi[1] chwa[3] fêng[1].* A species of palsy or ... ...paralysis in which the fingers become contracted and stiff.
喜樂 *Hsi[3] lo[4].* Rejoicing; *joyful,* lighthearted, ... cheery.
禁 *Chin[4].* To prohibit, to forbid, *to restrain;* ... .to impose upon. Also *chin[1].*
拗 *Niu[4], ao[4].* To break off, to twist; obstinate, ... perverse; to impede, *to obstruct.*

NOTES.

2 Rebels in China are practically bands of robbers, hence 賊 often means rebels. The rebels in the T'ai P'ing rebellion were generally called 長毛賊, *long-haired rebels.*

4 搥板石 or 搥布石 A smooth squared stone, on which starched clothes are pounded with wooden clubs to smooth and stiffen them. 板 is used with reference to the shape of the stone, and 布 with reference to the purpose for which it is used. Neither term is known in the South, for the reason that there clothes are not treated in this way.

5 Or, *Put a board underneath and it will support it.*

Digitized by Google

第七十六課

我[1]們一天忙到黑晚。
今天下雨。三分一[4]天不到。
老、還有三分學不到。
通州去。○我想起、
個方、你[11]說去住。
這個地方、那些賊、
到○地○地那蛋、
到老、今天下雨。
到我們一天忙到黑晚。
○苦[2]終自有甜來到。
怕他可[6]以不到。
做[5]到。○到○貨老、沒[3]料
把到發學
脚子、
來。剛搬到別挨[8]
藏[12]珍寶來的到。
和王元興的到。
走到這裏來呢。
就從○答他們上
的、自們。的、
覺一、你來叫[9]
怎不道助候○撲
麼、知鄲[13]幫時了。直○他終
病了、到。不甚起四不天○
了不○能麼來起、到。怕苦[2]
去了。○壞不[14]是交往上病了不
那個那些賊這個、老[10]纔灰[7]塵
地方、說到住。候、去。有
○地○地這到到到我[1]
那地○地這到到到我[1]
去了。○不[14]是交往上病了不
那個那些賊這個、老[10]纔灰[7]塵
地方、說到住。候、去。有
○地○地這到到到我[1]

Translation.

1 We were busy from morning till night.
2 After the bitter naturally comes the sweet.
3 It did not occur to us that it might rain to-day.
4 I fear he cannot push through in a day.
5 One learns as long as he lives, and still leaves much unlearned.
6 You may hire conveyances and forward the goods to Tungchow.
7 The dust rose on all sides and puffed in their faces.
8 After all this time, I have only now thought of it.
9 Let them move to some other place to live.
10 When did you come? *Ans.* I have but just arrived.
11 In the matter you refer to, I cannot help you.
12 The robbers did not ransack the place where his jewels were.
13 From the time that Yün Tao I began to associate with that worthless fellow, Wang Yüen Hsing, he has insensibly fallen into vicious habits.

7 糊 takes 子 after it in some places, and in some it does not. The Southern term is 糊糊.

12 扛 is the more colloquial form, and very widely used.

14 A literal translation would require "him" at the end instead of "his." The sentence, in order to give a logical structure, ought to end with a 的. The Chinese are not generally sensible of such incongruities.

13 止疼藥 *Stop pain medicine*,—the name given to Perry Davis' Pain Killer, which has been extensively sold in China.

20 險要 In this phrase the two words are different in meaning and both significant, hence a full translation requires two words.

24 Or, more literally, *I should think you would have no face at all to see me.*

27 守得住 as here used, means to preserve intact the inheritance received from one's fathers. The form in the Sacred Edict is 守的住, which is a form rarely, if ever, heard amongst the people. 成家立業 The composition of this phrase shows how closely family and fortune are united in the Chinese mind.

29 兇手 *Murderous hand—a murderer.* 手 is often joined with verbs or adjectives to characterize an individual by his conduct, or by his trade, thus 吹手 *a musician*, 鎗手 *a spearman*, 起手 *a pickpocket*, etc.

30 自 is used for 自己. The 己 is excluded by the close union formed with 相. although 相 is logically connected with the following 分爭.

32 天裡 is in some places always said 白天裡.

34 得 is more widely used than 受, despite the fact that 受 is evidently more appropriate.

LESSON LXXVI.

The Auxiliary 到.

到 To arrive at, is added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of continuance, or of extension to some point of time or place. For list of words taking this auxiliary see Supplement.

Digitized by Google

○抬[14]撮我[17]捎你到天上。○已[16]經送到這裏、請回去罷。○○我[17]捎了兩封信給李先生、一封也沒捎到。○

○你[15]敬我一尺、我敬你一丈、你敬我一丈、我敬你一尺、我[18]大家約會九點鐘到齊、怎麼耽誤如今呢。○

我[19]沒想到還有這些難爲。○天[20]下的事情、只有說不到的、沒有做不到的。○你[21]天天這麼遊手好閒的、懶到幾時是個頭兒呢。○我[22]這撮收頭呢。○

若信他、倚靠他、他的功勞、就歸到我的身上。○

你[23]去迎客、迎到那裏呢、答迎到二十里堡。○

我[24]十八歲那一年、從春天一直病到秋天。

14 You were reported sick, were you not? How is it that you are running around here?

15 You honor me a foot, and I'll honor you a rod; you honor me a rod, and I'll exalt you to heaven.

16 Having accompanied me so far, please return.

17 I sent two letters to Mr. Li, but neither of them reached him.

18 We all agreed to be on hand by nine o'clock; how is it that you are so late as this?

19 It had not occurred to me that there would be these difficulties.

20 In human affairs, many things occur which no one ever anticipated.

21 You are idly lounging around in this way every day. When will your indolence come to an end?

22 If I believe on him, and trust him, his merit will accrue to my account.

23 When you went out to meet your guest, how far did you go? *Ans.* I went to the twenty *li* station.

24 The year I was eighteen I was sick

甜 *T'ien²*. . . . . *Sweet*, savory; agreeable.

通州 *T'ung¹ chou¹*. Tungchow, a *fu* city forty . . . . . *li* south-east of Peking.

塵 *Ch'ên²*. *Dust*, particles; traces; the age, the . . . . . world; vice and pleasure.

灰塵 *Hwei¹ ch'ên²*. . . . . Dust, dirt.

撲 *P'u¹*. To lean against; to strike against; to flap, ... to clap; to rush suddenly, *to puff*.

四起 *Sï⁴ ch'i³*. . . . . To rise on all sides.

挨 *Ai¹, yai¹*. Side by side, in order; to push, to . . . . . crowd; to lean on, to trust to; *to put off*; to postpone. See *ai²*.

珍寶 *Chên¹ pao³*. . . . . Pearls, *jewels*, treasures.

搜 *Sou¹*. To search, to make thorough and dili- . . . . . gent search, *to ransack*; swift, quick.

鄆 *Yün⁴*. An ancient city in the kingdom of Lu; . . . . . *a surname*.

壞蛋 *Hwai⁴ tan⁴*. A bad egg, *a worthless fellow*, ... a good-for-nothing, a scamp.

不知不覺 *Pu⁴ chï¹ pu⁴ chüe²*. *Insensibly*, un- . . . . . consciously.

下流 *Hsia⁴ liu⁴*. . . . . *Vicious*, vulgar, mean.

約會 *Yoŭ¹ hwei⁴*. *To agree to meet*; to call a . . . . . meeting.

遊手 *Yiu² shou³*. *To idle away time*, to loiter, ... to dawdle.

好閒 *Hao⁴ hsien²*. Lazy, indolent; *to lounge*, ... to loaf.

收頭 *Shou¹ t'ou²*. To end, *to come to an end*, ... to finish up.

倚 *I³*. To rely on, to trust to, to depend upon; . . . . . a fulcrum.

倚靠 *I³ k'ao⁴*. *To trust to*, to rely on; to lean . . . . . upon, to rest.

堡 *P'u⁴, pu³,⁴*. . . . . *A guard station*, a hamlet.

春天 *Ch'un¹ t'ien¹*. . . . . Spring.

秋 *Ch'iu¹*. . . . . Autumn; a season, sad.

秋天 *Ch'iu¹ t'ien¹*. . . . . Autumn.

花子 *Hwa¹ tsï³*. . . . . *A beggar*, a mendicant.

討飯 *T'ao³ fan⁴*. *To beg for bread*, to be a . . . . . beggar.

讀書 *Tu² shu¹*. . . . . *To study*, to go to school.

辦理 *Pan⁴ li³*. . . . *To do*, to transact, to manage.

蝎 *Hsie¹*. . . . . A scorpion.

螫 *Chê¹*. *To sting*; a sting; poisonous. Also . . . . *shi⁴*.

Digitized by Google

鵪鶉的、甚麼玩意兒都有。

戲法的、要猴子的、唱小曲的、賣畫眉的、鬪鵪的、大街、我們來到城隍廟、那裏有說書的、變一下毒鈎子、直疼到今天早上纔好了。○過[30]了算怎樣辦理。○昨[29]天晚上、我叫蝎子鈎螯了再脫脚鞋、就是眼到、意思、心到、就是口到。○俗[28]語說、到了河邊再打給他什麼、他就罵起來了。○讀[27]書有三到、沒到門口討飯、沒就是不提。○他[25]對你提到我的事情沒有、答一點也不提。○昨[26]天有個花子、跑到門口討飯、沒有討到、

25 Did he speak to you of my affairs? *Ans.* He did not mention them.

26 Yesterday a beggar came to the door wanting something to eat, and when nothing was given him, he began to revile.

27 There are three requisites to study—the eyes, the mind and the tongue.

28 The saying runs, When you have reached the river it is time enough to take off your shoes, which means, wait till the thing is actually at hand before you plan what you will do.

29 Yesterday evening a scorpion stung me, and it pained me continuously until this morning before it ceased.

30 Crossing the great street we came to the Ch'êng Hwang temple, where were story telling, sleight of hand performing, monkey shows, song singing, thrush venders, quail fighting and every kind of amusement.

鈎 *Kou*[1]. A hook; a claw, *a barb*, a clasp; to .....hook; to detain; to tempt, to entice; to sew in a lining.

隍 *Hwang*[2]. The moat or ditch around a city ..... wall.

城隍 *Ch'êng*[2] *hwang*[2]. The tutelar god of a ..... city:—Note 30.

說書 *Shwoō*[1] *shu*[1]. To recite stories—usually .....the imaginary exploits of noted characters, heroes, robbers, rebels, etc.

戲法 *Hsi*[4] *fa*[3]. *Sleight of hand*, tricks, leger-..... demain, jugglery.

猴 *Hou*[2]..... *A monkey;* tricky, unreliable.

曲 *Ch'ü*[3].... *Songs*, ditties, ballads. Also *ch'ü*[1].

畫眉 *Hwa*[4] *mei*[2]..... The grey thrush.

鵪 *An*[1]..... The quail.

鶉 *Ch'un*[2]..... The quail.

鵪鶉 The quail.

玩意 *Wan*[2] *i*[4]. Toys, play-things; *amusements*, ...in fun, in play.

NOTES.

1 **晚** is more widely used in this connection than **黑**.

2 A proverb, expressing the idea that when misery has reached its limit, happiness follows in natural order. **自** is a contraction for **自然**. As usual with proverbs, the style is terse and bookish.

4 **趕不到** Said of one accomplishing a journey.

5 Lit., *Work till old age—learn till old age, and yet there will be three parts* [in ten] *unlearned.*

6 **脚** includes both packmules and carts, but usually refers to the former. **脚子**, in the South, means coolies who carry burdens. In some places **脚子** also means a small boat—a ship's boat.

7 Bunyan's original is, "The dust began so abundantly to fly about that they had almost been choked."

11 This sentence might also mean: *Having spoken in this way, I will not help you.* All depends on the circumstances and on the emphasis given by the speaker.

13 **壞蛋** *A spoiled egg*,—a figure for a worthless renegade, more expressive than elegant, and much stronger than the corresponding expression in English.

15 Not used in direct address to the other party, but only put so for the purpose of illustration or exhortation.

16 Said out of politeness by a guest to the person escorting him.

18 **齊** *even, uniform; i.e., all present.*

21 **遊手好閒** *Swinging the hands and delighting in idleness*,—an expressive book phrase in common use.

27 **有三到** *Three things at it*,—that is the eye, the mind and the mouth, must all be brought into service and kept to it. The sentence does not properly illustrate the principle of the lesson.

28 The idea is, don't anticipate trouble before it comes. "Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof."

Digitized by Google

第七十七課

你[1]因[3]記他[6]多○兒、他、甚碎
爲朋友心的那在的緣故[10]人必必有所因爲術○難人[8]爲我[5]們不是兩了道、死、付的意思呢。○去。不[2]要因着爲一一點小事生氣。○犯○
甚麼的臉面、這樣遲晚呢。○這口氣、○爲[4]了着爲[9]頭。個名叫這半句話、銀子。不
來租裏。錢、○面、不是上來食、能裏○我[7]是一半兩
○我[16]找因。○你[13]得以爲甚麼爲好不是思呢。○
這個孩子的眼睛、○他[15]和、賊[12]藏食來呢。○不[14]逢的扁食。
個我○他[11]蒼叫這幾兩話、也
因[3]爲[4]着[9]之[14]
因爲 or 因之 Same as 因 alone.
因着 Same as 爲 alone.
因了 Same as 爲 alone,—only used in Southern Mandarin.
因什麼 Because of what; *i.e.*, why, wherefore.
因的是 For the purpose of, why.

Translation.

1 Why are you so late as this in coming?
2 Do not get angry on account of a small matter.
3 On account of my friend's feelings, I am ashamed not to go.
4 A matter of a few words; it is not worth keeping in mind.
5 What we want is to get revenge, not to get these few taels.
6 Why is it that he cannot pay that rent of his?
7 My name is legion; for we are many.
8 Men die for money, and birds lose their lives for food.
9 To smash a dumpling on account of a fly.
10 The devices of the heart are hard to know, for they are hidden within.
11 That he does not enter your door, must be because you have offended him.
12 Would the thief accuse him without any cause? If he accuses him, there must be some occasion.
13 The strife between the two families took its rise in gambling.
14 Why are you always finding fault with me?
15 Because of a misunderstanding, they fought till their heads were cut and bleeding.
16 This child's eyes were destroyed by exposure to the wind when he had measles.

30 城隍 Lit., *city moat*, but popularly used as the title of the tutelar god of the city. Each walled city in China has such a god and a temple in his honor. These temples are generally the finest temples in the city and kept in the best repair, and are the most resorted to by worshippers. There is no one individual god known as Ch'éng Hwang at large, but each city has its own—a deified man acting as patron god of the city. They are supposed to be appointed and rotated from time to time. Each city god has the same rank in the unseen world that the chief officer of the city over which he presides has in this world. In some cases the courts of this temple are the constant scene of a sort of Vanity Fair, in others, only on the occasion of the regular festivals in honor of the god.

LESSON LXXVII.

Causal Particles.

因 To proceed, to rely on, for, because, since.

爲 To do, to become, for, because, since, on account of.

因爲 For, because, since, inasmuch as.

Digitized by Google

他[18]做買賣不發財、就是因爲用度太大了。○因[19]不[20]必因着孩子家爭吵、不得不再再三三囑咐你和氣、無論[21]我[22]你[23]弟兄[2]之間、總要[3]彼此[4]謙讓、[5]不[6]可[7]因[8]爲一時不順心、就說拉倒。○[9]住[10]地方[11]不[12]可[13]因[14]爲[15]我沒招呼他喫飯、就[16]說我眼中無人。○[17]謀衣食、

怎麼認得張二爺呢、[24]我在烟臺開糧棧、[25]常常[26]有人來往、[27]不[28]可[29]因[30]爲[31]一[32]時[33]的[34]小[35]事[36]就[37]傷[38]了[39]和[40]氣。○[41]你[42]要[43]知[44]道[45]、[46]人[47]生[48]在[49]世[50]、[51]不[52]過[53]是[54]爲[55]衣[56]食[57]兩[58]字[59]、[60]你[61]看[62]那[63]做[64]官[65]的[66]、[67]爲[68]的[69]是[70]什[71]麼[72]、[73]還[74]不[75]是[76]爲[77]的[78]衣[79]食[80]麼[81]、[82]你[83]看[84]那[85]做[86]生[87]意[88]的[89]、[90]爲[91]的[92]是[93]什[94]麼[95]、[96]還[97]不[98]是[99]爲[100]的[101]衣[102]食[103]麼[104]、[105]你[106]看[107]那[108]做[109]手[110]藝[111]的[112]、[113]爲[114]的[115]是[116]什[117]麼[118]、[119]還[120]不[121]是[122]爲[123]的[124]衣[125]食[126]麼[127]、[128]你[129]看[130]那[131]做[132]官[133]的[134]、[135]爲[136]的[137]是[138]什[139]麼[140]、[141]還[142]不[143]是[144]爲[145]的[146]衣[147]食[148]麼[149]、[150]你[151]看[152]那[153]做[154]官[155]的[156]、[157]爲[158]的[159]是[160]什[161]麼[162]、[163]還[164]不[165]是[166]爲[167]的[168]衣[169]食[170]麼[171]、[172]你[173]看[174]那[175]做[176]官[177]的[178]、[179]爲[180]的[181]是[182]什[183]麼[184]、[185]還[186]不[187]是[188]爲[189]的[190]衣[191]食[192]麼[193]、[194]你[195]看[196]那[197]做[198]官[199]的[200]、[201]爲[202]的[203]是[204]什[205]麼[206]、[207]還[208]不[209]是[210]爲[211]的[212]衣[213]食[214]麼[215]、[216]你[217]看[218]那[219]做[220]官[221]的[222]、[223]爲[224]的[225]是[226]什[227]麼[228]、[229]還[230]不[231]是[232]爲[233]的[234]衣[235]食[236]麼[237]、[238]你[239]看[240]那[241]做[242]官[243]的[244]、[245]爲[246]的[247]是[248]什[249]麼[250]、[251]還[252]不[253]是[254]爲[255]的[256]衣[257]食[258]麼[259]、[260]你[261]看[262]那[263]做[264]官[265]的[266]、[267]爲[268]的[269]是[270]什[271]麼[272]、[273]還[274]不[275]是[276]爲[277]的[278]衣[279]食[280]麼[281]、[282]你[283]看[284]那[285]做[286]官[287]的[288]、[289]爲[290]的[291]是[292]什[293]麼[294]、[295]還[296]不[297]是[298]爲[299]的[300]衣[301]食[302]麼[303]、[304]你[305]看[306]那[307]做[308]官[309]的[310]、[311]爲[312]的[313]是[314]什[315]麼[316]、[317]還[318]不[319]是[320]爲[321]的[322]衣[323]食[324]麼[325]、[326]你[327]看[328]那[329]做[330]官[331]的[332]、[333]爲[334]的[335]是[336]什[337]麼[338]、[339]還[340]不[341]是[342]爲[343]的[344]衣[345]食[346]麼[347]、[348]你[349]看[350]那[351]做[352]官[353]的[354]、[355]爲[356]的[357]是[358]什[359]麼[360]、[361]還[362]不[363]是[364]爲[365]的[366]衣[367]食[368]麼[369]、[370]你[371]看[372]那[373]做[374]官[375]的[376]、[377]爲[378]的[379]是[380]什[381]麼[382]、[383]還[384]不[385]是[386]爲[387]的[388]衣[389]食[390]麼[391]、[392]你[393]看[394]那[395]做[396]官[397]的[398]、[399]爲[400]的[401]是[402]什[403]麼[404]、[405]還[406]不[407]是[408]爲[409]的[410]衣[411]食[412]麼[413]、[414]你[415]看[416]那[417]做[418]官[419]的[420]、[421]爲[422]的[423]是[424]什[425]麼[426]、[427]還[428]不[429]是[430]爲[431]的[432]衣[433]食[434]麼[435]、[436]你[437]看[438]那[439]做[440]官[441]的[442]、[443]爲[444]的[445]是[446]什[447]麼[448]、[449]還[450]不[451]是[452]爲[453]的[454]衣[455]食[456]麼[457]、[458]你[459]看[460]那[461]做[462]官[463]的[464]、[465]爲[466]的[467]是[468]什[469]麼[470]、[471]還[472]不[473]是[474]爲[475]的[476]衣[477]食[478]麼[479]、[480]你[481]看[482]那[483]做[484]官[485]的[486]、[487]爲[488]的[489]是[490]什[491]麼[492]、[493]還[494]不[495]是[496]爲[497]的[498]衣[499]食[500]麼[501]、[502]你[503]看[504]那[505]做[506]官[507]的[508]、[509]爲[510]的[511]是[512]什[513]麼[514]、[515]還[516]不[517]是[518]爲[519]的[520]衣[521]食[522]麼[523]、[524]你[525]看[526]那[527]做[528]官[529]的[530]、[531]爲[532]的[533]是[534]什[535]麼[536]、[537]還[538]不[539]是[540]爲[541]的[542]衣[543]食[544]麼[545]、[546]你[547]看[548]那[549]做[550]官[551]的[552]、[553]爲[554]的[555]是[556]什[557]麼[558]、[559]還[560]不[561]是[562]爲[563]的[564]衣[565]食[566]麼[567]、[568]你[569]看[570]那[571]做[572]官[573]的[574]、[575]爲[576]的[577]是[578]什[579]麼[580]、[581]還[582]不[583]是[584]爲[585]的[586]衣[587]食[588]麼[589]、[590]你[591]看[592]那[593]做[594]官[595]的[596]、[597]爲[598]的[599]是[600]什[601]麼[602]、[603]還[604]不[605]是[606]爲[607]的[608]衣[609]食[610]麼[611]、[612]你[613]看[614]那[615]做[616]官[617]的[618]、[619]爲[620]的[621]是[622]什[623]麼[624]、[625]還[626]不[627]是[628]爲[629]的[630]衣[631]食[632]麼[633]、[634]你[635]看[636]那[637]做[638]官[639]的[640]、[641]爲[642]的[643]是[644]什[645]麼[646]、[647]還[648]不[649]是[650]爲[651]的[652]衣[653]食[654]麼[655]、[656]你[657]看[658]那[659]做[660]官[661]的[662]、[663]爲[664]的[665]是[666]什[667]麼[668]、[669]還[670]不[671]是[672]爲[673]的[674]衣[675]食[676]麼[677]、[678]你[679]看[680]那[681]做[682]官[683]的[684]、[685]爲[686]的[687]是[688]什[689]麼[690]、[691]還[692]不[693]是[694]爲[695]的[696]衣[697]食[698]麼[699]、[700]你[701]看[702]那[703]做[704]官[705]的[706]、[707]爲[708]的[709]是[710]什[711]麼[712]、[713]還[714]不[715]是[716]爲[717]的[718]衣[719]食[720]麼[721]、[722]你[723]看[724]那[725]做[726]官[727]的[728]、[729]爲[730]的[731]是[732]什[733]麼[734]、[735]還[736]不[737]是[738]爲[739]的[740]衣[741]食[742]麼[743]、[744]你[745]看[746]那[747]做[748]官[749]的[750]、[751]爲[752]的[753]是[754]什[755]麼[756]、[757]還[758]不[759]是[760]爲[761]的[762]衣[763]食[764]麼[765]、[766]你[767]看[768]那[769]做[770]官[771]的[772]、[773]爲[774]的[775]是[776]什[777]麼[778]、[779]還[780]不[781]是[782]爲[783]的[784]衣[785]食[786]麼[787]、[788]你[789]看[790]那[791]做[792]官[793]的[794]、[795]爲[796]的[797]是[798]什[799]麼[800]、[801]還[802]不[803]是[804]爲[805]的[806]衣[807]食[808]麼[809]、[810]你[811]看[812]那[813]做[814]官[815]的[816]、[817]爲[818]的[819]是[820]什[821]麼[822]、[823]還[824]不[825]是[826]爲[827]的[828]衣[829]食[830]麼[831]、[832]你[833]看[834]那[835]做[836]官[837]的[838]、[839]爲[840]的[841]是[842]什[843]麼[844]、[845]還[846]不[847]是[848]爲[849]的[850]衣[851]食[852]麼[853]、[854]你[855]看[856]那[857]做[858]官[859]的[860]、[861]爲[862]的[863]是[864]什[865]麼[866]、[867]還[868]不[869]是[870]爲[871]的[872]衣[873]食[874]麼[875]、[876]你[877]看[878]那[879]做[880]官[881]的[882]、[883]爲[884]的[885]是[886]什[887]麼[888]、[889]還[890]不[891]是[892]爲[893]的[894]衣[895]食[896]麼[897]、[898]你[899]看[900]那[901]做[902]官[903]的[904]、[905]爲[906]的[907]是[908]什[909]麼[910]、[911]還[912]不[913]是[914]爲[915]的[916]衣[917]食[918]麼[919]、[920]你[921]看[922]那[923]做[924]官[925]的[926]、[927]爲[928]的[929]是[930]什[931]麼[932]、[933]還[934]不[935]是[936]爲[937]的[938]衣[939]食[940]麼[941]、[942]你[943]看[944]那[945]做[946]官[947]的[948]、[949]爲[950]的[951]是[952]什[953]麼[954]、[955]還[956]不[957]是[958]爲[959]的[960]衣[961]食[962]麼[963]、[964]你[965]看[966]那[967]做[968]官[969]的[970]、[971]爲[972]的[973]是[974]什[975]麼[976]、[977]還[978]不[979]是[980]爲[981]的[982]衣[983]食[984]麼[985]、[986]你[987]看[988]那[989]做[990]官[991]的[992]、[993]爲[994]的[995]是[996]什[997]麼[998]、[999]還[1000]不[1001]是[1002]爲[1003]的[1004]衣[1005]食[1006]麼[1007]、[1008]你[1009]看[1010]那[1011]做[1012]官[1013]的[1014]、[1015]爲[1016]的[1017]是[1018]什[1019]麼[1020]、[1021]還[1022]不[1023]是[1024]爲[1025]的[1026]衣[1027]食[1028]麼[1029]、[1030]你[1031]看[1032]那[1033]做[1034]官[1035]的[1036]、[1037]爲[1038]的[1039]是[1040]什[1041]麼[1042]、[1043]還[1044]不[1045]是[1046]爲[1047]的[1048]衣[1049]食[1050]麼[1051]、[1052]你[1053]看[1054]那[1055]做[1056]官[1057]的[1058]、[1059]爲[1060]的[1061]是[1062]什[1063]麼[1064]、[1065]還[1066]不[1067]是[1068]爲[1069]的[1070]衣[1071]食[1072]麼[1073]、[1074]你[1075]看[1076]那[1077]做[1078]官[1079]的[1080]、[1081]爲[1082]的[1083]是[1084]什[1085]麼[1086]、[1087]還[1088]不[1089]是[1090]爲[1091]的[1092]衣[1093]食[1094]麼[1095]、[1096]你[1097]看[1098]那[1099]做[1100]官[1101]的[1102]、[1103]爲[1104]的[1105]是[1106]什[1107]麼[1108]、[1109]還[1110]不[1111]是[1112]爲[1113]的[1114]衣[1115]食[1116]麼[1117]、[1118]你[1119]看[1120]那[1121]做[1122]官[1123]的[1124]、[1125]爲[1126]的[1127]是[1128]什[1129]麼[1130]、[1131]還[1132]不[1133]是[1134]爲[1135]的[1136]衣[1137]食[1138]麼[1139]、[1140]你[1141]看[1142]那[1143]做[1144]官[1145]的[1146]、[1147]爲[1148]的[1149]是[1150]什[1151]麼[1152]、[1153]還[1154]不[1155]是[1156]爲[1157]的[1158]衣[1159]食[1160]麼[1161]、[1162]你[1163]看[1164]那[1165]做[1166]官[1167]的[1168]、[1169]爲[1170]的[1171]是[1172]什[1173]麼[1174]、[1175]還[1176]不[1177]是[1178]爲[1179]的[1180]衣[1181]食[1182]麼[1183]、[1184]你[1185]看[1186]那[1187]做[1188]官[1189]的[1190]、[1191]爲[1192]的[1193]是[1194]什[1195]麼[1196]、[1197]還[1198]不[1199]是[1200]爲[1201]的[1202]衣[1203]食[1204]麼[1205]、[1206]你[1207]看[1208]那[1209]做[1210]官[1211]的[1212]、[1213]爲[1214]的[1215]是[1216]什[1217]麼[1218]、[1219]還[1220]不[1221]是[1222]爲[1223]的[1224]衣[1225]食[1226]麼[1227]、[1228]你[1229]看[1230]那[1231]做[1232]官[1233]的[1234]、[1235]爲[1236]的[1237]是[1238]什[1239]麼[1240]、[1241]還[1242]不[1243]是[1244]爲[1245]的[1246]衣[1247]食[1248]麼[1249]、[1250]你[1251]看[1252]那[1253]做[1254]官[1255]的[1256]、[1257]爲[1258]的[1259]是[1260]什[1261]麼[1262]、[1263]還[1264]不[1265]是[1266]爲[1267]的[1268]衣[1269]食[1270]麼[1271]、[1272]你[1273]看[1274]那[1275]做[1276]官[1277]的[1278]、[1279]爲[1280]的[1281]是[1282]什[1283]麼[1284]、[1285]還[1286]不[1287]是[1288]爲[1289]的[1290]衣[1291]食[1292]麼[1293]、[1294]你[1295]看[1296]那[1297]做[1298]官[1299]的[1300]、[1301]爲[1302]的[1303]是[1304]什[1305]麼[1306]、[1307]還[1308]不[1309]是[1310]爲[1311]的[1312]衣[1313]食[1314]麼[1315]、[1316]你[1317]看[1318]那[1319]做[1320]官[1321]的[1322]、[1323]爲[1324]的[1325]是[1326]什[1327]麼[1328]、[1329]還[1330]不[1331]是[1332]爲[1333]的[1334]衣[1335]食[1336]麼[1337]、[1338]你[1339]看[1340]那[1341]做[1342]官[1343]的[1344]、[1345]爲[1346]的[1347]是[1348]什[1349]麼[1350]、[1351]還[1352]不[1353]是[1354]爲[1355]的[1356]衣[1357]食[1358]麼[1359]、[1360]你[1361]看[1362]那[1363]做[1364]官[1365]的[1366]、[1367]爲[1368]的[1369]是[1370]什[1371]麼[1372]、[1373]還[1374]不[1375]是[1376]爲[1377]的[1378]衣[1379]食[1380]麼[1381]、[1382]你[1383]看[1384]那[1385]做[1386]官[1387]的[1388]、[1389]爲[1390]的[1391]是[1392]什[1393]麼[1394]、[1395]還[1396]不[1397]是[1398]爲[1399]的[1400]衣[1401]食[1402]麼[1403]、[1404]你[1405]看[1406]那[1407]做[1408]官[1409]的[1410]、[1411]爲[1412]的[1413]是[1414]什[1415]麼[1416]、[1417]還[1418]不[1419]是[1420]爲[1421]的[1422]衣[1423]食[1424]麼[1425]、[1426]你[1427]看[1428]那[1429]做[1430]官[1431]的[1432]、[1433]爲[1434]的[1435]是[1436]什[1437]麼[1438]、[1439]還[1440]不[1441]是[1442]爲[1443]的[1444]衣[1445]食[1446]麼[1447]、[1448]你[1449]看[1450]那[1451]做[1452]官[1453]的[1454]、[1455]爲[1456]的[1457]是[1458]什[1459]麼[1460]、[1461]還[1462]不[1463]是[1464]爲[1465]的[1466]衣[1467]食[1468]麼[1469]、[1470]你[1471]看[1472]那[1473]做[1474]官[1475]的[1476]、[1477]爲[1478]的[1479]是[1480]什[1481]麼[1482]、[1483]還[1484]不[1485]是[1486]爲[1487]的[1488]衣[1489]食[1490]麼[1491]、[1492]你[1493]看[1494]那[1495]做[1496]官[1497]的[1498]、[1499]爲[1500]的[1501]是[1502]什[1503]麼[1504]、[1505]還[1506]不[1507]是[1508]爲[1509]的[1510]衣[1511]食[1512]麼[1513]、[1514]你[1515]看[1516]那[1517]做[1518]官[1519]的[1520]、[1521]爲[1522]的[1523]是[1524]什[1525]麼[1526]、[1527]還[1528]不[1529]是[1530]爲[1531]的[1532]衣[1533]食[1534]麼[1535]、[1536]你[1537]看[1538]那[1539]做[1540]官[1541]的[1542]、[1543]爲[1544]的[1545]是[1546]什[1547]麼[1548]、[1549]還[1550]不[1551]是[1552]爲[1553]的[1554]衣[1555]食[1556]麼[1557]、[1558]你[1559]看[1560]那[1561]做[1562]官[1563]的[1564]、[1565]爲[1566]的[1567]是[1568]什[1569]麼[1570]、[1571]還[1572]不[1573]是[1574]爲[1575]的[1576]衣[1577]食[1578]麼[1579]、[1580]你[1581]看[1582]那[1583]做[1584]官[1585]的[1586]、[1587]爲[1588]的[1589]是[1590]什[1591]麼[1592]、[1593]還[1594]不[1595]是[1596]爲[1597]的[1598]衣[1599]食[1600]麼[1601]、[1602]你[1603]看[1604]那[1605]做[1606]官[1607]的[1608]、[1609]爲[1610]的[1611]是[1612]什[1613]麼[1614]、[1615]還[1616]不[1617]是[1618]爲[1619]的[1620]衣[1621]食[1622]麼[1623]、[1624]你[1625]看[1626]那[1627]做[1628]官[1629]的[1630]、[1631]爲[1632]的[1633]是[1634]什[1635]麼[1636]、[1637]還[1638]不[1639]是[1640]爲[1641]的[1642]衣[1643]食[1644]麼[1645]、[1646]你[1647]看[1648]那[1649]做[1650]官[1651]的[1652]、[1653]爲[1654]的[1655]是[1656]什[1657]麼[1658]、[1659]還[1660]不[1661]是[1662]爲[1663]的[1664]衣[1665]食[1666]麼[1667]、[1668]你[1669]看[1670]那[1671]做[1672]官[1673]的[1674]、[1675]爲[1676]的[1677]是[1678]什[1679]麼[1680]、[1681]還[1682]不[1683]是[1684]爲[1685]的[1686]衣[1687]食[1688]麼[1689]、[1690]你[1691]看[1692]那[1693]做[1694]官[1695]的[1696]、[1697]爲[1698]的[1699]是[1700]什[1701]麼[1702]、[1703]還[1704]不[1705]是[1706]爲[1707]的[1708]衣[1709]食[1710]麼[1711]、[1712]你[1713]看[1714]那[1715]做[1716]官[1717]的[1718]、[1719]爲[1720]的[1721]是[1722]什[1723]麼[1724]、[1725]還[1726]不[1727]是[1728]爲[1729]的[1730]衣[1731]食[1732]麼[1733]、[1734]你[1735]看[1736]那[1737]做[1738]官[1739]的[1740]、[1741]爲[1742]的[1743]是[1744]什[1745]麼[1746]、[1747]還[1748]不[1749]是[1750]爲[1751]的[1752]衣[1753]食[1754]麼[1755]、[1756]你[1757]看[1758]那[1759]做[1760]官[1761]的[1762]、[1763]爲[1764]的[1765]是[1766]什[1767]麼[1768]、[1769]還[1770]不[1771]是[1772]爲[1773]的[1774]衣[1775]食[1776]麼[1777]、[1778]你[1779]看[1780]那[1781]做[1782]官[1783]的[1784]、[1785]爲[1786]的[1787]是[1788]什[1789]麼[1790]、[1791]還[1792]不[1793]是[1794]爲[1795]的[1796]衣[1797]食[1798]麼[1799]、[1800]你[1801]看[1802]那[1803]做[1804]官[1805]的[1806]、[1807]爲[1808]的[1809]是[1810]什[1811]麼[1812]、[1813]還[1814]不[1815]是[1816]爲[1817]的[1818]衣[1819]食[1820]麼[1821]、[1822]你[1823]看[1824]那[1825]做[1826]官[1827]的[1828]、[1829]爲[1830]的[1831]是[1832]什[1833]麼[1834]、[1835]還[1836]不[1837]是[1838]爲[1839]的[1840]衣[1841]食[1842]麼[1843]、[1844]你[1845]看[1846]那[1847]做[1848]官[1849]的[1850]、[1851]爲[1852]的[1853]是[1854]什[1855]麼[1856]、[1857]還[1858]不[1859]是[1860]爲[1861]的[1862]衣[1863]食[1864]麼[1865]、[1866]你[1867]看[1868]那[1869]做[1870]官[1871]的[1872]、[1873]爲[1874]的[1875]是[1876]什[1877]麼[1878]、[1879]還[1880]不[1881]是[1882]爲[1883]的[1884]衣[1885]食[1886]麼[1887]、[1888]你[1889]看[1890]那[1891]做[1892]官[1893]的[1894]、[1895]爲[1896]的[1897]是[1898]什[1899]麼[1900]、[1901]還[1902]不[1903]是[1904]爲[1905]的[1906]衣[1907]食[1908]麼[1909]、[1910]你[1911]看[1912]那[1913]做[1914]官[1915]的[1916]、[1917]爲[1918]的[1919]是[1920]什[1921]麼[1922]、[1923]還[1924]不[1925]是[1926]爲[1927]的[1928]衣[1929]食[1930]麼[1931]、[1932]你[1933]看[1934]那[1935]做[1936]官[1937]的[1938]、[1939]爲[1940]的[1941]是[1942]什[1943]麼[1944]、[1945]還[1946]不[1947]是[1948]爲[1949]的[1950]衣[1951]食[1952]麼[1953]、[1954]你[1955]看[1956]那[1957]做[1958]官[1959]的[1960]、[1961]爲[1962]的[1963]是[1964]什[1965]麼[1966]、[1967]還[1968]不[1969]是[1970]爲[1971]的[1972]衣[1973]食[1974]麼[1975]、[1976]你[1977]看[1978]那[1979]做[1980]官[1981]的[1982]、[1983]爲[1984]的[1985]是[1986]什[1987]麼[1988]、[1989]還[1990]不[1991]是[1992]爲[1993]的[1994]衣[1995]食[1996]麼[1997]、[1998]你[1999]看[2000]那[2001]做[2002]官[2003]的[2004]、[2005]爲[2006]的[2007]是[2008]什[2009]麼[2010]、[2011]還[2012]不[2013]是[2014]爲[2015]的[2016]衣[2017]食[2018]麼[2019]、[2020]你[2021]看[2022]那[2023]做[2024]官[2025]的[2026]、[2027]爲[2028]的[2029]是[2030]什[2031]麼[2032]、[2033]還[2034]不[2035]是[2036]爲[2037]的[2038]衣[2039]食[2040]麼[2041]、[2042]你[2043]看[2044]那[2045]做[2046]官[2047]的[2048]、[2049]爲[2050]的[2051]是[2052]什[2053]麼[2054]、[2055]還[2056]不[2057]是[2058]爲[2059]的[2060]衣[2061]食[2062]麼[2063]、[2064]你[2065]看[2066]那[2067]做[2068]官[2069]的[2070]、[2071]爲[2072]的[2073]是[2074]什[2075]麼[2076]、[2077]還[2078]不[2079]是[2080]爲[2081]的[2082]衣[2083]食[2084]麼[2085]、[2086]你[2087]看[2088]那[2089]做[2090]官[2091]的[2092]、[2093]爲[2094]的[2095]是[2096]什[2097]麼[2098]、[2099]還[2100]不[2101]是[2102]爲[2103]的[2104]衣[2105]食[2106]麼[2107]、[2108]你[2109]看[2110]那[2111]做[2112]官[2113]的[2114]、[2115]爲[2116]的[2117]是[2118]什[2119]麼[2120]、[2121]還[2122]不[2123]是[2124]爲[2125]的[2126]衣[2127]食[2128]麼[2129]、[2130]你[2131]看[2132]那[2133]做[2134]官[2135]的[2136]、[2137]爲[2138]的[2139]是[2140]什[2141]麼[2142]、[2143]還[2144]不[2145]是[2146]爲[2147]的[2148]衣[2149]食[2150]麼[2151]、[2152]你[2153]看[2154]那[2155]做[2156]官[2157]的[2158]、[2159]爲[2160]的[2161]是[2162]什[2163]麼[2164]、[2165]還[2166]不[2167]是[2168]爲[2169]的[2170]衣[2171]食[2172]麼[2173]、[2174]你[2175]看[2176]那[2177]做[2178]官[2179]的[2180]、[2181]爲[2182]的[2183]是[2184]什[2185]麼[2186]、[2187]還[2188]不[2189]是[2190]爲[2191]的[2192]衣[2193]食[2194]麼[2195]、[2196]你[2197]看[2198]那[2199]做[2200]官[2201]的[2202]、[2203]爲[2204]的[2205]是[2206]什[2207]麼[2208]、[2209]還[2210]不[2211]是[2212]爲[2213]的[2214]衣[2215]食[2216]麼[2217]、[2218]你[2219]看[2220]那[2221]做[2222]官[2223]的[2224]、[2225]爲[2226]的[2227]是[2228]什[2229]麼[2230]、[2231]還[2232]不[2233]是[2234]爲[2235]的[2236]衣[2237]食[2238]麼[2239]、[2240]你[2241]看[2242]那[2243]做[2244]官[2245]的[2246]、[2247]爲[2248]的[2249]是[2250]什[2251]麼[2252]、[2253]還[2254]不[2255]是[2256]爲[2257]的[2258]衣[2259]食[2260]麼[2261]、[2262]你[2263]看[2264]那[2265]做[2266]官[2267]的[2268]、[2269]爲[2270]的[2271]是[2272]什[2273]麼[2274]、[2275]還[2276]不[2277]是[2278]爲[2279]的[2280]衣[2281]食[2282]麼[2283]、[2284]你[2285]看[2286]那[2287]做[2288]官[2289]的[2290]、[2291]爲[2292]的[2293]是[2294]什[2295]麼[2296]、[2297]還[2298]不[2299]是[2300]爲[2301]的[2302]衣[2303]食[2304]麼[2305]、[2306]你[2307]看[2308]那[2309]做[2310]官[2311]的[2312]、[2313]爲[2314]的[2315]是[2316]什[2317]麼[2318]、[2319]還[2320]不[2321]是[2322]爲[2323]的[2324]衣[2325]食[2326]麼[2327]、[2328]你[2329]看[2330]那[2331]做[2332]官[2333]的[2334]、[2335]爲[2336]的[2337]是[2338]什[2339]麼[2340]、[2341]還[2342]不[2343]是[2344]爲[2345]的[2346]衣[2347]食[2348]麼[2349]、[2350]你[2351]看[2352]那[2353]做[2354]官[2355]的[2356]、[2357]爲[2358]的[2359]是[2360]什[2361]麼[2362]、[2363]還[2364]不[2365]是[2366]爲[2367]的[2368]衣[2369]食[2370]麼[2371]、[2372]你[2373]看[2374]那[2375]做[2376]官[2377]的[2378]、[2379]爲[2380]的[2381]是[2382]什[2383]麼[2384]、[2385]還[2386]不[2387]是[2388]爲[2389]的[2390]衣[2391]食[2392]麼[2393]、[2394]你[2395]看[2396]那[2397]做[2398]官[2399]的[2400]、[2401]爲[2402]的[2403]是[2404]什[2405]麼[2406]、[2407]還[2408]不[2409]是[2410]爲[2411]的[2412]衣[2413]食[2414]麼[2415]、[2416]你[2417]看[2418]那[2419]做[2420]官[2421]的[2422]、[2423]爲[2424]的[2425]是[2426]什[2427]麼[2428]、[2429]還[2430]不[2431]是[2432]爲[2433]的[2434]衣[2435]食[2436]麼[2437]、[2438]你[2439]看[2440]那[2441]做[2442]官[2443]的[2444]、[2445]爲[2446]的[2447]是[2448]什[2449]麼[2450]、[2451]還[2452]不[2453]是[2454]爲[2455]的[2456]衣[2457]食[2458]麼[2459]、[2460]你[2461]看[2462]那[2463]做[2464]官[2465]的[2466]、[2467]爲[2468]的[2469]是[2470]什[2471]麼[2472]、[2473]還[2474]不[2475]是[2476]爲[2477]的[2478]衣[2479]食[2480]麼[2481]、[2482]你[2483]看[2484]那[2485]做[2486]官[2487]的[2488]、[2489]爲[2490]的[2491]是[2492]什[2493]麼[2494]、[2495]還[2496]不[2497]是[2498]爲[2499]的[2500]衣[2501]食[2502]麼[2503]、[2504]你[2505]看[2506]那[2507]做[2508]官[2509]的[2510]、[2511]爲[2512]的[2513]是[2514]什[2515]麼[2516]、[2517]還[2518]不[2519]是[2520]爲[2521]的[2522]衣[2523]食[2524]麼[2525]、[2526]你[2527]看[2528]那[2529]做[2530]官[2531]的[2532]、[2533]爲[2534]的[2535]是[2536]什[2537]麼[2538]、[2539]還[2540]不[2541]是[2542]爲[2543]的[2544]衣[2545]食[2546]麼[2547]、[2548]你[2549]看[2550]那[2551]做[2552]官[2553]的[2554]、[2555]爲[2556]的[2557]是[2558]什[2559]麼[2560]、[2561]還[2562]不[2563]是[2564]爲[2565]的[2566]衣[2567]食[2568]麼[2569]、[2570]你[2571]看[2572]那[2573]做[2574]官[2575]的[2576]、[2577]爲[2578]的[2579]是[2580]什[2581]麼[2582]、[2583]還[2584]不[2585]是[2586]爲[2587]的[2588]衣[2589]食[2590]麼[2591]、[2592]你[2593]看[2594]那[2595]做[2596]官[2597]的[2598]、[2599]爲[2600]的[2601]是[2602]什[2603]麼[2604]、[2605]還[2606]不[2607]是[2608]爲[2609]的[2610]衣[2611]食[2612]麼[2613]、[2614]你[2615]看[2616]那[2617]做[2618]官[2619]的[2620]、[2621]爲[2622]的[2623]是[2624]什[2625]麼[2626]、[2627]還[2628]不[2629]是[2630]爲[2631]的[2632]衣[2633]食[2634]麼[2635]、[2636]你[2637]看[2638]那[2639]做[2640]官[2641]的[2642]、[2643]爲[2644]的[2645]是[2646]什[2647]麼[2648]、[2649]還[2650]不[2651]是[2652]爲[2653]的[2654]衣[2655]食[2656]麼[2657]、[2658]你[2659]看[2660]那[2661]做[2662]官[2663]的[2664]、[2665]爲[2666]的[2667]是[2668]什[2669]麼[2670]、[2671]還[2672]不[2673]是[2674]爲[2675]的[2676]衣[2677]食[2678]麼[2679]、[2680]你[2681]看[2682]那[2683]做[2684]官[2685]的[2686]、[2687]爲[2688]的[2689]是[2690]什[2691]麼[2692]、[2693]還[2694]不[2695]是[2696]爲[2697]的[2698]衣[2699]食[2700]麼[2701]、[2702]你[2703]看[2704]那[2705]做[2706]官[2707]的[2708]、[2709]爲[2710]的[2711]是[2712]什[2713]麼[2714]、[2715]還[2716]不[2717]是[2718]爲[2719]的[2720]衣[2721]食[2722]麼[2723]、[2724]你[2725]看[2726]那[2727]做[2728]官[2729]的[2730]、[2731]爲[2732]的[2733]是[2734]什[2735]麼[2736]、[2737]還[2738]不[2739]是[2740]爲[2741]的[2742]衣[2743]食[2744]麼[2745]、[2746]你[2747]看[2748]那[2749]做[2750]官[2751]的[2752]、[2753]爲[2754]的[2755]是[2756]什[2757]麼[2758]、[2759]還[2760]不[2761]是[2762]爲[2763]的[2764]衣[2765]食[2766]麼[2767]、[2768]你[2769]看[2770]那[2771]做[2772]官[2773]的[2774]、[2775]爲[2776]的[2777]是[2778]什[2779]麼[2780]、[2781]還[2782]不[2783]是[2784]爲[2785]的[2786]衣[2787]食[2788]麼[2789]、[2790]你[2791]看[2792]那[2793]做[2794]官[2795]的[2796]、[2797]爲[2798]的[2799]是[2800]什[2801]麼[2802]、[2803]還[2804]不[2805]是[2806]爲[2807]的[2808]衣[2809]食[2810]麼[2811]、[2812]你[2813]看[2814]那[2815]做[2816]官[2817]的[2818]、[2819]爲[2820]的[2821]是[2822]什[2823]麼[2824]、[2825]還[2826]不[2827]是[2828]爲[2829]的[2830]衣[2831]食[2832]麼[2833]、[2834]你[2835]看[2836]那[2837]做[2838]官[2839]的[2840]、[2841]爲[2842]的[2843]是[2844]什[2845]麼[2846]、[2847]還[2848]不[2849]是[2850]爲[2851]的[2852]衣[2853]食[2854]麼[2855]、[2856]你[2857]看[2858]那[2859]做[2860]官[2861]的[2862]、[2863]爲[2864]的[2865]是[2866]什[2867]麼[2868]、[2869]還[2870]不[2871]是[2872]爲[2873]的[2874]衣[2875]食[2876]麼[2877]、[2878]你[2879]看[2880]那[2881]做[2882]官[2883]的[2884]、[2885]爲[2886]的[2887]是[2888]什[2889]麼[2890]、[2891]還[2892]不[2893]是[2894]爲[2895]的[2896]衣[2897]食[2898]麼[2899]、[2900]你[2901]看[2902]那[2903]做[2904]官[2905]的[2906]、[2907]爲[2908]的[2909]是[2910]什[2911]麼[2912]、[2913]還[2914]不[2915]是[2916]爲[2917]的[2918]衣[2919]食[2920]麼[2921]、[2922]你[2923]看[2924]那[2925]做[2926]官[2927]的[2928]、[2929]爲[2930]的[2931]是[2932]什[2933]麼[2934]、[2935]還[2936]不[2937]是[2938]爲[2939]的[2940]衣[2941]食[2942]麼[2943]、[2944]你[2945]看[2946]那[2947]做[2948]官[2949]的[2950]、[2951]爲[2952]的[2953]是[2954]什[2955]麼[2956]、[2957]還[2958]不[2959]是[2960]爲[2961]的[2962]衣[2963]食[2964]麼[2965]、[2966]你[2967]看[2968]那[2969]做[2970]官[2971]的[2972]、[2973]爲[2974]的[2975]是[2976]什[2977]麼[2978]、[2979]還[2980]不[2981]是[2982]爲[2983]的[2984]衣[2985]食[2986]麼[2987]、[2988]你[2989]看[2990]那[2991]做[2992]官[2993]的[2994]、[2995]爲[2996]的[2997]是[2998]什[2999]麼[3000]、[3001]還[3002]不[3003]是[3004]爲[3005]的[3006]衣[3007]食[3008]麼[3009]、[3010]你[3011]看[3012]那[3013]做[3014]官[3015]的[3016]、[3017]爲[3018]的[3019]是[3020]什[3021]麼[3022]、[3023]還[3024]不[3025]是[3026]爲[3027]的[3028]衣[3029]食[3030]麼[3031]、[3032]你[3033]看[3034]那[3035]做[3036]官[3037]的[3038]、[3039]爲[3040]的[3041]是[3042]什[3043]麼[3044]、[3045]還[3046]不[3047]是[3048]爲[3049]的[3050]衣[3051]食[3052]麼[3053]、[3054]你[3055]看[3056]那[3057]做[3058]官[3059]的[3060]、[3061]爲[3062]的[3063]是[3064]什[3065]麼[3066]、[3067]還[3068]不[3069]是[3070]爲[3071]的[3072]衣[3073]食[3074]麼[3075]、[3076]你[3077]看[3078]那[3079]做[3080]官[3081]的[3082]、[3083]爲[3084]的[3085]是[3086]什[3087]麼[3088]、[3089]還[3090]不[3091]是[3092]爲[3093]的[3094]衣[3095]食[3096]麼[3097]、[3098]你[3099]看[3100]那[3101]做[3102]官[3103]的[3104]、[3105]爲[3106]的[3107]是[3108]什[3109]麼[3110]、[3111]還[3112]不[3113]是[3114]爲[3115]的[3116]衣[3117]食[3118]麼[3119]、[3120]你[3121]看[3122]那[3123]做[3124]官[3125]的[3126]、[3127]爲[3128]的[3129]是[3130]什[3131]麼[3132]、[3133]還[3134]不[3135]是[3136]爲[3137]的[3138]衣[3139]食[3140]麼[3141]、[3142]你[3143]看[3144]那[3145]做[3146]官[3147]的[3148]、[3149]爲[3150]的[3151]是[3152]什[3153]麼[3154]、[3155]還[3156]不[3157]是[3158]爲[3159]的[3160]衣[3161]食[3162]麼[3163]、[3164]你[3165]看[3166]那[3167]做[3168]官[3169]的[3170]、[3171]爲[3172]的[3173]是[3174]什[3175]麼[3176]、[3177]還[3178]不[3179]是[3180]爲[3181]的[3182]衣[3183]食[3184]麼[3185]、[3186]你[3187]看[3188]那[3189]做[3190]官[3191]的[3192]、[3193]爲[3194]的[3195]是[3196]什[3197]麼[3198]、[3199]還[3200]不[3201]是[3202]爲[3203]的[3204]衣[3205]食[3206]麼[3207]、[3208]你[3209]看[3210]那[3211]做[3212]官[3213]的[3214]、[3215]爲[3216]的[3217]是[

麼不託人帶來呢、答因爲信中有要緊的事情、等不得了。○他[27]沒告假、怎麼走了呢、[28]答因爲你留得愛惜光陰。○端午節[29]、人饞喫糯米糍子、是因汨羅江屈原、被小人誇自己糭粽給人、叫包一些糭粽子、丟扔在江中、託夢來告訴他不便告假。○應當得住老爺的風俗來。這個典起端午節喫糭粽子死了、

26 Why did you not send it by some one? *Ans.* Because there are important matters in the letter which could not wait.

27 How came he to go without asking leave of absence? *Ans.* Because you were not feeling well, he thought it would be inconvenient to ask you.

28 You ought to improve the time, because time will not wait for you.

29 The reason balls of glutinous rice are eaten on the dragon-boat festival, is that Ch'ü Yüen, when falsely accused by bad men, threw himself into the Miloŭ river and was drowned; afterwards he directed some one, in a dream, to make some rice balls and throw them into the river. From this arose the custom of eating rice balls on the dragon-boat festival.

再四 *Tsai⁴ si⁴*..... Again and again. (s.)
叮 *Ting¹*..... To enjoin; to bite, to sting.
嚀 *Ning²*..... To direct.
叮嚀 To charge, to enjoin. (w.)
名分 *Ming² fên⁴*. *Rank*, station, office; the duties ..... pertaining to any station.
遶 *Pên⁴*..... To run, *to hasten*, to rush.
欠安 *Ch'ien⁴ an¹*..... Indisposed, *unwell*.
假 *Chia⁴*. *Leave of absence*, furlough. See *chia³*. .....
告假 *Kao⁴ chia⁴*..... To ask leave of absence.
端午 *Twan¹ wu³*. The dragon-boat festival on the ..... fifth day of the fifth month.
江 *Chiang¹*..... A deep rapid river.
江米 *Chiang¹ mi³*..... Glutinous rice.
糯 *Noa⁴*..... Glutinous rice.
糯米 *Noâ⁴ mi³*..... Same.
糭 *Tsung⁴*. Glutinous rice dumplings with fruit ..... or meat inside, and wrapped in leaves for cooking.
讒 *Ts'an²*..... To traduce, to slander.
謗 *Pang⁴*..... To vilify, to slander.
讒謗 *To accuse falsely*, to slander, to traduce.
汨 *Mi⁴*..... Name of a river. Also *ku³*.
夢 *Meng⁴*..... To dream; a dream.
風俗 *Fêng¹ su²*..... *Custom*, vogue, tradition.

NOTES.

4 一半句話 *Half of a sentence*, that is, a few words or sentences. 犯 is here used in the sense of *worth while*. This use is general, but somewhat anomalous. Some teachers would write with 煩, as being more suitable to the meaning, though not the right tone.

5 Note how different is the meaning of 口氣, from the *phrase* 口氣 in Les. 55. The two characters here stand separately, each with its own meaning.

8 食 here refers to the bait set to catch the bird.

9 A widely known proverb, meaning to incur serious loss for a small cause.

12 咬 *to bite*, is used figuratively of the accusation of a prisoner against an accomplice. Such accusations are often procured by torture, and are not infrequently false. 所因 *that which because; i.e., some cause or occasion.*

15 話不投機 Lit., *words failed to transmit the rationale or idea.* 頭破血出 *Head broken and blood flowing*, a ready made phrase.

16 疹子 is used generically for any rash attended by fever, and includes scarlet fever, measles and chicken-pox.

17 謀衣食 is the less used, and more pedantic expression. 說拉倒 "*To throw up a situation*," "*to give warning.*" In this connection 拉倒 is quite *t'ung hsing.*

19 沒讓他吃飯 does not mean, *did not allow him to eat*; but, *began to eat before him without offering a share to him by way of apology.* When you begin to eat in another's presence, or when any one approaches where you are eating, politeness requires that you invite him to share with you. This invitation is a mere civility, it being understood that it will be declined. 眼中無人 is a book phrase.

Digitized by Google

第七十八課

前[1]從放了兵餉、所以銀子賤了。我[2]是
幾天路好的太幾來的、了兵餉、所以銀子賤了。
南睡我[4]昨[3]你。○因所以此以今我沒遇見他。
睡我[4]昨[3]你。○因所以此以今我沒遇見他。
我[4]昨[3]你。○因所以此以今我沒遇見他。
昨[3]你。○因所以此以今我沒遇見他。
你。○因所以此以今我沒遇見他。
○因所以此以今我沒遇見他。
因所以此以今我沒遇見他。
所以此以今我沒遇見他。
以此以今我沒遇見他。
此以今我沒遇見他。
以今我沒遇見他。
今我沒遇見他。
我沒遇見他。
沒遇見他。
遇見他。
見他。
他。
。

經夜昨已○[3]你[4]光有神、○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
夜昨已○[3]你[4]光有神、○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
昨已○[3]你[4]光有神、○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
已○[3]你[4]光有神、○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
○[3]你[4]光有神、○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
你[4]光有神、○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
光有神、○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
有神、○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
神、○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
、○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
○能給來不[4]睡我南幾
能給來不[4]睡我南幾
給來不[4]睡我南幾
來不[4]睡我南幾
不[4]睡我南幾
[4]睡我南幾
睡我南幾
我南幾
南幾
幾

人[5]作書。人想之着因哄是[2]
[5]作書。人想之着因哄是[2]
作書。人想之着因哄是[2]
書。人想之着因哄是[2]
。人想之着因哄是[2]
人想之着因哄是[2]
想之着因哄是[2]
之着因哄是[2]
着因哄是[2]
因哄是[2]
哄是[2]
是[2]

考有光昨[4]已○我[2]
有光昨[4]已○我[2]
光昨[4]已○我[2]
昨[4]已○我[2]
[4]已○我[2]
已○我[2]
○我[2]
我[2]

能爲神、○你[3]了。
爲神、○你[3]了。
神、○你[3]了。
、○你[3]了。
○你[3]了。
你[3]了。
了。

給他承了。
他承了。
承了。
了。

應作見。
作見。
見。

不[4]睡我南幾
[4]睡我南幾
睡我南幾
我南幾
南幾
幾

不[4]睡我南幾
[4]睡我南幾
睡我南幾
我南幾
南幾
幾

Translation.

1 A few days ago the soldiers received their pay and hence silver is cheap.
2 I came by the south road and therefore did not meet him.
3 You have already deceived me several times; therefore I shall not listen to you again.
4 I retired very late last night; hence I have no animation to-day, but am all the time nodding.
5 The reason this affair is hard to consummate, is because there is some one meddling with it.
6 In the forenoon my head ached and therefore I could not recite.
7 We know that he killed him accidentally; therefore we are bold to testify for him.
8 Afterwards, because he could find no excuse, he gave the promise.
9 I knew that you were there and therefore I paid no attention.
10 At the present time, the majority of men are deceitful, therefore it is not well to be too credulous.

21 再四 is not commonly used, but is the form in the Fortunate Union, from which the sentence is taken. 叮嚀 also is not often used colloquially, the common expression being 囑咐.

25 東跑西遠 *Run east and rush west, to hasten hither and thither with work or business*, a common and expressive phrase.

29 端午 is colloquial, but *t'ung hsing*. The book term is 端陽. 屈原 a statesman of the kingdom of Ts'u, B. C. 314. He was falsely accused by a jealous rival and disgraced, and in his grief committed suicide by jumping into the 汨羅 Miloŏ river. As the name of a river the proper reading of 汨 is *mi*, but the other reading *ku*[2] is often confused with it.

LESSON LXXVIII.

Illative Particles.

所以 The reason or cause; therefore, hence.
因此 } For this cause, on this account,
爲此 } therefore.
故此 On this account, consequently, therefore.

因這個緣故 or 爲這個緣故 For this reason.

因而 And so, and hence, and on this account. A book term, the use of which in conversation is somewhat pedantic.

Vocabulary.

而 *Êr*[2]. And, and yet, also; still, moreover; as if, ... contrariwise. Much used in *Wên-li* but rarely in Mandarin, save in certain combinations.

餉 *Hsiang*[3]. Rations, pay of soldiers; taxes, ... duties, revenue.

兵餉 *Ping*[1] *hsiang*[3]. *Soldiers' pay or wages;* . . . . . money for this purpose.

精神 *Ching*[1] *shên*[2]. That (supposed) divine es- . . . . . sence which gives life and vigor to the soul, life, *animation*, spirits, vivacity.

盹 *Tun*[3]. . . . . Dull, heavy, sleepy; *a nod.*

打盹 *Ta*[3] *tun*[3]. *To nod,* to doze; to be sleepy, ... to be drowsy.

Digitized by Google

相信。○我[11]因爲他不知好歹、所以再不管他的閒事。○他[12]喫那些不當喫的東西、故此生病。○我[13]有一點要緊的用項、所以必得支錢。○從[14]前他們倆就和一個人一樣、以後買賣倒了、賬目有些不清、爲此兩家纔鬧掙扭了。○趙[15]硯田因爲五十歲得子、所以道喜的人很多。○我[16]時常思想你、眼淚流乾、因此瞎了雙眼。○他[17]告李先生這些事情、一點憑據沒有、所以必是誣告。○你[18]平常不交往人、所以你有苦難、人都不願幫助。○○因[20]迦[19]猶道、我因爲閱歷過這事、故此會猜破這謎兒。○

11 Since he does not know when he is well treated, I shall therefore have nothing more to do with his affairs.
12 He eats improper food, therefore he is ill.
13 I have a little pressing need, and therefore am compelled to draw my money.
14 Formerly they two were of one mind in everything; afterwards their business failed and their accounts became involved, and, on this account, the two families got into a quarrel.
15 Because Chao Yien T'ien has had a son born to him at fifty, therefore a great many are presenting congratulations.
16 I have wept my eyes dry thinking constantly of you: on this account both eyes have become blind.
17 There is not the least proof of the things he charges against Mr. Li; he is undoubtedly accusing him falsely.
18 Ordinarily you are not neighbourly, therefore, when you are in trouble, people are not inclined to help you.
19 Chia Yiu replied, "Because I have passed through this experience, therefore I can solve this riddle."

憧 *Ch'ung⁴*. . . . . To come abruptly; *to nod.* (s)
憧盹 *Ch'ung⁴ tun³*. . . . . To nod. (s).
誤殺 *Wu⁴ sha¹*. . . . . To kill by accident.
應承 *Ying¹ ch'êng²*. To agree, to assent, *to promise.*
用項 *Yung⁴ hsiang⁴*. Use, utility, function; *need*, requirement.
田 *T'ien²*. . . . . A field; fields, lands.
道喜 *Tao⁴ hsi³*. . . . . To congratulate.
時常 *Shi² ch'ang²*. Constantly, continually, customarily.
思想 *Sï¹ hsiang³*. *To think of*, to reflect, to consider.
淌 *T'ang⁴*. To run—as water, to flow, to course, to drip.
據 *Chü⁴*. To occupy, to lean on; testimony, *evidence;* according to, from; to reject.
憑據 *P'ing² chü⁴*. . . . . *Proof*, evidence.
誣 *Wu¹*. . . . . *To accuse falsely*, to calumniate.
誣告 *Wu¹ kao⁴*. *To accuse falsely*, to trump up charges.
迦 *Chia¹*. . . . . Used only in names.
猶 *Yiu²*. Resembling, like; as if, same as; still, even; thus, so.
閱歷 *Yüe⁴ li⁴*. *To pass through*, to experience; to look over, to examine.
猜 *Ts'ai¹*. To suspect; to guess, to conjecture, *to solve.*
謎 *Mi²,⁴*. . . . . *A riddle*, an enigma, a puzzle.
破謎 *P'o⁴ mi²*. To propose a riddle, to solve a riddle:—Note 19.
后 *Hou⁴*. A ruler; the sovereign; *empress* or queen, a feudal prince.
太后 *T'ai⁴ hou⁴*. . . . . The Emperor's mother.
垂 *Ch'wei²*. To hang down, *to suspend;* to let fall; to reach to; to condescend.
評 *P'ing²*. To discuss; to criticize, to review; *to judge of.*
評論 *P'ing² lun⁴*. To discuss, *to give an opinion*, to criticize.
禿 *T'u¹*. . . . . *Bald*, bare; blunt; unscrupulous.
暴病 *Pao⁴ ping⁴*. . . . . A violent disease.

Digitized by Google

漸 太 一 女 叫 個 赶 不 說、治
疎 遲晚、個 人 他 緣 着 毒、這 國、
淡、那 綽外 一 劉 故、來 不 和 所
現 家 號、塊 老 他 送 毒 倘 以
在 來 叫 兒 婆 又 信 不 眞 太
已 弔 劉 說 呢、回 說、禿。是 后、
經 喪、老 話、答 去 他 ○ 利 纔
不 弔 婆。爲 他 了。毋 我[22] 害、垂
上 的 ○ 這 的 ○ 親 們 因 簾
門 更 這[24] 個 聲 他[23] 得 正 此 聽
兒 遲晚、家 緣 音 是 了 走 蘇 政。
咯。因 去 故、很 個 個 到 東 ○
而 報 人 尖、男 急促暴 半 坡 古[21]
兩 喪、就 又 人、病、路、道、人
家 報 給 常 怎 因 有 不 評
漸 的 他 和 麼 這 人 禿 論

20 On account of his youth the Emperor cannot assume the reins of government, hence it is that Empress-mother hears causes from behind the curtain.

21 The opinion of the ancients is that these Buddhist priests are very outrageous; therefore Su Tung P'oă says, "He who is not bare-pated is not venomous; he who is not venomous is not bare-pated."

22 When we were just half-way, a man overtook us with a message, saying his mother had taken a violent disease, so on this account he returned again.

23 Why is he called Old Woman Liu when he is a man? *Ans.* His voice is very sharp and he is constantly with the women talking to them, on which account people have nicknamed him Old Woman Liu.

24 This family gave notice of the funeral too late, and that family were still later in offering their condolences, and on this account the two families became gradually estranged, so that they have now ceased to enter each other's doors.

促病 *Ts'u⁴ ping⁴*. A sudden and violent disease.

急病 *Chi² ping⁴*..... Same.

聲音 *Shêng¹ yin¹*.....Sound, *voice*, cry.

外號 *Wai⁴ hao⁴*.....A nickname.

綽號 *Ch'ao¹ hao⁴*.... A nickname, fancy name.

喪 *Sang¹*. To mourn for parents; *a funeral;* ..... time of mourning. See *sang⁴*.

報喪 *Pao⁴ sang¹*. To report a death and give no- ..... tice of burial:—Note 24.

弔喪 *Tiao⁴ sang¹*. To present condolences at or ..... before a funeral.

疎 *Su¹*. Open, coarse; distant, sundered, *es- ..... tranged;* careless, remiss.

淡 *Tan⁴*. Insipid, flat; weak, watery; *distant—as ..... an offended friend;* light—as a color.

疎淡 *Estranged*, cool, separated.

NOTES.

1 Chinese soldiers are usually paid at considerable intervals, and when they are paid each one wants to sell his silver for copper cash, to be used in paying debts. This sudden demand for cash, especially in small places, makes silver cheap.

4 Notice that 睡的太晚 does not mean *slept too late in the morning*, but, *went to bed too late in the evening*. Sleeping late in the morning is expressed by saying 起來的晚.

6 I have translated as if this were the language of a pupil. It would however be equally appropriate in the mouth of a teacher. 考書 means properly *to examine a class*, but is also used to mean *being examined or reciting*.

8 The force of 纔, as here used, is difficult to bring into an English translation. See also 14.

9 In many places the 有 would be omitted.

10 嘴甜心苦 *The mouth sweet and the heart bitter; i.e., using fair words to conceal an evil purpose, deceit, guile, imposture.*

14 他們倆就和一個人一樣 Lit., *They two were all the same as if one person; i.e., they agreed in everything.*

15 It is implied that the man had no son previously.

19 破謎 is occasionally used (as here) to mean, *to guess a riddle;* but generally it means, *to propound or make a riddle.* See Les. 200.

Digitized by Google

第七十九課

他[1]因爲偷嘴、不知挨了多少罵。○人[2]都是愛享福、還有願受罪的的嗎。○先[3]下手的爲强。後下手的遭殃。○若[4]是蒙恩不報、就叫忘恩負義了。○這[5]個孩子實在乖、一點也不潤氣、養着這等省心的孩子、大人少喫多少累呢。○你[6]弄出錯兒來、我喫不住。○出[7]外的人、到患病的時候、就更想家。○離鄉俗語說、周瑜打黃蓋、一

Translation.

1 There is no telling how much scolding she has had to bear for eating things on the sly.

2 All men wish to enjoy happiness. Are there any who wish to suffer?

3 He who strikes the first blow gets the advantage; he who strikes second gets the worst of it.

4 When a man receives a favor and does not return it, he is said to be ungrateful.

5 This child is peculiarly good; it is not the least troublesome. When such a good baby as this falls to one's lot, how much toil it saves.

6 If you stir up a difficulty, I shall not be able to endure it.

7 When one away from home gets ill,

20 垂簾聽政 *Suspend a curtain and hear government affairs.* The Empress is not supposed in etiquette to meet her ministers face to face, but to hear their reports and give her orders, sitting behind a curtain. The expression is decidedly *Wén-li* in style.

21 蘇東坡 A celebrated statesman and literary genius of the Sung dynasty. This saying of his is an alliterative play on the words 禿 and 毒, and refers to the custom of Buddhist priests of shaving their heads. The sarcasm of the saying is that no treachery or dishonesty is worthy of the name as compared with that of a priest, and that no man who is not treacherous and dishonest will be a priest.

24 Upon the death of any one, a messenger is sent to inform the relatives and kindred of the fact, and to announce the date of the funeral. This is called 報喪. In the case of rich or official families a written or printed paper is sent. Upon the day of the funeral, kindred and friends present their condolences, worship before the coffin, make a small contribution of cash and partake of the feast provided. This is called 弔喪.

LESSON LXXIX.

Receptive Verbs.

受 To receive, to bear,—very widely used and limited by no special circumstances.

挨 To bear,—pain, evil or abuse, generally inflicted by another.

遭 To meet with,—misfortune, pain or loss

吃 To eat; i.e., suffer,—loss or trouble.

害 To be injured by,—disease, pain or shame.

患 To be afflicted with,—disease.

蒙 To receive,—favor, grace or kindness.

享 To receive, i.e., enjoy,—happiness, peace or prosperity.

領 To receive from,—a benefactor or superior.

Vocabulary.

享 *Hsiang*[3]. To accept as the gods do sacrifices; ..... to enjoy; to receive gratefully.

福 *Fu*[2]. Blessings conferred by the gods, *happi*- ..... *ness*, felicity; prosperity.

蒙 *Mêng*[2]. Dull, ignorant; to cover over, to con- ..... ceal; to receive thankfully, to be obliged :—see Sub. Also *mêng*[3].

患 *Hwan*[4]. Evil, misfortune, calamity, affliction; ..... to suffer, to be afflicted :—see Sub.

受罪 *Shou*[4] *tswei*[4]. To bear suffering, *to suffer* :— ..... Note 2.

下手 *Hsia*[4] *shou*[3]. To make a beginning; to take ..... hold; to set to, *to take the initiative*: a second place, a sub-foreman.

殃 *Yang*[1]. Misfortune, judgment, *retribution.*

忘恩 *Wang*[4] *ên*[1]. To forget a favor, *to be un-* ..... *grateful.*

Digitized by Google

時 少 是 回 丁 時 養養 不 因 個
候 喫 受 領 賑、 都 候 媳 必 爲 願
受 遭 虧 傷。 錢。 頭 去 沒 婦、 計 他 打、
罪、 ○ ○ 一 領 有。 太 較 們 一
誰 好[15] 用[14] 回 賞 ○ 受 誰 必 個
可 時 胰 是 去 昨[12] 氣 吃 要 願
憐 候、 子 領 喇。 天 喇、 虧、 蒙 挨。
他 他 洗 飯、 ○ 大 天 誰 憐 ○
呢。 逭 衣 第 這[13] 人 天 得 恤。 憐[9]
○ 遙 裳、 二 十 看 挨 便 ○ 恤
這[16] 自 人 回 年 操 打 宜。 我[10] 人
樣、 在 又 是 之 看 挨 ○ 和 的
破 的 省 領 內、 好 罵 張[11] 他 人、
費 要 好 力、 糧、 我 了、 的、 家 不 是
你、 懶、 衣 第 領 今 一 那 是 有
我 到 裳 三 了 天 黠 個 別旁外 福
很 這 也 回 三 兵 好 養採童 人、 的、

he is all the more homesick.

8 The saying is, "When Chin Yü beats Hwang Kai, there is one willing to lay on and one willing to stand it."

9 Blessed are the merciful; for they shall surely receive mercy.

10 He does not stand in the same relation to me as others. It is not necessary to discuss who loses or who gains.

11 That *t'ung-yang* daughter-in-law of the Chang family is *too* much abused. She is beaten and scolded every day and has no comfort of her life.

12 The general was pleased with the parade yesterday, and to-day the soldiers have all gone to receive rewards.

13 Within these ten years I have received famine relief three times. The first time I received cooked rice; the second time, grain; and the third time, money.

14 By using soap to wash clothes, the person washing saves labor, and the clothes receive less injury.

15 When he was well-to-do, he took his ease and indulged his indolence; now that he has come to grief, who will pity him?

16 I am greatly indebted to you for

義 *I*[4]. Equity, righteousness, uprightness; *free*, ...charitable, superior, excellent; adopted.

負義 *Fu*[4] *i*[4]. *To abuse kindness;* to render evil ....for good.

乖 *Kwai*[1]. Perverse, contrary, bad-tempered, ...sulky; crafty, tricky; odd, *peculiar.*

省心 *Shêng*[3] *hsin*[1]. Trouble-saving, *good*, obe- ....dient.

漏子 *Lou*[4] *tsi*[3].....A mistake, *a difficulty.* (s.)

出外 *Ch'u*[1] *wai*[4]. *To leave home;* to go abroad, ... to travel.

離鄉 *Li*[2] *hsiang*[1]. *Away from home*, in a strange .....place; a stranger.

害病 *Hai*[4] *ping*[4]..... Sick, *ill;* taken sick.

患病 *Hwan*[4] *ping*[4]..... ..... Same.

周 *Chou*[1]. To make a circuit; to extend every- .....where; plenty; honest; entirely; close, fine; a surname.

瑜 *Yü*[2] ..... Lustrous; excellent.

較 *Chiao*[4].....*To compare;* rather; in general.

計較 *Chi*[4] *chiao*[4]. To compare notes, *to discuss*, ...to argue, to bargain.

童 *T'ung*[2]. A boy, a lad; a young student; *a* ....*virgin;* undefiled; youthful.

童養 *T'ung*[2] *yang*[3]. To support a betrothed girl .... before her marriage.

探養 *T'an*[4] *yang*[3]..... Same:—Note 11.

受氣 *Shou*[4] *ch'i*[4]..... Ill-treated, *abused.*

看操 *K'an*[4] *ts'ao*[1]. To review troops, to super- .....intend the drilling of soldiers, *to witness a parade.*

兵丁 *Ping*[1] *ting*[1]..... Soldiers.

賑 *Chên*[4]. To relieve those in want; charity, ...bounty, *relief.*

逭 *Hsiao*[1]..... To ramble, to saunter at ease.

遙 *Yao*[2]..... Distant, remote.

逭遙 To saunter carelessly, *at one's ease.*

自在 *Tsi*[4] *tsai*[4]. Natural, *easy;* self-possessed, ... composed; comfortable.

Digitized by Google

領了不情、就是不喫古[17]不了一情、就是不喫古[17]不了一情、就是不喫古[17]不了一

○我[21]叫那算占卦的先生、給我批了一個八字、說、我這步時運不好、不是破財、就是遭口舌是非。○蒙[22]恩和蒙情、有個要緊的分別、若是得了在上的好處、就該說是蒙恩、得了平等人的好處、就該說是蒙情。○王[23]五正在夢中、聽見外頭喊叫救火、吃了一驚、慌的連門閂也摸不着了。

21 I got that fortune-teller to tell my fortune by the eight characters. He said my fortune was not propitious, that I would either lose my money or suffer from evil reports.

22 There is an important difference between receiving grace and receiving a favor. If you get good from a superior, it should be spoken of as receiving grace; if you get good from an equal, it should be spoken of as receiving a favor.

23 Wang Wu Chêng, when in the midst of a dream, heard some one outside calling out, "fire! fire!" and was so frightened that in his alarm he could not even find the bolt of the door.

intimate that he who is behindhand gets the legitimate desert of his failure to be first.

6 大人 is here used for parents. A 省心的孩子 is one who does not cry nor fret nor get into mischief; for which we have no special word in English, other than to say that he is a "good" child.

7 患 is the more elegant book form, 害 the more colloquial.

8 周瑜, a noted general in the time of the three kingdoms, an adherent of the house of Wu. The story is that 周瑜, in order to deceive 曹操 with whom he was at war, beat 黃蓋, one of his own generals unmercifully, he consenting to be so beaten. 黃蓋 then went over to 曹操, and pretended that he had deserted 周瑜 on account of this shameful and unmerited beating, and wanted an opportunity to get revenge. 曹操 was deceived by him, and in consequence of his treachery suffered defeat. The proverb is used of those who resort to similar tricks, or who willingly endure pain for some coveted end.

10 The three forms have substantially the same meaning, save that 外人 suggests the idea of a relative, which the others do not necessarily do.

11 Parents who are poor, or who are tired of keeping their betrothed daughters, sometimes send them to the home of their future mother-in-law, months or even years, before they are to be married; albeit such a course is considered very ungenteel. Betrothals are also sometimes made, having this arrangement definitely in view, especially in the case of the death of the girl's mother. The lot of such girls is proverbially hard. The most general term for such a girl is, 童養媳婦, *a daughter-in-law supported as a child or virgin.* The term used in Shantung is 探養媳婦, *a daughter-in-law supported beforehand.* The term in Nanking is simply 養媳婦, *a supported daughter-in-law.*

17 It is not regarded as legitimate for a Chinese official both to fine a man and to beat him.

18 李榮春 and 一個好人 are in grammatical apposition. 顛險 is a book term not often heard in colloquial. 磨折 is colloquial, but as used in the North is always reversed, viz., 折磨.

21 The eight characters referred to are those which mark the year, month, day and hour of birth—two for each, according to the Chinese cyclical method of indicating dates. See Les. 117, Note 31. Prognostications are made on the basis of these characters. 步 is here the classifier of 時運. 口舌 and 是非 are rhetorically correlated, and mutually limit each other.

LESSON LXXX.

THUS.

這麼的 / 這麼着 Thus, then, in *this* case. The final 的 is the ancient and original form, still much used in Central and Southern Mandarin. In Eastern Shantung it is used exclusively, the form with 着 not being heard at all. 着 is the more modern form, used in Pekingese and the North, and also introduced to a considerable extent in the South. The same is true of 的 and 着 following 那麼 and 怎麼.

那麼的 or 那麼着 Thus, then, in *that* case.

這麼 Is not infrequently used as a contraction for 這麼的 or 這麼着.

怎麼的 A colloquial form of 那麼的. This form is not often found in books, but is widely used in colloquial.

這樣 or 這麼樣 Thus, in *this* case.

怎樣 or 怎麼樣 Thus, in *that* case.

這麼一來 In these circumstances, therefore.

Digitized by Google

第八十課

麻[1]刀紙筋又沒有了、答這麼的着、還要得去買。○他[2]親兄弟
倘[1]或他不肯、我[3]也不管。○若[4]給他五百錢、虧他
一點、答那恁這麼該給、多少呢。○看[4]不過、還得
還叫他念幾年書、這麼一來、就不用想喇。○我[5]來必
登上門認錯、你還不肯、這麼多少呢。○我[3]看
了原告也不好、屈了被告也不好、如是怎麼樣罷。○屈[6]
小帽、暗暗去私訪。○我[7]已經和他約定了、一塊兒
去下大場、今天聽說他丁了憂、這麼一樣來、我只得
自各兒一個去。○不[8]撒謊對不住朋友、撒謊對不住
自己一心、如是他早早就躲開了。○若[9]是一遍學不會、

Translation.

1 The cut rope (paper stiffening) is all used up again. *Ans.* In that case, you will have to go and buy more.
2 If his own brother declines to interfere, in that case neither will I interfere.
3 I think that to give him five hundred cash would be a little short. *Ans.* How much then should I give him?
4 If his father had not died, he would certainly have had him study several years yet; but now it is of no use to think of it.
5 I have come to you and confessed my fault, and yet you are dissatisfied; what then are you going to do about it?
6 To wrong the plaintiff would not do, and to wrong the defendant was equally unjust: so he disguised himself in common clothes and a small hat and went out to make inquiry.
7 I had already agreed to go with him to the provincial examination, but today I hear he is in mourning, so that now I shall have to go by myself.
8 Unless he told a lie he would offend his friend, and if he told a lie he would violate his conscience, so he got out of the way beforehand.

如是 Thus, then, so, in that case. This is the most elegant form of saying *thus*, and is the form most frequently used in books.

於是 And so, thereupon, then, well then. In use, 如是 and 於是 are much confused, especially in dialects in which they are read alike.

如此 Thus, so, so that, in that case,—nearly equivalent to 如是.*

Vocabulary.

麻刀 *Ma*[2] *tao*[1]. Old rope for strengthening mortar:—Note 1.

紙筋 *Chi*[3] *chin*[1]. Paper pulp used for the same purpose.

登門 *Têng*[1] *mên*[2]. To go to or enter a man's house. (w.)

認錯 *Jên*[4] *ts'o*[4]. To own a fault, to admit, *to confess.*

訪 *Fang*[3]. To search out, *to inquire into.*

私訪 *Si*[1] *fang*[3]. *To inquire secretly*, to detect, to spy.

青衣 *Ch'ing*[1] *i*[1]. Dark clothing, the blue clothes worn by the common people.

大場 *Ta*[4] *ch'ang*[2]. The examinations at the provincial city, or at the capital.

丁憂 *Ting*[1] *yiu*[1]. To mourn for a parent:—Note 7.

* As will be seen, the various phrases constituting this lesson are very similar in meaning, and no doubt the learner will be perplexed to know exactly when and how to use each one. This cannot be acquired from definitions, nor by the mere force of memory, but will come gradually by practice and observation. The lesson will call attention to the various phrases, and serve as a guide and prompter in their use. The same remarks apply to a large number of other lessons.

Digitized by Google

就兩遍、兩遍學不會、就三遍、這麼樣、還有到底學不會的嗎。○現[10]在黃大人、陞了兩廣總督、老太爺感恩不盡、於是拿出五萬銀子、放飯施捨。○他[11]們個個人都是如此。○昨[12]天晚上、他還猶疑不定的、不知是去好、是不去好、○答恁麼的、這[13]麼着、你再去問問他、他若不去、我們好快走啊。○待[13]姊妹們、你願打就打、願罵就罵嗎、這麼樣、你把我放在那裏呢。○他[14]有急難、我出上工夫衛顧他、如今我家有事、他連面也不照、這麼一來、我就和他絕了交、那樣的朋友、有也是五八四沒有五八、四十。也是四八五。○諸[15]葛亮在葫蘆峪、埋下地雷火礮、預

9 If you cannot learn it by one repetition, then repeat it twice; and if you cannot learn it by repeating twice, then repeat it three times. Is there anything you cannot in this way finally learn?

10 His Excellency, Mr. Hwang, has been advanced to the Governor-Generalship of the two Kwang, and his father, as an expression of his gratification, has set apart fifty thousand [taels of] silver to distribute food and charity among the poor.

11 They are every one so.

12 Yesterday evening he was still hesitating, not knowing whether it was better to go or not. *Ans.* In this case, do you go again and ask him, so that if he is not going, we may go at once.

13 In your intercourse with your sisters, can you beat and revile them as you please? Have you no regard for my feelings?

14 When he was in straits, I spent time in defending him; now, when my family are in difficulty, he does not so much as show his face. I will, therefore, cut his acquaintance That style of friend, to have him is five times eight, and not to have him is four times ten.

陞 *Shêng*[1]. To ascend; *to rise in office.*
督 *Tu*[1]. *To govern;* to oversee; to admonish.
總督 *Tsung*[3] *tu*[1]. A governor-general.
老太爺 *Lao*[3] *t'ai*[4] *yie*[2]. The father of an officer or of one who has a high literary degree.
感恩 *Kan*[3] *ên*[1]. To be thankful, *grateful.*
放飯 *Fang*[4] *fan*[4]. To distribute food to the poor.
施 *Shi*[1]. To expand; to distribute, to diffuse; to give, *to bestow.*
施捨 *Shi*[1] *shê*[2]. To bestow charity.
猶疑 *Yiu*[2] *i*[2]. To be in doubt, *to hesitate.*
急難 *Chi*[2] *nan*[4]. *A strait,* an emergency, a pressing difficulty.
衛顧 *Wei*[4] *ku*[4]. To protect, *to defend.*
衛護 *Wei*[4] *hu*[4]. Same.
絕交 *Chüe*[2] *chiao*[1]. To have no more to do with, *to cut the acquaintance of.*
諸 *Chu*[1]. All, every; in *Wên-li* a final particle of doubt or interrogation; at, in; a surname.
峪 *Yü*[4]. A ravine, a gully.
埋 *Mai*[2]. To bury, to cover over; *to conceal;* to hoard. See *man*[2].
雷 *Lei*[2]. *Thunder;* to beat a drum.
地雷 *Ti*[4] *lei*[2]. *A mine,* a blast.
礮 or 砲 *P'ao*[4]. *A great gun,* a cannon.
懿 *I*[4]. Virtuous, accomplished. (w.)
將 *Chiang*[4]. A leader, a general; the king in chess. See *chiang*[1].
恰巧 *Ch'ia*[4] *ch'iao*[3]. Opportune, timely, *in the nick of time,* lucky.
淹沒 *Yien*[1] *moŭ*[4]. To drown out, to wet; *to overflow,* to overwhelm.
騰挪 *T'êng*[2] *noŭ*[2]. To transfer; to arrange for, *to find time;* to postpone.
河道 *Hê*[2] *tao*[4]. The banks or bed of a river.

Digitized by Google

天大慢、的着還在葛裏、備
存水水很罷、能天。亮、恰巧死
已一中快、怎騰○嘆巧下司
經來、的必麼挪我[16]了下司
下創混必泥、沖好、一看一了馬
了底到從必起就黠叫聲大懿、
架頭這漸許怎工天說、雨、和
子鋪兒河漸多麼夫、禍罷把他
喇、心沉泥的着。他去、了地的
今高下、來、○又不罷雷兵
天的河河那[17]認如了、火將、
我地心道河得叫眞礮以
在方、就寬道道實是都後
街漫漸的窄兒、恩謀淹司
上、出漸地的答去、事濕沒馬
見堤高方、地這因在了、懿
他來。了、流方、麼樣爲人、於走
脚○如的水你實成是到
上鄭[18]此必流看恩、事諸那

15 Chu Kê Liang, in the valley of gourds, concealed subterraneous mines and fire guns intending to blow up Sï Ma I with his soldiers and generals; but subsequently, when Sï Ma I came to the place, just in the nick of time it rained a great rain and overflowed his mines and guns; upon which Chu Kê Liang said with a sigh, "Well, well; after all, it is true that man proposes but Heaven disposes."

16 It would be better, I think, to have Pao Ên go rather than T'ien Fu because Pao Ên can find the time; he also knows the road. *Ans.* Well, just as you like; do whatever seems best.

17 Where the bed of the river is narrow and the water runs very swiftly, it will necessarily take up much mud. Where the bed of the river is wide, the water will, of course, run slowly and the mud will gradually fall down, thus slowly filling up the channel of the river. Hence, when a flood comes, at the places where the bed of the river is thus filled up, the water will overflow the banks.

18 Chêng T'ien Ts'un has come to the end of his tether. I saw him to-day on the street shivering with the

河心 *Hê*[2] *hsin*[1]. The bottom or channel of a river.

沉 *Ch'ên*[2]. To sink, *to fall to the bottom;* to be lost, to perish; heavy, weighty.

漫 *Man*[4]. *To overflow*, to well up; wide spreading, diffused, vague.

堤 *Ti*[1]. A dyke, a bund, a levee, *a bank.*

創 *Ch'wang*[4,3]. To create, to transform; to found; *to essay*, to follow a business.

底鋪 *Ti*[3] *p'u*[1]. Resources all exhausted, down to first principles.

邋 *T'a*[4]. Careless, slovenly.

邋拉 *T'a*[4] *la*[1]. To shuffle with the feet.

趿 *Sa*[1,4]. To tread shoes down at the heel; to wear them so.

披 *P'ei*[1]. *To throw over the shoulders*, to put on; disheveled. Also *p'i*[1].

袖 *Hsiu*[4]. *The sleeve*; to put into the sleeve.

悽 *Hsi*[1]. To shudder with cold:—Note 18.

央 *Yang*[1]. To beg earnestly, *to entreat.*

央及 *Yang*[1] *chi*[2]. To beg hard, to importune, to crave, *to entreat.*

大烟 *Ta*[4] *yien*[1]. Opium (as smoked).

膏 *Kao*[1]. Grease; ointment, *paste;* plasters; rich food.

廣膏 *Kwang*[3] *kao*[1]. Foreign opium:—Note 18.

臘 *La*[4]. A sacrifice three days after the winter solstice; *the 12th month.*

祭 *Chi*[4]. To sacrifice to the gods; an offering.

辭 *Ts'i*[2]. Words, speech, phraseology; to refuse, to decline; to depart, *to take leave of.*

小婆子 *Hsiao*[3] *p'o*[2] *tsi*[3]. A secondary or inferior wife, a concubine.

小奶奶 *Hsiao*[3] *nai*[3] *nai*[3]. Same. (s.)

Digitized by Google

邋拉着破鞋頭、腿上穿的燈籠褲子、
趿的
身上披的一件沒有袖子的小褂兒、
凍的恓恓惶惶的、直央及我、我腰裏
帶的五六十個錢、叫我都給了他喇、
答 有錢怎麽單給他呢、你忘了他做
買賣的時候、吃的是粳米白麵、穿的
是綾羅綢緞、吃大烟必得吃廣膏、臘
月二十三日 祭竈、辭竈、買三隻鴨子、四隻
雞、他小婆子 還嫌不好吃、這樣、他
奶奶 現在受罪、還算多了嗎。

cold, shuffling his feet along in a pair of worn-out shoes, having on his legs a pair of tattered pants, and on his shoulders a shortcoat without sleeves. He entreated me without ceasing, and I gave him all I had in my pocket—some fifty or sixty cash. *Ans.* If you have money to give, why give it to him? Have you forgotten when he was in business, how he ate the best rice and finest flour and wore silk and satin and would smoke only foreign opium? Also, how on the twenty-third of the twelfth month, in sacrificing to the kitchen god, he bought three ducks and four chickens, and yet his concubine found fault with them as unfit to eat? In view of all these things, are his present sufferings more than he deserves?

NOTES.

1 麻刀 is old ropes chopped into bits, rubbed up so as to disentangle the fibre, and used in mortar as we use hair. In some places, especially in the South, old paper is soaked into pulp and used for the same purpose.

4 Peking teachers would change to 他父親若是, etc., but teachers in Central and Southern Mandarin regard the form in the text as equally good, if not better.

5 登門認錯 is a ready-made book phrase, often used by educated people.

6 In difficult cases, Chinese magistrates not infrequently disguise themselves and go out at night, or for several days together, to see what they can find out.

7 丁憂 *To sustain grief; i.e.*, to mourn for the death of a parent. Three years is the allotted time for mourning for a parent, during which time officers are excused from duty, and candidates do not attend the examinations.

9 The final 的 might with perhaps equal propriety be referred to the person, and the clause be rendered: *Is there any one who cannot in this way finally learn it?*

10 兩廣 that is, 廣東 *Kwantung*, and 廣西 *Kwangsi*. In the phrase 感恩不盡 the object of the verb is so closely united to it, that it refuses to be displaced by the auxiliary. In 五萬銀子 the 兩 is omitted, as in such cases it often is.

13 The language of a man or of his mother to his wife, remonstrating against her treatment of her sisters-in-law.

14 The last clause of this sentence is the Chinese version of "Six of one and half-a-dozen of the other." The Northern form goes by multiplication, the Southern by addition. Other numbers are sometimes used in the same way.

15 諸葛亮 otherwise called 孔明, one of the greatest generals known in Chinese history. He was the faithful adherent of 劉備 *Liu Pei*, and finally secured him in possession of the throne, A.D. 220. 劉備 said of him, 孔明眞神人也, *K'ung Ming is truly a divine man!* It is not certainly known what was the character of the explosives he used, certainly not such as are used in modern warfare. 司馬懿 Commander of the armies of the kingdom of Wei. The historian of the three kingdoms says of him, that he 用兵如神, *handled an army like a god.*

16 怎麽好就怎麽着 *As is best so be it.* A common phrase for "Do as you think best." 那 is often substituted for 怎, the sense being practically the same.

18 混到頭兒 *Run through to the end*—"come to the end of his tether;" 鋪底鋪喇 *come to the bottom spread*—"down to the bed rock;" 下了架子 *the scaffolding fallen down*—"played out." The three phrases, Northern, Central and Southern, mean substantially the same thing. 混 *confused*, here a verb, *to act in a senseless and heedless manner.* 鞋頭 Shoes with the heels turned down and worn as heel-less slippers. 燈籠褲子 Trousers that are so thin, and have so many holes in them, that the light and air go through them as they do through a paper lantern. 恓恓惶惶的 The word is repeated to imitate the shuddering sound expressive of cold. The phrase is to be spoken in two couplets. 廣膏 *Canton paste or cake*, so called because foreign opium was first introduced at Canton, and because it comes in the form of thick paste or cake. 辭竈 *to take leave of the kitchen god.* This is done in every family on the twenty-third of the twelfth month, by presenting to him offerings and prayers. 祭竈 is the form used in some places.

Digitized by Google

第十八課

今[1]天有風、却不涼快。○你[2]不得、我卻[3]不個人可是利害、却[4]車車子是[5]他的、他[6]子上。車[7]這不像[8]他的報官。在[9]自己好清靜、不過[10]來。○不[11]裏可惜的沒明說。出[12]不到人家意、[13]想這却不小了。○現[14]還好。○那[3]個人、○車[4]車子是[5]他的、他[6]子上。利害、却[7]不像[8]他的報官。在[9]自己好清靜、不過[10]來。○不[11]裏可惜的沒明說。出[12]不到人家意、[13]想這却不小了。○現[14]還好。

是誰。○我能到你家裏吃飯。你可不要過厚費。○在可不能很擾。○唱詩、你唱的身量小、歲數、好。○我該你了。○鍾教友攪擾。○他不自多有。不年、你們明知買○你不得、我郤不會常臉上呢。○可去沒的好人、○可憐、最講論理。○曉得、我郤曉得。○

Translation.

1 There is a breeze to-day, but it is not cool.
2 You do not know, but I know.
3 That man is severe, it is true; but very amenable to reason.
4 The cart is his, but he is not in it.
5 They, knowing clearly that Chia Yiu Lien is a thief, are yet unwilling to inform the magistrate.
6 If you meet with a year of famine, then how will you live?
7 There are, however, not many as good men as this in the world.
8 Judging from the expression of his face he is very willing, but he has not yet plainly said so.
9 Delighting in quiet himself, he is yet constantly (capable of) going to other peoples' houses to raise a disturbance.
10 He is not young, it is only that he is small of stature.
11 Our fellow-Christian Chung loves very much to sing, but he sings poorly.
12 I owe you, but I cannot pay you at present.
13 If he did not embezzle this money, who do you suppose did?
14 I will accept your hospitality, but do

LESSON LXXXI.

The Exceptive Conjunction.

郤 or 却 To reject,—properly a verb, but chiefly used as a conjunction to introduce an exceptive or adversative clause; but, but then, however, yet, and yet.

可 Can,—is used in the same way and with substantially the same meaning as 郤. Thus used it changes its tone to k'ê², and appears to be simply a colloquial substitute for 郤. Southern Mandarin generally adheres to 郤. Both words are often used when they amount to little more than a mere expletive or catchword.

却有一件 or 一樣. But there is one thing.
却有一宗 or 一樁. The same.

Vocabulary.

郤 or 却 *Ch'üe⁴, ch'ioă⁴.* To decline, to reject; but ..... then, however. The original form was 郤, but 却 is now extensively used.
可 *K'ê².* But, then, but then, however:—see Sub. ..... See *k'ê³.*
賈 *Chia³*..... A surname. Also *ku³.*
荒年 *Hwang¹ nien².*..... A year of famine.
攪 *Chiao³.* To stir up; to disorder; to annoy; ..... to excite.
攪擾 *Chiao³ jao³.* To embroil, *to raise a disturb-* ..... *ance*, to make a rumpus.
歲數 *Swei⁴ shu⁴*..... Age (of a person).
鍾 *Chung¹*..... A small cup; *a surname.*
吞 *T'un¹.* To swallow whole, to gulp; to seize, ...to appropriate, *to embezzle.*
厚費 *Hou⁴ fei⁴.* To be bountiful, to spend ..... lavishly, *to go to extra expense.*

Digitized by Google

知繡[15]球花好看、卻[17]不很香。○我[16]有一個法子、却不
行不好看、卻沒本事、却生出事來、無子、却
行東鄉○沒本事、却生事來、有子、却
聽[18]說家下[19]也[20]○○知[15]行不好看、卻沒[17]本事、却生出事來、無子、却
你有家奶奶下鄉○沒本事、却生事來、有子、却
心裏想着的朦混弄漢丈夫。○大事。不
不很大、生不能問罪。○崑魁[23]壯偉朦混弄漢丈夫。○大事。不
証見、可能的、很人、已經定了親、還沒下聘。○大事。不
不怎麽還能復活我呢、○這可奇怪、是奇怪、喇、人是他殺的、將臭爛的、丈夫。○大事。不
有土、見、可以、問、罪。○崑魁[23]壯偉朦混弄漢丈夫。○大事。不
有証見、可能的、很人、已經定了親、還沒下聘。○大事。不
必歸有也他[20]○○知[15]繡
位有土、証不心你[19]聽[18]行球
的的怎見、很裏有說不花
情事。麽可大、想奶家家東行。好
面、○還不生着奶口下鄉○看、
却可衆[24]能能的朦沒也沒[17]郤
有位復問郤弄混有、下本不
一到活罪。很人、答了事、很
件、我呢、○崑魁却已雨、却香。
他家答這[23]壯偉朦經郤生○
若裏奇怪可○弄混定不事、我[16]
再來、是是奇怪明[22]不了及生有
來我奇怪、喇、明住。親、這出一個
尋也這人是○却邊事來、法
事、不却已他他[21]還兒來、無子、
我能是經殺的沒下的本
却不將臭的、漢娶。的本事。却
是准來爛沒丈○大。事。不

not go to any extra expense.

15 The hydrangea is a beautiful flower, but not very fragrant.

16 I have a plan, but I do not know whether it will succeed or not.

17 Without capacity, you yet have a capacity for getting into difficulties; and when you have gotten into a difficulty, you are without any capacity to get out.

18 I hear that it also rained east of the city, but not so much as it did here.

19 Have you a wife? *Ans.* I am engaged, but not yet married.

20 He is planning to hoodwink [us], but he will not succeed.

21 His stature is not great, it is true, but he is very stalwart.

22 It is clear that he killed him, yet without testimony he cannot be convicted.

23 But this is strange! After a man has decayed and returned to dust, how can he live again? *Ans.* Strange it certainly is, but it is something that will surely come to pass.

24 Since you gentlemen have come to my house, I cannot but accede to

過費 *Kwoà*[4] *fei*[4]. . . . . Same. (s.)
繡 *Hsiu*[4]. . . . To embroider; variegated, figured.
球 *Ch'iu*[2]. . . . . A sphere, a ball, a globe.
繡球 The hydrangea.
生事 *Shêng*[1] *shï*[4]. To make trouble, *to get into difficulty.*
家下 *Chia*[1] *hsia*[4]. . . . . A wife.
朦 *Mêng*[2]. . Dim, indistinct; to cajole, to humbug.
朦混 *Mêng*[2] *hun*[4]. To mislead, *to hoodwink*, to humbug; obscure.
朦弄 *Mêng*[2] *lung*[4]. . . . To cajole, *to hoodwink.*
漢丈 *Han*[4] *chang*[4]. . . . . *Stature*, size.
魁 *K'wei*[2]. . . . . Chief, highest; *best of its class.*
偉 *Wei*[3]. . . . . Fine-looking; *strong*, powerful.
魁偉 Robust, *stalwart*, athletic.
崑 *K'un*[1]. . . A peak. Extraordinary, elegant. (s.)
崑壯 *K'un*[1] *chwang*[4]. Robust, *stalwart*, athletic. (s.)
証見 *Chêng*[4] *chien*[4]. . . . . Evidence, *testimony.*
問罪 *Wên*[4] *tswei*[4]. *To convict*, to condemn, to regard as guilty.
臭爛 *Ch'ou*[4] *lan*[4]. . . . . Rotten, *decayed.*
復活 *Fu*[4] *hwoà*[2]. *To come to life again*, to rise from the dead.
情面 *Ch'ing*[2] *mien*[4]. Face, feelings; influence:—Note 24.
尋事 *Hsin*[2] *shï*[4]. To raise a disturbance, *to make trouble*, to annoy.
宗 *Tsung*[1]. Ancestors; family; a clan; kind, class, sort; *a matter*; to honor.
樁 *Chwang*[1]. A post, a stake; a pile; classifier of affairs.—Les. 125.
摔 *Shwai*[3]. *To throw*, to swing about, to fling, to toss, to jerk. Also *shwai*[1].
睖 *Kwoà*[1]. . . . To see dimly; *to give attention.*
睬 *Ts'ai*[3]. . . . . To pay attention, to notice.
睖睬 To notice, to heed, to pay attention.
在意 *Tsai*[4] *i*[4]. *To notice*, to pay attention, to regard, to heed.
貌相 *Mao*[4] *hsiang*[4]. Features, physiognomy, visage, *looks.*
德 *Tê*[2]. Virtue, goodness; energy, virtue; power, quality; to flourish.
德行 *Tê*[2] *hsing*[4]. Virtue, morals, well-doing, *worth.*

Digitized by Google

人 貌撣拉拽跑 答是 可 椿宗去、找
所 相 石 了、纔 誰 不 若 我 你
不 不 頭。我 有撣拉拽要 是 也 們。
及 如 ○ 却 兩 進 埋 到 不 ○
的。人、看[27]不沒 個 一 怨 了 擋 你[25]
德 不 在眴 孩 塊 我。那 你、實
行 得 意睬 子、石 ○ 裏 邸 在
却 他 他 往 頭 剛[26]想 有 願
是 的 們 東 去、纔 家、一 意

your wishes; but one thing you must remember, if he comes again to make trouble, I will hold you responsible.

25 If you really want to go, I will not hinder you; but there is one thing, if after you get there you are homesick, you must not reflect on me.

26 Who was it that just now threw in a stone? *Ans.* Two boys just now ran towards the east, but I did not notice that they threw any stones.

27 Do not be deceived by the inferiority of his looks; in sterling worth he has few equals.

NOTES.

3 可 here makes a concession to something previously said by another. We might translate, *Yes, he is severe, it is true, etc.*

4 Putting 他 before the 却 gives it emphasis.

9 會 as here used, is very expressive, and is very widely used. The Peking teacher objects to it and substitutes 常, which, however, does not give the force of 會.

12 Notice how 現在 precedes the conjunction, although it belongs to the conjunctive clause.

17 This sentence is a play on the word 事, and is a smart or pithy saying.

19 A wife is known by a variety of epithets. The proper term, which distinguishes her as *wife*, is 妻 or 妻子, but it is not used to any extent in colloquial. When the idea of sex is prominent she is called simply 女人. When spoken of in a careless or depreciating way she is called 老婆. When classed with, or in relation to a husband, she is called 婦 or 婦人. When the family idea is prominent she is called 家裡, or 家下, or 家眷, or 內人, or 賤內. When dignified by the rank of her husband, she is called 師娘, or 太太, or 夫人. The term 奶奶, which refers to motherhood, is used for *wife* only in the South.

20 人 is here used as an enclitic, but this does not at all interfere with its application to the person speaking. The structure of the sentence does not make it certain whether the reference was to the speaker or to some one else.

21 也 is here rendered, *it is true.* Its exact force could only be known from the preceding sentence, or from the idea which gave rise to it.

22 問罪 is put for 定罪—the process for the result. This use probably grows out of the custom of charging the crime on the supposed criminal, demanding of him a confession, and enforcing it by torture.

23 怪是怪 *Strange it is*, or, *true it's strange*, a common idiomatic form.

24 衆位 *All you gentlemen.* The classifier is put for its noun. 情面 *The face of the feelings*, that is, the face as the exponent or representative of the feelings or sentiments of the mind.

26 Mandarin has no *t'ung hsing* word meaning *to throw.* The three terms given in the text are all more or less local.

LESSON LXXXII.

FORBIDDING.

別 Don't, you must not,—much used colloquially in Central and Northern Mandarin, and also not infrequently in books. It is used in some places in the South, but not in others; thus it is used in Nanking, but not in Kiukiang. In Eastern Shantung it is read *pai*[4]. It is in reality a contraction of 不要.

休 to reject; do not by any means,—a book term only used colloquially in certain phrases and connections. In some places, however, it is much used colloquially; thus in Northern Shantung it quite takes the place of 別, being spoken *ho.*

莫 Do not, you should not, there is no need that,—mostly confined to certain phrases and connections. In some parts of the South, however, as in Kiukiang, it is in constant use and quite takes the place of 別.

不要 Do not want, do not,—much used everywhere, especially in the South, where it takes the place of 別 in the North.

不用 Need not, do not. A milder form than any of the preceding.

不可 Must not, should not, ought not.

不許 Must not, thou shalt not,—gives an authoritative prohibition.

不准 Do not allow; to forbid.

不消 Need not, not worth while.

漫 To overflow, do not, you need not—always joined with a word meaning *to say.*

Digitized by Google

第二十八課

門 麼 議、錢。聞[11]道。是 ○ 論 你[1]
前 講 不 ○ 名 ○ 好 醜[6] 人。莫別
雪、的、可 你[13]休 這[10]人。婦 ○ 揪
休 你 强 們 見 本 ○ 是 求[4]着
管 就 派。都 面、電 不[8]我 你 我。
別 當 ○ 出 見 氣 要 妻、好 ○
人 怎 要[15]去 面 鍍 這 休 歹 會[2]
瓦 麼 小 玩 大 金、樣 想 莫別 首
上 回、心 兒 有 別 客 美 露 們
霜。不 掉提 罷、限。住 氣。貌 出 不
○ 許 溜別 ○ 手 ○ 的。來。准
再[18]隨 着、在 依[12]兒、莫[9]○ ○ 開
不 口 別 這 我 三 說 你[7]快[5]賭。
要 糊 洸洸 裏 說、天 別 莫別 喫 ○
叫 謅。蕩吵 嚷 你 就 人、笑 飯 背[3]
他 ○ 出 嚷。不 抄 就 話 罷、地
來 只[17]來。○ 消 起 是 甚 莫別 裏
喇、管 ○ 只[14]花 來 我 督 生 不
我 自 我[16]可 那 了。也 徒、氣 要
看 己 怎 商 項 ○ 知 他 喇。議

TRANSLATION.

1 Don't you take hold of me.
2 The headmen do not allow any gambling.
3 Do not disparage men behind their backs.
4 I beg of you, in any case, do not let it leak out.
5 Be quick and eat, and don't fret.
6 If one has a homely wife, he should not keep thinking of pretty women.
7 Do not laugh at Christian; he is a good man.
8 Don't be so formal.
9 Not to speak of others, even I know it.
10 Do not stop, and in three days this book on electroplating will be copied.
11 It is better not to meet the man of whose reputation you have heard, for if you meet him face to face, you will find him decidedly commonplace.
12 As I see it, you had better not spend that money.
13 Out with you all to your play, and don't stay here making a noise.
14 You can only consult together, you cannot peremptorily appoint.
15 Carry it carefully and don't splash it over.
16 You ought to give it just as I explained it. I cannot allow any random guess that comes uppermost.

VOCABULARY.

別 *Pie*[4]. Do not, you must not;—see Sub. See ... ... *pie*[2].
會首 *Hwei*[4] *shou*[3]. The chairman of a committee ... ... or society; headmen, leaders.
開賭 *K'ai*[1] *tu*[3]. *To gamble*, to open a gambling ... ... room.
議論 *I*[4] *lun*[4]. To discuss, to canvass; to criticize, ... *to disparage*.
美 *Mei*[3]. ... ... Delicious; *beautiful;* excellent.
美貌 *Mei*[3] *mao*[4]. ... Beautiful, *pretty*, handsome.
笑話 *Hsiao*[4] *hwa*[4]. *To laugh at*, to ridicule, to ... ... make fun of; in fun.
基 *Chi*[1]. ... Foundation; possessions, patrimony.
基督徒 *Chi*[1] *tu*[1] *t'u*[2]. The name given to ... ... Bunyan's Christian.
客氣 *K'ê*[4] *ch'i*[4]. *Formal*, conventional, distant; modest, simpering, bashful.
電氣 *Tien*[4] *ch'i*[4]. ... ... Electricity.
鍍金 *Tu*[4] *chin*[1]. ... ... To gild; *to electroplate.*
住手 *Chu*[4] *shou*[3]. ... *To stop*, to cease, to desist.
聞名 *Wên*[2] *ming*[2]. ... To hear of by reputation.
見面 *Chien*[4] *mien*[4]. *To see face to face*, to have ... ... an interview with.
洸 *Kwang*[1]. ... To oscillate, to wabble; unsteady.
蕩 *Tang*[4]. Vast; vagrant, dissipated: to squan... ... ... der; to shake, to agitate.
洸蕩 To wabble; to slop over, to splash out.
隨口 *Swei*[2] *k'ou*[3]. ... ... To talk at random.
謅 *Tsou*[1]. ... Jest, raillery; to exaggerate, to lie.

Digitized by Google

那個人不大準成。○漫[19]說是二百八、就是三百也是
你的東西、不用你、可以到外邊得
○你的[21]錢。○我[20]託你細找
照本位、不許你亂抄持、幾個玻璃瓶子、你別忘記了。
地下。可以在外邊常坐。○再[22]往火爐裏添煤、別撒拉在落
○各無吃、休進來。○常有病、一點也不少做活。○別
這理麼、不是凍着喇。○要[27]擤鼻涕、或是要吐痰、可以朝南開、有甚
你[26]要、你進來。○衙門口、不要隨地吐痰、衣裳、你別
他吃去、不准弄在地板上。○我[26]嘱咐莫休進來。○衙門口、不要隨地吐痰、衣裳、你別
有飽啊。○這[29]樣不識抬舉[28]、你不筷子、好歹總外邊聽。
甚麼本事。○罷[30]罷罷、他的來來、別嫌你、不用理他、看得

17 Simply sweep the snow from before your own door; don't meddle with the frost on your neighbor's roof.
18 Don't let that man come again. I think he is not to be trusted.
19 You need not mention two hundred and eighty. If you said three hundred, you still might keep your money.
20 Do not forget those few glass bottles I asked you to get for me.
21 Let each one take his own seat; to sit at random is not allowed.
22 When you put coal in the stove again, do not spill it on the floor.
23 Don't let the fact that she is constantly ailing influence you. She does not [on this account] do any the less work.
24 If you want something to eat, ask for it outside, but don't come in.
25 The door of the yamên faces the south (opens like the character eight): having right but not money, do not enter.
26 I charged you not to strip off your clothes but you did not mind, and now you have caught cold.
27 If you want to blow your nose or to spit, you should go out and not soil the floor.
28 Come on, come on, don't lay down

糊謅 *Hu² tsou¹.* *To talk at random;* to tell barefaced lies.
霜 *Shwang¹.* *Frost,* efflorescence.
準 *Chun³.* To adjust; to measure; a rule, a gauge; accurate; *certain,* sure.
準成 *Chun³ ch'êng².* Accurate; certain, sure; reliable, *trusty.*
抄持 *Ch'ao¹ ch'i².* *To get up,* to make a raise of, to rake up. (L.)
落 *La⁴.* To forget, to leave behind, *to drop;* to be late. See *lao⁴* and *loă⁴.*
拉落 *La¹ la⁴.* To scatter, *to spill,* to draggle.
擤 *Hsing².* To blow or wipe the nose with the hand.
鼻 *Pi².* The nose.
涕 *T'i⁴.* Tears; to weep; *mucus from the nose.*
鼻涕 Mucus from the nose, snivel.
地板 *Ti⁴ pan³.* A board floor, *the floor.*
痰 *T'an².* Phlegm, mucus from the lungs.
抬舉 *T'ai² chü³.* To exalt, to honor; to compliment; *to treat well.*
隨機應變 *Swei² chi¹ ying⁴ pien⁴.* To adapt oneself to circumstances:—Note 31.
倒針 *Tao⁴ chên¹.* To backstitch.
跑針 *P'ao³ chên¹.* To run (a seam).
縣太爺 *Hsien⁴ t'ai⁴ yie².* His honor the magistrate:—Note 32.
光棍 *Kwang¹ kun⁴.* "A bare pole," a bachelor; a rowdy, a rough; *a daredevil,* a sharper; exemplary, unassailable; spruce, comely.
俏 *Ch'iao⁴.* Silly, half-witted.
冒犯 *Mao⁴ fan⁴.* To offend, to anger, to affront, *to provoke.*
奸 *Chien¹.* Crafty, traitorous, wicked.
奸邪 *Chien¹ hsie².* Malicious, *wicked.*
兇惡 *Hsiung¹ ê⁴.* Vicious, villainous; *evil,* sinful; wicked.
着忙 *Chao² mang².* *Hastily,* in a hurry; flurried.

Digitized by Google

我看你們兩個、都殼人受的。○南[31]北的風氣不同、作官的也當隨機應變、不可板上釘釘。○漫[32]道他是個衙役、倒就是個縣太爺、他能把我怎麼樣呢。○媽[33]媽告訴要出名的大光棍、大小事情、有他出來、沒有過不去的。○他[35]出門後、藏着、就是親殺了一輩子牛、養了這麼個現世報的不孝之孩子、不會有好結果的。○休[36]說話、冒犯了先生、請先生休怪他。○休走兒惡人的路。○二[37]姑娘、見遮思克在門邪人的道、針縫、不要跑針縫。○你[34]不要小看了他、他是此地的針線、不要跑針縫。○你[34]不要小看了他、他是此地出名

第八十三課

聽。○憑怎少裏、有子只他[1]
○無[9]怎麼回、也作都管任
不[10]論麼樣、總說聲。好。去。甚
拘是樣、你不得○○○麼
大誰我可許過這[5]我[4]憑[3]都
事勸總得他去。個任你不
小他、比給進○話、憑去管。
事、他你我來。憑[6]不他辦、○
都就長錢。○他管說、兩你[2]
要是幾○別[7]來在也個想
謙不歲。任[8]管多那沒法去、

TRANSLATION.

1 He pays no attention to anything at all.
2 If you want to go, just go.
3 Go and arrange it as you like. Both plans are good.
4 I let him talk and said nothing.
5 This statement will pass anywhere.
6 No matter how often he comes, by no means let him come in.
7 No difference what you say, you must give me the money.
8 No matter how yon put it, I am still several years older than you.
9 No matter who exhorts him, he will not listen.
10 In everything, whether great or small, be conciliatory and not self-opinionated.

a correct translation. Such forms are much more frequently used in Chinese than in English.

27 弄 here expresses the idea in a form which no English translation will reproduce.

28 Said by a host to his guests at the beginning of a fresh course. The 來來來 is a cordial invitation to each one to take up his chopsticks and begin to eat. 好歹 is used apologetically.

29 不識抬舉 Not to appreciate an honor or compliment, but, on the contrary, to take it as a want of courage or spirit, and so presume upon it.

31 隨機應變 *Follow the turn of affairs and respond to the change* [by a corresponding change of plan]; that is, *to adapt oneself to circumstances, to be equal to the occasion.* 板上釘釘 *To drive a nail in a board*, that is, a nail driven in a board is fixed once for all, and is unchangeable. There is perhaps also a pun or play on the word 板, which often means, *stiff, obstinate.* The phrase is just the opposite of 隨機應變.

32 縣太爺 A respectful designation of the Hsien magistrate. Formerly magistrates were addressed as 太爺, but this title is now generally superseded by that of 大老爺.

35 養了 etc., Lit., *Has raised this present-life-recompense half-witted son.* Buddhism has disseminated everywhere in China the Brahmanical notion that butchering cattle for beef is a great sin. The recompense in this case was a half-witted son.

37 別家 is the Peking form. In some places 別的 is said as if written 別得, which was probably the orginal form. Nanking rejects both forms and uses a triple 別, which is also widely used, but not to the exclusion of the other forms.

LESSON LXXXIII.

CONCESSIVES.

任 To allow, to permit; any,—as 任什麼 anything, 任誰 anyone, etc.

憑 According to; as [you] like; it rests with.

任憑 To allow; to suffer; to let; no matter.

任管 Same as 任憑,—but local.

管 or **不管** No matter; be as it will; as [you] please; any. The addition of 不, strange to say, makes very little difference in the meaning.

無管 Same as 不管.

只管 Just, simply, freely, without hesitation.

隨管 No matter; as [you] please.

論 As to, with reference to.

不論 or **無論** No matter; irrespective of; whether.

不拘 No difference; no matter; irrespective of; in any case.

無拘 Same, but local.

別管 It matters not; no difference; by no means.

隨 As [you] like, as [you] please. When thus used it is, in Central Mandarin, frequently read *ts'ui.*

隨便 As [you] like, at [your] convenience. Much used in the South.

由 To allow, to let, to give way to.

Digitized by Google

己罵、要長也臉管麼不讓、
的心留的不色他事、動。不
心、裏幾周上和怎只○可
以只個正。火。平。麼要我[12]自
後依錢、○○○說熟還是。
聽着今我[18]論[17]李[16]罷。悉練、要○
天兄日早標俊大○就拜任[11]
由弟用。知綴爺不[15]容望憑
命的○道也實論易他你
也言武[19]今不在大了。去、怎
就語。大日很羔顏小○見樣
是○郎受標俊綿預生他[14]不求
了。我[20]忍苦、綴、別意、沒見他、
○只氣不就管要說憑他、
若[21]管吞拘是怎價到他。的
見盡聲、怎隨管頭麼還我○[13]心
他到由麼那上催價、門不無連
罵了他樣、裏那腳他、都跟拘動
人、自咒也都裏下他要前、甚也

11 Entreat him as you will, his sympathies are not even touched.
12 I still am going to call on him. He may see me or not as he likes.
13 No matter what it is, only get accustomed to it and it becomes easy.
14 Since he has not said it in our presence, let him talk as he pleases.
15 In business, whether great or small, both in asking and in offering a price, a pleasant expression of countenance should always be preserved.
16 Uncle Li is emphatically apathetic (easy-going). No matter how you hurry him he never gets excited.
17 As to looks, she is not very pretty, but she is well-proportioned in every respect.
18 I knew beforehand that we should be in want at this time, hence I was determined, in any case, to keep a few cash for the present emergency.
19 Wu the Elder restrained his anger and kept silent and let her abuse him, keeping in mind his brother's words.
20 I simply act according to the best of my ability, and leave the rest to Heaven and fate.
21 If you see him reviling any one or

VOCABULARY.

謙 *Ch'ien*[1]. Respectful, unassuming, modest; ..... *yielding;* humble.

謙讓 *Ch'ien*[1] *jang*[4]. Yielding, complaisant, ... obliging, *conciliatory.*

悉 *Hsi*[2,1]..... Fully, minutely, thoroughly.

熟練 *Shu*[2] *lien*[4]. Experienced, practiced, con- ..... versant, *accustomed to.*

熟悉 *Shu*[2] *hsi*[2]. Practiced, *accustomed to,* ..... familiar with, pat.

要價 *Yao*[4] *chia*[4]. *To ask a price,* the price ..... asked.

還價 *Hwan*[2] *chia*[4]. To make an offer, (in ..... response to a price asked.)

臉色 *Lien*[3] *sê*[4]..... *Expression,* color

顢 *Man*[1]..... A large full face.

頇 *Han*[1]..... A large face.

顢頇 Sluggish, dilatory; *apathetic;* shameless, brazen-faced.

柔綿 *Jou*[2] *mien*[2]. Compliant, *easy-going,* ..... submissive, passive.

上火 *Shang*[4] *hwo*[3] *To get excited;* to become ..... angry.

周正 *Chou*[1] *chêng*[4]. Complete, symmetrical, ... *well-proportioned,* shapely.

忍氣 *Jên*[3] *ch'i*[4]. *To restrain anger,* to control ..... one's temper.

吞聲 *T'un*[1] *shêng*[1]. To hold the tongue, *to* ..... *keep quiet,* to be silent.

咒 *Chou*[4]. To curse, to imprecate, to swear; a ..... charm, a litany.

咒罵 *Chou*[4] *ma*[4]. To curse, to revile, to exe- ..... crate, *to abuse.*

漆 *Ch'i*[1]..... *Varnish,* lacquer; to varnish; black.

烏 *Wu*[1]..... The crow; black, dark, *dull.*

膽量 *Tan*[3] *liang*[4]..... *Courage,* bravery.

賦 *Fu*[4]. To levy a tax; to spread out; *a kind* ..... *of verse;* a ballad, an idyl.

典故 *Tien*[3] *ku*[4]. A precedent, an authority, ... *a quotation,* an allusion.

俗氣 *Su*[2] *ch'i*[4]..... *Commonplace,* hackneyed.

Digitized by Google

和孩子打架、無論他是不是、就先打他。○這[22]個漆實在不好、不論漆幾遍、總是發烏、一點也不亮。○人[23]的膽量大小、是天生的、一點也不由人。不是我[24]們念書的人、無論是作文章、是作詩賦、必得有典故、纔不俗氣。○媽[25]啊、我的褂子、買上個綠花洋布（托領）護托領好不好、○答隨你罷。○不[26]論做甚麼、外行總是不行。○人[27]若有驕傲、吝嗇、這兩樣毛病、再別管有多少好處、也（白贅）帶掉（累贅）壞上（贅）了。○楊[28]崑然受着、是寬宏大量、無論人怎樣毀謗、他都能安安靜靜、我們各人隨不[29]用等、我們各人都能安安靜靜、

fighting with other children, no matter whether he is in the right or in the wrong, first whip him.

22 This varnish is exceedingly poor; no matter how many coats you put on, it is still dull and without the least luster.

23 The amount of a man's courage is the bestowment of nature; it is not in the least under his own control.

24 We scholars, whether writing an essay or composing poetry, must make quotations in order not to be common-place.

25 Mother, may I buy a green print collar for my gown? *Ans.* Just as you like.

26 No matter in what line it is, an inexperienced hand will not succeed.

27 Let a man have these two faults, pride and stinginess, and no matter how many excellences he has they go for nothing (are all vitiated).

28 Yang K'un Shan is truly a generous and magnanimous man. No matter how people vilify him, he is able to bear it all with equanimity, never showing any vexation.

外行 *Wai⁴ hang²*. One outside of a profession, ... untrained, *inexperienced.*

吝 *Lin⁴*..... *Stingy*, sordid, parsimonious.

嗇 *Sè⁴*..... Harvest; avaricious, *stingy;* frugal.

吝嗇 *Stingy*, mean, niggardly.

贅 *Chwei⁴*. To hamper, to encumber, *to throw in;* .....an appendage, an encumbrance.

贅累 *Chwei⁴ lei⁴*. To encumber, to embarrass, to ..... obstruct, to clog, *to vitiate.*

白贅 *Pai² chwei⁴*. Thrown in, superfluous, ... useless, *for nothing.* (c.)

帶掉 *Tai⁴ tiao⁴*. To neutralize, to render null; ..... to spoil, *to vitiate.* (s.)

宏 *Hung²*..... Vast, ample, wide.

寬宏 *K'wan¹ hung²*. Liberal-minded, *generous,* ..... large-hearted.

大量 *Ta⁴ liang⁴*. *Magnanimous,* open-handed, ... of large capacity, gifted.

毀 *Hwei³*. To break down, to destroy, to abolish, ...to ruin; to slander, *to vilify.*

毀謗 *Hwei³ pang⁴*. To defame, to calumniate, to ..... slander, *to vilify.*

安然 *An¹ jan²*. Peacefully, tranquilly, *with* ..... *equanimity.*

涵養 *Han² yang³*. *Self-control,* magnanimity, ... patience, long-suffering.

矜 *Ching¹*. To pity; to regret; boastful, vaunt- ..... ing; *passionate,* impatient.

闊 *K'wo⁴*..... Broad, *ample;* liberal, lavish.

開通 *K'ai¹ t'ung¹*. Clear-headed, clever, *judi-* ..... *cious.*

開脫 *K'ai¹ t'o¹*..... The same. (s.)

開闊 *K'ai¹ k'wo⁴*..... The same. (s.)

無怪 *Wu² kwai⁴*..... No wonder.

盡力 *Chin⁴ li⁴*. With the might, to the utmost, ... *one's best.*

歇手 *Hsie¹ shou³*.... *To stop,* to desist, to quit.

河路 *Hê² lu⁴*..... River travel.

平安 *P'ing² an¹*..... Peaceful, *safe,* secure.

壯班 *Chwang⁴ pan¹*. Official guard:—Note ..... 35.

擺治 *Pai³ chi⁴*. To operate on, to put through, ... to ply; to maltreat, *to torture.*

佈 *Pu⁴*. To spread out, extend; to arrange; ..... to publish.

擺佈 *Pai³ pu⁴*. To spread out, to arrange; to ..... maltreat, *to torture.*

Digitized by Google

便罷。○請[30]你要緊的想着、別管怎麼的着不要忘記了。○人[31]若用到了涵養的工夫、不拘碰着甚麼事、也不能敗他那不矜不躁的樣子。○王[32]六不論說話辦事、眞是開闊脫通無怪他父親常誇獎他。不[33]拘誰託他一件事、他不應就罷了、他若是點了頭、必要替你盡力的辦、不成不肯歇手。○船[34]主說、現在河路很不平安、不如按着站數走妥當、答隨他們罷、怎麼妥當就怎麼走。○壯[35]班間孫通子要班規錢、隨管隨便怎麼樣難爲他、攔治他、他就是不出油兒。

29 You need not wait; we will each go at his own convenience.

30 Please bear it carefully in mind, and do not by any means forget it.

31 When a man is thoroughly schooled in self-control, no matter what happens, it cannot disturb his calm and dispassionate manner.

32 Without question, Wang the Sixth is judicious both in speaking and acting. No wonder his father is constantly boasting of him.

33 No difference who applies to him for assistance, if he does not promise, that is the end of it; but if he assents, he will do his best and will not cease till he has accomplished it.

34 The captain says that just now river travel is very unsafe; to go by the regular stages will be the more satisfactory. *Ans.* Just as they like: proceed in whatever way is thought best.

35 The *chwang pan* demanded the usual fees of Sun T'ung Tsï, but in spite of all their maltreatment and torture, he refused to disgorge.

NOTES.

1 不管 as here used is not intended to illustrate the subject of the lesson; this is done by 任.

5 This sentence might perhaps be taken as referring to language simply, and be translated, *This language or phraseology will pass current anywhere.* In this case, however, 這個話 should rather be 這句話, and 說得過去 should be simply 說得, or 說得去.

12 As here used, 拜望他去, is not quite equivalent to 去拜望他. The order is changed in order to throw stress on the 去.

18 今日 *To-day*,—put indefinitely for *the present*, which, however, is not a colloquial but a book usage.

19 大郎 properly, *eldest son*, but here used simply as a name. This 武大郎 lived in the Sung Dynasty, and was noted for his imbecility and deformity of person. He had no given name—was not considered worth one, being simply called *the elder Wu*. He had a virago of a wife, who, with the aid of one of her paramours, finally murdered him. He had, however, a brother of distinguished ability called 武松 who afterwards avenged his death. He is one of the characters in the "History of Robbers," from which this sentence is taken. He is frequently introduced in theatrical plays, hence his name is familiar to the people. The person here spoken of as reviling him was his wife.

20 聽天由命 *Yield to heaven and submit to fate*—a book phrase which combines the ideas of *providence and fate*.

21 無論他是不是 is an abbreviation for 無論是他的是, 是他的不是, *no matter whether it is his right or his wrong.* This is an approved maxim of Chinese parental policy.

24 Elegance of style in Chinese depends largely on the constant use of classical figures, allusions, and quotations.

25 綠花洋布 Note the three qualifying adjectives in succession.

27 帶掉 is the Nanking form. 掉 is an auxiliary verb much used in the South:—Les. 92.

29 The use of 等 in the first clause, shows that the convenience referred to was that of going or starting away, hence *go* is supplied in the translation.

31 涵養的工夫 Time and effort spent in schooling the temper and acquiring the art of self-control. 到了, that is, to the point of a thorough acquirement. 不矜不躁 *Not passionate, not fretful*,—a book phrase.

32 誇獎他 does not here mean to praise him, as it might seem to do, but to boast of him to others.

35 壯班 a class or section of the 衙役 in a magistrate's office, who are his special guard, and are entrusted with the business of arresting and confining prisoners in civil cases. When a man is arrested, he is required by custom to pay a fine to the 班, or class, arresting him, which is more or less, according to the ability of the prisoner. If he refuses to pay, or to pay as much as is required, all sorts of cruel devices are resorted to in order to extract it from him. He is at the mercy of these rapacious underlings. 不出油 *Will not give out the oil*,—a significant figure taken from the extracting of oil from beans by pressure.

Digitized by Google

第四十八課

咱[1]我是了使○咱[3]我名欺、喇隔
們俺馬。嗎。們[7]他那○○們[6]你[5]您[4]大歇歇罷。式
歇我們俺納○○們納納哥的的○衆[2]位、遠、
歇們咱秀那點這些年有病、誰照應我怎麼坐呢。不能
罷。大哥兒們咱[10]不如他。了、叫是在戶部有差完天常
○的生意兒們也們所見的、俺[9]先生是個出○呢。會
我少爺、日、○我僧們走罷。○明[3]天在
們不是您[4]的公事○咱[14]僧[13]○酒[12]○人[11]一
走罷。都完兒再要有些包涵。不錯。家倆相多塊
○○○明[3]天兒喝罷。○咱們裏

TRANSLATION.

1 Let us take a rest.
2 Well, gentlemen, shall we go?
3 To-morrow will be our elder brother's birthday.
4 Is your business all finished?
5 Is not your son employed in the Board of Revenue?
6 If you sit thus, where will you have me sit?
7 During these years of illness who took charge of his family?
8 Are we not in every respect as good as he?
9 Our teacher is a well-known graduate.
10 All that we saw was unexceptionable.
11 When others insult us, we should have some self-restraint.
12 We have drunk too much. Let us wait a little before drinking again.
13 We two are too widely separated to be frequently together.
14 Have you all forgotten our old home custom?

LESSON LXXXIV.

COLLOQUIAL PRONOUNS.

In addition to the regular Mandarin pronouns, there are, especially in Central and Northern Mandarin, a number of colloquial pronouns in common use.

僧 We, we folks, our, us. The speaker classes himself with those present, or with others of like station, occupation or opinion. The character is not authorized by the dictionaries, but is in general use. 噜 is sometimes incorrectly written for it.

咱 Same meaning as 僧. It was probably adopted to write the shortened form of pronouncing 僧 *tsan*, viz., *tsa*.

In Peking 僧 and 咱 always have the plural termination, 們, joined with them. In Central Mandarin it is generally omitted. Its use seems to add nothing, as the words are essentially plural. Neither 僧 nor 咱 is used to any extent in Southern Mandarin.

僧家 We, us,—an old colloquial form used in the Ming Dynasty, and found in books, but now obsolete.

俺 We, us,—used especially when the speaker wishes to particularize himself. It is used in Central Mandarin and in certain localities both North and South. It is not infrequently found in Mandarin books. 僧 frequently includes those addressed, while 俺 always excludes them.

您 You, you folks. In Peking this word is used as a term of respect,—*You, sir*, or, *you, madam*. It is also often read as if written 您納, the *na* being spoken very lightly. In Shantung it always includes a plural idea, and expresses no special respect. It never takes 們 after it. In some places it is read *nên*^{2}, in others *nin*^{2}, and in others *na*^{3}, and in Southern Mandarin a nasal *n*. It is much more used in some places than in others.

你納 or **您納** You, sir, you [my senior]. This form is exclusively Pekingese, and is explained as a contraction for 你老人家.

納 is sometimes added to 他 in the same way.

佢 *K'ei* is used along the *Yang-tsi* as a colloquial substitute for 他, but it belongs to the Southern coast dialects, not to Mandarin.

Digitized by Google

他[25]好。咱氣、撦去。也說你的
媽○用。很的○來過的老舊
一偺[24]○可麪咱[19]了。話鬍規
點們我[23]以條們○不子矩、
奶今想不子、兩偺[18]是。都你
也天兒咱理進個們這只[17]了。都
沒商們他。去這兒您○忘
有、量用○吃件盤兒的弟哥我[16]了
你半人、人[22]兩子買小兄兒看嗎。
能天總家碗罷。賣、河兩倆你○
給纔是的。○圓接對很個很面咱[15]
侺定樣錢就就窄、來熟、們
個規、實在這[21]不不有了嗎、咱五
奶以有咱種上上浮答們六
媽後眼手小來來了。橋我是年
子永眼力裏、人○就俺們在沒
不不色見不乍富俺[20]可天有
能。改兒能富的家以過親津見
○了。的由的脾裏過親面、

15 We have not seen each other for five or six years; your beard is quite gray.

16 Your face is very familiar: we had a talk together in Tientsin, had we not?

17 Did only you two brothers come? *Ans.* Our father also came.

18 This little stream of ours is very narrow: you can cross it on a moveable bridge.

19 We cannot come to an agreement about this piece of business of ours.

20 We have made vermicelli at our house; come in and have a bowl or two.

21 We can very well afford to disregard the pride of newly gotten wealth in this class of petty natures.

22 Another's money in our hands is not at our disposal.

23 In my opinion, the best man for our use, after all, is a plain man of sound judgment.

24 We deliberated a long time to-day before we decided: hereafter we will never reverse it.

25 His mother hasn't a drop of milk: can you hire a wet nurse for us?

VOCABULARY.

偺 *Tsan²*. . . . . We, we folks :—see Sub.

咱 *Tsa²*. . . . . An elided form of 偺 :—see Sub.

俺 *An²,³*. . . . . I, we, us :—see Sub.

您 *Nin²*. . . . . You, you folks :—see Sub.

納 *Na⁴*. To receive; to pay over to; to be affected . . . . . by; a pronominal enclitic :—see Sub.

公事 *Kung¹ shï⁴*. Public affairs, *business;* a . . . . . wedding or funeral.

戶部 *Hu⁴ pu⁴*. . . . . The Board of Revenue.

差使 *Ch'ai¹ shï³*. Engagement, commission, ... *employment.*

出名 *Ch'u¹ ming²*. *Well-known*, celebrated, ... distinguished.

秀 *Hsiu⁴*. . . . . Flourishing, cultivated, elegant.

秀才 *Hsiu⁴ ts'ai²*. A graduate of the first . . . . . degree, bachelor of arts.

包涵 *Pao¹ han²*. . . . . Patience, *self-restraint.*

面熟 *Mien⁴ shu²*. *The face familiar*, known by . . . . . sight.

浮 *Fou²*. To float; light, volatile; *unsubstantial*, ... fleeting. Also *fu²*.

橋 *Ch'iao²*. . . . . A bridge; a cross-piece.

浮橋 A bridge of boats, *a movable bridge.*

對付 *Twei⁴ fu⁴*. To match, to adjust, to adapt; . . . . . *to agree;* to bargain, to buy.

接就 *Chie¹ chiu⁴*. To adapt, to accommodate; . . . . . to come to terms, to agree.

圓就 *Yüen² chiu⁴*. . . . . The same.

撦 *Kan³*. . . . . To roll out,—as dough is rolled.

麪條 *Mien⁴ t'iao²*. . . . . Vermicelli, noodles.

乍當 *Cha⁴ fu⁴*. . . . . Sudden wealth.

樸 *P'u³,²*. . . . . Sincere, *plain*, substantial.

樸實 *P'u³ shï²*. *Plain, unadorned;* honest, ... simple-minded.

眼力見兒 *Yien³ li⁴ chien⁴ êr²*. Discretion, ... *judgment*, cleverness, shrewdness, discernment. (N.)

Digitized by Google

天[26]氣不穩妥、要颳大風、趁着還沒颳、咱們快快些走罷。○我[27]估量是這兒的人、喜歡咱們來、故此奏這樂器。○就[28]是你的口頭語、也不可這樣大放無拘、你不論在誰眼前、都好自稱偺老子嗎。○揭[29]陽鎮上、沒有一個曉事的好漢、抬舉咱家。○俺[30]家裏做針線、可就有的是人喇、前日他姑嫂五個、給我做大綿襖、我在正間裏、刷了兩個鍋的工夫、他們把綿花就鋪絮上了、翻過來的時候、這個縫大襟、那個打揝襖裉、那個上領條兒、緣袖口的緣邊子、這個揝襖裉、那個上鈕門的鈕門、不到半天、就做起來了。

26 The weather is unsettled: we are going to have a high wind: let us go quickly before it begins to blow.

27 I presume it is that the people here are pleased with our coming, and therefore make this music.

28 Even if it is a favorite expression of yours, it will not do for you to use it recklessly. Is it proper for you, no matter whom you are addressing, to be always styling yourself "your old father"?

29 There is not in Chie Yang Chên a single efficient man to uphold us.

30 There is no lack of folks to sew in our family. Day-before-yesterday they, five sisters-in-law, made me a wadded gown. While I was in the kitchen washing out the two kettles, they put in the wadding; and as soon as it was turned, this one stitched up the overlap, that one laid the chalk lines, another closed the seams under the arms, and another put on the collar-binding; one bound the cuffs and another sewed on the button-loops, and in less than half a day it was finished.

商量 *Shang¹ liang²*. To consult, to compare ..... notes, *to deliberate.*

奶媽 *Nai³ ma¹*..... A wet nurse.

奏 *Tsou⁴*. To memorialize the throne, to bring .....forward; to play or make music.

樂 *Yo⁴, yüe⁴*..... Music, *musical.* See *lo⁴*.

樂器 *Yo⁴ ch'i⁴*..... Musical instruments.

口頭語 *K'ou³ t'ou² yü³*. *A pet phrase*, a pecu- .....liarity of speech.

曉事 *Hsiao³ shï⁴*. Able, clear-headed, effi- .....cient. (w.)

正間 *Chêng⁴ chien¹*. The middle room facing .....the front:—Note 30.

大襟 *Ta⁴ chin¹*.....The lapel of a garment.

煞 *Sha⁴*. Baleful, malign, to the point of death, ...very; *to close up*, to shut up; to end.

肘 *Chï⁴*. The upper arm. Used only in the .....phrase 胳肘窩.

窩 *Wo¹*. A nest, a lair; a den; *a hole, a depress-* .....*ion*, a nook; a shrine.

胳肘窩 *Ke¹ chï⁴ wo¹*.....The armpit.

領條 *Ling³ t'iao²*. The binding around the .....collar.

揝 *Kê⁴*. To sew or stitch together the parts of .....a garment, to close up; to twist together the strands of a thread or rope.

裉 *K'ên⁴*.....The gusset under the arm.

袖口 *Hsiu⁴ k'ou³*..... *The wristband;* a cuff.

鈕 *Ting¹*. To sew on as a button or loop; to .....patch; to mend shoes.

NOTES.

1 Or, *Shall we take a rest?* All would depend on the manner of speaking.

2 This sentence might also be spoken so as to mean, *Gentlemen, let us go.*

6 Addressed by a host to his guests who had already taken, or were about to take the lowest seats.

12 The Chinese *seems* to say that the wine is abundant, but the sense is that much wine has been drunk.

13 The use of 倆 implies intimacy. It would not be used by the speaker in the sixteenth sentence.

14 都 might also be rendered *quite*, or, *altogether.*—*Have you quite forgotten* etc. Southern teachers object to 舊 and say 老. The two words are here approximate equivalents. 舊 is what has been practiced before and so is not *new*; 老

Digitized by Google

第八十五課

要路。多有二有那多麼走、這[1]
多○麼多千多個遠、幾多簍
少給[9]遠高金、深孩答多麼柚
呢。你呢、呢。現呢、子、三順子、
○這答○在答多十便。有
他[10]些、一火[8]多六麼里○幾多
只你天輪大丈聽路地。府[3]多麼
會還能車歲多說。○上重。
闖嫌走一數。深。○你[4]到○
禍、少、二天、○○這[5]看這跟[2]
一你千能天[7]你[6]個人裏這
點想里走壇的井家幾多裏

TRANSLATION.

1 How heavy is this basket of pomeloes?
2 How much more convenient it was to have come this way!
3 How far is it from your residence to this place? *Ans.* Thirty *li*.
4 See how obedient that child of his is.
5 How deep is this well? *Ans.* It is over sixty feet deep.
6 How old is your second daughter?
7 How high is the altar of heaven?
8 How far can a railway train travel in a day? *Ans.* It can travel two thousand *li*.
9 Even when I give you all these, you yet find fault with them for being too few! How many do you propose to ask for?
10 He is always getting into trouble.

is what has been practiced for a long time and so is not *recent*.

17 哥兒倆 The 兒 stands for the correlative word, that is, 弟. So also in the similar phrases 爺兒倆, *father and son*, or *daughter*, and 娘兒倆, *mother and son*, or *daughter*. 哥兒倆 is the address of one of the same age or station; 弟兄兩個 is the language of an elder or a superior.

18 浮橋 is properly a floating bridge of boats, but is often applied to any temporary or moveable bridge. Such bridges are often made of rough planks laid endwise on wooden benches, and are taken away during the prevalence of high water.

19 盤 is the classifier of business. Its use probably comes from the use of the 算盤, or abacus. Peking teachers reject both the Central and Southern forms. They also disallow the use of 上來 with 對付, which, however, would be quite appropriate in most localities.

22 A Chinaman's untrustworthiness is nowhere more conspicuous than in the liberty he takes with other people's money entrusted to him to keep, or to carry.

26 快些 Properly, *a little quicker*, but used here simply as an intensive implying no comparison. 些 is often so used in the South, rarely in the North.

23 偺老子 is a Peking expression and somewhat slangy. "*Your daddy*" would perhaps give about the flavor of it.

29 揭陽鎮 A large market village in Honan, mentioned in the History of Robbers, from which the sentence is taken.

30 有的是 *Plenty of*, "*lots of*," a very idiomatic form of expressing this idea. 姑嫂 The daughter-in-law calls her husband's sisters 大姑子 and 小姑子, and they call their elder sisters-in-law, 嫂子. The terms by which each designates the other are joined together as the common designation of all. 正間 is the middle room, which, in the homes of the common people, has a cooking range on either side, and is, in fact, the kitchen. 翻過來, etc. The seams are first sewed up, and the cotton wadding spread on, and the garment is then turned inside out. 打邊子 is to measure and strike the chalk lines by which the quilting is to be done.

LESSON LXXXV.

多 AS AN INTERROGATIVE.

多 is applied interrogatively to many adjectives, as *how* is in English, as 多大 *how great*, 多長 *how long*, etc. 麼 is often inserted after the 多, and joined with it. This was probably the original form, the use of 多 alone being a contraction.

As in English so in Chinese, this interrogation often passes into an exclamation.

VOCABULARY.

簍 *Low*[3]. . . . *A basket*, hamper, a market basket.
柚 *Yiu*[4]. . . . . The pomelo or shaddock.
順便 *Shun*[4] *pien*[4]. *Convenient*, direct; smooth, ... compliant.
千金 *Ch'ien*[1] *chin*[1]. A thousand taels of gold, ... priceless, inestimable; a complimentary term for another man's daughter.
壇 *T'an*[2]. . . . . *An altar*, an arena.

Digitized by Google

不知道天多高、地多厚。○看[11]人家這匹馬、跑的多麼快。○他[12]已經多遠來了、還可以叫他空手回去嗎。○你[14]估早[13]知道劉芳齡要去、託他帶着、多麼省事呢。○從曲阜縣、到沂州府、有多遠呢。○[16]這麼一點兒的東西、能有多重呢。○他[17]頭一個女人、多麼排場、這個差的多了。○你[18]的眼睛不好、用使嗎、你看這頭多粗、那頭多細。○他[19]光告訴叫做一張床、沒告訴多長多寬。○你[20]如今正是得時的時候、吃的有多麼好、穿的有多麼好。○人[21]家韓青山的夫人、老內人婆多麼會說、眞是女中的魁首。○量這棵梧桐樹、有多高、能鋸幾節呢。○好乾淨這一點兒、

He hasn't the least common sense.

11 See how fast this horse of his can run.

12 Having come a long distance it will not do to send him home empty-handed.

13 If we had known that Liu Fang Ling was going, how much it would have saved to get him to take it!

14 How high do you estimate this *wu t'ung* tree to be? and how many lengths will it make (saw)?

15 How far is it from Ch'üfu Hsien to Ichou Fu?

16 A trifling little bit of a thing like this, what weight can it have?

17 How lady-like his first wife was. This one is vastly inferior.

18 Is your eyesight not good? See how large this end is and how small that one is.

19 He simply told me to make a bed, but did not say how long or how wide.

20 You are just now enjoying the smiles of fortune. How excellent are your food and your clothing.

21 That wife of Han Ch'ing Shan's, how she can talk! Verily, she takes the palm among women.

22 Are you not afraid you will be drowned, going into the water in this way when you do not know how

---

天壇 *T'ien*[1] *t'an*[2]. The altar of heaven at Peking :—Note 7.

闖 *Ch'wang*[3]. To rush out, or in, or against; to dash forward; suddenly.

闖禍 *Ch'wang*[3] *hwoà*.[4] To bring on calamity, *to get into trouble.*

空手 *K'ung*[1] *shou*[3]. *Empty-handed*, destitute of, unsupplied.

芳 *Fang*[1]. Fragrant, excellent. (w.)

齡 *Ling*[2]. A person's age, years. (w.)

省事 *Shêng*[3] *shi*[4]. *To economize labor*, to save trouble.

梧 *Wu*[2]. *Stereulia Platanifolia.*

桐 *T'ung*[2]. Allied to the above.

梧桐 The national tree of China; it has large leaves and a graceful top. The wood is valued for coffins because it resists decay, and for musical instruments because it is dense and resonant.

曲 *Ch'ü*[1,4]. Crooked, bent; tortuous, false; to wrong, to oppress. See *ch'ü*[3].

阜 *Fou*[4]. A mound of earth, abundant. (w.)

曲阜 A city in southern Shantung noted as the site of Confucius' grave.

沂 *I*[2]. A river in south-eastern Shantung.

沂州 *I*[2] *chou*[1]. A prefectural city on the 沂 river.

排場 *P'ai*[2] *ch'ang*[3]. Neat, orderly; well-behaved. *lady-like.*

床 *Ch'wang*[2]. The same as 牀.

韓 *Han*[2]. An ancient state; *a surname.*

內人 *Nei*[4] *jên*[2]. Wife :—Note 21.

夫人 *Fu*[1] *jên*[2]. Wife, lady :—Note 21.

魁首 *K'wei*[2] *shou*[3]. A leader, *a first-class man*, an honor man, facile princeps.

浮 *Fu*[2]. To swim. See *fou*[2].

浮水 *Fu*[2] *shwei*[3]. To swim.

莊稼漢 *Chwang*[1] *chia*[4] *han*[4]. *A farmer*, a rustic.

Digitized by Google

不[22]知水有多麼深、你就下去、不怕淹死嗎、答不怕、我會浮水。○你[23]們念書的人、風也吹不着、雨也灑不着、日頭太陽也曬不着、比我們這些莊稼漢、多麼自在呢。○你[24]看領兵的元帥、得勝回營的時候、一到營門、幾萬兵一齊跪接、傳下令來、一齊答應、那個威武多大。○我[25]這腿上的疙瘩醫治不好、還是天天長、不知要長多麼大、寔在殼我受的。

deep it is? *Ans.* Never fear. I know how to swim.

23 You literary men, the wind cannot blow on you, nor the rain wet you, nor the sun scorch you. How much more comfortable you are than we farmers.

24 See the general in command when he returns to his encampment after a victory. When he reaches the gate, the whole army kneel together to receive him, and when the command is given, all respond together. How imposing is the spectacle!

25 This boil on my leg is not improving under treatment. It continues to enlarge every day. It is hard to say how large it is going to be. It is as much as I can stand.

帥 *Shwai*[4]. A leader, *a commander-in-chief;* .....the king in chess.

元帥 *Yüen*[2] *shwai*[4]..... A general.

得勝 *Tĕ*[2] *shing*[4]. *To get the victory*, to conquer, ...to triumph.

一齊 *I*[1] *ch'i*[2]..... All together:—Les. 105.

跪 *Kwei*[4]..... To kneel, to bow down to.

跪接 *Kwei*[4] *chie*[1].....To receive on the knees.

威武 *Wei*[1] *wu*[3]... *Imposing*, stately, majestic.

疙 *Kĕ*[1]..... A pimple, a boil.

瘩 *Ta*[1]..... A sore, a boil.

疙瘩 A raised sore or boil; a lump or swelling; a wheal; a knot on a string.

醫治 *I*[1] *chi*[4]..... To heal, to cure; to treat.

NOTES.

1 幾多 *How, how many,*—is used in the region of Hankow, and perhaps westward, for **多麼**. No such combination is known in Central or Northern Mandarin.

2 Or, *How much more convenient it is to go this way.*

3 路 is joined to **里** as an expletive. In the North **地** is often used in the same way. The usage is similar to the phrase "*a distance of thirty li.*"

4 人家 is here used pronominally for the person or persons referred to.

7 天壇 is a large square stone altar, which stands in the grounds of the temple of heaven at Peking. It is directly south and in front of the round temple commonly called the "Temple of Heaven." It is about thirty feet high, level and paved on the top, and has cut stone steps on each of the four sides.

10 不知天多高地多厚 *Does not know how high is the heaven nor how deep is the earth*, that is, he is utterly lacking in judgment, has no sense of the fitness of things.

12 The interrogative is used for emphasis, and is best rendered into English in the indicative.

13 The structure of this sentence is such as to imply an *if.*

14 A **節** is understood to be the length for a coffin, that being the purpose for which logs are supposed to be primarily intended.

16 乾淨 is here used as opposed to *bulky* or *cumbersome.* It is so used in Central and Southern Mandarin but not in the North. The sentence is the language of one who is skeptical about the great weight of a small box or parcel.

21 人家 is prefixed to this sentence for the purpose of suggesting a contrast with the speaker's own wife or family—a shade of thought which no English translation will convey. **內人** is preferred in this connection by Peking teachers. They aver that it expresses nothing either of respect or of disrespect, but its common use by the husband when speaking of his wife, shows that it is depreciatory. It is not used in Shantung, though known as a book term. **老婆** is quite *tung hsing*, but more freely used in some places than in others. Its use evinces want of respect, rather than expresses any special disrespect. **夫人** is properly applied only to the wife of a person of rank, but has come into use, in some places, of any genteel woman. It is rarely used in Shantung.

23 In Nanking **日頭** is hardly ever used, **太陽** being almost always used instead.

Digitized by Google

第八十六課

怎[1]麼弄的滿屋裏這麼些煙。○洗[2]澡是渾身都洗。○耶[4]穌是普天下的救主。○他[3]是個飄流人、滿處打野食吃。○你[5]想他賣了家廟的樹、合族的人、還能讓他嗎。○天[6]已經陰滿了、是要下大雨的樣子。○今[8]天不知受了○有[7]理走遍天下、無理寸步難行。○這[9]個孩子、一點甚麼風氣、滿身起了些疙瘩。○你[10]看你弄的滿臉是灰、就和一個小鬼兒一樣。○只[11]要碰着這個好父母官、這就是闔縣的造化。○王[12]家莊、一點不討人喜歡、哭起來滿地直滾。○誰[13]把蒲墊團子藏在個人命案子、合村疃都嚇跑了。

Translation.

1 How have you come to fill the whole room with all this smoke?
2 To bathe is to wash the whole body.
3 He is a tramp wandering from place to place picking up a living?
4 Jesus is the Saviour of the whole world.
5 Seeing he has sold the trees in the family temple, do you suppose the clan will allow it to pass?
6 The sky is already clouded all over, it looks as if we were about to have a general rain.
7 With right on your side, you can go anywhere; without right, it is hard to move an inch.
8 I wonder what malarial affection I have caught to-day; my whole body is covered with wheals.
9 This boy is not at all prepossessing; when he takes a fit of crying he just lies down and rolls on the ground.
10 Just look! You have gotten your whole face covered with dirt. You look just like a little imp.
11 Only let a good parental magistrate fall to your lot, and it is a boon to the whole district.
12 On account of this murder case, the whole village of Wangchia Chwang has been frightened into flight.

LESSON LXXXVI

Totality.

This lesson is distinguished from Les. 35, as the word *whole* is distinguished from the word *all*.

滿 The whole, complete, entire; when used of place,—everywhere.

合 The whole, all of a number of persons.

闔 All, the whole. The same practically as 合. In some connections one character is preferred, and in some the other.

渾 The entire body or family,—rarely, if ever, used with any other words than 身 and 家.

普 Everywhere, universal, all.

遍 The whole, entire; everywhere.

Vocabulary.

滿 *Man*[3]. Full; stuffed; entire; complete; Man-.....chu:—see Sub.

渾 *Hun*[2]. Turbid, polluted, dirty; the whole, the .....entire mass:—see Sub. Also *hun*[4].

普 *P'u*[3].....Great; all, everywhere, universal.

闔 *Hê*[2]. A two-leaved door, a family; all, the .....whole:—see Sub.

澡 *Tsao*[3]..... To bathe or wash the body.

洗澡 *Hsi*[3] *tsao*[3].....To bathe the whole body.

飄 *P'iao*[1]. Swayed or rocked by the wind; grace-..... ful, airy.

飄流 *P'iao*[1] *liu*[2]..... To wander, to roam.

野食 *Yie*[3] *shi*[2]..... Prey, *picking*:—Note 3.

家廟 *Chia*[1] *miao*[4]. Family or ancestral tem-..... ple:—Note 5.

族 *Tsu*[2].....*A clan;* a family; kindred; class.

寸步 *Ts'un*[4] *pu*[4]. A step an inch long,—the ..... least distance, *an inch*.

Digitized by Google

路、文 身 得 老 糰 彈暴浮地 不 這
遍 武、發 你 實、糧 灰土土。的 得 裏、
身 都 抖。們 滿滿心給 ○ 時 兒 叫
生 得 ○渾 合心肚裏 伊 這[16]候、娶 我
焙、到 每[20]家 裏子 及 時 該 媳 滿
被 齊。逢子家是是更 人。遍 先 婦、那處
人 ○ 三 不鬼猴猴。○ 地 灑 給 裏
放 有[21]六 依 ○ 李[17]都 上 他 去
在 一 九、嗎。爲[18]老 凶 一 四 找。
財 個 上 ○ 這 八、荒、點 百 ○
主 花乞 朝 甚[19]一 看 約 水、錢 爲[14]
門 子丐、的 督 點 不 瑟 免 就 姑
前。名 日 徒 小 得 就 得 滿 娘
○ 叫 子、見 事、他 開 滿 行。送
昨[22]拉 滿 了、還 外 了 屋 ○ 嫁、
天 撒 朝 渾 值 面 倉、起 掃[15]比

13 Who hid the straw mat here? I have been hunting it everywhere.

14 A present made on the marriage of a daughter is very different from one made on the marriage of a son. If you give four hundred cash, it will be quite sufficient.

15 When sweeping the floor, you should first sprinkle some water on it, and thus avoid filling the room with dust.

16 At this time there was famine in the whole land, and Joseph opened the store houses and sold grain to the people of Egypt.

17 It will not do to be misled by Li the Eighth's guileless exterior; his heart is brimful of duplicity.

18 Is it worth while for the whole of you to take offence on account of this little affair?

19 When Christian saw them, he trembled all over.

20 At every audience on the third, sixth and ninth, the whole court, civil and military, are required to present themselves.

21 There was a beggar named Lazarus, whose whole body was full of sores,

造化 *Tsao⁴ hwa⁴.* To create, to make; the Creator; *a boon*, a blessing, luck.

人命 *Jên² ming⁴.* A human life, a case of life and death.

彈 *T'an².* To fillip, to thrum; to snap, to throw, to shoot; to press down. Also *tan⁴.*

彈灰 *T'an² hwei¹.* Dust. (s.)

浮土 *Fou² t'u³.* Dust.

暴土 *Pao⁴ t'u³.* Dust. Read *pu⁴ t'u³* in many places.

凶 *Hsiung¹* Unfortunate, unlucky; adverse; *calamitous*, malignant.

凶荒 *Hsiung¹ hwang¹.* Famine, want.

伊 *I¹.* A *Wên-li* third personal pronoun, but used in the southern coast dialects.

伊及 *I¹ chi².* Egypt.

抖 *Tou³.* To shake; to shiver; *to tremble;* to arouse, to excite.

上朝 *Shang⁴ ch'ao².* To have an audience, to go to meet the Emperor.

乞 *Ch'i⁴,³.* To beg, to ask alms.

丐 *Kai⁴.* To ask alms; a mendicant.

乞丐 A beggar:—Note 21.

燎 *Chao², chê².* To take fire; *to burn.*

驚動 *Ching¹ tung⁴.* To wake up, *to stir up;* to alarm, to arouse.

族長 *Tsu² chang³.* The eldest man of a family or clan, *an elder.*

地畝 *Ti⁴ mu³.* *Land,* area of land.

絲 *Si¹.* Raw silk; floss; *a cord*, a line; wire.

躘 *Lung⁴.* To walk unsteadily.

踵 *Chung³.* The heel, to follow at the heels.

躘踵 Heels over head.

踉 *Lêng².* A slip, a pitch of the body.

蹭 *Tsêng⁴.* To miss one's footing, to stagger, *to tumble.* Also *ts'eng.*[4]

踉蹭 A headlong fall, a somersault.

栽 *Tsai¹.* To set out, to plant.

獃子 *Tai¹ tsi³.* *A simpleton*, a silly fool.

爬 *P'a².* *To crawl*, to creep, to climb, to scale; to scrape, to scratch; an iron rake.

Digitized by Google

暈 倒 蹚踵鼓。着 他。洋 的 把夜黑
眼 栽 左 ○ 地 ○ 錢、滿 闔裏夜
花、葱、邊 滿[25] 耑、我[24] 這 工 城 那
爬 把 去、地 拔 們 還 錢 的 一
也 個 一 都 出 不 對 給 人、把
爬 獃 個 是 二 如 不 他、都 火、
不 子 面 絲 十 商 起 臨 驚 直
起 跌 磕 繩、吊 議 他 走 動 燒猪
來。得 地、動 錢 族 嗎、又 起 了
身 右 動 來、長、答 送 來 一
麻 邊 脚 買 叫 滿 了 了。個
脚 去、跌 一 合 對 他 ○ 多
軟、一 個 套 莊 得 兩 我[23] 時
頭 個 踉蹚鑼 按 起 塊 開 辰、

who was laid at the rich man's gate.

22 That fire, night before last, burned for over two hours, stirring up all the people in the city.

23 I gave him his full wages, and when he was about to go, I gave him a present of two dollars. Is there anything illiberal in that? *Ans.* That was treating him very liberally.

24 Let us consult the elders and have the whole village contribute according to their land, a sum of twenty thousand cash to buy a set of musical instruments.

25 The ground was covered with snares so that with every step he stumbled and fell. If he went to the right, he fell flat on his face; if to the left, he turned a somersault, until with his tumbling, the simpleton's body was numb and his feet weak, his head dizzy and his eyes dim, insomuch that he was not able to crawl to his feet again.

Notes.

3 饑荒 is here used in the sense of hunger, which is the only sense it has in the South. In the North 打饑荒 means "to raise the wind," in order to meet some sudden demand for money. 打野食 is usually spoken of beasts and birds, but is here used facetiously of one who lives by what he manages to get by hook or by crook from day to day.

5 家廟, also called 祠堂 *Sï[4] t'ang[2]* and 影房 *Ying fang.* It is common for large families to have a special family temple in which the ancestral tablets are kept and where the whole family or clan go to worship their ancestors. There are no idols in such temples.

7 A very common saying. The average Chinaman makes large professions of acting according to *reason.*

8 滿身起了些疙瘩 *My whole body has raised* [in] *wheals.* 風氣 The Chinese do not understand modern ideas of malaria, but they have a strong belief that certain poisons are conveyed by the air.

9 直 is much used, as here, to express the continuance or incessant repetition of an action.

11 Magistrates are often called (and like to be called) 父母官, *parental officers,* implying that they have towards the people the feelings of parents, and govern them like parents do their children, which is generally as far as possible from the fact.

12 A large part of a village are often arrested on account of a murder, and few who are arrested get off without some loss.

14 送嫁 To make a present on the occasion of the marriage of a daughter. It usually consists of money, or of money accompanied by some article of female adornment.

15 Mandarin colloquial seems to have no really *t'ung hsing* word for "dust."

17 The belly, as well as the heart, is frequently spoken of as the seat of intellectual and moral qualities. 猴 is used figuratively for *craft* and *cunning.* 鬼 is used in the same way, but includes less of the idea of cunning and more of that of viciousness.

21 乞丐 for *beggar,* is *Wén-li,* being rarely if ever heard in colloquial. The common and *t'ung hsing* term is 花子.

22 那一把火 *That handful of fire.* The use of 把 as a classifier, probably implies a reference to the start of the fire.

24 Such assessments are frequently made for the repair of temples, for theatrical plays, etc., and public opinion compels everyone to pay.

25 This sentence is from the 西遊記, which records the fabulous adventures of a Buddhist priest, called Hsüen Chwang, but commonly known as 唐僧 *T'ang Sêng,* who went to the West in the seventh century in search of sacred books. The person referred to as a 獃子 is 猪八戒 *Chü[1] pa[1] chai[4],* who was *T'ang Sêng's* disciple or attendant. He is here presented as in circumstances somewhat similar to those of Christian when passing through the Valley of the Shadow of Death. 蹚踵 is an obsolete form, which is now written 踉蹚, in conformity with its modern pronunciation. 倒栽葱 *An onion planted head down,* that is, *the heels in the air, a somersault.* In Chinese the root or bulb of an onion is called its "head," and when set out it is of course planted "head" down. In the phrase 把個獃子 the 個 is equal to 那個 *that or the.*

Digitized by Google

第八十七課

他記我圓不能會、○房你[1]
要不好呢。和做請你[3]子、多
罷、清給○我起你淨幾會
又是你你[8]說來勸賴時子兒
怕幾多多餞要話。呢。勸人、動叫
薄傷嗐會會行。進○○他。我工我、
了了嗐子兒、○京離[7]劉[6]○多呢、我
仁和只這[9]嗎、家仁這[5]嗐答就
義氣、知是多這欣樣應擇能
若是幾多多嗐會早麼已耽過的多
不在會會晚遠、經擱你。三會
間六嗐子兒子兒兒到賭工○月子兒
他月的走、幾過夫、幾[4]初來。
要間。事你時兒、到時五○
罷、○呢、告能管多得的親[2]
他若[10]答訴得幾幾多嗐了日家
管問我我、團早兒嗐纔機子。蓋

Translation.

1 I can come whenever you send for me.
2 Kinsman, when do you begin work on your house? *Ans.* The fifth day of the third month has been selected.
3 You are making an entirely false demand. When did I promise you?
4 Whenever you get an opportunity, please exhort him.
5 Wasting time in this way, when will you be able to finish?
6 Liu Jên Hsin has already taken an oath that he will never speak to me.
7 Separated from home so far as this, when shall I enjoy the family circle?
8 You are going to the capital are you? When you go, let me know that I may give you a send-off.
9 When did this happen? *Ans.* I do not remember distinctly when: I only know it was in the sixth month.
10 If I ask him for it, I fear I may offend him; if I do not ask him for it, he will never try to pay me.

LESSON LXXXVII.

When.

幾時 How much time; *i.e.*, when, whenever.

幾兒 Same. Northern, and strongly colloquial.

多嗐 When,—a widely used term, but not entirely *t'ung hsing*. It is never heard in Eastern Shantung. Along the Yangtze it takes a **子** after it.

幾嗐 A Southern form of **多嗐**, which in some places quite supersedes it.

麼嗐 Another Southern form of **多嗐**.

多會 When, whenever. In the North it nearly always takes after it an enclitic **兒**, which in the South is replaced by **子**. It is quite *t'ung hsing*, but more used in some places than in others.

多早晚兒 How much sooner or later; *i.e.*, when,—a Peking expression.

多早 A contracted form of **多早晚兒**, used in the South.

幾早 Same as **多早**.

Vocabulary.

嗐 *Tsan*[1]. . . . . A time, a period of time.

動工 *Tung*[4] *kung*[1]. To begin work, to break . . . . . ground.

擇 *Chai*[2]. . . . . *To select*, to choose; to pick out.

機會 *Chi*[1] *hwei*[4]. *Opportunity*, occasion, opening; . . . . . nick of time.

欣 *Hsin*[1]. . . . . Delight; merry, elated.

耽擱 *Tan*[1] *ke*[1]. To loiter, *to waste time*, to . . . . . miss an opportunity.

賭咒 *Tu*[3] *chou*[4]. To bet or promise with an . . . . . oath, to take an oath.

團圓 *T'wan*[2] *yüen*[2]. A complete circle; harmo- . . . . . niously united; *the whole family*, altogether.

餞 *Chieu*[4]. . . . . A present of food on parting.

Digitized by Google

多嗌幾時也不想着還。○李[11]先生幾時來的、答昨天來的、問幾時回去、答住個三五天就走。○七[12]王爺、多嗌麼多嗌到的、問多嗌麼總有的、答從北京起的身、十一從北京起的身、問多嗌麼時候到的、答十五到的旅順。○省[13]城裏候補的官、旅順口、若不捐些花樣、熬到幾時能補缺呢。○我[14]爲八九百、他費了多少心機、得罪了多少仇人、以後他還勾通別人去告我、所以我幾多嗌早想起來、多嗌早寒心。○我[15]的兩個媳婦、脾氣正相反、大的差不多嗌幾早晨會嗌不在家、小的差不多嗌多會嗌不出門。○他[16]信上寫的、幾時領[17]先的憑、我算計着、現在該到了任了。○

11 When did you come, Mr. Li? *Ans.* I came yesterday. *Ques.* When do you return? *Ans.* I will go in four or five days.

12 When did the Seventh Prince start from Peking? *Ans.* He left Peking on the eleventh. *Ques.* When did he reach Port Arthur? *Ans.* He arrived at Port Arthur on the fifteenth.

13 In the provincial capital there are fully eight or nine hundred expectant officials. If one did not purchase his advancement, how long do you suppose he would have to wait for a position?

14 How much trouble I took on his account, and how many enemies I made! yet he afterwards leagued with others to bring suit against me, so that whenever I think of it I feel disheartened.

15 The dispositions of my two daughters-in-law are exactly opposite: the elder is almost never at home; the younger almost never goes from home.

16 His letter states when he received his commission and when he left the capital: I estimate that by this time he ought to be at his post.

17 Sir, when will you return from your

餞行 *Chien⁴ hsing²*. To give a feast or a present of food to one starting on a journey.

仁 *Jên²*. Benevolence, charity; humanity, *kindness*; a kernel, a pit.

仁義 *Jên² i⁴*. Good-nature, amiability, brotherly love, *friendship*.

旅 *Lü³*. A guest, a sojourner; a multitude.

旅順 *Lü³ shun⁴*. Port Arthur on the Gulf of Pechili.

省城 *Shêng³ ch'êng²*. The capital city of a Province.

候補 *Hou⁴ pu³*. An expectant official, one waiting for an appointment.

花樣 *Hwa¹ yang⁴*. Money spent to secure, or to hasten an appointment.

缺 *Ch'üe¹*. A defect, a deficiency, *a vacancy*; a situation, an office.

補缺 *Pu³ ch'üe¹*. To fill a vacancy, to supply a place, *to get a position*.

心機 *Hsin¹ chi¹*. Thought, consideration, study; anxiety, *trouble*.

勾通 *Kou¹ t'ung¹*. To plot against, *to league with*, in collusion with.

寒 *Han²*. Cold, shivering, *chill*; poor, plain.

寒心 *Han² hsin¹*. Cast down, depressed, *disheartened*.

領憑 *Ling³ p'ing²*. To receive credentials or a commission.

算計 *Swan⁴ chi⁴*. To reckon, *to estimate*; to count up.

則 *Tsê²*. A rule, a law; a pattern; *a standard*; wherefore, and so; there, in that case.

回想 *Hwei² hsiang³*. *To recollect*; to look back, to recall; to reflect.

巴 *Pa¹*. To expect, to long for; oh that, would that. See *pa⁴*.

巴結 *Pa¹ chie¹*. *To look forward to*, to strive for, to long and labor for; to curry favor with, to act the flunkey, to fawn upon.

Digitized by Google

生這一次出門、幾時回來、答不定幾時、多的、的爆燁要能放到幾時呢、你這幾天把我震在牀要受的。

則三個月、少則兩個半月。○回[18]想我在學房念書的時候、心裏常常盼巴望結到赴多嗜進了學、就好了、以後進了舉、又盼巴望結到赴多嗜中了舉、就好了、以後中了舉、又盼巴望結到赴多嗜點了翰林、就好了、以後了翰林、以後還放了學差、還不曉得能足意不能。○甲[19]戌、後你放了學差、多嗜放了學差就好了、如今點舉、又盼巴望結到赴多嗜點了翰林就好了、以後了翰林、望結到赴多嗜結到赴多嗜、就是以後、望結到赴多嗜、

present tour? *Ans.* It is uncertain when: at the most, in three months; at the least, in two months and a half.

18 I recollect that when I was in school studying, I was always thinking that when I should get my first degree, I should be satisfied: afterward when I obtained it, I thought when I should reach the degree of *chüjên* I should be satisfied, but afterwards when I became a *chüjên*, I then thought that when I should be elected a *hanlin* I should be satisfied; and now that I am elected a *hanlin*, I still want to be appointed literary chancellor. In case I should hereafter be appointed literary chancellor, I do not know whether I should be satisfied.

19 Chia Hsü, when will your fire-crackers all be fired off? You have been stunning my ears these few days beyond endurance.

中舉 *Chung*[4] *chü*[3]. To attain the degree of *chü-jên*.

學差 *Hsüe*[2] *ch'ai*[1]. The office of Literary Chancellor:—Note 18.

足意 *Tsu*[2] *i*[4]. *Satisfied*, content.

戌 *Hsü*[1]. The eleventh hour, 7 to 9 P.M.

爆 *Pao*[4], *p'ao*[4]. To snap, to pop, *to burst;* to crackle, to sputter.

燁 *Chang*[1]. An explosion of flame, a flash.

爆燁 A fire-cracker. Also read *p'ao*[4] *chang*[1].

震 *Chên*[4]. To shake, to quiver, to tremble; to shock, *to stun*, to startle; to threaten.

NOTES.

2 擇日子 is the technical term for selecting a lucky day. Such a selection is made for almost every important undertaking, such as commencing work on a new building, opening a new business, getting married, etc. The selection is made by a professional prognosticator.

3 你淨賴人 Peking teachers would write 竟 instead of 淨. The idea, however, of *purely, simply, entirely*, which is the idea intended, is more naturally derived from the primary meaning of 淨, than from that of 竟; moreover, it should be noted that the word is *tsing*[4], and the sound of 淨 is everywhere correct, while the sound of 竟 is only correct where soft sounds prevail. Where hard sounds prevail, 竟 is not recognized as having the meaning in question, and if so used will be misunderstood; thus 你竟賴人, would be taken to mean, *You are after all making a false demand.*

6 管 joined with any of the time particles in the lesson, and followed by a negative, means, *no matter when;* i.e., *never.*

10 傷了和氣 *Wound the peace*, 薄了仁義 *Make thin the goodwill or friendship*, that is, *to give offence.* 了 is used as an auxiliary; see next lesson.

11 個 serves to combine the three or five days into one space or period. The two 的 in this sentence, and the four in the next, have practically the force of so many 了.

13 Officials out of office, and literary graduates who are approved as suitable for appointment, are called 候補, *waiting waiters.* They all reside in the provincial capital, each striving by the use of money and wire pulling to advance his own interests. Without the liberal use of money no appointment can be secured. Money spent in bribing is facetiously said to be "contributed" (捐), the theory being that it is *contributed* to the necessities of the government.

14 得罪仇人 Lit., *to offend an enemy*; i.e., to offend anyone so as to make an enemy of him. 寒心 *Cold hearted*, but means much more than to feel cool towards the person offending. It expresses that peculiar feeling of pain or depression experienced when a friend proves false or faithless.

15 *Kêng* and *yüeh* here refer not to actual age, but to the years of older and younger sons.

16 到了任 *Reached his duty*, that is, the post of duty to which he was appointed.

17 多則……少則 *At most*……*at least*, a book form often used colloquially. See Les. 170.

18 The sole ambition before a student in China is to get a degree, and then get an office, and so get money and power. Every school-boy has this set before him as the pinnacle of his ambition. The proper term for literary chancellor is 學台. The term 學差 refers to the *office* rather than to the *person.* It is the most lucrative office in a province.

Digitized by Google

第八十八課

炭[1] 這[4] 賸 不 事 天 ○ 他、了 是 情。
已 件 不 小、做[12] 若 我 ○ 不 ○
經 了 事 見 了、面 不 是 看 好[15] 入熱[17] 你
了完 了 許 面 就 也 不 屈 受 就 用
喇。 不 多。 就 了、不 會、不 屈 受 人 味、盆 所
○ ○ 了。 了。 ○ 事[8] 我[6] 我。 包敢[2] ○ 喫[7] ○ 凝 永 了、踢 心 了
你保 這[5] 飯 他[9] 事。 遠 是 他。 裏 的、
錯 也 是 要 ○ 不 ○ 太 可
不 算 天 反 老[11] 肯 不 不 魯笨 以
了。 不 天 悔、兄 的 了 誤 了 送
○ 個 了 少 的 手。 不 誤 的。 給
你[3] 贏 大 了 的。 事。 不 了 都 總 不 了 人[13] 情、悔 厚 ○ 了 ○ 不 我。
了 大 事。 不 了 ○ ○ 說 說 使 喚 用 聽 這 那[18]
塊 地、 三 事 不 中 得 屈 了。 今[10] 大 看 ○ 我[16] 我 我

Translation.

1 This charcoal is already used up.
2 I guarantee there will be no mistake.
3 You cannot get the better of me.
4 This affair cannot be settled.
5 This cannot be considered any great affair.
6 I judge there will not be very much left.
7 Eating is an every-day necessity.
8 Whether an affair be great or small, meet face to face and it is soon settled.
9 He cannot retract it if he would.
10 It is of no consequence even if you cannot finish it to-day.
11 Your bountiful kindness, elder brother, is beyond expression.
12 I'll never give it up until I learn it.
13 Everybody says he is wronged; but as I see it, he suffered no wrong.
14 It is sufficient if it does not interfere with my using it.
15 That good men should suffer abuse is unavoidable.
16 It is not that I am not an interested hearer, but my mind is too dull, I cannot remember so many things.
17 What you do not need you may bring to me.

LESSON LXXXVIII.

了 As an Auxiliary Verb.

Besides its use as a tense ending (Les. 7), 了 is also used as a regular auxiliary verb, being joined to such verbs as will take the qualifying idea of completion or of possibility. Its force comes out most clearly when joined with a negative. These two uses, though different, pass into each other, and are oftentimes not easily distinguished. When 了 is an auxiliary it cannot be read or spoken *la* as it always *can* (and generally *is*) when it is a tense ending. In Southern Mandarin 掉 is often used as an auxiliary instead of 了. Some of the uses of 了 as a principal verb are also introduced into the lesson.

Vocabulary.

炭 *T'an*[4]. . . . *Charcoal;* embers; bituminous coal.

許多 *Hsü*[3] *toa*[1]. A great many, a large number, ... a great deal, *very much.*

了手 *Liao*[3] *shou*[3]. To quit, *to give up,* to leave . . . . . off, to abandon.

丟手 *Tiu*[1] *shou*[3]. . . . . To quit, *to give up.*

入味 *Ju*[4] *wei*[4]. *Interested,* attentive, enlisted, ... appreciative.

熱盆 *Jê*[4] *p'ên*[2]. *Interested,* attentive; enthu- . . . . . siastic, ardent, earnest.

魯 *Lu*[3]. . . . . Stupid, dull.

魯笨 *Lu*[3] *pên*[3]. . . . . Stupid, *dull.*

結 *Chie*[2]. To conclude, to finish, *to settle up;* . . . . the end. See *chie*[1].

了結 *Liao*[3] *chie*[2]. To finish, to put an end to, ... *to settle,* to close up.

Digitized by Google

三○綢一這來若羅○十
板、這[28]子。個個看是所已[20]兩銀
嗷欸種○瓶瓶人、看、外看經了子
喲喲行我[27]子是就人見了結買
哎乃貨、聽裝要是聽的事、的不
呀呀值他不成不來了事、的事、了。
的不講了。個得不來了去、一輩怎○
搖了了○要來了。可輩子麼他[19]
了那半做[26]飯○就子也又提的
半那麼天、一的可[24]了也忘起大烟、
天、些些心條了。惜不忘記不來說
也些個裏汗○了得記不來呢。斷
沒錢。還巾、這[25]兒了。○掉了。呢。斷可
能○是用些的、○掉了。○○可
到二[29]不不硝眼我[23]○○可
得人大了强看常這[22]些我[21]在不
了。搖了瞭這水酸着想些在遲掉了。
○着亮。塊怕他着話、遲掉了。

18 Thirty taels of silver will not buy that piece of ground.
19 He says he is going to break off opium, but he cannot break it off.
20 Why call up again business which is already settled?
21 I cannot in all my life forget the things I saw in Siam.
22 It will be a sorry business if outsiders get to hear these things.
23 I have long been wanting to come to see you, but somehow I could not get away.
24 It is a thousand pities that this man is on the verge of becoming a beggar.
25 I fear one bottle will not hold this nitric acid.
26 It will not require all of this piece of silk to make a sash.
27 I heard him explaining for half a day, and yet my mind was not very clear.
28 This style of inferior goods is not worth that much money.
29 The two men rowed their sampan puffing and blowing for half a day, but were unable to reach the place.

遲 *Hsien*[1]. To advance. (w.)
遲羅 *Hsien*[1] *lo*[2]. Siam.
了不得 *Liao*[3] *pu*[4] *tê*[2]. Irreparable, no help for it; *a bad business;* an exclamation of apprehension or sorrow, my stars! alas! what shall I do!—Les. 43, Note 13.
硝 *Hsiao*[1]. Saltpetre, nitre.
硝强酸 *Hsiao*[1] *ch'iang*[2] *swan*[1]. Nitric acid, aqua fortis.
裝 *Chwang*[1]. To dress; to put into; to pack, to load; *to hold;* to pretend.
汗巾 *Han*[4] *chin*[1]. An ornamental handkerchief, a sash:—Note 26.
瞭 *Liao*[3]. A clear eye, far-sighted.
了亮 *Liao*[3] *liang*[4]. Intelligible, plain, *clear,* perspicuous.
瞭亮 *Liao*[3] *liang*[4]. The same.
行貨 *Hsing*[2] *hwo*[4]. *Inferior* or second-rate goods.
欸 *Ao*[3]. The call used by workmen working together:—Note 29.
乃 *Ai*[3]. The same. Also *nai*[3].
嗷 *Ao*[1]. A note or sound of wailing or distress; *a responsive call.*
喲 *Yüe*[1]. An exclamation of surprise or pain.
哎 *Ai*[4]. An exclamation of surprise, or distress, or regret.
攬 *Lan*[3]. To grasp, to monopolize; to secure.
包攬 *Pao*[1] *lan*[3]. To take upon oneself, to assume, *to take the responsibility.*
簡 *Chien*[3]. To condense, to abridge; brief, terse; to treat rudely; to choose.
簡直 *Chien*[3] *chi*[2]. *Direct,* straightforward, in short, point-blank.
直絕 *Chi*[2] *chüe*[2]. Direct, point-blank, *just;* entirely.
推辭 *T'wei*[1] *ts'i*[2]. To excuse oneself; to refuse, *to evade.*
卷 *Chüen*[4]. A roll, a scroll, *a book*; section of a book:—Les. 147. Also *chüen*[3].
夏 *Hsia*[4]. Summer; *a surname.*
草草了事 *Ts'ao*[3] *ts'ao*[3] *liao*[3] *shi*[4]. To do heedlessly, careless, *makeshift,* slovenly.

Digitized by Google

看[30]見人家有了辦不了的事、他就包攬着給人家了辦。○你[31]簡直的不用推辭、就是推辭、也推辭不了。○敢[32]保那些賸飯已經壞了、答 如今天氣還不大熱、壞不了罷。○我[33]看他的文章、進不了學、也不過是草草了事、沒有遞白頭卷子就是了。○聽[34]說夏文德的官司、已經了了、不知是真是假、答 那能了了呢、若找不出個頂案的來、永遠也不了了。○壞[35]了醋喇麼了、這可了也了不得了。

30 When he sees any one in a difficulty, he takes the responsibility of managing the business for him.

31 Do not try to evade it at all, for you cannot evade it if you would.

32 I'll warrant that rice that was left over is spoiled. *Ans.* The weather is not yet very warm, it can hardly be spoiled.

33 I don't believe his essay will get him a degree; it was nothing more than a makeshift, gotten up to avoid handing in a blank.

34 I hear that Hsia Wên Tê's lawsuit is concluded. I wonder if it is true? *Ans.* How could it be concluded? Unless some one is found on whom to fix the charge, it can never be concluded.

35 The vinegar is spoiled, my good fellow! his worship has come home. We are in for it, sure enough.

Notes.

4 了 is here both principal verb and auxiliary.

8 A common saying, the meaning of which is, that for the settlement of a difficulty there is nothing like meeting face to face. The 了 at the end is not an auxiliary but a principal verb.

9 The use of 也 requires the first clause to be taken subjunctively. If 也 were changed to 却 the sentence would mean, *he wants to retract but cannot.*

14 使喚 is much used in Shantung. It is also used in Peking, but less frequently, and in a somewhat more restricted sense.

21 In Southern Mandarin 掉 sometimes takes the place of 了. See Les. 92.

22 The 去 after 甕了 seems like an encumbrance. It is used to suggest the idea of the secret getting "out."

24 可惜了兒的 is a common colloquial phrase, in which the addition of 了兒的 adds greatly to the expressiveness of 可惜. It serves as a sort of superlative.

26 汗巾 *A sweat napkin*, not however practically used for this purpose, but carried by women purely as an ornament. It is long like a sash, made of silk, and often elegantly embroidered. It is either carried in the hand, or across the arm.

27 For 了亮 some would write 燎亮 or 瞭亮.

29 嗷嗬哎呀 is an approximate writing of the responsive *heigh ho* made by the Chinese when rowing or carrying. 欸嗬乃呀 is a book form for the same thing. The dictionary gives *ai*[1] as the correct reading of 欸, but says that in this particular phrase it is to be read *ao*[3]. In common use it is constantly confounded with 欸 or, as more correctly written, 襖. The Nanking teacher would write 哎嗬嗬喝, as best representing the sounds in the South.

30 辦不了 *Unable to do*, not, *unable to finish*, as the phrase might mean in a different connection.

33 草草了事 *Coarsely finish the thing,—to dash off in a careless or indifferent manner.* A book expression in common use. The 草草 is used perhaps with a reference to the hasty writing of the 草字 or *grass character*. 遞白頭卷子 *To hand in a blank paper*, instead of an essay. This is sometimes done by careless and indifferent scholars, when they can get no clue at all to the treatment of the theme. 頭 is omitted in the South.

34 When any one is charged with a crime and the proof of his guilt is insufficient, he is very likely to lie in prison until some one else is found, upon whom the crime can be fixed.

35 壞了醋了 *Spoiled the vinegar.* A phrase borrowed from the process of making vinegar, in which care is required that the process of fermentation does not go too far, and so destroy the vinegar. 了也了不得了 is a highly idiomatic form. The first 了 is reduplicated in order to strengthen the force of the expression 了不得, thus making the expression equivalent to 了不得,了不得.

Digitized by Google

第八十九課

太[1]太叫你快些過去呢。○快[2]到十二點鐘了罷、答還早呢。○有[12]喜事呢、這麼大個性情兒、歹、你再要娶這一個媳婦兒、這麼個模樣兒、這麼若還留他呢。○知[8]道有這個字、可老想不起來呢。○我[9]怎麼不留他、○那個兄弟、和寶叔同年歲、若站在一處、只怕打着燈籠、也沒處去找呢。○我[7]覺睏呢。○我[6]很願意到西國去開開眼、可就是去不了呢。○那個還高些、○你[3]們的賬都收齊喇、答差遠着的呢。○他[4]家裏還養着呢。○孩[5]子那去喇、答在牀上睡覺呢。○是喜呢、嫂子且別叫人混治、若治錯了、可了不得。○他[11]若還是留他呢。○留不住呢。○個如[10]今聽起大奶奶這個病來、定不住還不留他、

TRANSLATION.

1 The lady sends for you to go over quickly.
2 It must be nearly twelve o'clock? *Ans.* Not by a long while.
3 All your outstanding accounts are collected, I suppose? *Ans.* Not by a great deal.
4 Hem! They keep a mule. Why think of giving alms to them?
5 Where has the child gone? *Ans.* Why, it's on the bed asleep!
6 I would like very much to visit the West and see the sights, but I just cannot go.
7 That brother of mine is the same age as Uncle Pao, but if they should stand together, I suspect that he is somewhat taller.
8 I know there is such a character, but somehow I cannot recall it.
9 What's the reason I did not invite him! He would not stay when I did invite him.
10 Judging from what I hear of the lady's sickness, it is not unlikely that it is an occasion of congratulation. You must not allow it to be treated at random. If it should be wrongly treated, it would be a sad affair.
11 If anything should happen to her, and you should want to marry another such wife, of such a form and such a disposition, I suspect you could not find her even with a lantern in your hand.

LESSON LXXXIX.

MISCELLANEOUS USES OF 呢.

呢 has already been defined in Les. 17 as the sign of an indirect question, which is its primary and most important use. It has, however, a variety of other uses which are difficult to classify, and which differ somewhat in different places.

1 It concludes expressions of surprise, indignation, or reproof (1 to 5).

2 It concludes expressions of uncertainty, or perplexity (6 to 12).

3 It concludes expressions marking a suddenly occurring thought, with an implied query as to why the thought did not occur sooner (13 to 17).

4 It gives preponderance to one side of a statement involving an alternative, or a comparison (18 to 21).

5 It concludes an emphatic reply, which contains a query expressed or implied (22 to 25).

6 Standing alone with a noun, it propounds a question, taking the place of the full interrogative form (26, 27).

In all these cases a careful scrutiny will probably show some sort of a query expressed or implied. 呢 is much more used in some places than in others. Where its use is most prevalent, it is often heard when it seems to serve no other purpose than simply to round out the sentence.

Digitized by Google

家都慶賀、有喪事呢、大家都幫助。○可[13]不是嗎、到底是我看錯了。○前[14]日先生吃了兩個餑呢、還沒給錢呢、你不提起來、我就忘記了。○可[15]是呢、我還忘了問、大嫂子和孩子們都好嗎。○我[16]送了外甥女過去、到底在這山上歇伏、比在城裏涼快多喇、就是天天下山買東西、很不便當、這女孩兒不是死、是睡覺。○在[17]這山上歇伏、正是呢、你去比誰都妥當。○可不是呢、什麼便宜些、答都好。○可是呢、答可不是呢。○爲[18]什麼忙亂痛哭呢、答可不是呢。○你[19]這二年在那裏念書、家裏也省好大的嚼

12 If there is a wedding, all should offer congratulations. If there is a funeral, all should come to help.

13 Sure enough! After all, I was mistaken.

14 You have not yet paid for the two rolls you ate yesterday. *Ans.* That's so. If you had not mentioned it, I should have quite forgotten it.

15 Sure enough! I quite forgot to ask. Are your wife and children all well?

16 After all, it will be more convenient if I go and take my niece. *Ans.* That's so. It will be better for you to go than for any one else.

17 During the dog-days it will be much cooler to rest here on the hill than in the city, but it will be very inconvenient going down every day to buy supplies. *Ans.* That's a fact.

18 Why make ye this ado and weep? The damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

19 You having been there these two years at school, your family must have saved considerable expenditure.

Vocabulary

西國 *Hsi*[1] *kwoə*[2]. *Western nations*, a general ..... term for foreign countries.

開眼 *K'ai*[1] *yien*[3]. To see the world, *to see the* ..... *sights;* to learn by experience.

只怕 *Chi*[3] *p'a*[4]. It's to be feared, *I suspect;* but, ... peradventure:—Les. 131.

模樣 *Mu*[2] *yang*[4]. *Form*, fashion, appearance, ... style, pattern.

喜事 *Hsi*[3] *shi*[4]. An occasion of rejoicing, a ..... wedding.

慶 *Ch'ing*[4]. To wish joy, *to congratulate*, to ..... bless; happy, lucky.

賀 *Hə*[4]. ..... To congratulate with a present.

慶賀 *To offer congratulations*, to felicitate.

喪事 *Sang*[1] *shi*[4]. ..... A funeral, a burial.

餑 *Poə*[1]. A steamed cake or roll; a baked sweet ..... cake:—Note 14.

可是 *K'ə*[3] *shi*[4]. *Sure enough*, really, to be ..... sure.

可不是 *K'ə*[3] *pu*[4] *shi*[4]. That's so, *sure enough*, ... you're right:—Les. 173.

看錯 *K'an*[4] *ts'oə*[4]. To mistake, *to be mistaken*, ... to be deceived.

大嫂 *Ta*[4] *sao*[3]. The eldest brother's wife,— ..... largely used as a term of respect by friends and acquaintances, Mrs.

外甥女 *Wai*[4] *shêng*[1] *nü*[3]. A niece of a differ- ..... ent surname.

歇伏 *Hsie*[1] *fu*[2]. ... To take a summer vacation.

便當 *Pien*[4] *tang*[4]. ..... *Convenient*, opportune.

忙亂 *Mang*[2] *lwan*[4]. Hurry, confusion, bustle, ... *ado.*

痛哭 *T'ung*[4] *k'u*[1]. ..... To wail, *to weep.*

嚼 *Chüe*[2], *chiao*[2,4]. To chew, to bite; *to eat;* to ..... ruminate; food; bit of a bridle.

嚼用 *Chiao*[2] *yung*[4]. ..... Living; *expenditure.*

駱 *Loə*[4]. ..... A camel.

駱駝 *Ləə*[4] *t'oə*[2]. ..... A camel, a dromedary.

壁 *Pi*[4]. ... A partition wall; a screen; a division.

隔壁 *Kê*[2] *pi*[4]. Next door neighbor; *adjoining;* ..... in the next room.

酒舘 *Chiu*[3] *kwan*[3]. ..... A wine shop, a saloon.

癤 *Chie*[1]. ..... A pimple, *a boil.*

香几 *Hsiang*[1] *chi*[1]. *An incense stand* or table, ... a long narrow table.

Digitized by Google

几個飯來呢。隔方、鬧比用
子癮呢。呢。○壁、我出財呢。
上。子、○○你[23]就告了主○
○坐怎[25]叫[24]沒是訴這進我[20]
他[27]不麼他去一你個神又
大下不們請個說學的告
舅、呢。坐都他酒罷、房、國、訴
已○下上來舘、比若還你
經洋取[26]呢、這喝答登再容們、
應火燈答裏酒那天要易駱
許呢、大來、嗎、纔還找呢。駝
管答腿答答正難這○穿
他洋取上還請合呢。樣你[21]過
衣火燈長沒他我○一如針
裳、在了吃他的那[22]個今的
和香一完不式裏地要眼、

20 Again I say unto you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

21 You are on the point of losing your place in the school by your misconduct. But I tell you if you try to find another place like this, it will be harder than ascending to heaven.

22 There is a wine-shop adjoining. *Ans.* That suits me exactly [do you know].

23 Did you not ask him to come and take some wine? *Ans.* I invited him, but he would not come.

24 Tell them all to come here. *Ans.* But they have not yet finished eating.

25 Why do you not sit down? *Ans.* How can I when I have a boil on my thigh?

26 The matches? *Ans.* The matches are on the incense stand.

27 His maternal uncle has already promised to find his clothes, his pens, ink, paper and books, and his two younger paternal uncles have prom-

大舅 *Ta⁴ chiu⁴*..... The eldest maternal uncle.
資 *Tsï¹*. Property, goods; necessaries, *a fee;* a ..... quota; to avail of.
學資 *Hsüe² tsï¹*..... Teachers' fees, *tuition.*
官鹽 *Kwan¹ yien²*. Government salt:—Note ..... 28.
去年 *Ch'ü⁴ nien²*..... Last year.
鹽店 *Yien² tien⁴*..... A salt dépôt.
巡役 *Hsün² i⁴*. Constables, police, *revenue* ..... *officers.*
贓 *Tsang¹*..... *Stolen or illicit goods*, plunder.
坑害 *K'êng¹ hai⁴*. To entrap, to ill-use, *to* ..... *harass*, to wrong.
作 *Tsoŭ¹*. To bring to pass, to incur; a work-....man; workmanship:—See *tsoŭ⁴*, and *tsu³*.
作死 *Tsoŭ¹ si³*. To destroy oneself, *to bring on* ..... *death.*

NOTES.

1 The underlying query is, why have you not *already* gone over?

2 還早呢 implies that the party addressed is badly mistaken.

3 A query is suggested in the first clause, by the inflection given in speaking. In the reply 着 would in many places be omitted.

4 The two 還 seem repetitions as written, but would be no objection to the sentence as spoken.

5 The question is understood to be put in a tone of doubtful anxiety. 那去 is a contraction for 那裡去. The use of 呢 at the close gives to the reply the force of a surprised query, as to why the question should have been asked.

7 同年 is not used in the North of persons' ages, but 同歲. It there means *the same year*, but not *the same age.*

10 大奶奶 is the title by which the lady in question was known in the family, not that she bore this relationship to the speaker. 喜 is put for 喜病, the 病 having been introduced above. 喜病 is the common term for the sickness of pregnancy. 且 as here used is an affectation of book style.

11 好歹 is not unfrequently used to express the disastrous termination of an uncertain event. In case of sickness, as here, it is a euphemism for death. 這一個婆婦兒 is put for 這麼一個婆婦兒, or 這麼個婆婦兒, which latter form is that in which it would almost certainly be spoken, save that in some places 兒 would be omitted, or replaced with 子. 婆婦兒 is in some places applied specifically to women of ill fame.

Digitized by Google

筆墨書紙、他兩個叔叔、應許管先生飯、快叫孩子去念兩天罷、問學資呢、

答學資都算我的。○28說起吃官鹽來、我要問你一件事、聽說你們貴處、去年把鹽店燒了、還殺了二十多個巡役、是眞的嗎、

答可不是呢嗎、你想他們爲不一點兒、一點事情、就給人家栽鹽賊、坑害人家、若光栽男人的賊、也還罷了、最可恨的、是常栽女人的賊、這不是他們自己作死嗎。

ised to board the teacher: now just decide to send him to school awhile. *Ques.* But how about tuition? *Ans.* I will be responsible for that.

28 Speaking of using government salt, I want to ask you a certain thing. I hear that last year at your place you burned the salt dépôt and killed over twenty revenue officers. Is this true? *Ans.* Of course it is. Just consider that for the least thing they would fabricate a false charge of smuggling, and harass people. If they only made such false charges against men, it might be borne; but the outrageous part of it is that they were continually making such false charges against women. They brought about their own destruction.

13 Whether 嗎 or 呢 be used, the meaning is not perceptibly different, and both forms are practically *t'ung hsing*. Peking teachers prefer 嗎, but do not exclude 呢; in Shantung and the South the reverse is generally true. There is very little difference of meaning between 可是 and 可不是; the former is the direct affirmative, the latter the interrogative affirmative.

14 餂 is always doubled in use, and has different meanings in different localities. The query suggested by 呢 serves to soften the abruptness of the affirmation.

16 Properly, 外甥 applies only to males, but in practice is often made to include females as well. In other cases 女 or 女兒 or 閨女 is added by way of distinction.

21 說罷 is thrown in for emphasis. In 登天的 the 的 is superfluous and would better be omitted.

26 取燈呢 is equivalent to 取燈在那裡呢.

27 Teachers in country villages usually "board round." 兩天 is often used for a short but indefinite time.

28 貴處 is a polite form of referring to any one's native place:—Les. 171. 不點兒 is a contraction for 不大一點兒, which full form is also often used. 栽鹽賊 *Plant salt plunder*, to hide or scatter salt on the premises of another person, and then accuse him of surreptitiously dealing in salt. Salt is a government monopoly in China and the occasion of enormous oppression and abuse. 自己作死, *To bring about one's own death*, by conduct which can have no other result.

LESSON XC.

Various Uses of 當.

當 has two tones. In the 1st tone it means *ought*, in the 4th tone it means *to pawn*. In addition to these senses, which we have had in previous lessons, it has a variety of uses not readily apprehended and classified by the learner, to whom it seems to change its face nearly every time it turns up.

In the 1st tone it means, to serve in any capacity (1), (5), (25), (34); in the presence of, at (6), (7), (9), (10), (20), (27); at the time of, or at that time (11), (13), (14), (15), (19), (23), (28); to bear (12), (16), (17), (18), (21).

In the 4th tone it means, to pawn, (35); to suppose or consider, (2); to regard as (3), (30), (31), (32); the same, native (4), (22), (24), (26), (29); to hinder (8), (33).

This distribution of meanings between the two tones is only approximate, as the usage differs somewhat in different places.

Digitized by Google

第九十課

有雪、吃喇。安嬉們皇我—[1]
這直飯○息戲。有上們人身
些下的勞[12]日○話、是當不
囉到時動做當[9]應光客能
唆一候、先活場該緒。待充當
呢。更不生呢。不說○嗎。二
○天。好們○讓在他[6]○役。
當[16]○上來那[11]災、當的當[4]○
家若[15]人看個舉面。女天他[2]
不當家我、當手○人、去、當認
得時家實口兒、不年[8]叫不是
不不裏在我留輕他能回你
儉、圖去。不身情。的當官來。去
待省○敢上○人、官來。呢。
客事、當[14]當。就你[10]總賣○呢。
不現那日○有怎免當了。當[5]○
得在天正[13]了麼不○今你[3]
不那那當病當了咱[7]的拿

TRANSLATION.

1 One person cannot serve in two capacities.
2 He supposed you were not going.
3 Are you going to treat us as guests?
4 We cannot go and return the same day.
5 The present emperor is Kwang Hsü.
6 He sold his wife by permission of the magistrate.
7 If we have anything to say, we should say it face to face.
8 Young people will have their fun.
9 In open competition a man does not give place even to his father. When a man raises his hand to strike, he discards sentiment.
10 How is it that you are working on the Sabbath day?
11 Even at that time I was suffering from illness.
12 I really am not worthy that you gentlemen should have taken the trouble to come to see me.
13 It is not a proper thing to go into any one's house just at meal-time.
14 On that day the snow fell continuously until the first watch.
15 If at the time we had not been so anxious to save labor, we should not have had all this inconvenience.

VOCABULARY.

充 *Ch'ung*[1]. To fill full, to satiate: *to act in the capacity of;* extreme.

當天 *Tang*[4] *t'ien*[1]. The same day [of which something else is predicated].

當今 *Tang*[1] *chin*[1]. The reigning [emperor]; *the present*, existing.

緒 *Hsü*[4]. A thread, a clue, a beginning; a rule, a guide; to succeed to.

光緒 *Kwang*[1] *Hsü*[4]. The reigning Emperor Kwang Hsü.

當官 *Tang*[1] *kwan*[1]. In the presence of the magistrate, *by official authorization or permission.*

當面 *Tang*[1] *mien*[4]. Before the face, *face to face*, in the presence of.

嬉 *Hsi*[1]. To ramble; to play, *to laugh.*

嬉戲 *Hsi*[1] *hsi*[4]. To laugh, to giggle; *to have fun*, to play.

當兒 *Tang*[1] *êr*[2]. *A space or point of time;* an opening, a gap.

當口 *Tang*[1] *k'ou*[3]. The same.

勞動 *Lao*[2] *tung*[4]. *To put to trouble*, to inconvenience, to disturb.

敢當 *Kan*[3] *tang*[1]. To dare, to assume.

不敢當 *Pu*[4] *kan*[3] *tang*[1]. Unwilling to bear [responsibility]; *unworthy of* [a compliment].

當日 *Tang*[1] *jï*[4]. On that day, the said day or time; once upon a time.

當日 *Tang*[4] *jï*[4]. The same day.

更 *Ching*[1]. A watch of the night. See *kêng*[1] and *kêng*[4].

當時 *Tang*[1] *shï*[2]. At that time, the said time.

當時 *Tang*[4] *shï*[2]. *At the time*, at the same time, immediately.

豐 *Fêng*[1]. Abundant; copious; fertile; prolific; *bountiful.*

罪名 *Tswei*[4] *ming*[2]. Reputed guilt, *misdeeds*, misbehavior.

Digitized by Google

豐。○你[18]在彼此的重擔、要互相擔當。○你[17]自己的罪名、還當不起、怎麼還要管別人的閒事呢。

實、是了實嗎。○你[18]們彼此的重擔、要互相擔當。○你[17]自己的罪名、還當不起、怎麼還要管別人的閒事呢。

實、是要吃○你[18]們彼此的重擔、要互相擔當。○你[17]自己的罪名、還當不起、怎麼還要管別人的閒事呢。

實、是要吃嗎。○你[18]們彼此的重擔、要互相擔當。○你[17]自己的罪名、還當不起、怎麼還要管別人的閒事呢。

實、是要吃嗎。○在[18]們彼此的重擔、要互相擔當。○你[17]自己的罪名、還當不起、怎麼還要管別人的閒事呢。

實、是要吃嗎。○在你[18]彼此的重擔、要互相擔當。○你[17]自己的罪名、還當不起、怎麼還要管別人的閒事呢。

實、是要吃嗎。○在你[18]們彼此的重擔、要互相擔當。○你[17]自己的罪名、還當不起、怎麼還要管別人的閒事呢。

實、是要吃嗎。○在你[18]們彼此的重擔、要互相擔當。○你[17]自己的罪名、還當不起、怎麼還要管別人的閒事呢。

16 As the head of the house you should be economical, but as a host you must be bountiful.

17 You cannot bear the burden of even your own misdeeds: why then do you want to meddle in other people's affairs?

18 Bear ye one another's burdens.

19 To travel so far as this in midsummer, is just all I can stand.

20 Have you forgotten to-day the oath you took yesterday in the presence of all?

21 Every man will have to bear his own recompense. No one can take the place of another.

22 At your wedding do you propose to have the feast on the same day or the next day?

23 If it had been known before that he would steal, who would have recommended him in the first place?

24 Arrange it with him distinctly at the time and avoid subsequent entanglement (after-clap.)

25 That numskull of a Wang the Less was used as a cat's paw by Li the Elder.

26 On account of this year's debt, and not yet having come to the last month, is it the proper thing to come to blows?

27 Whose is that middle likeness on the north wall? *Ans.* That is my father's.

元年、那個小買賣、又沒到賬的月、還值得動打嗎。○[27]在北邊牆上、爲當年的事、把髒胳

元年、那個小買賣、又沒到賬的月、還給叫李大拿拿着他去作惡了。○[26]爲瑣碎打繁。○穩老

元年、那個小買賣、又沒到賬的月、還給叫李大拿着當鎗使放了。○[26]爲瑣碎。○穩老

元年、那個小買賣、又沒到賬的貨、還給叫李大拿着當鎗使放了。○[26]爲瑣碎。○穩老

元年、那個小買賣、又沒到賬的貨、還給叫李大拿着當指使巧他說明、免得了。以後的手不娶親、記

元年、那個小買賣、又沒到賬的貨、還給叫李大拿着當指使巧他說明、免得了。以後的手不娶親、記

元年、那個小買賣、又沒到賬的貨、還給叫李大拿着當指使巧他說明、免得了。以後的手不娶親、記

元年、那個小買賣、又沒到賬的貨、還給叫李大拿着當指使巧他說明、免得了。以後的手不娶親、記

元年、那個小買賣、又沒到賬的貨、還給叫李大拿着當指使巧他說明、免得了。以後的手不娶親、記

元年、那個小買賣、王[25]小那個不識數的貨、還給叫李大拿着當指使巧他說明、免得了。以後的手不娶親、記

元年、那個小買賣、王[25]小當初那個不識數的貨、還給叫李大拿着當指使巧他說明、免得了。以後的手不娶親、記

元年、那個小買賣、王[25]小當初誰肯舉薦他呢。○[24]連二朝酒呢。○誰[23]也替不了誰。○你[22]就忘

膊子跌觸了、當時也沒覺得很疼、以後却受了好罪。○他[30]怕惹仇人、我們就不怕惹仇人嗎、他當是我們都是憨傻蛋子麼。○我[31]看王連科那個人、永遠也不能回頭、無論怎樣勸戒他、他只當作耳旁風。○人[32]在病重的時候、心裏都是很急躁的、所以他說甚麼不中聽的話、你權當沒聽見、不可生他的氣。○這[33]回可上了你的當咯。○他[34]姐夫、和他妹夫、都在衙門裏當差、一個當更夫、在監牢獄裏打更、一個當火夫、在厨房裏拉二脚子。○我[35]明天也該進城去當當、就是沒有工夫、(問)我替你捎着去當罷、(答)那怎麼好呢、(對)不要緊、我當不了上當舖去贖當。

28 Jesus was born in Judea, in the first year of Yüen Shï, of Han P'ing Ti.

29 Two years ago I fell off a donkey and sprained my arm. At the time I did not feel much pain, but afterwards I suffered a great deal.

30 If he is afraid of making enemies, are not we also afraid of making enemies? He thinks we are a set of simpletons.

31 I don't believe that man Wang Lien K'ê will ever reform. No matter how you exhort him, he pays no attention at all.

32 When anyone is very sick his mind is always irritable. If, therefore, he says anything unbecoming, you must not get angry at him, but pass it by as if you had not heard.

33 I have certainly been deceived by you this time.

34 His two brothers-in-law both have positions in the yamên; one is watchman in the jail, the other is second fireman in the kitchen.

35 I ought to go to the city to-morrow to pawn a pawn, but I have no time. *Ans.* Let me take it along and pawn it for you. *Ques.* How could I trouble you? *Ans.* Never mind. I must go to the pawnshop any way to redeem a pawn.

勸戒 *Ch'üen⁴ chie⁴. To exhort*, to caution, to admonish.

耳旁風 *Êr³ p'ang² fêng¹.* Hearsay, rumor, *idle tales.*

耳邊風 *Êr³ pien¹ fêng¹.* The same.

中聽 *Chung⁴ t'ing¹. Becoming*, seemly, pleasant.

權 *Ch'üen².* Weight; authority, influence; exigency; to balance, to weigh.

權當 *Ch'üen² tang⁴. To consider as if*, to make believe, to feign.

姐夫 *Chie³ fu¹.* Elder sister's husband.

當差 *Tang¹ ch'ai¹.* To fill an inferior office; to act under the authority of another; *to fill the position of a servitor.*

更夫 *Ching¹* (or *kêng¹*) *fu¹.* A watchman.

監 *Chien¹.* To oversee, to superintend; *a prison.* Also *chien⁴.*

監牢獄 *Chien¹ lao² yü⁴.* A prison.

打更 *Ta³ ching¹.* To act as watchman.

火夫 *Hwoa³ fu¹.* A fireman; *an under-cook.*

當舖 *Tang⁴ p'u⁴.* A pawnbroker's shop.

贖當 *Shu² tang⁴.* To redeem a pawn.

NOTES.

2 當 is the more general form.

6 Men frequently sell their wives in China, though it is not regarded as a proper or lawful thing to do. Sometimes when a wife has been guilty of some grave misconduct, she is sold to another man with the approval of the magistrate. In this sentence 太太, or 師娘, or 夫人, could not be substituted for 女人, though 老婆 might.

9 A proverbial saying in book style. 當場 refers probably to the examination hall, the meaning being that when competing for a degree each man does his best, regardless of who may be worsted,—even a father not being exempt.

14 In the South 當日 is used only in the sense of *once upon a time*, but in the North, it takes the additional meaning of, *that day, the said day* or time.

Digitized by Google

第十九課

我[1]扎撒錐擦拉 是一下斤摔麼也
想不不動。動、之着 自然人去還重鋸
快可○的也幾不上動○子○
些以牲[4]理、推步。動○嗎。你[10]嗎。你[12]
走、用口誰動○嗎。○看
就鑽鑽走弄能了。[8]這○這
是子乏倦敗○了、倒[7]大小讓小個好[11]東
走。鑽了、趕○赴[3]那也呢。抱兒、子、鋸鋸人小不
動。○若[2]是人不[6]那動、犯[5]這也百
○個人塊木板、
○個人塊木板、拿
錐子
邊擦拉

TRANSLATION.

1 I am anxious to go fast, but the fact is I am not able.
2 If an awl will not penetrate it, you may use an auger and bore it.
3 That man is so fat that he cannot waddle along.
4 The animal is tired out. Urging does not move him.
5 This is a necessary truth: who can overthrow it?
6 That small mill one man is able to turn.
7 If you are not able to carry me, I might get down and walk a few steps.
8 Such a large mule as this, and yet cannot carry two hundred catties?
9 I will give him a back hold, and yet he cannot throw me down.
10 Is such a little man as you able to carry such a heavy load as this?
11 What a dull saw! it will not even cut a piece of board.
12 You think there are not many things, and yet one man cannot carry them all.

22 The principal wedding feast is sometimes held on the day of the wedding, sometimes on the day following, and sometimes the feast continues two days. 二日 means a feast on the second day, but 連朝 means a feast for two successive days. 兩日 is also used with the same sense as 連朝. If both days be included, the translation should be,—*Do you propose to have a one day's feast or a two days' feast?*

23 手不老實 *Hand not trusty*, or 手不穩 *hand not steady*, that is, "light-fingered."

25 那個不識數的貨 *That commodity that cannot count ten.* The application of 貨 to a *person* is of course depreciatory in the highest degree. 巧指使 *To use ingeniously*, to make a cat's paw of; 拿着當鎗放了 *to shoot one off as a gun*, to make a tool of. The Southern form sounds flat, though vouched for by two Nanking teachers.

26 Custom does not allow a creditor to use forcible measures in collecting a debt until in the last month. There is *practically* no legal method of collecting a debt in China. It has to be done by the sheer force of irrepressible dunning, reaching in extreme cases to the use of violence.

28 平帝 was the emperor's title, 元始 the name or designation of his reign, which in former times was changed from time to time according to the emperor's fancy, so that one reign was by this means divided into several parts or terms. In modern times this custom has fortunately fallen into disuse.

29 觸 seems to be the proper character for *sprain*, though it does not give quite the proper sound in all places. The use of 跌 seems to give a somewhat different sense, meaning rather *to bruise* than *to sprain*.

34 打更 *To strike the watch*, which is done by Chinese watchmen by beating on a kind of wooden drum. 拉二脚子 *Takes the second foot*; 二 indicates the second place, and 脚 is used with reference to his being required to run to do this or that at the bidding of his superiors.

35 當當 *To pawn a pawn.* The first 當 is a verb, the second a noun.

LESSON XCI.

THE AUXILIARY VERBS 動, 倒 AND 犯.

動 To move,—is added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of motion.

倒 To invert,—is added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of inversion.

犯 To oppose, to endure,—is added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of endurance. The use of 犯 is local in Eastern Shantung, but it gives a phase of meaning which no other word will express.

Digitized by Google

見 那 子、子、下 動 就 主 想[14] 不
你 些 我 我 把 他。是 意 要 犯了。
把 跑 要 自 我 ○ 失 的 求 ○
他 不 買 己 絆 不[18] 脚、也 人、別 他 我[13]
推 動 個 磨挪 倒 知 跌 人 做 的
倒的 搬 不 了。誰 人 黏 牙
了、人、不 動。○ 丟扔 不 引 甚 不
你 有 倒 ○ 請[19] 一 倒。誘 麼、好濟、
怎 許 兒 若[20] 你 塊 ○ 不 沒 硬
麼 多 給 是 幫 石 他[17] 動。有 東
說、被 你。這 助 頭、不 ○ 求 西、
是 他 ○ 個 我、在 肯 人[16] 動 一
他 們 反[21] 禮 磨挪 大 正來、在 的 黏
自 殺 賊 拜、磨挪 當 我 年 時 也
己 了。來 你 這 路 道拉 輕 候。咬
跌 ○ 的 作 個 口 兒也 的 ○ 不
倒 我[22] 時 好 書 上、拉 時 眞[15] 動。
了 看 候、孩 架 一 不 候、有 ○

13 My teeth are poor, I cannot masticate anything hard.

14 If you wish to ask him to do anything for you, you will never prevail.

15 A man who really has a mind of his own cannot be enticed by others.

16 When a man is young, even though he makes a mis-step, he will not fall.

17 He is not willing to come, and I am not able to drag him.

18 I wonder who threw a stone in the middle of the road? It tripped me and threw me down.

19 Please help me to move this bookcase. I am not able to move it myself.

20 If you are a good child this week, I will buy you a doll.

21 When the rebels came, a great many who were not able to run were killed by them.

22 I saw you push him down. Why do you say that he stumbled and fell down of himself?

VOCABULARY.

扎 *Cha*[1]. *To pierce*, to stab; to make paper images; ..... to paint a wall. See *Cha*[3].

攮 *Nang*[3]. To ward off, to stab, to pierce, *to* ..... *penetrate.*

鑽 *Tswan*[4]. A skewer, an awl, a drill, a gimlet, ... *an auger.* Also *tswan*[1].

鑽 *Tswan*[1]. To pierce, to drill, *to bore.* See *tswan*[4].

搓 *Ku*[4]. To mix, to stir, *to twist.* Read *hu*[1] in ..... Chinese dictionary.

擁 *Yung*[3,1]. To hug; to crowd, to throng; *to* ..... *push or press forward.*

搓擁 To squirm, to wriggle; *to waddle;* to evade.

遛 *Liu*[1,2]. To linger; to lead about; to walk .....leisurely; to glide, *to shuffle.*

駁 *Poă*[2]. To dispute, *to controvert;* to repel, to ..... send back; to transfer, to tranship.

鈍 *Tun*[4]..... Blunt, *dull;* stupid, obtuse.

誘 *Yiu*[4]. To encourage; to draw on, *to entice*, to ..... allure; to tempt.

引誘 *Yin*[3] *yiu*[4]. *To lead on to evil, to entice*, to ..... tempt, to allure.

失脚 *Shi*[1] *chiao*[3]. *To make a mis-step*, to slip, ... to stumble.

大路口 *Ta*[4] *lu*[4] *k'ou*[3]. The middle of the ..... road.

絆 *Pan*[4]. *To trip up*, to throw down; to stum- ..... ble; to hinder; to fetter; a loop.

搬不倒 *Pan*[1] *pu*[4] *tao*[3]. A self-righting doll ..... or puppet:—Note 20.

反賊 *Fan*[3] *tsei*[2]..... *Rebels*, robbers.

塋 *Ying*[2]..... A tomb, a cemetery.

墳 *Fĕn*[2]..... A grave, a tomb.

塋地 *Ying*[2] *ti*[4].... A burial ground.

墳地 *Fĕn*[2] *ti*[4]..... Same.

打坑 *Ta*[3] *k'ĕng*[1]. To dig a hole in the ground, ... *to dig a grave.*

壙 *K'wang*[4]. A vault, *a grave;* a desert, a ..... solitude.

開壙 *K'ai*[1] *k'wang*[4]..... To dig a grave.

刨 *P'ao*[2]..... To grub, *to dig.*

盧 *Lu*[2]..... A pan, a vessel; a surname.

生鐵 *Shĕng*[1] *t'ie*[3]..... Cast iron.

Digitized by Google

呢。咱[23]們那塊墳塋地、淨是石頭、每
逢開打坑、擴人都嫌刨不動。[24]盧二爺
吃大烟、吃的光賸了一個骨頭架
子、差不多風就颳倒了。[25]舊生鐵鑄
的器具、發硬、鏇也鏇不動、鑽也
鑽不動、若是新生鐵鑄的、却很好中
用。[26]那把茶壺、給他三百錢、還
拾掇治。○那把來倒買得倒來、不
曉得○買得倒不來咧。○從[27]來
說、好心、好心天老天爺、不能保佑你。這樣的
好心、天老天爺、不能保佑你。

23 That burying ground of ours is nothing but stones. Every time a grave is to be dug, they take exception to it as being impossible to dig.

24 Lu Êr Yie has smoked opium till there is nothing left of him but a skeleton. The wind would almost blow him over.

25 Articles cast of old iron are hard; they can neither be turned nor drilled; but if cast of new iron, they are very easy to work.

26 I do not know whether three hundred cash will be sufficient to purchase that tea-pot or not.

27 It has ever been said that "a benevolent heart moves heaven and earth." Seeing you have acted with such a benevolent purpose as this, God will certainly protect you.

鑄 *Chu*⁴. . . . . To cast.

具 *Chü*⁴. Prepared, arranged; all; to present . . . . to; *an implement*, a utensil.

器具 *Ch'i*⁴ *chü*⁴. Implements, tools, *articles*, ... vessels.

撩治 *Liao*² *chi*⁴. *To operate on;* to put through; . . . . . to manage; to put in order.

掇 *Toă*⁴. . . To arrange, to gather up. Also *ts'oă*³.

拾掇 *Shi*² *toă*⁴. To gather up, to put in order, ... to repair, *to dress up.*

感動 *Kan*³ *tung*⁴. To excite, *to move;* to . . . . . quicken, to inspire.

老天爺 *Lao*³ *T'ien*¹ *Yie*². . . . God:—Note 27.

天老爺 *T'ien*¹ *Lao*³ *Yie*². . . . . Same.

佑 *Yiu*⁴. . . . . To aid, to help; *to protect.*

保佑 *Pao*³ *yiu*⁴. . . . . *To protect*, to defend.

NOTES.

1 快些 is here taken simply as an intensive in accordance with its use in Southern Mandarin. See Les. 84. Note 26.

2 None of the terms here used for *piercing with an awl* is correct in Eastern Shantung, where the term is *nań* (no settled character).

3 撾撦 means properly *to wriggle*, and 遛, *to glide*, but neither is *t'ung hsing* in this connection. Kiukiang would say *hwai*³ (no character) and Hankow, 歪 *wai*¹ *to sidle.*

6 副 is Southern but not exclusively so. It is used in the North when the millstones are regarded as *a pair.* 盤 refers rather to the mill as a whole.

8 Two hundred catties is considered a moderate load for a pack-mule. 駄不上 is rejected in many places, yet it expresses a shade of meaning not given by 駄不動. The latter means properly, unable to move with the burden, while the former means unable to bear the fatigue of continuously carrying the burden.

9 抱着後腰 *To clasp around the waist.*

11 鋸 is the most general term for *to saw*, but in Western Shantung it is never used, 割 being used instead. A board is supposed to be easy to saw, hence the force of 連. 好鈍 *Good dull*; i.e., *very dull*, "*good and dull.*"

12 犯 refers to the *person*, meaning that he is not able to carry so many; 了 refers to the *things*, meaning that they are too many for one person to carry, and that some will have to be left.

18 Neither of the forms given is usual in Shantung where 正道眼兒 would be used. 一下 here means *all at once*, both time and manner being included.

20 撅不倒 A doll or puppet without feet, but having a round base and loaded in such a way that when pushed over it will right itself.

23 墳地 and 塋地 differ much as our graveyard and cemetery; the former is the place of graves, the latter is the burying place. 打坑 is the more widely used term, though it applies to other things than digging a grave, whereas 開壙 is specific for digging a grave.

25 Almost all castings made by the Chinese are made of old iron, and are consequently very hard.

27 天 and 地 are here used in a semi-personal sense. 老天爺 *The old Heavenly Grandfather* or 天老爺 *the Heavenly old* (or great) *Grandfather.* The former prevails in the North, the latter in the Centre and South. In many cases 爺 becomes 爺爺. The 老 is sometimes omitted and 天爺 used. This term in its various forms probably expresses the nearest approximation the Chinese people have to the idea of the true God. Whenever a man is driven by stress of circumstances to call to Heaven for help he calls upon 老天爺. Nevertheless it is undoubtedly true that particular gods are sometimes called 老天爺, especially is this true of 玉皇上帝. This use of "grandfather" accords with the ground idea of Chinese theogony, that all gods were once men.

Digitized by Google

第九十二課

被馬撞倒了。○你[14]們有能辦的、○去辦罷、我知道。早下手、○現做還能及、○孩子不及一步該[12]來了。○到[11]這步田地、後悔也[13]就進。赦掉的鈴鐺、我的怕罪預備、不能做後悔了。出河堤上、○我的怕來。防。不贏掉迭、○及來。擦[6]趁[5]點他眼[8]皂子、○料的時候、○他的百歲、不贏掉迭、功勞、明[1]天怕來住不了。及、○赶[2]着寫、還赶得及。給一個人冷不防、漫不侯跑

話說[10]話沒說不說完、沒有說及、求[9]天災看救主、○叫[3]我捉[4]這些客吃飯、洗掉喇。侯、我要洗消洗、他個人伺沒

Translation.

1 I fear I cannot finish it to-morrow.
2 If you hurry, you can finish writing in time.
3 He did not run fast enough, and I caught him.
4 One man cannot serve so many guests.
5 I want to give him a surprise before he is aware of what I am doing.
6 Rub on a little soap, and it will wash out.
7 The water having no place to escape, broke over the banks of the river.
8 Chin Hwa's hundredth day is just at hand. I fear we will not be able to get ready the bells for his hat.
9 I pray the heavenly Father, for the sake of the Saviour's merits, to forgive my sins.
10 Before we could finish speaking, he rushed in with a bound.
11 Having reached this pass, retreat is out of the question.
12 You ought to begin early; you cannot do it up on the spur of the moment.
13 The child not escaping in time, was knocked down by the horse.
14 Any of you who has the ability may

LESSON XCII.

The Auxiliary Verbs 及, 迭 and 掉.

及 To reach, to extend to,—added as an auxiliary to denote the bare or possible completion of an action, or with a negative the impossibility of completion. When used affirmatively it generally takes 得 as a sub-auxiliary.

迭 To alternate, to exchange,—added as an auxiliary to denote that an action was not or could not be accomplished within the limits of the time. It is most frequently used with a negative. It is rarely used in the South, being replaced by 掉 or 贏. In Peking 當 is frequently added to it (17).

掉 To fall, to lose, to fail,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of falling, losing, or failing. It is much more frequently used in the South than in the North.

贏 To excel,—is used in the region of Hankow as an auxiliary in the place of 迭. It is not used in general Mandarin.

Vocabulary.

迭 *Tie*[2]. To alternate, to exchange; to get time, ... to compass; instead of:—See Sub.

迭當 *Tie*[2] *tang*[4]. ... ... To get time.

冷不防 *Lêng*[3] *pu*[4] *fang*[2]. Unexpected, sudden; ... ... *unawares:*—Les. 115.

百歲 *Pai*[3] *swei*[4]. The hundredth day of a child's ... ... age:—Note 8.

鐺 *T'ang*[1]. A pedlar's gong; the clang of a gong, ... the tinkle of a bell.

鈴鐺 *Ling*[2] *tang*[1]. ... ... A small bell.

赦 *Shê*[4]. ... ... To pardon, *to forgive,* to reprieve.

Digitized by Google

些錢、就是應了、也湊不及。○[24]沒到危險地方、還可以這麼

這是强他所不能的。[23]三天以內、我不敢應你這

毛病、他已經習慣成自然、要叫他一下子都除掉了、

上走、因爲火輪車來的太快、要躲也躲不及迭。○[22]這些

死了、請罷、現在迭不的辦不及喇。○你[20]想他病了半點鐘、就

再說他、就是神仙、也忙不及迭。○這[19]件事、可以等我回來

是及。○衣[17]裳還沒有穿迭及當、就被捕役拿住了。○[18]別說

裏找、也沒找着。○那[16]盒子帶不了來、是一時收拾不

及了。○剛[15]纔一甩手、把我的頂褿針甩掉了、滿家

go and manage it: I know that I cannot manage it.

15 Just now in giving my hand a fling I flung away my thimble. I have searched the whole room for it and have not found it.

16 The reason he could not bring the box was because it could not be gotten ready at once.

17 Before he could get on his clothes, he was arrested by the constables.

18 Say nothing of him; even the genii could not have gotten through with it.

19 Let this business lie over still I come back; I have not time to attend to it now.

20 Just think of it. He died after an illness of only half an hour. How could we call a physician in time?

21 One should not walk on the railroad track, for the cars come so rapidly that one cannot get out of the way in time.

22 These vices have been practiced until they have become a second nature. To require him to give them all up at once, will be forcing him to do what he is not able to do.

23 I cannot venture to promise you that much money within three days, and

孽 *Nie*⁴. The consequence of sin, retribution; ..... misfortune.

罪孽 *Tswei*⁴ *nie*⁴. ..... *Sin*, the evil of sin.

田地 *T'ien*² *ti*⁴. Land, ground; state, condition; ..... place, point, *pass*.

甩 *Shwai*³. ... To throw away; *to fling*, to throw.

頂針 *Ting*³ *chîn*¹. ..... A thimble.

褿 *Chi*³. ..... To embroider.

頂褿 *Ting*³ *chi*³. ..... A thimble. (s.)

捕 *Pu*³. ..... To capture, to seize, *to arrest*.

捕役 *Pu*³ *i*⁴. ..... *A constable*, a policeman.

醫生 *I*¹ *shêng*¹. ..... A physician, a doctor.

大 *Tai*⁴. ..... Great:—Note 20. See *ta*⁴.

大夫 *Tai*⁴ *fu*¹. An honorary official title conferred on various ranks of ..... high officers; *a physician*:—Note 20.

郎中 *Lang*² *chung*¹. The senior secretary of any one of the six Boards :— ..... a physician:—Note 20.

習慣 *Hsi*² *kwan*⁴. To acquire a habit, to habituate :—Note 22. ....

以內 *I*³ *nei*⁴. ..... Inside of, *within*.

危 *Wei*²,¹. ..... *Dangerous*, hazardous, perilous.

危險 *Wei*² *hsien*³. ..... *Dangerous*, perilous.

橫豎 *Hêng*² *shu*⁴. In every direction, *on all sides*, in every way; probably, most likely:—Les. 130. ....

招架 *Chao*¹ *chia*⁴. To fence, *to guard*, to ward off. ....

廢 *Fei*⁴. To set aside, to annul; *to destroy;* ..... useless, void; corrupt, degenerate.

律 *Lü*⁴. ..... A law, a statute.

律法 *Lü*⁴ *fa*³. ..... *A law*, a statute.

先知 *Hsien*¹ *chi*¹. ..... A prophet.

成全 *Ch'êng*² *ch'üen*². To complete, *to fulfil*, ... to consummate.

Digitized by Google

全。是要廢掉、正是要成。先知的道理、我律法、和不來、是要廢掉、不[26]要想我來、架不及迭[24]住。○李的、橫豎招李的、那個姓招、也不和。打一個姓李十來個人、[25]我看見有十不及了。○上、躲避、就躲避、到了那個分兒

even if I should promise, I could not raise it.

24 Before you reach the point of danger, it is possible to escape. When the danger is at hand, there is no time for escape.

25 I saw upwards of ten men attacking a man named Li. The man Li guarded himself on all sides, but was unable to ward them off.

26 Think not that I am come to destroy the law and the prophets. I am not come to destroy but to fulfil.

NOTES.

1 Or, *I fear I cannot finish it in time for to-morrow.*

5 不及料 is equivalent to 料不及. A plainer and less bookish expression would be 料不到. The sentence is taken from a Chinese novel.

8 The Chinese celebrate the one-hundredth day of a child's age. Why it is called 百歲 is not certain. Some teachers would prefer to write it 百晬. The most likely explanation is, that the term expresses a wish that each day may represent a year, and that thus the child may live to be a hundred years old. It is customary on this occasion for the maternal grandmother to present the child with a fancy hat and shoes, sometimes with a whole suit. The hat is often ornamented with silver jewelry and little bells.

9 看 here means *to regard.* It is thus used where we would say "for the sake of." 赦掉 is perfectly proper and fitting in this connection but not as common as 赦免 or 饒赦.

12 Or, *You ought to have begun early; beginning now will it be possible to complete it?*

16 The literal would be,—*The not being able to bring that box was in that it could not be gotten ready in time.* 因爲 might be inserted after 是 without detriment to the sentence.

18 忙不迭 *Unable to do it even by hurrying.*

20 大 is only read *tai*, in the phrases 大夫, 大王, 大黃 and sometimes 大學. This was probably the original pronunciation in all cases. It is the only pronunciation given by K'anghi. 大夫 is used in the North for physician, but not in the South. It is heard in Western, but not in Eastern Shantung. How it came to supplant the more regular and proper term 醫生, is not certainly known. It was probably at first applied to the court physicians, who had official rank, and thence passed into general use. 郎中 is the common term in the South, and is also found in books. It probably came into use in the same way as 大夫.

22 習慣成自然 *A habit acquired becomes natural.* 習慣 is rarely used save in connection with the whole expression.

24 那分上 *That point;* i.e., *the point of danger.*

25 住 is no doubt *t'ung hsing* in this connection, but 迭 is also quite proper and is widely used, and expresses a somewhat different idea. If 住 be used the translation should be, *was unable to withstand them.*

LESSON XCIII.

INITIAL INTERJECTIONS.

Chinese colloquial abounds in exclamatory words expressive of various emotions, many of which it is difficult to render into English. The proper characters to use are in a number of cases more or less uncertain, and the meanings attached to them vary much in different localities. The tones of these characters are especially variable and uncertain.

阿 Oh! Ah! Whew!—expresses a suddenly occurring thought, coupled sometimes with pleasure, sometimes with displeasure.

哦 The same,—Southern teachers prefer this character.

哎呀 Heigh ho! Hurrah!—expresses either astonishment or exultation.

哎喲 Oh! Alas! Ah me!—expresses consternation, or sorrow, or suffering.

嗤 Pshaw! Fudge! Humph!—expresses impatience, or disgust, or indignation.

嗯 Bosh! Plague on it! Confound it!—expresses strong disgust and indignation.

嚇 Bosh! Bah!—expresses disgust, or indignation, or contempt. It is used chiefly in the South.

呸 or 呸 Tush! Humph!—expresses the strongest kind of impatience and contempt. Its use is an insult. No word in English is adequate to translate it.

呀呀呸 An emphatic form of 呸. It is explained as a sort of catching of the breath in

Digitized by Google

第九十三課

帶捎人是沒管麼嗎。那紅哦阿[1]、
呢。都喇。來那的着○有襖、我
○不○呢。些嗎、哎[6]同脫想
哎[13]在嗐[11]○做這喲、姓給起
喲、喇。我家[10]甚回我結我來
不○[12]們去麼我的親穿喇。
好哦阿、年見呢。可娘媽媽的着○
喇、他紀了○明啊媽呀呢。罷、哎[2]
房已相你啊[9]白可○答呀、
子經彷嬸嬸他喇。要咂哎[5]嘆、好
上走的嬸子、說○了你俺我大
起了人、替至嘆[8]、我叫不。一
了嗎、就我遲晚好的我○條
火我剩間到歹命的嚇嗯[4]長
喇。還下他今混喇。小這蛇蟲
○有他好天幾○名、不○
媽[14]回和跟啊、來、天哦阿[7]你是把[3]
啊、信我唵、怎就還、叫糊你
你叫了、答麼是得是得鬧的
的他別啊、又喇、這起嗎、大

TRANSLATION.

1 Oh! I have just thought of it.
2 Heigh ho! what a monstrous snake.
3 Won't you spare me your large red coat to wear? *Ans.* Och! I won't.
4 Bosh! That's all nonsense. People of the same family name don't intermarry.
5 Humph! What right have you to be calling me by my little name?
6 Oh, my mother! It will kill me.
7 Ah! It's this way, is it? This time I understand it.
8 Pshaw! Make-shift somehow for a few days, and it will all be right. Why trouble yourself about such things?
9 What's up? He said that at the latest he would come to-day. How is it that after all he has not come?
10 When you go home and see your aunt, remember me to her; do you hear? *Ans.* Aye; I will.
11 Ah me! Of us who were of about the same age, only he and I are left; all the rest are gone.
12 Ah! Has he already gone? I wanted to send a reply by him.
13 My oh! It's dreadful! The house is on fire.
14 Oh, Mother! I have broken your large mirror! *Ans.* Oh my! What a

order to give forcible utterance to the 呸. It is found in Mandarin books, and is much used in theatrical plays. I have heard children use it in their quarrels.

啊 A—h!—expresses hesitation, or doubt, or surprise.

唵 Eh? A word (or grunt) much used in colloquial when emphasizing an idea, especially in charging anyone. It follows each clause or point made by the speaker, as much as to say, Do you hear? Do you understand?

嗐 Ah me! Alas! confound it!—expresses sadness, or wonder, or dissatisfaction. Its use varies in different places.

嘆 Oh my! Bless my heart! What a pity!—expresses surprise coupled with sorrow or pity.

哼 Humph! Hem!—expresses slight contempt or discontent.

唉 Aye, all right, that's so,—expresses full approval or assent.

嚛 or **嘶** Tut, tush, fie,—expresses displeasure or reproof.

噫 Well; well, well; really; sure enough,—expresses gratification, or amusement, or ridicule. In *Wên-li* it means, Ah me, alas.

叱 Shoo,—mostly applied to driving away fowls, but sometimes used to children, or in contempt to young people or even to adults.

VOCABULARY.

阿 *A*[1], *ê*[1].... An exclamation of surprise. Also *a*[3].
阿 *A*[3], *ê*[3].... An exclamation of doubt. See *a*[1].
嘆 *Wei*[4].... ... Pshaw, fudge, och:—see Sub.
嗯 *T'ei*[2].... ... Bosh, plague on it:—see Sub.
哎 *P'ei*[1,4].... .....To sputter; tush:—see Sub.
呸 *P'ei*[4].... ... ... Same. (s.)

Digitized by Google

嗎、喇。答甚的的借[17]快那大鏡
答○嗤、麼驢。耳間光叫樣的子、
嘟對我[22]三道○[19]衆老我的叫
那問吊理嘖嚏、聾爺大聲憨遲遲我
裏你來呢。人啊。爺爺、態遲手手、打
的一錢、○家○[18]這爺、包手、喇、
事、件我你[20]要哎嚼、是我還答
這事就能快我上買想唳、
纔情、捨捨快若周塊着可惜、
是是不得的是再的糖進學你、
活馬得三吊書、到大給學啊、你
蹧慶了多你賭道喫、怎
蹋雲、嗎。○錢、這錢不我看麼
人拐○叱[21]穿麼場、是、叫他給
喇。了人去個跟我爺、淨我
○人[23]罷、哈着就答啊、癡打
若家哈喇直是你唉、心了
是一別在馬打個說好妄呢。
找個在這褂搅、四甚孩想。○
不媳這裏子是條麼、子。○[15]哼、
着、婦裏開嗎、個腿我○[16]你像

pity! How did you come to break it?

15 Humph! Such a blockhead as he, and yet thinks of getting a degree! In my opinion he is indulging a vain expectation.

16 Now you call me grandpa once and I'll buy you a piece of candy to eat. (Calls) Grandpa. *Ans.* Good! You are a nice boy.

17 May I trouble you, my aged friend? is this the great road to Chon-ts'un? *Ans.* A—h? What did you say? I am hard of hearing.

18 Pshaw! If I go again into a gambling house, you may set me down for an ass.

19 Tush! When other people want to get their lessons quickly, what reason is there in your continually interrupting them in this way?

20 Can you afford to spend over three thousand cash for a broadcloth coat? *Ans.* Humph! Do you suppose I can't afford a matter of three thousand cash?

21 Shoo! Begone with you, and don't make a disturbance here.

22 I want to ask you something. Is it so that Ma Ch'ing Yün has kidnapped another man's wife? *Ans.* Tut, tut! Nonsense! What an unconscionable slander!

23 If I can't find it, I'll demand it of you. *Ans.* Humph! Why will you

啊 *A*[3,1], *é*[3,1]. Exclamation of surprise or doubt. Not practically distinguished from 阿.

唵 *Ê*[2]. Eh?:—see Sub. Also *an*[1].

嗐 *Hai*[4]. Ah me, alas:—see Sub.

唉 *Ai*[1]. An exclamation of surprise and regret:—see Sub.

哼 *Hêng*[1]. To groan, to grunt; humph, hem:—see Sub.

唉 *Ai*[2]. A reply—that's right, so so, yes:—see Sub. Also *ai*[1].

嚼 *Tei*[2]. Humph, bah:—see Sub.

嚏 *T'ai*[2]. Tut, tush:—see Sub.

嚏 *T'ê*[2]. Same. (s.)

噫 *I*[1]. A sound expressive of surprise or admiration, or of pain and sorrow:—see Sub.

叱 *Ch'i*[4]. To hoot at, to scold; to shoo—as chickens:—see Sub.

糊鬧 *Hu*[2] *nao*[4]. *To make believe*, to sham; to make much ado about nothing; to act the fool.

嬸 *Shên*[3]. A father's younger brother's wife.

不在 *Pu*[4] *tsai*[4]. Dead, deceased (used only of adults).

邋 *La*[4]. To exceed; filthy.

邋遢 *La*[4] *t'a*[4]. Filthy, slovenly, slatternly, dowdy; *good-for-nothing*, miserable.

邁 *Mai*[4]. To advance, to exceed; old, senile.

態 *T'ai*[4]. Figure, configuration; air, gait; circumstances.

邁態 Inefficient, impotent, *good-for-nothing*. (L.)

憨包 *Han*[1] *pao*[1]. *A blockhead*, a ninny, a goose. (s.)

Digitized by Google

是跟你要、答呀呀呸、你爲甚麼跟我要呢、我是給你看東西的騾子、就成了財主喇。○[25]嗐、是您的嗎、答唷、俺我若是有這麼個大騾子、今天出去看燈、眞喪晦氣、不知叫那個忘八蛋把我的辮子、剪鐵了半截子去。○噫、[26]你看他那兩隻小脚、怎能在繩子上、走來走去呢、答嗐、這也不是一日的工夫。○健[27]壯的壯字、該在甚麼部裏呢、答該在士字部裏、怪不得察不着喇。對○哦阿、[28]我當是在彳字部、或是土字部裏、怪不得察瞧道、他不是眞來要甚麼吃啊、是來瞧你那裏知道、我[29]勸你別尋死啊、你看你的都喫你的、穿呀。○我你若死了、他們都倚靠誰

demand it of me? Is it my business to watch your things?

24 Is this big mule yours? *Ans.* No, I am sorry to say it's not. If I had a big mule like that, I'd be a rich man.

25 Plague on it! I was unlucky, sure enough! In going out to see the illuminations to-night some vile rascal cut off the half of my queue.

26 Well, really! Just look at those two little feet! How in the world can they walk back and forth on that rope? *Ans.* That's so! You may be sure that was not learned in one day.

27 Under what radical should *chwang* of *chien chwang* be? *Ans.* It should be under the radical *shï*. Well! I thought it was under *ch'iang* or under *t'u*. No wonder I could not find it.

28 Tush! Don't you know that his coming in to beg is simply in order to spy out a way by which he can steal from you?

29 I beg of you don't think of suicide. Look at your wife and children! Are they not dependent on you for food and clothing? If you die, whom will they have to depend upon?

癡 *Ch'ï*[1]..... Stupid, silly; crazy, idiotic.

癡心 *Ch'ï*[1] *hsin*[1]. *Infatuated*, beside oneself, ...foolish.

妄 *Wang*[4]. Disorderly, incoherent; reckless; .....*foolish*, absurd; false.

妄想 *Wang*[4] *hsiang*[3]. To long for what is un- .....attainable, *vain hopes.*

糖 *T'ang*[2]..... Sugar, candy.

借問 *Chie*[4] *wên*[4]. Please tell me, *may I in-* .....*quire.*

賭錢場 *Tu*[3] *ch'ien*[2] *ch'ang*[3]. A gambling house, ...a betting ring.

打攪 *Ta*[3] *chiao*[3]. To discompose, *to interrupt*, ...to bother, to pester.

喪氣 *Sang*[4] *ch'i*[4]. *Unlucky*, ill-starred; depressed .....in spirits.

晦 *Hwei*[4]..... Obscure; *unlucky*, unpropitious.

晦氣 *Hwei*[4] *ch'i*[4]..... *Ill-luck*, misfortune.

忘八蛋 *Wang*[2] *pa*[1] *tan*[4]. A rascal, a reckless .....villain :—Note 25.

半截 *Pan*[4] *chie*[2]..... A large piece, the half.

健 *Chien*[4]. Strong, *robust;* persevering, inde- .....fatigable; constant.

健壯 *Chien*[4] *chwang*[4]. Robust, strong, able- .....bodied.

士 *Shï*[4].... A scholar, a gentleman; an officer.

彳 *Ch'iang*[2]..... A couch; the 90th radical.

門路 *Mên*[2] *lu*[4]. Opening, *way of access;* a ..... method, a means.

尋死 *Hsin*[2] *si*[3]. To commit suicide, to make .....away with oneself.

保舉 *Pao*[3] *chü*[3]. *To recommend*, to give a good .....report of.

Digitized by Google

呢、答 嘻、現在 顧不了 那些 喇。○ 你[30] 從前 保舉
了 他、他 現 在 怎 麼 還 疑 惑 你 讒 謗 他 呢、答 哼
誰 知 道 呢。○ 老[31] 頭 子 病 到 那 個 樣 兒、要 點 水
喝、都 沒 有 人 留 給 他、想 什 麼 喫、也 沒 有 人 給
他 弄 做、今 天 我 去 看 他、他 對 我 直 哭、答 噯、那 纔
是 苦 命 喇。○ 你[32] 要 麻 俐 的 走 啊、唵、在 街 上 不
要 和 人 打 架、唵、到 你 姐 姐 家、就 一 直 上 你 姐
姐 房 屋 裏 去 啊、唵、別 先 到 他 婆 婆 房 屋 裏 去、唵、和
你 姐 姐 說、咱 媽 媽 說 喇、我 媽 說 喇、你 不 用 想 家、再 等
多 日 子、就 來 接 搬 你、好 愼 生 想 着、別 忘 記 喇、唵。

Ans. Hem! What do I care for that now?

30 You heretofore recommended him; how does it come that he now suspects you of speaking evil of him? *Ans.* Humph! Who knows?

31 The old man so sick as that! and yet when he wants a drink, there is no one to get it for him; when he wants something to eat, there is no one to cook it for him. When I went to see him to-day he cried and cried. *Ans.* Ah me! His is indeed a bitter lot.

32 Now you go briskly, eh? don't fight with anybody on the street, eh? and when you get to your sister's, go straight into her room, eh? don't go first into her mother-in-law's room, eh? say to your sister that mamma says she must not get homesick, that after a few days we will go for her. Be sure and remember and don't forget, eh?

NOTES.

2 In Northern and Central Mandarin snakes are commonly called 長虫. 蛇 is a book term and generally means a venomous snake or serpent. It is used colloquially in the South and also in many parts of the North.

3 俺不 "*I won't*" is a very pat phrase, especially with children.

4 It is contrary to custom for persons of the same name to marry, although it is sometimes done.

5 The use of the "little name" implies familiar acquaintance, and, generally, superior age or station.

6 When a Chinaman gets into great straits he invariably calls his mother. The three forms of calling mother represent in the general, Northern, Central, and Southern custom, although there are many local variations.

9 啊 is here 1st tone and denotes surprise joined with a little anxiety. The translation given is only an approximation to the meaning.

10 問他好啊 Here 啊 is merely a euphonic ending. The 啊 below is a responsive recognition that the speaker is heard, after which the reply follows.

11 跟 as here used is local in Peking and the North.

15 The three terms here used are not quite synonymous. 邋遢 means properly, *dirty, slovenly*, but is used in Pekingese in the sense of, *inferior, good-for-nothing*; 邋態 is used in Shantung, but not in the North. It is also heard in the region of Hankow. Though local, it is a very expressive term; 憨包 is a Southern term and in this connection is the strongest of the three.

16 快 as here used has very little force. I have rendered it *now*.

17 周村 is a large unwalled town in Central Shantung, having an extensive trade and much wealth. The first 是 should be emphasized, indicating that the speaker presumed that the road referred to *was* the road to Chou Ts'un.

18 四條腿 is added for emphasis, and to make more striking the contrast between the man and the *beast*.

19 人家 is used from the standpoint of the party addressed, and means *other people*, including the speaker. 學書 is descriptive of "getting a lesson" in the Western sense. The term is not used in native schools.

22 活 is used to convey the idea that the slander is wholly without foundation. It is "made out of whole cloth."

24 No single English word will express the sigh of regret here expressed by 噯.

25 階, as here used, is given with a short, strong emphasis, very different from that of (11.) 看燈 refers to going out to see the lanterns on the eve of the 15th of the first month. The Chinese says *to-day*, but it has to be rendered *to-night*. 忘八蛋 *One who has forgotten, or is destitute of, the eight virtues*, and thus properly beyond the pale of humanity. 蛋 is used as a term of reviling in allusion to its being the undeveloped and unrecognizable possibility of a being. Though decidedly inelegant, this term is refined in comparison with the language often heard. There are few Chinese who, in the circumstances here referred to, would not use a stronger term than this one, which is in fact a mild substitute for the stronger one used by the writer of the sentence. A gentleman should never use even this term.

26 This sentence refers to the female acrobats sometimes seen in China.

29 It would seem more natural to say 吃你的, 穿你的, but the idea is much more vivid without the 的.

32 This is a fair specimen of a Chinese woman charging a son or a nephew. It is not in the least overdone.

Digitized by Google

第九十四課

他[1]雖年輕、却是秀才。○你[2]雖然這麼說、那能這麼做呢。○四、脾氣雖不好、心田却不錯。○我也有點兒過錯。○王[4]老爺雖然是旗人、漢人作官的却不少。○薄。○早早做出來。○大[12]清國的皇帝、老三[11]空乾是個財主、待人却很刻○吃[9]大烟的人、雖然窄小、家裏擺設的、却像個富家。○他[8]再就不管家裏的事。○他[7]雖是個伶俐人、却辦些糊塗事。○孩[6]子雖然種過牛痘、不能出門、老還可以管家裏的事。○孩[6]子雖然種過牛痘、不能出門、老爺雖然是工夫、却不如早早做出來。○大[12]清國的皇帝、老三[11]空乾是個財主、待人却很刻薄。○吃[9]大烟的人、雖然窄小、家裏擺設的、却像個富家。○他[8]再就不管家裏的事。○他[7]雖是個伶俐人、却辦些糊塗

雖[20]你 欺 親 你[17]只 掛 夫、○ 聰
然的 負的 們 一 念 却 他[14]明
交 飯 那 教 各 人、他、沒 們 過
朋 量、些 訓。人、他 我 賠賠的 人、
友、也 老 ○ 雖 動 却 錢。買 却
有 不 實 他[18]有 起 不 ○ 賣、也
勸 大 人、雖 明 手 能 我[15]雖 要得
善 離、我 然 白 來、不 的 然 心
規 怎 心 沒 的 幾 掛 老 賠賠地
過 麼 裏 有 道 十 念 父 了、乾
的 乾 實 欺 理、人 他。親、也 淨、
道 吃 在 負 却 也 ○ 雖 不 方
理、不 氣 我、還 打 這[16]然 過 能
也 長上 不 我 要 不他 鐵 有 是 叫
當 肉膘 忿。看 聽 過不 中 信、賠賠人
看 呢。○ 見 你 他過。玉、不 了 敬
他 ○ 看[19]他 母 ○ 雖 叫 工 服。

13 Although you are superior to others in intelligence, yet you must have a virtuous mind in order to command the respect of others.

14 Although their business was a losing one, it was only time that was lost, they did not lose money.

15 Although my old father writes for me not to be anxious about him, yet I cannot but be anxious.

16 Although this T'ie Chung Yü is only one man, yet if he once sets to, thirty or forty men cannot master him.

17 Although all of you know some things, yet you should still heed your mother's instruction.

18 Although he has not imposed upon me, yet when I see him imposing on well-meaning people, I really cannot restrain my anger.

19 Your appetite seems to be very fair. How is it that in spite of your eating you do not get fat?

20 Although exhortation and reproof belong to the duties of friendship, yet it is necessary to consider the character of the individual in question.

21 Although the mother scolds her little son with her mouth, yet she em-

皇帝 *Hwang² ti⁴*..... An emperor.

旗 *Ch'i²*..... A flag, *a banner*, a standard.

旗人 *Ch'i² jên²*. Bannermen, Tartars:—Note ..... 12.

漢人 *Han⁴ jên²*. Chinese,—especially as distin- ..... guished from the Tartars.

心地 *Hsin¹ ti⁴*..... Same as 心田 above.

敬服 *Ching⁴ fu²*. *To respect*, to honor, to ..... esteem.

忿 *Fên⁴*.... Anger; resentment; *indignation*.

氣不忿 *Ch'i⁴ pu⁴ fên⁴*. Indignant, unable to ..... restrain one's anger:—Note 18.

飯量 *Fan⁴ liang²*. Capacity for eating, *ap- ..... petite*.

膘 *Piao¹*..... *Fat*, obesity, corpulence.

勸善 *Ch'üen⁴ shan⁴*. *To exhort to virtue*, to ..... preach morality.

規過 *Kwei¹ kwo⁴*. *To reprove*, to admonish ..... for a fault. (W.)

憎 *Tsêng¹,⁴*..... To dislike, to hate, to detest.

憎嫌 *Tseng⁴ hsien²*. To dislike, to find fault ..... with, *to scold*.

摟 *Lou³*. *To embrace*; to carry off, to elope ..... with. Also *lou¹*.

摟抱 *Lou³ pao⁴*. *To embrace*, to fold in the ..... arms, to hug.

親熱 *Ch'in¹ jê⁴*. To caress, *to kiss*; dear, ... loving, affectionate.

出相 *Ch'u¹ hsiang¹*. Worthy of note or imita- ..... tion, *remarkable*, special.

妖 *Yao¹*. Strange, ominous, monstrous; *unusual*; ..... a phantom, a ghost, a fiend.

妖巧 *Yao¹ ch'iao³*..... Odd, *witty*, singular.

千古 *Ch'ien¹ ku³*. *Antiquity*, of old, from ..... ancient times.

雄 *Hsiung²*. The male of birds and insects; ..... brave, martial, *heroic*.

英雄 *Ying¹ hsiung²*. *A hero*, a knight; of noble ..... and courageous mind.

Digitized by Google

的爲人。○母[21]親和小兒、口裏雖然憎嫌、還是用手摟抱、用嘴親熱他。○張[22]二那個人、模樣雖不出相、最能說個妖巧話、說着這個、譏誚着那個。○他[23]雖是一個小女子、却有千古大英雄的度量。○這[24]時候、亞伯身體雖然倦乏了、還不能睡着、因爲他想到明天要辦的事、不由得心裏發跳。○我[25]兒雖如此說、然寃家可解不可結。○曹[26]州府、那是久反之地、出賊最多、所以在道路上、不多遠就有一個卡防、預備護送客旅、凡是城池、鎮店、也都有官兵彈壓、雖然如此、總擋不住他們搶奪。

braces him with her arms and kisses him with her lips.

22 Although there is nothing remarkable in the personal appearance of that man, Chang the Second, yet he has a great faculty for saying witty things, speaking of one while he ridicules another.

23 Although she is a little girl, she has the ability of the great heroes of antiquity.

24 Although at this time Abel was very weary in body, he still could not sleep, for he was thinking of what was to be done on the morrow, and in spite of himself his heart kept palpitating.

25 Notwithstanding what you say, my son, still it is better to remove enmity than to incur it.

26 That Ts'aochon-fu has long been a rebellious place which produces many robbers, therefore there are guards stationed on the road at short distances for the purpose of escorting travellers, and every city and market-town also has a guard of soldiers to protect it; and yet, notwithstanding all this, they cannot be restrained from robbing.

度量 *Tu⁴ liang²*. Capacity, *ability*; calibre; penetration, judgment.

亞 *Ya³,⁴*. Deformed, secondary, inferior,—much used in names as a phonetic.

伯 *Poa²*. The third rank of nobility, an earl; a title of respect. Also *pai³*.

久 *Chiu³*. Enduring, *a long time*, of old.

道路 *Tao⁴ lu⁴*. *A road*, a way; a method, a resort.

卡 *Ch'ia³*. A guard-house, a small police or customs station. Also *ch'ia²*.

卡防 *Ch'ia³ fang²*. A guard-house, a watch station.

護送 *Hu⁴ sung⁴*. *To escort*, to accompany with a guard, to give safe conduct.

客旅 *K'ê⁴ lü³*. A traveller, a stranger.

城池 *Ch'êng² ch'i²*. A walled city.

鎮店 *Chên⁴ tien⁴*. A market-town.

彈壓 *T'an² ya⁴*. To keep in order, to restrain; *to protect*, to guard.

搶奪 *Ch'iang³ to²*. *To rob*, to plunder; to carry off violently.

Notes.

6 To vaccinate is variously designated. Besides the two terms used in the text, both 種痘子 and 種洋痘 are used. The 再 might be omitted with advantage; as used it regards the effect of vaccination as if it were a species of small-pox.

9 停牀 is a special bed prepared for one who is dying. The Chinese have a strong prejudice against allowing any one to die on a *k'ang* or on a bed; they say that the soul will have to carry the *k'ang* or bed on its back and cannot get out of the house until a necromancer is employed to assist it. He takes a rooster and by means of sundry incantations conducts the soul out of the house. Hence as soon as it appears that anyone is about to die, they move him off the bed or *k'ang* to some temporary bed on the ground or on benches in the middle of the room. The most common way is to take a door off its hinges (a thing very easily done with Chinese doors) and lay it across a couple of benches and stretch the dying person on it. 過癮 means practically to take a smoke, by which means the uneasy craving is relieved, and so "*passes by.*"

12 旗人 The Manchus are divided by the reigning dynasty into eight banners or clans, under which they are officered and marshalled. As commonly used by the Chinese the term includes all the Tartars.

15 有信 here means *has sent a letter*, or *a letter has arrived from*. In other connections it generally means to *receive a letter*.

Digitized by Google

第九十五課

我[1]起來是然而也不可以三就平○說話的錯了但是他却不得很凡[5]事不過一件兒[10]就是不要緊的人家修理好了還有什麼[6]不過的話太利害○明[2]明白白的說出來就是了你何必[7]這樣不願意呢○我[3]雖然是你哥哥的事情雖然是你哥哥的主意但是你哥哥的脾氣太急了一點兒○我[4]雖然是你哥哥的莊稼人但是你哥哥的田地我也要管的○你[8]不要說我不肯借錢給你哥哥用[9]我實在是沒有錢

TRANSLATION.

1 I was wrong, it is true; but your reproof is too severe.

2 Clearly it was he who originated the affair, yet nevertheless he refuses to bear the responsibility.

3 My elder brother has a smile on his face, nevertheless, in his heart he is very much distressed.

4 Although the crops depend on seasonable rains, yet they require men to cultivate them.

5 Although we should always be sincere in word and deed, yet it is not well to be too simple-minded.

6 I am very loth to lend money, yet he has begged me again and again until I have no alternative.

7 But the article is already ruined, so that even though you do begrudge it, what can you do?

8 In ordinary circumstances, who does not know that it is best to be pacific? but when you are offended by some one, you lose your self-control.

9 If you regard only that man's exterior, he is certainly trusty; nevertheless, in his heart he is exceedingly treacherous.

10 Children should of course obey their

16 幾十人 *Several tens of men.* 打他不過 an obsolete form of 打不過他. It is still heard in some places along the Yang-tse.

18 那些 does not mean any particular individuals, but well-meaning people in general. 氣不忿 is to be understood as if written 氣的不得不忿, for which it seems to be a contraction.

20 勸善規過 is a ready-made book expression. 他 stands for 朋友, and the use of 的 makes 爲人 a noun meaning *character*. A more colloquial form of speech would be 當看他爲人怎麼樣.

21 用嘴親熱他 does not refer to kissing in the proper sense, of which the Chinese are generally ignorant, but to rubbing the face with the nose and lips, which Chinese mothers are in the habit of doing.

23 This is said of 冰心小姐, *Miss Icy-heart*, the heroine of the "Fortunate Union."

25 In speaking, an 啊 should be inserted after 兒. This sentence is also from the "Fortunate Union."

LESSON XCV.

DISJUNCTIVES.

但 or 但是 But, but yet, still. The 是 is added or not as the rhythm of the sentence requires.

只是 But, but then, but only.

但是一件 / 但有一件 / 只是一件 } But there is one thing, but it must be borne in mind.

却但是一件 But then it must be remembered, but the fact is, nevertheless.

然 But, yet. Not often used alone in Mandarin save as the correlative of 雖 as noted in the preceding lesson.

然而 But, yet, nevertheless, yet on the other hand. Essentially *Wên-li*, but frequently used in Mandarin books—very rarely in colloquial.

Digitized by Google

那明○你是若疑若力也
一白你[17]聽、你仔惑肯的不
張的說但只的細沒勤人、要
嘴、少、的是是經摹有、學、還惹兒
就不這一紀、倣、然也能再女
像明些件、總也而能日赶翻的
一白話、以不能日赶得過氣。
把的雖後如學久、得過氣。
快多。都你他。出個就上來。○
刀、○是喫○不放人。○官[11]
我我[18]大虧你[16]色大心○人[12]司
還怎道的不離了。凡[13]的雖
說麼理、時聽○○和天然
不不然候、勸、張[15]文[14]人分、定
得責君却我兄韋初雖了
一備予不也說雖変、然案、
句、他少、要不得然不次但
他呢、小來能有難能些、是
早但人找逼理、學、一但有
說他多、我。着但但點是勢

parents, yet, on the other hand, parents should not provoke their children to anger.

11 Although a lawsuit has been decided, yet one who has influence may still get it reversed.

12 Although a man's talents may be somewhat inferior, yet if he will study with diligence, he can still attain to mediocrity.

13 When a man first makes an acquaintance, he cannot avoid having some misgivings; but as time progresses he becomes confident.

14 Although it is hard to learn to write a *wên-chang*, yet if any one will carefully follow the pattern, he may become fairly proficient.

15 What you say, Brother Chang, is true, still your skill is by no means equal to his.

16 If you will not give heed, I cannot compel you, but there is one thing [you must bear in mind], hereafter when you suffer the consequences, you must not come to me for help.

17 Although what you say is very true, still good men are few and mean men many; the intelligent are few and the foolish many.

18 What is the reason I did not reprove her? But that mouth of hers is like a sharp sword. Before I could speak a single sentence, she had already rattled off ever so

VOCABULARY.

固然 *Ku⁴ jan²*. Certainly, unquestionably, *of course, it is true.*

愁苦 *Ch'ou² k'u³*. *Distressed*, troubled, sorrowful, miserable.

鋤 *Ch'u²*. A hoe; *to hoe*, to cultivate.

修鋤 *Hsiu¹ ch'u²*. *To cultivate with a hoe*, to dig about.

葺 *Ch'i¹*. To repair, to put in order, *to dress.*

葺理 *Ch'i¹ li³*. To repair, to dress, *to cultivate.* (s.)

認眞 *Jên⁴ chên¹*. *Sincere*, frank; honest, true, faithful.

央求 *Yang¹ ch'iu²*. *To beg*, to importune, to beseech.

割捨 *Kê¹ shê³*. *To give up*, nothing loth:— Note 7.

兒女 *Êr·² nü³*. Children.

勢力 *Shi⁴ li⁴*. Power, *influence.*

日久 *Ji⁴ chiu³*. In the course of time, by-and-by, *as time progresses.*

摹 *Mu²*. To follow a pattern, to imitate.

倣 *Fang³*. To imitate, *to copy;* a copy, a model; like, resembling.

摹倣 To imitate, to follow a pattern or model.

出色 *Ch'u¹ sê⁴*. Superior, first-rate, above the average, *proficient.*

經紀 *Ching¹ chi⁴*. Experience, *detective skill;* a broker, a specialist.

Digitized by Google

心、人、用[21]月年因錢是是出
所却西起、起、此一不最無
以但國只每有百怎高數的
皇是人放七人四、麼貴的
上一在一天說、領受的大
情件、海次一洋義喫。海道
顯西關就領、賑賑○味、理
多國收完直不的、領[20]但來、
出人稅、了、放如每洋是教
俸比俸比到義大賑沒我
祿、本祿較麥賑、口的、有無
也國更起秋但領不鷄處
要人、多、來、後是六分湯開
用更好還爲一百、大和口。
西有像是止、件、每口肉、○
國本不領義洋小小調燕[19]
人。事、如洋賑賑口口、和窩
也用賑是是領每起魚
更本好。從從三人來、翅、
忠國○三頭百、領也雖

much plausible talk, giving me no chance to open my mouth.

19 Birds' nests and fish fins, although they are the rare delicacies of the sea, yet if not mixed with chicken broth and meat, they are not specially palatable.

20 Those who received foreign relief, received one hundred and forty cash for each person, whether child or adult. Those who received the imperial bounty, received for each adult six hundred cash, and for each child three hundred, hence some say the foreign relief was inferior to the imperial bounty. But it must be remembered that the foreign relief began before the New Year, one distribution in seven days, and continued without interruption until after the wheat harvest. The imperial bounty began in the third month and stopped after only one distribution, so that, comparing the two, the foreign relief was after all the better.

21 To use foreigners at the ports to collect duties, requires higher salaries, and it seems as if it would be better to use natives, but the fact is that foreigners have more ability and are more honest, hence it is that the Emperor prefers to give higher salaries and use foreigners.

君 *Chün*[1]. A prince, a sovereign; *honorable*, ... *superior*, a term of respect.

君子 *Chün*[1] *tsi*[3]. The ideal or superior man:— ..... Note 17.

燕 *Yien*[4]..... A swallow, a martin.

燕窩 *Yien*[4] *wo*[1]. A swallow's nest, *edible bird's* ..... *nest.*

翅 *Ch'i*[4]..... A wing, *a fin.*

魚翅 *Yü*[2] *ch'i*[4]..... Sharks' fins.

海味 *Hai*[3] *wei*[4]..... A delicacy of the sea.

調和 *T'iao*[3] *hê*[2]. *To mix*, to blend; to medi- ..... ate, to make peace.

受吃 *Shou*[4] *ch'i*[1]..... Good to eat, *palatable.*

頭年 *T'ou*[2] *nien*[2]..... Before the New Year.

麥秋 *Mai*[4] *ch'iu*[1]..... Wheat harvest.

比較 *Pi*[3] *chiao*[3]..... To compare.

海關 *Hai*[3] *kwan*[1]..... A custom house.

稅 *Shui*[4]..... *Duties on goods*, tariff.

俸 *Fêng*[4]..... *Salary*, emoluments; wages.

祿 *Lu*[4]. *Official salary*, emoluments, pay; pros- ..... perity.

俸祿 The emoluments of office, *salary.*

忠心 *Chung*[1] *hsin*[1]. Faithful, devoted; *honest,* ..... reliable.

NOTES.

2 却 is in fact superfluous, yet the colloquial very often adds it in this way after 但是, as *nevertheless* is added in the translation. 出頭 *To come to the front;* i.e., *to bear the responsibility.*

3 The use of 臉 prevails in the South, that of 面 in the North.

4 雨水 means properly *rain water*, and is generally so used, but in the present case it means simply rain. 均勻

Digitized by Google

第九十六課

大醫[1]諒病、半概是能錯不的。
生諒來大是我打不得○
多事沒有還算了。清楚。○書[3]中雖然有些小毛罷、
年紀是是不一個○○
大的好。○請[2]放心
的好、大概都能約
的事、分兒上、人。
情。兒債的經算了
○人都說某人好、
他[4]到如今不來、
病[10]錯了。你。哥哥
到○○管。
這大[9]流[8]
個約水○
分放賬諒大[7]人。
已想諒○
你我[6]家
不家的事情、
惹他、他也
大半大
概

1 For the most part, elderly physicians are the best.
2 Please set your heart at rest. There will probably be no trouble.
3 Although there are some small defects in the book, yet for the most part it is clear.
4 Not having come by this time, it is most likely he will not come.
5 If everybody says that a certain man is good, most likely he is a good man.
6 Our family affairs are, for the most part, controlled by my elder brother.
7 Probably if you had not irritated him, he would not have struck you.
8 The day book has already been counted over twice, it is probably correct.
9 Those who lend money generally have some official influence.
10 His illness having reached this stage, it is not likely he can recover.
11 The vices of the world are, in genera', may be used of the uniform distributions of rain either over a certain territory or over a certain time. In the latter case, as here, it means *seasonable*.

7 但 at the beginning of this sentence refers back to something preceding. 割捨 is nearly always used with a negative, meaning, *to be loth to part with, to grudge*. It is widely used, but not *t'ung hsing*. In Peking it is generally heard 割捨不得.

9 The 但 in the first clause is an adverb meaning *only*, and as such does not illustrate the theme of the lesson. As 然而 is used in Mandarin, 却 usually and naturally follows it. It *may* be omitted, however, as in (3.)

10 The sentiment of this sentence is Christian. No heathen would ever give expression to such a sentiment.

12 但是若 This combination or juxtaposition of conjunctions is considered somewhat inelegant, especially by Peking teachers. It represents, however, a collocation of human thought common to all languages, and is very frequently heard in colloquial. It may sometimes be avoided, without the loss of the idea, by a careful manipulation of the clauses. In order to avoid it here, the Peking teacher would drop the 但是. This, of course, is allowable, but it loses part of the idea and very much weakens the opposition of the clauses. The 人 at the beginning of the sentence is specific, the one at the end, general.

17 君子 *A royal man*, that is a virtuous and honorable man—one who embodies the highest excellencies of human character, which, theoretically, are supposed to inhere in a Prince. The term is much used in the classics and is translated by Dr. Legge as "*the superior man*."

18 The interrogation of the first clause is equivalent to a strong affirmation. The Chinese does not indicate whether a man or a woman is referred to. Woman's reputed gifts would indicate that it was a woman, though the phrase 無數的大道理 sounds like the language of a man who has some knowledge of books.

19 不怎麼受吃 *Not to any extent bear eating*, 怎麼 has practically the force of *specially* or *particularly*. In many places 什麼 would be substituted for 怎麼.

20 The cash here referred to is 京錢, that is, double count.

LESSON XCVI.

APPROXIMATION.

大半 or 多半 The great half,—for the most part, mostly, generally, most likely.

大概 Great summing up,—on the whole, generally, probably.

約 Approximately, about.

大約 Great agreement,—for the most part, generally, most likely.

大畧 Great approximation,—about, for the most part, most likely.

大料 Great anticipation,—in all probability, most likely. (N.)

Digitized by Google

被 昨[20]幾 有 鈴 半 大 呵諒 不 ○
我 夜 天 一 鐺 都 概 奉媚厚況、大[12]
赶 約 也 分 的、是 不 的、又 約
跑 在 不 權 因 中 能 大 起 年
了。四 說、柄、爲 等 久 約 了 老
○ 更 也 就 怕 的。住。沒 風、的
王[21]天 不 加 招 ○ ○ 有 想諒 人、
二 的 笑、上 蠅 瞎 牲[17] 世[16] 正 必來 血
上 時 想 三 眼 口 上 經 沒 氣
關 候、必 分 子 蝨 在 人 人。有 自
東、有 是 驕 ○ 夏 好 ○ 大 然
六 一 有 傲。如[18]天、姿 聶[15]雨。衰
年 個 甚 ○ 今 大 質 大 ○ 弱。
沒 賊 麼 李[19]的 概 的 人 凡[14]○
有 來 心 老 人、沒 總 上往 說 天[13]
信、攙 發 事。師、大 有 少、上 話 陰
諒 門、○ 這 半 帶 大 海、帶 的

such as have power to fascinate.

12 In general, when men grow old, their vigor naturally declines.

13 The clouds are not heavy (thick), a wind has also sprung up, there will probably not be much rain.

14 Generally when any man's talk savors of flattery, he is not a reputable person.

15 When General Nie goes to Shanghai, he will not probably remain long.

16 Of mankind, the talented are few; the great majority are mediocre.

17 In the summer, animals do not commonly wear bells, lest they draw the flies.

18 It is mostly the case, at the present time, that when a man gets any degree of authority, his pride increases in a three-fold ratio.

19 Prof. Li neither speaks nor smiles these few days. I fancy there is something weighing on his mind.

20 Last night, about the time of the fourth watch, a thief came and tried the door, but I drove him away.

21 Wang the Second went to Manchuria, and for six years there has been no word of him. Probably he is dead.

大諒 Great supposition,—Most likely, belike, probably. (N.)

諒來 Probably, most likely. Quite *t'ung-hsing*, but more used in Central than in Northern or Southern Mandarin.

諒想 Probably, I presume, I suppose. (S.)

諒必 Most likely, I presume, I expect.

想必 I suppose, I presume, I fancy. *T'ung-ksing*, but more used in the South than in the North.

This lesson is closely allied to Lesson 130.

VOCABULARY.

諒 *Liang*[4]. To believe; to suppose, to guess; ..... probably, likely:—see Sub.

概 *Kai*[4]. To level, to adjust; a summing up; all, ... the whole.

流水賬 *Liu*[2] *shwei*[3] *chang*[4]. A day book, a blot- ..... ter:—Note 8.

放債 *Fang*[4] *chai*[4]. ..... To lend money.

衰弱 *Shwai*[1] *joh*[4]. Weak, *feeble*, debilitated, ... decrepit.

諂 *Ch'an*[3]. *To flatter*, to fawn upon; adulation, ... sycophancy.

媚 *Mei*[4]. .... Smirking, smiling; *to flatter*, to pet.

諂媚 *To flatter*, to cajole, to act the sycophant.

呵 *Hē*[1], *ha*[1]. To expel the breath; to pant, to ..... yawn; to flatter; a final particle.

呵奉 *Hē*[1] *fêng*[4]. To flatter, to act the sycophant, ... to curry favor with. (S.)

聶 *Nie*[4]. ..... To whisper; a surname.

姿 *Tsï*[1]. ..... Fascinating; *talents*, endowments.

質 *Chï*[4,3,2]. *Substance*, matter, to establish by ..... evidence, to confront; honest, sincere, real; disposition.

Digitized by Google

來想生火。是已經死了。○[22]烟筒烟釜烟臺烟衝不見冒烟、想必是還沒生火。是前五年的事、雖然不能說得一點不差、大畧是那個數目、看看賬就知道了。○他[26]不對、答大畧是那個數目、看看賬就知道了。○這[24]諒必有些過節兒、我們猜算不到。○這[25]却是如此。○我在這裏存着五吊八百錢、對[23]諒必有些過節兒、我們猜算不到。○這[24]諒必有些過節兒、我們猜算不到。○這[25]却是如此。○我在這裏存着五吊八百錢、對[26]不對、答大畧是那個數目、看看賬就知道了。○他[27]外頭來了一個人、身量不高、大約四十多歲、[28]這塊蔓菁、大約再等七八天、就好拔了。○天[29]每逢支錢、必上摺子、摺子上沒有、想必是沒支。○外[27]見先生、答阿、想必是李先生、可以請他進來。○要[28]這塊蔓菁、答[29]天、不肯招的。○要生的賊骨頭、若不動大刑、大料諒他是不肯招的。

22 There seems to be no smoke issuing from the chimney. I presume the fire is not yet kindled.

23 Most likely some things have occurred which we did not anticipate.

24 This affair happened five years ago, and although I cannot say exactly, yet it was about this way.

25 I have here deposited to my credit five thousand eight hundred cash; is that correct? *Ans.* Yes, it is probably about that amount. By looking at your account I will know.

26 Every time he gets money it is put on his pass book. If it is not on the pass book, I presume he has not received it.

27 A man has arrived without who wishes to see you. He is not very tall and is about forty years old. *Ans.* Oh, I presume it is Mr. Li. You may invite him in.

28 After about seven or eight days more, this patch of turnips will be ready for gathering.

29 Thieving is bred in that fellow's bones, and it is not likely that he will be willing to confess without the application of the severest torture.

姿質 Endowments, parts, *talents*, cleverness.
中等 *Chung*[1] *têng*[3]. . . . . Mediocre, average.
夏天 *Hsia*[4] *t'ien*[1]. . . . . Summer.
蝱 *Mêng*[2]. . . . . *A horse-fly*; a gad-fly.
瞎眼蝱 *Hsia*[1] *yien*[3] *mêng*[2]. A horse-fly :—Note 17.
柄 *Ping*[3,4]. . . . . A handle, a crank ; *authority*.
權柄 *Ch'üen*[2] *ping*[3]. *Authority*, power, control, prerogative.
老師 *Lao*[3] *shï*[1]. An instructor, *a professor*; superintendent of education :—Note 19.
心事 *Hsin*[1] *shï*[4]. *Something weighing on the mind*, trouble, embarrassment.
撬 *Ch'iao*[4]. . . . . To raise with a lever, *to pry*.
筒 *T'ung*[2,3]. . . . A tube, a pipe.
烟筒 *Yien*[1] *t'ung*[2]. A smoke pipe, a stove pipe, a flue :—Note 22.
釜 *Fu*[3]. . . . . A caldron, a boiler, a kettle.
釜臺 *Fu*[3] *t'ai*[2]. A chimney, a flue :—Note 22.
烟衝 *Yien*[1] *ch'ung*[1]. An outlet for the smoke, a flue :—Note 22.
過節 *Kwoŏ*[4] *chie*[2]. To keep a feast day ; to exceed the bounds of propriety ; *an occurrence*, a complication, a hitch.
猜算 *Ts'ai*[1] *swan*[4]. To conjecture, to guess ; *to anticipate*, to look for.
數目 *Shu*[4] *mu*[4]. . . . . Number.
蔓菁 *Man*[2]. . . . . A turnip. Also *wan*[4].
菁 *Ching*[1]. . . . . Luxuriant ; a turnip.
蔓菁. *A turnip*, a beet.

NOTES.

4 Note that the first 不來 is past, and the second one future.

5 It is uncertain whether this sentence was intended to enunciate a principle, or to apply to a particular individual. In the latter case it should be rendered, *If everybody says that Mr. So and So is a good man, he most likely is a good man.*

8 流水賬 A running account written in the order in which the business is done. A cash book is a 銀錢流水賬.

9 It is a sort of a necessity in China that he who would lend money should have some 勢力, otherwise he would

Digitized by Google

他[1]雖不來、你仍然該去。○實[2]指望到今年就寬裕了、誰知今年仍是受窮。○他[3]就是長到第一百歲、在你手裏、仍舊是個孩子。○仍[4]然是九你該得去、因爲別人不認得門兒。○世[5]俗說、人十死了爲鬼、不知人死了、仍舊是人。○我[6]給他七改正了一回、仍舊還是不好。○有[7]道的人、雖然受苦難堪、然而仍有他的快樂。○這[8]些椅子、你們從那裏搬來的、還要照舊送回去。○我[9]們得救、雖不倚靠律法、却仍舊要得按律法行事。○說[10]來說去、該怎麼辦的、仍舊還是要

TRANSLATION.

1 Although he does not come, you should still go.
2 I had certainly hoped to have plenty this year, and behold I am still suffering from poverty.
3 Even if he grows to be a hundred years old, in his relation to you he will still be a child.
4 After all you will have to go, for no one else knows the door.
5 The world says that when a man dies, he becomes a demon; but the fact is when a man dies, he is still a man.
6 I corrected it for him once, and still it is not right.
7 A man who has received the truth, although he may suffer grievous trials, yet nevertheless has his joys.
8 Take these chairs back to the place from whence you brought them.
9 Although we are not saved by trusting in the law, yet it is still necessary to live according to the law.
10 After all your talk, you will still have to do it as it ought to be done.

presently find himself without any money to lend. 勢力 here means power to coerce payment, to have such influence with those in authority as will enable one to use a certain degree of violence with impunity.

15 In some places 上 is used for going to a place, without regard to up or down. In other places 往 is used.

17 瞎眼蠅 A species of horse-fly, popularly regarded as blind, because of the peculiar appearance of its eyes. It is supposed to be guided by the sound of the bells in finding the animals.

19 老師, also called 教官, theoretically an official teacher appointed in each *Hsien* city to teach the graduates of his district. The office is a sinecure so far as teaching is concerned. He simply exercises the functions of a superintendent, and is entitled to certain fees. He has charge of the Confucian temple and offers sacrifices at the required seasons. The 老師 in a *Fu* city is the general superintendent of those in the *Hsien* cities. There are also military 老師.

22 There is no *t'ung hsing* term for "chimney," for the reason, probably, that in a large part of China there are no chimneys. In Eastern Shantung chimneys are general, and the distinctive name is 釜臺. A 烟筒 is a stove pipe, though the term may perhaps in some places be applied to a chimney. 烟衝, as used in the South, is simply a horizontal hole in the wall for the exit of the smoke. Stove pipe is so called by foreigners.

26 Pass books are extensively used by Chinese shopkeepers and bankers.

28 這塊蔓菁 *This piece of turnips*, that is, this piece of land which is sown in turnips.

29 Probably spoken by an underling, and intimating that the party spoken of was an old thief accustomed to being flogged and fortified against it.

LESSON XCVII.

STILL.

還 As before, still, yet. This word belongs properly in this lesson, but from necessity it has already been so frequently used that it is useless to illustrate it further.

仍 As before, still, nevertheless.

仍舊 As of old, as before, all the same, still.

仍然 As ever, still. Practically the same as 仍舊, but a little more elegant.

照舊 As before, as heretofore, still.

依舊 As before, as heretofore. A little bookish.

仍舊還是 After all, still. A much used, but somewhat redundant expression.

Digitized by Google

怎麼辦。○這[11]一夜、仍舊馬不停蹄、走到天明。○我[12]見有許多賭錢的人、已經賭起誓來、發誓發愿的、再不賭了、以後仍然還是去賭。○賭起誓來、瞎眼窟窿、就得掃地、抹桌子、刷鍋、做飯、和王瑞亭清清白白單帳、回遭兩個[13]眵眼照舊還是那一套。○這[14]一洗手、不賭了、以後仍然還是去賭。○

有二十年的好站頭騾只有十來
年的好站時候、所以折算起來、仍舊
還是養騾子上算。○我[18]家裏那個
大烟鬼、不知叫我挖酷了多少回、
罵了多少頓、仍舊擋不住他喫抽
烟、你說愁人不愁人呢。○我[19]不用人
保標、若是命裏該有事、就是有保
標的、也仍舊免不了。○去[20]年我回
家看看、家裏的景況、還都依舊未
改、就是我的祖母不在了。

17 A mule may have twenty years of effective service, but a donkey has only ten or more years, so that in the aggregate, it is after all more profitable to keep mules.

18 That opium sot of ours—I don't know how often I have reproved him, or how many times I have berated him, and yet it does not prevent his smoking all the same as before. Isn't it vexatious?

19 I don't want anybody as escort. If I am fated to have trouble, even if I have an escort, it cannot after all be prevented.

20 Last year I went home for a visit; the condition of everything at home was just the same as before, save that my grandmother had died.

NOTES.

3 The Chinese hold that parental authority and filial obedience continue without change through life. The same is also true of the authority of elder brothers and uncles.

4 門 at the end of a clause nearly always takes 兒 after it. Though not always written, it is, at least in the North, nearly always spoken.

5 The souls of dead men are commonly spoken of as 鬼, albeit a man never speaks of the souls of his dead parents or ancestors as 鬼 but as 神, they being regarded as deified. Christianity, however, cannot afford to allow that a dead man is a 鬼, much less that he is or may become a 神.

9 The Southern teachers here as often insist on 要 for 得. The meaning, however, is somewhat different. 要 states a charge or requirement of the speaker; 得 expresses the requirement or necessity of the case.

10 說來說去 here means, *to talk in a roundabout way for the purpose of making a point.* It sometimes means simply to *keep up a conversation.*

11 馬不停蹄 *Horse's feet not stopping*—an expression found in novels.

12 The 的 after 誓 might be omitted without changing the sense, though the construction would be somewhat modified.

13 眵 *Sticky, bleared,*—is here used of the unpleasant, sticky sensation in the eyes often experienced when getting up early, or before one is satisfied with sleep. It gets especial force from the fact that in China poor eyes are the rule rather than the exception. The Peking equivalent is more expressive than elegant. The Nanking teacher rejects both forms, and says 把眼睛一揉, *giving my eyes a rub,* which sounds very tame. Tidy housekeepers in China no doubt wash the kettle after cooking a meal, but the general use of the phrase 刷鍋做飯 shows that the reverse order is the common practice.

14 若不然的時候 Lit., *If-not-so's time* i.e., *in case you do not.*

18 大烟鬼 *Great smoke devil;* i.e., *besotted opium smoker.* 鬼 is used as a term of reproach and contempt. The underlying idea is that the man has lost the proper characteristics of manhood, and become a demon in depravity. There are other terms of the same class, as 看錢鬼, *a miser,* 賭錢鬼, *a gambler.*

19 保標 *To convoy or escort money, treasure, or other valuables.* It is done either by soldiers, constables, or professional fighting men.

20 依舊未改, a ready-made expression, somewhat bookish.

LESSON XCVIII.

THE AUXILIARY 處.

處 is added to many adjectives and participles for the purpose of turning them into abstract nouns of quality or condition, thus 難處, the state or quality of being difficult, 好處 the state or condition or quality of being good, etc. This use of 處 is somewhat similar to that of the English termination *ness* in such words as goodness, usefulness, bitterness, etc. The words with which 處 is most commonly joined are those given in the lesson; if, however, occasion requires, it may be joined to almost any adjective or participle.

Digitized by Google

第九十八課

各[1]人有各人的難處。
是什麼去處。
裏一輩子忘不了。
找我的錯、有甚麼用處、
書。沒[9]有店家、
到處和店家、
處的風俗、
處呢。
了極處。
○家○
○享、人[14]過於
先[17]有說我
生苦我浮
若處的華。
得大短○
工家處、你[13]
夫、受。心
請○裏
到我[16]就
我們不
們的自
寓下心、
處眞○
去是你[15]
坐汚
坐磯
罷。到

他[2]經過好些險處。
○你[3]看那
大[4]處○
人[6]往處不算、
高處不算、
孫[8]先走、小處好
水往算。
低○
處、處流。
○鄭[10]天是善
○保
○出[11]於
便處。
宜○
我也
不要。
的長
處、
是
○
○
○

話雖然該說在當面光背地裏唧噥咕噥有甚麼大益處。○小[29]

天在這裏明天在那裏可也沒有甚麼大好處。○有[28]

他。○我[25]有甚麼奇處兒比我好的多着的呢。○那[27]個人、

不○便宜處。○他[24]若不在衙門裏可以上他寓處去找他。[26]

○凡[23]廟會的日子男女混雜也沒有甚麼得罪人的處去處。○

處方。○有不遮掩的。○老[21]兄進京的時候要緊給我找個地

太平藥、吃了一點損害處也沒有。○人[20]有短處大概沒有

○他[18]在明處是一樣、在暗處又是一樣。○這[19]是一種

18 He is one thing in public, and quite another in private.

19 This is a mild medicine; taking it will not do the least harm.

20 There is hardly a man having a fault who does not try to conceal it.

21 When you go to the capital, be sure and find a situation for me.

22 You have been here upwards of ten years without giving occasion of offense to any one.

23 On the occasion of fairs at the temples, men and women are mixed together without any one to control them, which gives rise to a great deal of inconvenience.

24 If he is not in the yamên, you can go to his lodgings and look for him.

25 What is there remarkable in me? There are plenty of better men than I am.

26 He is here to-day and there to-morrow. He has no certain abiding-place.

27 Although that man has no great virtues, neither has he any great vices.

28 If you have anything to say, you should say it to his face. What use is there in always grumbling behind his back?

害處 Injury, harm.

奇處 That which is remarkable or wonderful, strangeness.

住處 Place of abode, residence.

壞處 Bad habits, vices, viciousness.

趣處 Enjoyment, satisfaction, happiness.

錯處 Mistake, fault.

乖處 Perverseness; craftiness; shrewdness; peculiarity.

巧處 Ingenuity, skilfulness, cleverness.

便宜處 Convenience, fitness, opportuneness.

可惡處 That which is hateful; detestableness, hatefulness.

VOCABULARY.

磨牙 *Mo*ǒ[2] *ya*[2]. To dispute, to jangle, to ..... wrangle, *to quarrel.*

聚 *Chü*[4]. To assemble, to gather together, *to* ..... *collect*, to converge.

浮華 *Fou*[2] *hwa*[2]..... Luxurious, dissolute, *gay.*

傻說 *Sha*[3] *shwo*ǒ[1]. To talk foolishly; nonsense, ... *silly talk.*

癡說 *Ch'i*[1] *shwo*ǒ[4]..... The same.

傻笑 *Sha*[3] *hsiao*[4]. To laugh as a simpleton, ... *to giggle.*

癡笑 *Ch'i*[1] *hsiao*[4]..... The same.

汚 *Wu*[1]..... Filthy, *unclean;* polluted, vile.

穢 *Hwei*[4]... *Filthy*, dirty; obscene, vile; to defile.

汚穢 *Unclean*, defiled, polluted.

寓 *Yü*[4]. *To dwell*, to lodge; a residence; a lodg- ..... ing place; allegory.

遮掩 *Ch*ê[1] *yien*[3]. To hide, *to conceal*, to cover ..... up, to screen.

處所 *Ch'u*[4] *so*ǒ[3]..... A place, *occasion.* (s.)

混雜 *Hun*[4] *tsa*[2]..... *Mixed up*, confused.

Digitized by Google

的不肯說人的短處、答不要你偏說短處、他有好處、你不能彀說嗎。○那[30]些喫喝嫖賭的人、當時雖然覺得有些趣樂處、却不曉得還有苦處在後頭哩。○張[32]這[31]是由得自己的事情、還有甚麼難處呢。○糊文是本分人、小錯處他固然不能沒有、若說他有大壞處我却不信。○哄[33]騙人、這也是常有的事、他那個可惡處、就是單哄騙他至契的朋友。○像[34]張天德、那纔是眞乖巧呢、任憑人家用甚麼法子、他不上人家的當、這是他的乖處、他想出個法子來、人家却必上他的當、這是他的巧處。

29 I would rather not tell tales on other people. *Ans.* I don't want you specially to tell tales on him; if he has any virtues, can you not speak of them?

30 Although men who are given to profligacy think they have some enjoyment at the time, yet they do not consider that the bitterness will come by and by.

31 This is a matter that rests with yourself. What difficulty is there?

32 Chang Yao Wên is a well-behaved man. Minor faults, of course, he has, but the report that he has great vices I do not believe.

33 Deception is a matter of constant occurrence, but the hateful thing about him is that he makes a point of deceiving his especial friends.

34 Give me a man like Chang T'ien Tê for real shrewdness and skill. No matter what artifice you try, he is not to be caught—this is his shrewdness: but when he sets a trap for you, you are certain to be caught—this is his skilfulness.

整理 *Chêng³ li³*. To put in order, to set right; ... ... *to control*; to straighten up.

嘟 *Tu¹*. ... ... To mutter, to grumble.

囔 *Nang²*. ... ... To speak indistinctly.

嘟囔 To grumble and mutter in an undertone.

唧 *Chi¹,²*. To hum as an insect, *to babble, to* ... ...*mutter*.

咕 *Ku³*. ... ... To mumble, to stammer.

唧咕 *To grumble and mutter*, to murmur.

哄騙 *Hung³ p'ien⁴*. *To deceive*, to cheat, to im- ... ... pose upon, to hoax, to cozen.

可惡 *K'ê³ wu⁴*. *Hateful*, detestable; odious, ... abominable.

契 *Ch'i⁴*. A covenant, a bond; *devoted to*, sacred ... ... to. Also *hsie⁴*.

至契 *Chï⁴ ch'i⁴*. Very intimate, devotedly at- ... ... tached, bosom friends.

乖巧 *Kwai¹ ch'iao³*. *Shrewdness*, address, cun- ... ... ning, subtlety.

Notes.

3 去處 is fairly *t'ung-hsing*, but its use is much more prevalent in some places than in others.

4 This common saying is very nearly equivalent to our "Penny wise and pound foolish."

7 Bunyan's original is, "You lie at the catch again; this is not for edification."

8 善於 *good at*, is a *Wên-li* form, extensively used in colloquial.

11 The meaning is that the place to see large quantities of any article, and to buy it cheaply, is in the market, where it is collected for sale, not in the place from which it comes, or the factory in which it is made.

12 地處 is, for the most part, local in the region of Chinanfu.

14 我 is here used *generally*, which is expressed in English by using the plural.

22 十來多. In the South 多 is not added to 十來, as it frequently is in the North. The common Southern form is 十多.

23 Chinese women are very much secluded, save at religious fairs and at theatricals, where custom gives them great liberties.

29 For the use of 偏, see Les. 112.

Digitized by Google

第九十九課

二[1]人、白、的面貌相似。
人好比小孩子、一似你[2]這話實在不明
的、定不比像火燄的。[6]有理。○好[3]生氣、
天爭、不信、如一般、就[4]別的、
好常比、和中他說的、你[5]美國的、
道、比方、低瞎子、最國的、牧師、
人[8]做慣了着頭、難的、走心、
要停住、也是惡事、彷彿類似、的、
事、比方這事在不能就好比、
要人[8]道、好天定人、白、二[1]
事、比方這事在不能就好比、
要人[8]道、好天定人、白、二[1]

TRANSLATION.

1 The faces of the two are similar.
2 This language of yours is very unintelligible, it is just like the talk of a child.
3 A man who gets angry easily is like a fire-cracker; whenever the fire touches it, it explodes.
4 Don't be too strong in your disbelief; what he says seems reasonable.
5 The climate of the United States is similar to that of China.
6 When a man's conscience is dead he is like a blind man, it is very hard to keep the right road.
7 Pastor Cheng always keeps his head down when he walks, as if he were considering something in his mind.
8 A man who has fallen into the habit of doing evil, is like a man running down hill; he cannot stop if he would.
9 You find fault with me for incapacity, but suppose this business were

LESSON XCIX.

COMPARISON.

比 To compare,—like, compared with.

比方 Compare-place,—for example, suppose.

如 Like, as.

比如 Compare-like,—for example, suppose, like.

好比 Good to compare,—for instance, as if, like, much like.

如同 Like-same,—just as, as if, similar to.

似 Like, similar to.

相似 Alike, similar.

似乎 To be like, to seem as.

似的 A colloquial enclitic added at the end of a clause to fill out the force of the previous comparison. It is very much used in some places, and but little in others. It has no equivalent in good English. "Like" is sometimes used in colloquial English in a similar way, as, "He seems tired like."

類似 Class-like,—similar to, nearly like. It is a local term much used in Shantung. It is sometimes varied to **類乎似**, or **類似乎**.

像 A likeness,—like, similar.

像似 Similar-like,—just like, very like, as if.

好像 Good-similar,—just like, very like, as if, for instance.

都像 All-like,—for example, for instance.

彷佛 Similar to, as if, like.

即如 Such as, for example. (w.)

譬如 By way of illustration, similar to, may be compared to.

VOCABULARY.

彷 *Fang*[3]. . . . . To be like :—See Sub.
佛 *Fu*[2]. . . . . Like, similar,—only used in **彷佛**.
譬 *P'i*[4]. . . . *To compare;* a comparison, a parable.
美國 *Mei*[3] *Kwoh*[2]. America; the United States . . . . . of America.
牧 *Mu*[4]. . . . . *To shepherd;* to superintend.

Digitized by Google

這般的。這樣辦。○人[10]的性情、喜好爲惡、如同吸鐵石吸鐵一似般○這[11]宗族、人出來譬如一棵樹、長起來千枝萬葉、都是一根上生的。○懶[12]惰人走路、如同脚上帶着脚鐐一般。○用[14]德律風達信、正如對面說話一樣。○今[15]天的冷熱、類似乎昨天的彷彿。○比[16]方我不用人帶領路、你細細的告訴我、都是打那裏走、行不行。○我[17]想人沒受聖靈的感化、好像蠟燭沒點火似的、自己黑暗、也不能照人光明。○人[18]心似鐵、官法就如爐。○能[19]用相似的理、將所要說的理顯明出來、比喻。○樹[20]有葉子、就譬如人有肺、都是爲端

yours, it is likely that you would manage it in the very same way.

10 Man's nature delights in doing evil, just as a loadstone attracts iron.

11 One's ancestry may be compared to a tree which, when grown, has a multitude of branches and leaves all of which spring from the one root.

12 A lazy man walks as if he had hobbles on his feet.

13 Life is a hard road to travel (like a road), and money is the horse.

14 Sending a message by telephone is just like speaking face to face.

15 The temperature to-day is similar to that of yesterday.

16 Suppose I should not employ any one to guide me, but you should tell me carefully all about how to go; would that answer?

17 In my opinion, a man who has not received the influence of the Holy Spirit is like a candle which is not lighted. It is dark itself, and cannot give light to others.

18 The heart of man is like iron, the law is like the furnace.

19 A comparison consists in the use of a similar idea to set forth the idea which you wish to explain.

20 The leaves of trees may be compared

牧師 *Mu⁴ shï¹*.... A Christian pastor.
走道 *Tsou³ tao⁴*.... *To walk*, to travel.
喜好 *Hsi³ hao⁴*. *To delight in*, to be enamored of, to love.
吸 *Hsi¹*. To draw in the breath, to inspire; to suck; *to attract*, to draw.
吸鐵石 *Hsi¹ t'ie³ shï²*.... A loadstone.
宗族 *Tsung¹ tsu²*. Ancestors, *ancestry*, ancestral clan:—Note 11.
枝 *Chï¹*.... A branch, a twig:—Les. 100.
葉 *Yie⁴*.... *A leaf*, blade; a thin plate of metal.
鐐 *Liao⁴*.... A fetter, a shackle.
脚鐐 *Chiao³ liao⁴*.... Fetters, shackles, gyves.
對面 *Twei⁴ mien⁴*.... Face to face.
聖靈 *Shêng⁴ Ling²*.... The Holy Spirit.
感化 *Kan³ hwa⁴*. *To influence*, to inspire; to transform; to convert.
黑暗 *Hei¹ an⁴*.... Darkness.
光明 *Kwang¹ ming²*.... *Light;* bright, shining.
顯明 *Hsien³ ming²*. To manifest, *to set forth*, ...to make clear.
喻 *Yü⁴*.... To instruct, *to explain*, to admonish.
比喻 *Pi³ yü⁴*. An illustration, *a comparison*, a ....parable.
肺 *Fei⁴*.... The lungs.
螺 *Loă²*.... Spiral univalves; spiral, screw-like.
螄 *Sï¹*.... A gasteropodous mollusk.
螺螄. A whelk, a periwinkle.
龜 *Kwei¹*.... A tortoise, a terrapin.
烏龜 *Wu¹ kwei¹*. *A black tortoise;* a whoremonger, a satyr.
比作 *Pi³ tsoă⁴*.... To compare to or with.
銀錢 *Yin² ch'ien²*.... *Money*, specie, wealth.
糞土 *Fèn⁴ t'u³*.... *Dung*, filth.
臉面 *Lien³ mien⁴*. *Reputation*, honor, self-respect, face, influence.
義氣 *I⁴ ch'i⁴*.... Uprightness, integrity, *honor*.

Digitized by Google

氣用的。○我[21]不叫這些小人兒、在這裏吵鬧、他們就說、羊群裏跳出出駱駝來喇、這不是把我比作一個駱駝螺螄裏跳出烏龜嗎。○銀[22]錢如糞土、臉面值千金。○有[23]一個姓張的、說話起初是一竅不通、這幾天似乎懂點門路喇。○我[24]今天看見一個說相聲的、說得眞好、他學女人說話、聽着恰像女人的聲音。○打[25]抱不平、是學孩子說話、聽着恰像孩子的聲音。○甚麼意思呢、答比如摩西、看見伊及的督工人、暴打一個以色列人、他心裏就懷不平之氣、下手打那督工人、這就叫打抱不平。○看[26]劉安的相貌、如同徠獃

to the lungs of men; both are used for breathing.

21 I would not let these youngsters make a noise here, whereupon they said, "A camel has jumped out of the flock of sheep," ("A black turtle found among periwinkles"). Is not this comparing me to a camel (turtle)?

22 Money is as dung; reputation (honor) is worth thousands of gold.

23 A dumb boy named Chang is Mr. Li's pupil in learning to articulate. His mind was utterly blank at first, but these few days he seems to be getting a little idea of learning.

24 I saw a polyphonist to-day who performed first-rate. When he imitated a woman speaking, it sounded exactly like a woman's voice; when he imitated a child talking, it sounded exactly like a child's voice.

25 What is the meaning of [the phrase] vindicating the oppressed? *Ans.* For example: when Moses saw the Egyptian task-master cruelly beating an Israelite, his mind was affected with a sense of the injustice, and he at once interfered and beat the task-master. This is what is called vindicating the oppressed.

起初 *Ch'i³ ch'u¹*. *At first*, in the beginning, primarily:—Les. 126.

說相聲 *Shwo¹ hsiang⁴ shêng¹*. To mimic sounds and voices:—Note 24.

相貌 *Hsiang⁴ mao⁴*. Countenance, physiognomy, *face*.

列 *Lie⁴*. To arrange in order; to marshal; a rank, a series; regularly; severally.

徠 *Lai²*. To induce, to encourage. (w.)

徠獃臭 *Lai² tai¹ ch'ou⁴*. A clown, *a booby*; a dirty beast, a dowdy.

能耐 *Nêng² nai⁴*. Ability, potency, efficiency, *capacity*.

能爲 *Nêng² wei²*. Ability, capacity, force.

才幹 *Ts'ai² kan⁴*. *Ability*, talent, capacity.

名號 *Ming² hao⁴*. A name, *a title*, an appellation.

開頭 *K'ai¹ t'ou²*. To begin, to *lead off*, to date from:—Les. 126.

萬世 *Wan⁴ shi⁴*. Ten thousand generations, the ages, forever.

失落 *Shi¹ lo⁴*. To lose, to let slip.

NOTES.

5 The second 的 in this sentence would be left out by many speakers without at all feeling the incongruity of the construction.

9 在你身上 *On your body*; i.e., *concerned you*.

11 The initial 這 simply marks the subject of discourse. When a Chinese teacher is asked to define 宗族 he always does so by explaining the two words separately, which makes the term as a whole not a little confusing. It means ancestors, or ancestry, or ancestral clan, according to circumstances. It is a book, rather than a colloquial, term. 千枝萬葉 is an expression in the studied form of books.

13 世路 does not here form a phrase, as elsewhere, but means simply, *the course or way of life*. This is the Peking form of the saying and does not illustrate the lesson. Compare, "Money makes the mare go."

Digitized by Google

臭一般、一點不像有能爲的樣子、但是和他細談起來、就曉得他眞是個有才幹、有志氣的人。○萬事只有天作主、[27]算來半點不由人、這話一點不錯、都像秦始皇、他取那名號、就是打算從自己開頭、往下直傳到萬世、那知道打算的很遠、却失落的很快、剛到二世、就被滅了。

26 Liu An has the face of a booby; he does not look as if he had the least capacity, but if you get into conversation with him, you will find that he is a man of ability and decision.

27 The saying is quite true, that "all events are controlled by the will ot heaven; the plans of men are entirely futile." For example, Ch'in Sī Hwang took this title with the idea that from him, as the first, the succession would continue throughout the ages; but although his plans were very far-reaching they were very soon overturned, for in the second generation the dynasty was broken up.

18 The structure of this sentence is *Wén*: it becomes Mandarin only by being quoted and used as a common saying. 官法 does not mean simply the law, but all the means and methods by which officers control the people.

21 小人兒 The use of 兒 gives a diminutive touch similar to our word "youngster." Neither of the comparisons here used seems specially apt.

23 一竅不通 *Not a single orifice open*, that is, utterly stupid or blank.

24 說相聲的 A small showman who stands behind a curtain and exhibits his powers of mimicry for the entertainment of the listeners.

25 打抱不平 To interfere for the righting or the revenging of the wrongs of others.

26 徐獃臭 is a widely used phrase, but has different meanings in different places.

27 秦始皇 Lit., *Ch'in the First Emperor*. He destroyed the feudatory system of ancient times and consolidated all the petty states into one empire. He declared himself Emperor, taking the term "First Emperor" as his title. He was a man of ability, but made himself infamous by his celebrated edict ordering all books to be burned, and the chief scholars of the land to be buried alive (焚書坑儒). His son was a man of inferior ability and lost the empire bequeathed to him.

LESSON C.

CLASSIFIERS.

陣 A rank,—classifier of things that come with a sudden start, as wind, rain, smoke.

座 A seat,—classifier of hills, walled towns, temples, pagodas, etc.

場 An arena,—classifier of rain, wind, and of affairs which involve contention or emulation, as lawsuits, quarrels, examinations, etc.

枝 A twig,—classifier of slender things, as pens, pencils, arrows, etc.

鋪 To spread out,—classifier of things spread out, as beds, matting, etc.

桿 A staff,—classifier of guns, spears, steelyards, etc.

盞 A shallow cup,—classifier of lamps and wine cups.

顆 A kernel,—classifier of small round things, as beads, pearls, etc.

穗 An ear of grain,—classifier of heads or ears of grain.

粒 A grain,—classifier of things in grains, as sand, grain, etc.

牀 A bed,—classifier of bedclothes.

層 A layer,—classifier of stories, strata, tiers, specifications, etc.

掛 To hang up,—classifier of things hung up, as watches, saddles, necklaces, etc., also, in the South, of bunches of grapes.

嘟嚕 A bunch,—classifier of fruit in bunches, as grapes, bananas, etc.

Digitized by Google

第一百課

這[1]陣風颳的實在涼。○前[2]面那座山、生長的實在古怪。
○幾[3]乎風颳倒了人家的花園、和那座山的石頭、都是一樣的顏色。
這[5]鋪張惹出一場大事來。○恩[4]姐[6]們戴着三枝石榴花、
○我[10]剛纔買了再一桿伸不開腿。○每斤足十六兩。○這[9]
那[7]桿太短、不是一桿秤、是一桿古怪的秤。○正點光[8]景、
是一人一枝、兩枝一對、插在兩個瓶裏。○官司、經人調和
了、兩家都不告狀。○少下雨、多添燈。○我[10]說、可以
再添一枝。○那[7]一點兒、不算事。○今[13]年雨水調和、
五穀豐登。○時候、南地的收成、比往年分外好。○迦南
地有一座葡萄園、園裏有一座葡萄樓、樓上有一間屋、屋
裏有一張床、床上有一個人、睡在床上、看見樓頂上有一
個狐狸、在那裏嘟嚕[12]着嘴、掛[14]着兩隻蠟燭。○門口
有一座十層的寶塔。○塔前有一座石橋、橋欄是青的。○
橋欄外有一對石獅子、蹲在兩邊。○橋外有一條大路、路
上有一座城、城門口有一個衙門。○衙門口有一個鼓、鼓
旁有一個人、拿着一根棍子、打鼓。○鼓聲響亮、衙門裏
有一個官司、聽見鼓響、就叫人把原告被告帶進去、問明
了、就叫他們兩造和息了。○這[15]兩家子的官司、是我
家去了一個人、纔完結的。

TRANSLATION.

1 This wind blows decidedly cool.
2 That mountain in front of us has a very strange conformation.
3 I came near stirring up a serious affair.
4 Sister Grace is wearing three sprigs of pomegranate flowers.
5 This bed is too short; one cannot stretch out his legs.
6 By the interposition of a third party that lawsuit of theirs has been compromised.
7 That is a standard steelyard; every catty is full sixteen ounces.
8 To light one lamp only is not sufficient, you may light two candles in addition.
9 This rain came just at the right time.
10 I have just bought a pipe. How much do you think it is worth?
11 In ancient times one bunch of the grapes of Canaan was enough for two men to carry.
12 Inside the west gate of the city of Chingchon, there is a high pagoda of thirteen stories.
13 This year gave promise of full crops, but the half was destroyed by this storm of wind.
14 A black stone bridge with a vermilion red balustrade on either side.
15 We have in our house two *k'angs* and

VOCABULARY.

桿 *Kan*³. A staff, a handle, a lever, a club, a ..... pole:—see Sub.
盞 *Chan*³. A shallow cup for oil or wine:—see ..... Sub.
顆 *K'ê*¹..... A kernel, a crystal:—see Sub.
粒 *Li*⁴..... A grain, a particle:—see Sub.
穗 *Swei*⁴.... An ear, a head, a spikelet:—see Sub.
嚕 *Lu*³..... Protuberant; a bunch.
嘟嚕 *Tu*¹ *lu*³. To hang down, to pout, to be ..... down in the mouth; a bunch, a cluster:—see Sub.
前面 *Ch'ien*² *mien*⁴. *In front of*, in the fore- ..... ground, before.
古怪 *Ku*³ *kwai*⁴. Antique; *strange*, old, singu- ..... lar, exceptional, grotesque.
戴 *Tai*⁴. *To wear on the head or face;* to ..... bear; to honor.
榴 *Liu*²..... The pomegranate.
石榴 *Shi*² *liu*²..... The pomegranate.
上古 *Shang*⁴ *ku*³..... Ancient times, anciently.
塔 *T'a*³..... *A pagoda,* a tower, a pillar.
十分 *Shi*² *fên*¹. Complete, *full*, perfect; the ..... whole, entire:—Les. 137.
朱紅 *Chu*¹ *hung*²... *Vermilion red,* bright red.
欄 *Lan*². A railing, *a balustrade;* a pen, a cage, ... a paled enclosure.
杆 *Kan*¹..... A club, a staff; a pole, *a post.*
欄杆 *A balustrade,* a railing, a paling.
淒 *Ch'i*¹..... Bleak; shivering; sad, *mournful.*
淒涼 *Ch'i*¹ *liang*²..... Sad, *melancholy,* lonely.
菊 *Chü*². The aster, the marigold, the daisy, the ..... chrysanthemum.
長壽菊 *Ch'ang*¹ *shou*⁴ *chü*²..... The marigold.

Digitized by Google

○凡[16]是一座城、裏邊就有一座城隍廟。○昨[17]兒晚上、一陣風一陣雨的、那個聲兒、眞是淒涼。○南[18]園裏有一科長壽菊、開了七枝花兒、實在好看。○有[19]些散勇、偷了三百多桿洋鎗、現在被官捉住了。○這[20]五顆珠子、是我父親在蘇州買的、二百銀子一顆。○北[21]京城內有座樓、叫作翠雲樓、樓上樓下、大小有百十個閣子。○一穗穀子、大約有三千顆粒、一穗稻子、大約有一千顆粒。○一穗高粱、大約有八十顆粒。○西[23]屋那箩子、鋪張牀上、有一牀被單、三牀被子、一牀皮褥子、兩牀綿褥子、兩牀氈子、大約有一百顆粒、一穗穀子、大約有一百多顆粒。○西[24]國客店、大概都是四五層的

two beds. In the winter we sleep on the *k'angs*, and in the summer, on the beds. [to Ch'êng Hwang.

16 Every walled city has in it a temple

17 Yesterday evening the sound of the successive gusts of wind and rain was decidedly melancholy.

18 In the south garden is a marigold on which seven flowers have opened. It is very beautiful.

19 There were some discharged soldiers who stole over three hundred foreign guns. They have just been arrested by the officers.

20 These five pearls were bought by my father in Soochow for two hundred taels each.

21 In the city of Peking there is a tower called the Emerald Cloud Tower, in which there are, above and below, great and small, upwards of a hundred balconies.

22 A head of millet has, on an average, about three thousand grains; a head of sorghum has about one thousand grains; a head of wheat has about one hundred grains, and a head of rice about eighty grains.

23 On the bed in the west room there is a carpet rug, a felt rug, a fur rug, two cotton mattresses, two sheets and three quilts.

萬壽菊 *Wan⁴ shou⁴ chü²*..... The same.
勇 *Yung³*. Brave, courageous, valorous; fierce; .....*a soldier*, a brave.
粱 *Liang²*..... Millet.
高粱 *Kao¹ liang²*. Barbadoes millet, a species of ..... sorghum. *Sorghum vulgare.*
秫 *Shu⁴*..... The same. Generally doubled.
稻 *Tao⁴*..... *Growing rice*, paddy; rice.
毯 *T'an³*..... A rug, carpet, drugget.
氈 *Chan¹*..... Felt of all kinds.
客店 *K'ê⁴ tien⁴*. *An inn*, a hotel, a lodging-..... house.
被單 *Pei⁴ tan¹*..... A bed sheet.
齊全 *Ch'i² ch'üen²*. *Complete*, perfect, finished; ..... in full, all.
痢 *Li⁴*..... Dysentery, flux.
痢疾 *Li⁴ chi²*..... Dysentery.
傷寒 *Shang¹ han²*.....Typhus or typhoid fever.
餓 *Ê⁴, ngê⁴*..... Hungry, starving.
餓死 *Ê⁴ si³*..... To starve to death.
道光 *Tao⁴ Kwang¹*. The sixth Emperor of the ..... present dynasty, who reigned from 1821 to 1851.
凍死 *Tung⁴ si³*..... To freeze to death.

Notes.

2 The Chinese speak of hills as if they had grown, sometimes using 生, and sometimes 長, a result, no doubt, of their evolution ideas.

7 A 行秤 is a steelyard representing the standard weight current among the business men of a given place, and professing to give full sixteen ounces to the catty. In point of fact, however, the majority of such steelyards weigh light, when tested by the legal standard.

9 正是時候 Most learners will be inclined to say 在 for 是, and in fact 在 might be used without impropriety, but 是 is the more common and truly idiomatic form.

Digitized by Google

大樓、每人一間房、裏頭預備的手巾、臉盆、鏡子、鋪蓋、樣樣齊全、所以住店、就和在家一樣。○饆[25]不死的痢疾、餓不死的傷寒、我姐姐那一年得傷寒病、一連八天、一顆粒米也沒下去、到底還沒餓死呢。○道[26]光十五年正月二十六日、下了一場大雪、有五尺多深、因爲那一天是個好日子、所以娶親的、有許多凍死的、也有娶錯了的。

24 In western countries the inns are mostly four or five stories high; each guest has a room which is furnished with towel, wash-basin, mirror and bedding, all complete, hence staying in an inn is the same as if at home.

25 There is no danger of eating too much in dysentery, nor too little in typhoid fever. The year my sister had the fever, she did not eat a grain of rice for eight days, and yet she did not starve.

26 In the fifteenth year of Tao Kwang, on the twenty-sixth of the first month, there was a great fall of snow of over five feet deep. Because that day happened to be a lucky day, many who were getting married were frozen to death, and some even brought home the wrong wife.

10 苏袋 Not *tobacco bag or pouch*, as would seem most natural, but *tobacco pipe*. The 袋 refers to the *bowl* of the pipe.

11 In some places 穗 is used as the classifier of grapes.

12 景州 A city in Chili, about seven hundred li south of Peking. If 十三層的高塔 were transposed to 十三層高的塔, it would mean, *a pagoda thirteen stories high*.

13 The "*gave promise*" is not formally expressed, but is implied in the structure of the sentence.

17 Note here the peculiar force of 的, marking, as it does, the alternate succession of wind and rain. The phrase 那個聲兒 may be connected, either with the clause above or with the clause following, making a slight difference in meaning, which is difficult to present in an English translation.

19 散勇 *Scattered soldiers.* Soldiers are often discharged far from home, and with little or no money. They then become vagrants, ready for every species of crime.

20 二百銀子 The 兩 is left out for brevity—a common practice in colloquial.

22 高粱 Is *t'ung-hsing*, but refers mostly to the grain as growing or on the threshing floor. After it is garnered or ground into flour, it is, in most places, called 秫 or rather 秫秫. This distinction, though common, is not universal.

25 饆不死 etc, *A dysentery cannot be stuffed to death nor a typhoid fever starved to death*; that is, dysentery is a disease in which the patient need not fear eating too much, and fever is one in which he need not fear eating too little. The construction is peculiar and not easy for a beginner to analyse.

26 The fact that the day was a lucky one carries with it the necessary implication that there were many weddings on that day, which accounts for the seeming absurdity of saying that because it was a lucky day many who were getting married were frozen to death. In the excitement and dangers incident to rescuing various parties from the snow and resuscitating those who were half frozen, some of the brides were carried to the wrong place.

LESSON CI.

THE AUXILIARY VERBS 盡, 定, 完 AND 成.

盡 To exhaust,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of exhaustion or completion.

定 To fix,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of certainty or stability.

完 To finish,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of finishing or completing.

成 To effect, to complete,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of completion or maturity.

Digitized by Google

第一百一課

這[1]是會上議定的章程、不能更改。○學[2]臺到泰安、現在考完了沒有。○凡[3]事當留餘步、說盡了、却不可做盡了○已[4]經講定了價、不好再少給錢。○世[5]間的大事、必得趁着個好機會、纔能辦成。○等[6]他說完了、你再說、不要這樣插嘴、截隔人的話。○我[7]纔從王天保那裏來、他一言是不肯、所以你總要得想法子開消。○這[8]麼一點事情、三天還做不完、眞齷齪人。○怪[9]不得我們老了、你看這些後生、幾年都長成大漢子了。○若[10]沒有甚麼要緊的事情、可以等他背完了書、我再請他出來。○依[11]我看、你不表明更好、一表明、是假也弄成眞了。○若[12]叫甯老爺知

TRANSLATION.

1 This is the settled policy of the society and cannot be changed.
2 Has the chancellor completed the examinations since his arrival at T'ai An?
3 Some allowance must be made in everything. One may speak radically, but must not act radically.
4 Having settled the price it will not do afterwards to pay less.
5 In matters of importance in this world, one must seize the favorable opportunity if he would succeed.
6 Wait till he has finished speaking before you begin. You must not interpose your talk and interrupt people in this way.
7 I have just come from Wang T'ien Pao's. He absolutely refuses, therefore you will have to find some method of liquidation.
8 Such a little matter as this not finished in three days! Really you are too provoking.
9 No wonder we are growing old. Look at these young folks how, in a few years, they have come to be full grown men.
10 If you have no important business, suppose you wait till he has finished hearing his recitations and I will then ask him to come out.
11 As I see it, it would be better for you not to examine into it. As soon as you make an ado about it, what

VOCABULARY.

泰安 *T'ai⁴ an¹*. A Fu city situated at the foot of the sacred mountain, 泰山.
餘步 *Yü² pu⁴*. Something held in reserve, an *allowance*, a loophole.
插 *Ch'a¹*. To insert, to thrust into; to interfere or meddle; *to interrupt*.
插嘴 *Ch'a¹ tswei³*. To interrupt in speaking.
言定 *Yien² ting⁴*. Positively, unequivocally, *absolutely*.
開消 *K'ai¹ hsiao¹*. To pay off, to settle up, to discharge, *to liquidate*.
甯 *Ning⁴*. A surname.
後生 *Hou⁴ shêng¹*. Children; *young folks*.
往常 *Wang³ ch'ang²*. *Hitherto*; usual, ordinary.
詩經 *Shï¹ ching¹*. The book of poetry,—originally collated by Confucius.
二五眼 *Êr⁴ wu³ yien³*. Mean, scrubby, shabby, beggarly.
二五不當 *Êr⁴ wu³ pu⁴ tang⁴*. Same.
兆 *Chao⁴*. An omen, a sign; a trillion.
菓木 *Kwoǒ³ mu⁴*. Fruits generally.
蹭 *Ts'êng⁴*. *To rub past*, to miss by a little. See *tsêng⁴*.
蹭工 *Ts'êng⁴ kung¹*. To kill time, to dawdle, to dilly-dally, *to idle time*.
下緊 *Hsia⁴ chin³*. To hurry up; diligent.
决 *Chüe²*. *To decide*, to settle; positively.

Digitized by Google

道、他們却不了得不了成。○學[13]房往常的規矩、都是念完了四書、

再念詩經、如今也有先念詩經、後念四書的。○劉[14]玉子的

親事、你給他辦成了沒有、答嗯、他那個二五眼不當的樣子、

誰肯和他結親呢。○王[15]兆舉那個病、死也不死不了、活也不活、

不成。○雖[16]說人的良心、已經喪盡、却仍有發現的時候。○

得活。○這[17]園裏的菓木、赶明天怕摘不完、你還直蹭工、不

摘。○辦[18]事總得決斷、不可猶豫不定。○現[20]在黃[19]泉路上無老少、

誰能保定自己、必要活到明天呢。○飯

也喫完了、從來說、客去主人安、我們不如告辭散了罷。○

要[21]戒忌大烟、必得拿定了主意、至死一口不喫、但是姚謹德、

is false will be regarded as true.

12 If Ning Lao Yie finds it out, they will be in a strait.

13 Hitherto the general custom in schools has been to finish committing the Four Books before taking up the Odes; but there are some now-a-days who first commit the Odes and afterwards the Four Books.

14 Did you get that marriage engagement of Lin Yü-tsi's settled? *Ans.* Humph! who would be willing to make a marriage alliance with such a scarecrow as he is?

15 That disease of Wang Chao Chü's is such as to keep him lingering along more dead than alive.

16 Although we may say a man has lost all conscience, yet the time will come when his conscience will revive.

17 I fear you will not get the fruit in this orchard all gathered by to-morrow, and yet you are persistently idling away time and not pushing the work.

18 In business you should decide promptly, and not hesitate in uncertainty.

19 The grave makes no distinction of old or young. Who can guarantee that he himself will certainly live until to-morrow?

20 We have now finished drinking the wine and eating the food. It is an old saying, "When the guests are gone the host is at rest." We would

---

决斷 *Chüe³ twan⁴.* *To decide;* positive, decided, ... determined, certain.

猶豫 *Yiu² yü⁴.* Undecided, wavering, *hesitating,* ..... uncertain.

泉 *Ch'üen².* ..... A spring, a fountain.

黃泉路 *Hwang² ch'üen² lu⁴.* *The grave;* ..... Hades:—Note 19.

告辭 *Kao⁴ ts'i².* To take leave, to ask to be ..... excused.

姚 *Yao².* ..... Handsome, *a surname.*

皮肉 *P'i² jou⁴.* ... The body, the physical man.

家財 *Chia¹ ts'ai².* ..... Property, *patrimony.*

順從 *Shun⁴ ts'ung².* To obey, *to follow the* ..... *wishes of another,* to gratify.

子孫 *Tsï³ sun¹.* ..... Descendants, posterity.

豪 *Hao².* Eminent, superior; martial, brave; a .....leader, *a champion.*

傑 *Chie².* ... One eminent for virtue and prowess.

豪傑 *A hero,* a knight, a champion.

機謀 *Chi¹ mou².* *Strategy;* manœuvre; trick, ... wile, device.

礀 *K'an³.* ..... A ledge, a dike, *a sill.*

象牙 *Hsiang⁴ ya².* ... An elephant's tusk, ivory.

扇 *Shan⁴.* ... *A fan;* leaf of a door, window, etc.

股 *Ku³.* The thigh, the rump; a share in busi- .....ness; a chapter, a head; a proportion, a quota; *a strand, a rib.*

磕 *Ch'a¹.* To break off, to snap in two. [Not ..... aspirated in Shantung.] Also *ch'a².*

齊各磕 *Ch'i² kê⁴ ch'a¹.* Snapped off, square ..... off, square in two.

腕 *Wan⁴.* ..... A flexible or universal joint.

脚腕 *Chiao³ wan⁴.* ..... The ankle-joint.

踒 *Wo¹.* ... To double up; to wrench, *to sprain.*

Digitized by Google

是一個愛惜皮愛肉的人、所以我看定他戒忌不
了。○爲[22]父母的喪事、費盡家財、那赶上父母
在堂、氣給子呢。叫父母[23]喫點子、穿點子、順從他、不惹他
生分、十分精明使盡了、養的兒孫不如一
人、所以從古有許多英雄豪傑、用盡他的機
謀、誰也制不得了他、但他養的兒孫、多有二五
不知一十的。○我[24]從家裏往外一走、叫門磞
跌了一跌、把我的象牙扇骨子、齊各鏟的
絆了一跌、把腕子蹉得也腫了。

better tender our acknowledgments and take our departure.

21 In order to break off opium, one must resolve not to touch it if he dies [for want of it]. But Yao Chin Tê is a very self-indulgent man. I am confident he cannot break it off.

22 To spend all your patrimony on your father's and mother's funerals is by no means as good as to give them something to eat and something to wear while they are still alive, and to follow their wishes and not provoke them to anger.

23 The saying is, "Use only nine parts of your shrewdness, reserve one part for the benefit of your children." If you use your shrewdness to the utmost, your children will be inferior. Hence it is that from ancient times there have been many champions and heroes whom, if they put forth all their strategy, no one could match, who yet have brought up children most of whom did not know that twice five make ten.

24 As I was going out at the door I stumbled and fell over the door sill, breaking the ivory frame of my fan square in two, and wrenching my ankle so that it is quite swollen.

Notes.

1 Note the difference between 議定 and 一定. The first means *settled, decided upon*, the second *fixed, certain*. They are only distinguished by a tone, and are easily confused in speaking.

3 留餘步 *To make some abatement from the strict rule of equity or prerogative as a measure of conciliation or of precaution.*

7 開消 is sometimes used of satisfying an obligation or demand other than monetary. The proper translation in this place depends on what it was that Wang T'ien Pao absolutely demurred to.

11 表明 *To make manifest*, here means to take up some charge or slander, deny it and demand investigation for the purpose of clearing oneself.

15 In its literal construction the Chinese says that the *disease* is "more dead than alive." The meaning, however, is that the *person* is in this condition on account of the disease. Such a grammatical incongruity is not appreciated by the average Chinese speaker or writer.

14 二五眼 is a widely used colloquial phrase, the writing and analysis of which are uncertain. Some prefer to write 二無眼, that is *both eyes gone, good for nothing at all*. The other form may mean, *Won't pawn for ten* [*twice five*] *cash*.

16 Or, *there are still times when it revives.*

18 猶豫不定 *A state of uncertainty,*—a book phrase, but in common use.

19 黃泉路 *The yellow spring road*, a poetical description of the grave.

20 Social enjoyment has but little to do with a Chinese feast. It is simply a feast of eating and drinking. When this is over the sooner the guests go the better.

21 愛惜皮肉 *To be tender of oneself, to be afraid of any hardship or physical pain, self-indulgent.* 惜皮愛肉 is a rhetorical transposition of the same phrase.

22 那 is interrogative and a contraction for 那裡; 在堂 *in the hall*, that is, *alive*.

23 精明 here means *shrewdness*, especially such as involves craft in overreaching others. It is often replaced in this connection by 精細. The proverb expresses a superstition that a man of great shrewdness, who uses his abilities to the utmost to overreach others, and to protect himself from suffering the least wrong, will have stupid children.

24 絆了一跌. In Peking 跌 is read *tsai*[1] in this connection.

Digitized by Google

第一百二課

這[1]部書我從來沒見。
閉不開。○王[3]天雲的腿、教給[4]我貼體己己
約能衙門濕淋淋大該上在巧的見話、
道臺裏都凍破了。邪惡氣味、叫神[8]先生不聞一欽、倒欽了。○張[9]家我[10]文章、原作見還有點就好、○席。○從[7]多日找他、透了。着、今的李布盖話、
家給叫文章、我裏都凍破了。邪惡氣味、叫神[8]先生不聞一欽、倒欽了。○張[9]家我[10]文章、原作見還有點就好、○席。○從[7]多日找他、透了。着、今的李布盖話、
大該上在巧的見話、
閉不開。書我從來沒見。
○王[3]天雲的腿、教給[4]我貼體己己
淋淋大該上在巧的見話、
能○我
門濕淋淋大該上在巧的見話、
去透天來
了。赴了。雲沒
○席。○的看
○我[5]腿、見。
○這[6]在給教○
幾天狗若[2]
天津咬遇
的破見
時了。人
候、○家
膽有[4]說
見雨貼體
李布己己
水中盖話、
甕缸、堂、着、就

Translation.

1 I have never seen this book before.
2 If you happen upon persons speaking together privately, you should keep away from them.
3 Wang T'ien Yün's leg was torn by a dog.
4 Being covered with a waterproof cloth, it will not likely be wet through.
5 When I was in Tientsin, I got a sight of Li Chung-t'ang as he was going to the Taotai's office to a feast.
6 It has been very cold these few days; our water jar was burst even in the house.
7 After having searched for him for a long time without success, I luckily met him to-day.
8 Who can comprehend the ways of God?
9 Chang Ta Wên's essay was originally very good, but it has been ruined by the teacher's corrections.
10 I smell a little bad odor in this room; do you not smell it?
11 Let the two families first fully understand each other, and there is nothing that can not be settled.
12 This is not a case of assault and battery, there will be no harm done if you do wait a few days.
13 Before I could get on my rain coat I was wet through all over.

LESSON CII.

The Auxiliary Verbs 見 透, and 破.

見 To perceive,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of perception.

透 To pass through,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of penetrating.

破 To split, to detect,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of splitting, or of detecting.

Vocabulary.

貼己 *T'ie[1] chi[3].* Partial to self; personal, *private,* intimate.

中堂 *Chung[1] t'ang[2].* A minister of state:—Note 5.

道臺 *Tao[4] t'ai[2].* The intendent of circuit, commonly called Taotai, an officer next in rank above a Chifu, and having functions partly civil and partly military.

甕 *Wêng[4].* A water pot or amphora.

參 *Ts'an[1].* *To examine,* to compare; to mix, to mingle; to prepare; to visit a superior; to impeach. Also *ts'ên[1]* and *shên[1].*

原作 *Yüen[2] tsoà[4].* The original copy or model, *the original.*

邪味 *Hsie[2] wei[4].* A mouldy mephitic smell, *a bad odor,* a stench.

Digitized by Google

渾身都濕透了。○我[14]沒防備、叫他一把、把我的衣裳撕破了。○還[15]有七八里路、一上這個山嶺、就望見喇。○王[16]金堂那個人、成事不足、敗事有餘、好事他也能辦壞了。○我[17]請他、就是要他講醫書給我聽、他若是識不透那些字、怎麼能講得透呢。○從[18]來沒遇見像你這樣不懂理的、你是一個男子漢、怎麼和人家的女人打罵呢、你忘了男不和女鬥的話嗎。○再[19]給我做襪子、要肥一點兒、這雙太瘦、還沒等着穿破、就先撐破了。○那[20]座廟已經破爛了多年、這遍我去看見、又修的煥然一湛新新的。○話[21]不說不知、木不鑽不透、把話說開了、就和木頭鑽透[22]

14 I was not on my guard when, with one clutch, he tore my clothes.
15 We have still seven or eight li; when we have ascended this hill we can see it.
16 That man Wang Chin T'ang has more capacity for failing than he has for succeeding; he can make a mess of the most feasible business.
17 The very purpose for which I engaged him was to explain [certain] medical books to me. If he does not know all the characters, how can he explain the books?
18 I have never met such a senseless fellow as you. How is it that you, a man, fight and wrangle with another man's wife? Have you forgotten the saying, "A man must not fight with a woman?"
19 When you make me another pair of stockings, I want them a little wider; these are too tight; they burst before they were worn out.
20 That temple had been in ruins many years, but when I visited it this time, it was repaired and glittering in a brand new dress.
21 "Words unspoken remain unknown; wood not bored is still unpenetrated." Speaking things out plainly is like boring through the wood.
22 When one has seen through the ways

惡氣 *É⁴ ch'i⁴.* *An offensive smell;* a poisonous gas.
毆 *Ou¹.* *To fisticuff,* to maul; to wrangle.
鬥毆 *Tou⁴ ou¹.* To fight, to brawl; *assault and battery.*
嶺 *Ling³.* A ridge, a mountain range.
山嶺 *Shan¹ ling³.* A range of hills or mountains; *the crest of a hill.*
破爛 *P'o⁴ lan⁴.* Torn, tattered; dilapidated, *in ruins.*
狼 *Lang².* A wolf; cruel, fierce.
狽 *Pei⁴.* An animal similar to a wolf, a jerboa.
狼狽 Destroyed, broken down, used up, *in ruins*:—Note 20.
煥 *Hwan⁴.* Brilliant, resplendent. (w.)
湛 *Chan⁴.* Deep; to steep, to imbibe; very, *exceeding*:—Les. 142.
煥然湛新 *Hwan⁴ jan² chan⁴ hsin¹.* Resplendently new, shining in a new dress:—Note 20.
煥然一新 *Hwan⁴ jan² i¹ hsin¹.* The same.
點火 *T'ien³ hwo³.* To strike a match, to strike a fire with flint and steel.
斜 *Hsie², hsia².* *Oblique,* inclined, awry; diagonal; distorted.
夢見 *Mêng⁴ chien⁴.* To see in a dream, to dream of.
失火 *Shi¹ hwo³.* To take fire, to have a conflagration:—Note 25.
謀合 *Mou² hê².* To scheme, *to plan,* to plot together.
局 *Chü².* Contracted, confined; *an affair,* an enterprise; a company, a club; a manufactory; a depôt; head-quarters.

Digitized by Google

了一樣。○看[22]破世事懶睜眼。○趕[23]脚的去點火吃
菸的工夫、牲口就在前頭驚了、馱子也翻了、把我
的兩個皮箱、都摔壞咯。○這[24]孩子的眼、從小帶點
斜、以後好了、今年上學念書的時候、叫先生一巴
掌又打壞了。○我[25]昨天黑夜、做了一個夢、夢見又
失火、又吃包子、必主今天要生氣、答說破大吉、說
破了就好喇。○昨[26]天大家商量的事情、已經有七
八成、誰料想有個局外人、一句話弄壞了。○管[27]倉
的監督、和看倉的花戶、通同作弊、將倉裏的米、偷
出了許多、現在叫大人查破了。

of the world, he is loath to open his eyes.

23 While the muleteer went to light his pipe, the mule going on took fright, and, overturning his load, broke both of my leather trunks.

24 From childhood this boy's eyes had a slight squint, but by and by they became right. While he was going to school this year, the teacher gave him a box on the ear which made them as bad as ever.

25 I had a dream last night in which I dreamed that the house caught fire, and that I was eating dumplings, which certainly means that I will get in a passion to-day. *Ans.* "Whatever is solved becomes good fortune;" having solved it, it will be all right.

26 The business we were all planning yesterday was in a fair way to succeed, when an outsider unexpectedly came along and by a single word spoiled it all.

27 The overseer of the storehouses and the subordinates in charge all conspired together and stole a large quantity of the rice in the storehouse. Their superior officer has just now found it out.

局外 *Chü wai*[4]..... An outsider, a looker-on.

倉 *Ts'ang*[1]. *A granary, a storehouse;* hurried, ... flurried. [See *chien*[1].

監 *Chien*[4].....To examine, to inspect; to revise.

監督 *Chien*[4] *tu*[1]. *An overseer,* a superintendent, ... an inspector; a bishop.

花戶 *Hwa*[1] *hu*[4]. The people; tax-payers. *Subor-* ..... *dinate keepers of the imperial store-house.* (N.)

差役 *Ch'ai*[1] *i*[4]. Attendants, retainers, *subor-* ..... *dinates.*

通同 *T'ung*[1] *t'ung*[2]. All, the whole:—same as ..... 通統.

弊 *Pi*[4]..... *Corrupt,* vicious; deteriorated.

作弊 *Tsoò*[2] *pi*[4]. To cheat, to embezzle, to ..... swindle, *to steal public funds.*

查 *Ch'a*[2]..... To examine, to inquire into.

NOTES.

2 The reason why 見 is added to words meaning to meet, is that meeting brings the object to the perception of the senses.

3 咬破 is to bite so as to produce a bleeding wound.

4 The Chinese use oiled cotton cloth to protect them from the rain. 淋 limits the meaning to *rain,* while 濕 leaves it indefinite as to how the water comes, whether by raining, splashing or soaking. 淋, however, is not used in the South.

5 李中堂, usually called by his proper name, 李鴻章. The term 中堂 is an official title, corresponding approximately to *minister* or *cabinet officer,* usually translated Grand Secretary. There are four—two principal (正) and two vice (副), two being Chinese and two Manchus.

7 從多日 *From many a day;* i. e., *for a long time.*

8 A heathen reading this sentence would doubtless take 神 in the plural. As Chinese has no plural form, the distinction of singular and plural has to be gathered from the context, or from general usage. Ambiguities of this kind are frequent in Chinese.

16 成事不足敗事有餘. *In capacity to accomplish he is deficient, of capacity to ruin he has an excess.* 好事 *A good thing;* i. e., any business or affair, that is free from embarrassing circumstances.

20 In Peking 狼狽 is only applied to persons, but in general Mandarin it is also applied to houses, and generally to anything in a state of disorder or ruin. 煥然湛新 is somewhat bookish. 然 is used as a 虛字, or *empty character,* as characters used for the sake of euphony are called.

Digitized by Google

第一百三課

他[1]鋪排這麼些活、我們怎麼個
各[2]人有各人的筆法。○現[3]在天朝做法
海防、大概都用德國兵法。○算[4]法有四
個大法子、爲根本、就是加法、減法、乘
除的法。你[5]又受了他的拖拖喇、像你這
樣的要玩要變[6]戲法。○拖糖
法的、都是用的手法、不是用的什麼邪
法。聽他[7]講的一點次序也沒有、叫人怎
麼個聽法、怎麼個記法呢。○先[8]生打學
生、雖說應當、也但看是怎麼個打法。○

Translation.

1 How can we get through with so much work as all this which he has laid out for us?
2 Every man has his own handwriting.
3 At the present time the soldiers on the coast defence in the Celestial Empire, for the most part use the German drill.
4 Arithmetic has four chief rules which are fundamental, viz., addition, subtraction, multiplication and division.
5 You have been again imposed upon by him, have you? With this way of collecting, you will never get anything.
6 Jugglers always depend upon sleight of hand, not upon anything supernatural.
7 There is not the least order in his exposition, how can one either understand or remember it?
8 Although it is admitted that a teacher should whip his pupils, yet all depends on how he whips.

21 The idea of the sentence is that mutual misunderstandings disappear when the parties speak plainly face to face.

22 A proverb, signifying that to know the world is to be disgusted with it.

24 一巴掌 *One slap.* 打 is omitted in anticipation of its use just below.

25 失火 *To lose fire*, that is, to forget or neglect the fire, and so allow it to grow into a conflagration. 主 is used as a verb to express the idea of *meaning* or *signifying*. Its use corresponds to our phrase, "*which is a sign.*" The Chinese suppose that if a dream portending ill fortune is understood in advance of its accomplishment, it then becomes an omen of good fortune.

LESSON CIII.

The Modal Affix.

法 is much used as an affix to verbs, to denote the manner of the action. It is sometimes also joined to nouns, which it practically turns into verbs,—thus 兵法 means *drill*, but must be analysed, as *the method of drilling soldiers, or of soldiering*. In all cases 法 is without accent, and in speaking tends to take an enclitic 子 or 兒. When it takes the accent it is not an affix. In all cases in which 法 makes any special modification of the meaning of the verb, a definition is given in the vocabulary. For list of words taking 法, see Supplement.

Vocabulary.

做法 *Tsoù*[4] *fa*[3]. Method of doing or working, ... style.

筆法 *Pi*[3] *fa*[3]..... Style of writing, chirography.

天朝 *T'ien*[1] *ch'ao*[2]. The Celestial Empire, ... China :—Note 3.

海防 *Hai*[3] *fang*[2]..... Coast guard or defence.

德國 *Tê*[2] *kwoù*[2]..... The German Empire.

兵法 *Ping*[1] *fa*[3]..... Method of drilling, drill.

算法 *Swan*[4] *fa*[3]. Mathematics, *arithmetic*:— ..... Note 4.

加法 *Chia*[1] *fa*[3]. Method of adding, addition ..... in mathematics.

減 *Chien*[3]..... To diminish; *to subtract.*

減法 *Chien*[3] *fa*[3]..... Subtraction.

乘 *Ch'êng*[2]. To ride, to mount; to take advan- ..... tage of; *to multiply.* See *ch'êng*[4].

Digitized by Google

過[9]日子要儉省是不錯的、但若是太儉省了、也不是個正經過法。○這[10]麼一些個零碎東西、又沒有個籠子、叫我怎麼個拿法呢。○—[11]樣的事情、各人有各人的辦法、不能拘定一個死法子。○您[13]的孩子這[12]樣礙口的話、叫我怎樣說法呢。○打人罵人、你一點兒也不管、慣孩子還有這樣的慣法嗎。○王[14]顏歐柳的字、寫法雖不一樣、却都有骨力。○先[15]生怎樣的教法、學生就怎樣的學法、所以古語說、師傅不明徒弟拙、眞是不錯。○中[16]國一個字、常見有五六個念法、又有七八

9 It is true that one should be economical in his way of living, but to be too saving is not a proper manner of living.

10 All these odds and ends of things and no basket! How am I to carry them?

11 Though the business be the same, each man has his own way of managing it. You cannot establish one invariable rule.

12 How can I use such unbecoming language as this?

13 Your children beat and insult others, and yet you pay no attention to them! What reason is there in indulging children to such an extent as this?

14 Although Wang, Yien, Ou and Liu's styles of writing are not the same, yet they are all vigorous.

15 As the master teaches so the pupil learns; hence the old saying, "An inferior master makes a stupid pupil," is quite correct.

16 In Chinese it constantly occurs that one character has five or six pronunciations and seven or eight meanings, so that the Chinese literary style is very difficult to learn.

乘法 *Ch'êng² fa³*.....Multiplication.
除法 *Ch'u² fa³*.....Division.
搪 *T'ang²*.... To extend; to ward off; to evade.
拖 *T'oŏ¹*. To drag along; to hang down; to .....lead; to implicate; *to protract.*
搪拖 To evade, to postpone, *to impose upon by false promises.*
要法 *Yao⁴ fa³*. Manner of collecting money, ... manner of dunning.
手法 *Shou³ fa³*.....Skill or sleight of hand.
邪法 *Hsie² fa³*.... Sorcery, *magic*, witchcraft.
儉省 *Chien³ shêng³*. To save, *to be economical*, ... to be frugal.
過法 *Kwoŏ⁴ fa³*..... Style or mode of living.
礙口 *Ai⁴ k'ou³*. *Unbecoming* (language), not .....fit to be spoken.
歐 *Ou¹*..... A surname.
柳 *Liu³*..... Willow; striped; *a surname.*
寫法 *Hsie³ fa³*. *Style of writing*, handwriting, ... penmanship.
骨力 *Ku³ li⁴*..... Strength, *vigor*, firmness.
徒弟 *T'u² ti⁴*. A disciple, *a pupil*, an ap-.....prentice.
念法 *Nien⁴ fa³*. Mode of reading, *pronunciation.*
講法 *Chiang³ fa³*. Mode of explaining, or preach-.....ing; *meaning*, definition.
文理 *Wên² li³*..... The literary or book style.
家法 *Chia¹ fa³*. *The rules of a family*, family ..... government.
國法 *Kwoŏ² fa³*. *The laws of a country*, statutes, ... government.
民 *Min²*. The people—as distinguished from .....the officials.
子民 *Tsï³ min²*. The people, the subjects of a ..... government, *citizens.*
徐 *Hsü²*..... Grave; slow; *a surname.*
索 *Soŏ⁴,¹*. To search; *to demand*, to exact. See ..... *soŏ³* and *soŏ²*.
勒索 *Lê¹ soŏ¹*. To constrain, *to extort*, to ..... "squeeze."
尋常 *Hsun² ch'ang²*..... Ordinary, usual.
委 *Wei³*. *To sustain*; to delegate, to depute; a ..... wrong, a grievance; to reject.

Digitized by Google

個講法、所以中國文理、是最難學的。○俗[17]語說、家有家法、國有國法、又說、人隨王法草隨風、你既是大清國的子民、還能不守大清國的王法嗎。○徐[18]安仁那個勒索法、眞是非同尋常。○問[19]官司、必得委曲婉轉的、問出底理原情來、方見官的斷才、若不論曲直、上堂就打、這樣的問法、誰還不會呢。○西[20]國的樂法、是用兜類米乏叟拉替七個音編成的、中國是用凡工尺上一四合七個音編成的。

17 It is a common saying, "The family has its rules, and the country its laws"; also, "Men yield to the laws as the grass to the wind." Seeing you are a Chinese subject can you do otherwise than obey Chinese laws?

18 Such extortion as that of Hsü An Jên's is certainly exceptional.

19 In trying a case in court, if the officer would show his skill as a judge, he must ask questions in an indirect and specious way so as to bring out the bottom facts of the case. If, without regard to the merits of the case, he begins to beat as soon as the parties appear—who could not try a case in this way?

20 The western system of musical notation involves the use of the seven syllables; do, re, mi, fa, sol, la, t'i. The Chinese system involves the use of the seven syllables, fan, kung, ch'i, shang, i, sï, hê.

委曲 *Wei³ ch'ü¹*..... *Indirect*, circuitous.
婉 *Wan³*..... Yielding, obliging, *winsome*.
婉轉 *Wan³ chwan³*. Plausible, *specious*, round-
..... about.
原情 *Yüen² ch'ing²*. Original idea, original facts
..... or circumstances.
斷才 *Twan⁴ ts'ai²*. Judicial faculty, capacity
..... for judging and deciding.
問法 *Wên⁴ fa³*. Mode of asking; *style of hear-*
..... *ing a case at law*.
樂法 *Yüe⁴ fa³*. Musical notation, system of
..... music.
兜 *Tou¹*. A bib, a pouch, a sling; to carry in a
..... fold of the dress, or in an apron.
叟 *Sou³*..... An old man, venerable sir. (w.)
編 *Pien¹*. To braid, to plait; *to arrange*; to
..... compose (a book or tune).

NOTES.

1 The use of 個, as here, is a little peculiar. It gives an emphasis somewhat similar to the use of the word "sort" in English,—as if we should translate, *He has laid out all this work for us, in what sort of a way can we get it done?* It is so used several times in this lesson. When used in this way it is nearly always followed by 法, expressed or understood.

3 天朝 *Heavenly Dynasty*. This is the high sounding title by which the Chinese delight to call their own country, and which has given rise to the term "Celestial Empire."

4 算法 is often used vaguely for mathematics in general, but is here, as often, restricted to arithmetic. Strictly speaking 乘 is to multiply by several digits, whilst 因 signifies to multiply by one digit. Also 除 properly means "long division," whilst 歸 signifies "short division." 乘 and 除 are constantly used, however, to signify the processes of multiplication and division at large.

5 Kiukiang rejects both 搪拖 and 拖 and says 搪抵.

6 In 戲法 and 邪法, the 法 is emphasized, and does not properly fall within the lesson. 手法 illustrates the lesson.

9 正經過法 *Regular or proper mode of living*. When economy is pushed to such an extreme as to interfere with health and decency, it is not a 正經過法. The use of 也 implies a contrast with the opposite extreme of extravagance.

11 死法, with the accent on 死, means *manner of dying, or of suffering death*, but with the accent on 法, it means, *one invariable and unalterable rule*.

13 慣 means properly *to acquire a habit*, but here, *to indulge in, or allow the acquisition of a bad habit*.

14 王顏歐柳 are the names of four renowned penmen, living in different ages. Fac-similes of their

Digitized by Google

第一百四課

請[1]○總總務要得人。必[11]事主動的
他[3]那得須要得意、情要○把法靜。
明把在論論錢[8]交。報待若我[14]、○子
天芭。理。張友○總待若必須
務蕉○羅待[10]、你要要了
必扇[5]。下、客。是必追叫行
早、子。生○總我究我得
來。你[7]要的出解消實
○恭[4]們得必親。來恨在
這[2]定常。做敬、自○必方好
件。給有丈○總去[13]若得
我事。找生的、守拿[16]他瘟
你出總管。須我我殺他疹
得要[9]他須要見把○
原[6]你愛、仇。規誰[15]最必要
話總婦。我○的看好

TRANSLATION.

1 Ask him to be sure to come early tomorrow.
2 You must certainly excuse me in this matter.
3 You must not fail to find that palm-leaf fan for me.
4 You must talk reasonably.
5 It is necessary that scholars should constantly have a teacher to control them.
6 You must, by some means, collect the money.
7 You who are husbands should love your wives.
8 In intercourse with friends, and in receiving guests, one must not fail to be respectful.
9 I shall certainly repay this enmity with which he has treated me.
10 You are my pupils, and you must keep my rules.
11 In order to bring the affair to an end, you will have to go and see him yourself.
12 I am determined to find out who originated this idea.
13 If you want to arrest him, you must look well to the circumstances.
14 Nothing but his death will appease my hatred.
15 The best plan needs to be executed in earnest in order to make it a success.

penmanship are used in schools as copies. The Chinese lay great stress on good penmanship.

16 常見 *might* stand at the opening of the sentence, instead of in its present position. The statement is a little exaggerated. It applies to *Wên-li* far more than to Mandarin.

17 法, in this sentence, means *rule* or *law* and scarcely comes under the lesson. 大清 is the dynastic title of the present Tartar dynasty.

18 非同尋常 *Not as usual*; i. e., *exceptional*. A ready-made phrase in the literary style.

19 底理原情 *Primary reason* and *original motive*.

LESSON CIV.

WORDS AND PHRASES DENOTING NECESSITY.

務必 } Should, must, certainly must, be sure
務要 } and, by all means. Often used to express a wish or a charge.

必得 } Must, positively must, without fail,
必要 } necessary. Southern Mandarin avoids 得 and prefers 要.

須 Ought, requisite, must. Rarely used alone in Mandarin, and then usually in proverbs, or in expressions taken from books.

必須 Must, have to, necessary.

須要 Should, ought, must. A bookish term.

總 In any case, no matter how,—a word of many uses. To denote necessity it is joined with 要, 得 and 須.

總要 Must, must in any case, bound to.

總得 Must, should, by all means, whether or not.

總須 Must, certainly must.

切 (with a negative) By no means, not for anything.

萬 (with a negative) Must not, not for the world, be sure not.

千萬 Same as 萬, but stronger.

Digitized by Google

脫退志。必要得望[19]兄長留心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
皮。○要得望[19]兄長留心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
○所[17]有犯法的、總得究辦。○凡[18]讀書的、務要立
犯法的、總得究辦。○凡[18]讀書的、務要立
法的、總得究辦。○凡[18]讀書的、務要立
的、總得究辦。○凡[18]讀書的、務要立
總得究辦。○凡[18]讀書的、務要立
得究辦。○凡[18]讀書的、務要立
究辦。○凡[18]讀書的、務要立
辦。○凡[18]讀書的、務要立
○凡[18]讀書的、務要立
凡[18]讀書的、務要立
讀書的、務要立
書的、務要立
的、務要立
務要立

16 After epidemic scarlet fever, the patient's skin is sure to peel off.
17 It is important to bring all law-breakers to justice.
18 Every student should fix his determination.
19 I trust you will be cautious; by no means allow yourself to despise your enemy.
20 These two boxes must be securely bound in order to satisfactory carriage.
21 In filial piety every one should exert himself to the utmost.
22 You must never, because you yourself are clever, ridicule others for being stupid.
23 Although the desire to return home is always strong, still you must not think of starting before you have regained your strength.
24 You must not fail to write and tell me whether you have received the things or not.
25 If you would gain the esteem of men, you must not treat them contemptuously.
26 It is necessary to coax children a little; you should not be always threatening them.
27 If you wish to go to that place, be sure you go to the yamên and procure a passport.

志。必要得望[19]兄長留心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
必要得望[19]兄長留心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
要得望[19]兄長留心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
得望[19]兄長留心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
望[19]兄長留心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
兄長留心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
長留心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
留心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
心、切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
切不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
不可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
可輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
輕看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
看仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
仇敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
敵。凡[18]讀書的、務要立
凡[18]讀書的、務要立
讀書的、務要立
書的、務要立
的、務要立
務要立

己有主意、不可光隨喜從人。○要[29]爲人上人、須受苦中苦

苦。○喫[30]了人的桑、總得給人家做個繭。○各[31]樣兒的道理呀。○若[32]人犯不齊、十天半月必須伺候、憑你有天塌的大事、也不得回去。○一切[33]須要省儉、纔是過日子可去賭錢喫酒、不可和人打架、不可暗地積攢銀錢、將自己的老婆孩子、不顧參娘。○若[34]看見路上有小紙包、彷彿銀子似的、千萬不要眼熱、因爲這都是騙人的法子、你當牢記在心。○無[35]論是頭役、是總頭役、都不可靠、萬別信他

28 In whatever he does, a man should make up his own mind and not always follow the lead of others.

29 He who would rise superior to others must endure the severest toil.

30 When you have eaten a man's mulberry leaves, you must not fail to make a cocoon for him.

31 To be frugal and economical in all things—this is the secret of prosperity.

32 If the accused are not all present, you will have to remain in waiting ten days or a fortnight. No matter how momentous your business you could not return.

33 You must not gamble nor drink; you must not quarrel with people; you must not be too fond of your wife and children, laying by money for them to the neglect of your father and mother.

34 If you see a small parcel on the road resembling a packet of silver, by no means pick it up; nor allow yourself to covet it if you see another person pick it up; for these are all tricks for cheating people. Be sure you bear this well in mind.

尊重 *Tsun¹ chung⁴.* To honor, *to respect,* to ... hold in esteem.

慢待 *Man⁴ tai⁴.* To treat discourteously *or with contempt,* to dishonor.

頌 *Sung⁴.* *To praise,* to eulogize, to extol.

哄頌 *Hung³ sung⁴.* To coax, to divert, to conciliate. (L.)

嚇呼 *Hê⁴ hu¹.* *To threaten;* to frighten:—Note 26.

路票 *Lu⁴ p'iao⁴.* A pass, *a passport.*

隨喜 *Swei² hsi³.* *To follow,* to assent to, to chime in with. (L.)

桑 *Sang¹.* The mulberry tree, *mulberry leaves.*

繭 *Chien³.* The cocoon of the silkworm.

人犯 *Jên² fan⁴.* Accused persons, prisoners awaiting trial:—Note 32.

塌 *T'a¹.* To give way and fall, to fall down.

暗地 *An⁴ ti⁴.* *In secret,* clandestine.

眼熱 *Yien³ jê⁴.* *To covet,* to desire, to crave, to lust after.

頭役 *T'ou² i⁴.* The head men in each *pan* (班) of underlings.

公門 *Kung¹ mên².* A public office, a yamên.

蛸 *T'iao³.* A tall man, a giant.

NOTES.

8 交友待客 is a ready-made phrase. If it were made for the occasion its brevity would render it obscure.

11 了 is not here a past particle, but is used in its proper sense as a principal verb.

12 The natural order is inverted in order to emphasize the first member. Otherwise it would have been said 我總要追. etc.

19 仇敵 is here not a private enemy, but an enemy in war.

23 都 is here practically equal to *always.* It is really an indefinite pronoun standing for 回家的心.

26 The vicious practice of the Chinese of coaxing or quieting children by making false promises or threats, is plainly embodied in the word 哄. The term 哄頌 is local in Shantung. 嚇呼 is read both *hê⁴ hu¹* and *hsia⁴ hu¹;* with the former reading it means *to threaten,* with the latter, *to startle, to frighten.*

27 The use of 請 implies that the passport is a favor granted in response to a polite request.

29 Or, "*There is no excellence without great labor*",—a proverbial saying constructed, as are nearly all such sayings, on the *Wên-li* model. A more colloquial form is 不受苦中苦難成人上人.

Digitized by Google

子、作撇人這喇。你意、公貼
叫事、鬍呢、劉○打挖帮門己
人都子、答玉常[36]門門助中的
挑很有是堂聽路子、你的朋
出光四個是說就寫人、友、
不棍、十細個劉離呈能你
是總多高甚玉喫子、替若
來。不歲、兒麼堂虧又你看
留說兒、樣的不能拿他
空話兩的事、遠給主爲

35 No matter whether it be a principal underling or the head of the underlings, none are trustworthy; be sure you do not trust them as confidential friends. If you think that because they are in the office they can advise you and help you to present your case, and can find a way to influence the officer in your favor, you are in a fair way to be fleeced.

36 I am continually hearing of Liu Yü T'ang's affairs; what kind of a man is this Liu Yü T'ang? *Ans.* He is a tall, slender man with a long mustache, and over forty years of age. He is very plausible in all that he says and does, giving no opportunity for any one to find any fault.

32 This language is addressed by an underling to one involved in a law suit, and who is compelled to wait in the yamên the officer's convenience. 人犯 is not applied to *condemned* criminals, who are called 犯人 or 囚犯. 天塌的大事 *An affair as important as the falling of the heavens*,—a high sounding hyperbole.

33 Confucian ethics considers it a great fault to neglect parents in order to provide for wife and children. A man must love his parents *more* than he does his wife and children. The sentence is from the Sacred Edict.

34 A common trick of Chinese foot-pads is for one to go before the unwary traveller and drop a packet, which always contains bogus money, while the other follows after and overtakes the traveller, and makes the picking up of the packet the occasion of getting into his confidence, or in some way robbing him.

35 挖門子 Either to take a bribe, promising to influence the officer on behalf of the party, or to act as go-between in negotiating a bribe with the magistrate or his advisers.

LESSON CV.

AGGREGATION BY THE USE OF 一.

一 One,—is prefixed to a variety of words to express the general idea of aggregation, or of being together.

一共 One all,—all together, in all, the sum total, collectively.

一概 One summing up,—all, the whole, nothing but.

一同 One together,—with, together with, all together, in one lot or company.

一塊 One piece,—together, together with, at one time, in one place. In speaking 一塊 nearly always takes 兒 after it.

一堆 One pile,—together, at the same time, at once. 一堆 is a widely used colloquial term, but not *t'ung-hsing*. Save when used in its primary sense it always takes after it an enclitic 兒.

一切 One whole,—every one, all included, the whole.

一連 One connection,—together, including; in succession, continuously.

一齊 One even,—all, all together, all at once, en masse, in a body.

一處 One place,—together. A book term not often used in colloquial.

一併 One equality,—altogether, entirely, in toto, the whole lot.

一色 One color,—all, the whole. Used only in reference to colors.

一乾 One heaven,—all, entirely, every one. (c.)

一總 One sum,—all, in toto.

It should be noted that these various phrases nearly always come just before the principal verb.

Digitized by Google

第一百五課

我[1]請[3]我[5]了四十兩個是一塊兒同住下。○他[2]所說的、一概不可憑信。○

共欠你多少錢。○中[4]國一共有三萬萬人。

你和我們一共欠你多少錢。○中國一共有三萬萬人。

我們兩個是一塊兒同住下。○他所說的、一概不可憑信。○

切的話、旁人我都沒告訴。○大[9]家夥兒就掀動喇。○這[8]一下不

多的時候、旁人我都沒告訴。○大家夥兒就掀動喇。○這一下不

是紹興人。○他[11]是一個大[13]老爺今天比限、各打在水裏、把他挑出來打

連放了完了。○一塊兒進的學。○一連三萬萬人。○

呢。○多切的話、旁人我都沒告訴。○大家夥兒就掀動喇。○這一下不

到鴨嘴—[12]灘。○了大[13]滿滿的一天大堂。○世[14]上的一切所有的

了、我看見跷了滿滿的一天大堂。○世上的一切所有的

TRANSLATION.

1 How much do I owe you in all?
2 You must not believe anything that he said.
3 I invite you to stop with us.
4 China has in all three hundred millions of inhabitants.
5 We two took our degree at the same time.
6 At the time of the flood it rained continuously for forty days.
7 If you make a simultaneous effort, you can raise it.
8 I have not reported any of this conversation to anyone else.
9 If we all together put our hands to the work, it will be finished very soon.
10 In both superior and inferior yamêns, the criminal lawyers are all natives of Shaohsing.
11 He came at the same time, how is it that you single him out?
12 They fired two shots in succession, one fell in the water and one sped on to Duckbill sandspit.
13 To-day his worship urges payment [of taxes], and the various collectors have all come. I saw a whole court-room-full kneeling before him.
14 All the people in the world are the descendants of Adam and Eve.

VOCABULARY.

共 *Kung*[4]. All, in all, altogether; to sum up; ..... with, altogether; the same; to live with; to include.

併 *Ping*[4]. Even, equal; to equalize; together, ...unitedly. Not distinguished from 並.

憑信 *P'ing*[2] *hsin*[4]. *To believe implicitly,* to ..... confide in, to trust.

洪 *Hung*[2]..... An inundation, *a flood;* vast.

洪水 *Hung*[2] *shwei*[3]..... A deluge, *the flood.*

使勁 *Shi*[3] *chin*[4]. To exert strength, to try hard, ... *to make vigorous effort.*

用勁 *Yung*[4] *chin*[4]..... The same.

掀 *Hsien*[1]. To lift, *to raise up,* to set up; to ..... open; to whirl.

旁人 *P'ang*[2] *jên*[2]..... Others, other people.

動手 *Tung*[4] *shou*[3]. *To take hold,* to bear a ..... hand; to begin.

刑名 *Hsing*[2] *ming*[2]. A legal adviser in the ..... lower courts, a prosecuting attorney:—Note 10.

師爺 *Shi*[1] *yie*[2]. An officer's assistants, with whom ..... he associates on terms of equality.

比限 *Pi*[3] *hsien*[4]. To urge payment of taxes:— ..... Note 13.

紹 *Shao*[4]..... To connect, to join. (w.)

紹興 *Shao*[4] *hsing*[3]. Shaohsing,—a Fu city in ..... Chekiang.

灘 *T'an*[1]..... Rapids; *a sandbank,* the beach.

屬 *Shu*[2-3]. Connected with, tributary to; per- ..... taining to, depending on; kinship; sort, *grade;* actual, existing.

Digitized by Google

人、都是亞當夏娃的後代。○家[15]裏待客的事情、一概在我、你只照應外邊就得好喇。○他[16]一連三天都沒有飯吃、肚中饑餓的了不得。○你[17]和他在一塊兒住了許多日子、還不知道他的脾氣嗎。○我[18]的兒、你常和我在一處兒、我一切所有的、都是你的。○請[19]借兩個元寶給我、等我回來的時候、本利一併奉還。○姑娘做新娘子那一天、從頭到脚、一色是紅的。○若[21]將吃飯穿衣人情零用、一概都算在內、每年總得二百吊錢。○王[22]濟仁叫攔路截路道斷路擋的、把他的衣裳鋪蓋、一總扛了去咯、光剩了一個半死不活的人。○這[23]一切的事情、都是從他

15 In the house, the whole responsibility of attending to the guests rests with me. If you will simply look after the outside matters, it will be sufficient.

16 For three days together he had nothing whatever to eat, so that he felt excessively hungry.

17 You lived with him a long time, and don't you yet know his peculiarities?

18 My son, thou art always with me, and all that I have is thine.

19 Please lend me a hundred taels, and when I return, I will repay you in full both principal and interest.

20 On the day that a girl becomes a bride, she is dressed in red from head to foot.

21 If food and clothing, the claims of society and incidental expenses, are all included, it will require fully two hundred strings of cash a year.

22 A robber with one stroke of a club knocked Wang Chi Jên down, and carried off all his clothes and bedding, leaving him half dead.

23 This whole difficulty was stirred up by his wife.

24 After the resurrection the bodies and souls of the righteous together go to the enjoyment of eternal happiness.

鄉約 *Hsiang¹ yo⁴*. Police officer, justice of the ..... peace; a tax collector, a publican :—Note 13.

地方 *Ti⁴ fang¹* ..... The same.

鄉保 *Hsiang¹ pao³* ..... The same.

後代 *Hou⁴ tai⁴* ..... Posterity, *descendants*.

饑餓 *Chi¹ ê⁴* ..... Hungry.

奉還 *Fêng⁴ hwan²*. To return with thanks, to ..... repay, *to pay in full*.

新娘子 *Hsin¹ niang² tsï³*. A bride, a newly ..... married woman. (s.)

路截 *Lu⁴ chie²*. ..... A highway robber.

斷道 *Twan⁴ tao⁴* ..... To rob on the highway.

攔路 *Tang¹ lu⁴* ..... The same.

釁 *Hsin⁴*. A flaw; *an occasion of offence or* ..... *quarrel*; a feud; an omen.

魂 *Hun²*. *The soul*, the spiritual part, the manes; ..... the mind, the wits.

靈魂 *Ling² hun²*. The soul, the spirit, the ..... life :—Note 24.

抄家 *Ch'ao¹ chia¹*. To confiscate a man's pro- ..... perty and estate.

滅門 *Mie⁴ mên²*. To put a man together with ..... all his family to death, to exterminate.

房產 *Fang² ch'an³*. ..... Property in houses.

入官 *Ju⁴ kwan¹*. To accrue to the government, ... *to revert to the state*.

販 *Fan⁴*. ... To buy and sell, *to deal in*, to traffic.

斷宰 *Twan⁴ tsai³*. To forbid the slaughter of ..... animals :—Note 26.

倒運 *Tao³ yün⁴*. ..... *Unlucky*, ill-starred.

水師 *Shwei³ shï¹*. *Naval*, a title given to va- ..... rious officers connected with the navy or coast defence.

Digitized by Google

女人起[23]贓。○復[24]活以後、義人的身體和靈魂、一同去享永福。○王[25]大老爺犯了抄家滅門的罪、所有的房產田地、一併入了官了。○姜[26]太公販猪羊貫、販羊猪貫、猪羊一齊販斷宰、眞是倒運。○水[27]師營的兵、實在整齊、看上邊一概是灰色小襖、看下邊一色是靴子、說要往前、都一齊往前、說要退後、都一齊退後、就是他們的脚、也是一齊起一齊落、彷彿一個人的脚聲兒。○塲[28]上的蓼子曬乾喇、你去把他收拾在一堆兒、預備往家裏扛。○主[29]考因爲考期臨近、要避徇情的嫌疑、所以傳出話來說、這幾天凡有投帖請見的、一概不許通報。

25 Wang Ta Lao Yie was guilty of crimes punishable by confiscation of his property and extermination of his family, hence all his houses and lands reverted in toto to the state.

26 When Chiang T'ai Kung dealt in hogs, sheep rose in price; when he dealt in sheep, hogs rose in price; when he bought both at once, butchering was forbidden. He was certainly unlucky.

27 The appearance of the soldiers in the marine encampment is exceedingly uniform. Above you see only their grey coats, and below, only their boots. At the order to advance they all move forward together, and at the order to retire, they all move backward together. Even their feet all rise together and all go down together as though it were the sound of but one man's foot.

28 The wheat on the threshing floor is quite dry. You go and gather it into a pile ready to be carried home.

29 Because the time for examinations is near at hand, the examiner, in order to avoid the suspicion of favoritism, has sent out word forbidding to report to him any who, during these few days, send in their cards or solicit an audience.

整齊 *Chêng³ ch'i².* Regular, even, *uniform;* ..... complete.

退後 *T'ui⁴ hou⁴.* *To retire,* to retreat, to fall ..... back, to withdraw.

主考 *Chu³ k'ao³.* The literary examiner who ..... confers the degree of *chü-jên.*

臨近 *Lin² chin⁴.* *To draw near* (in time), to ..... approach.

徇 *Hsün⁴.* ... To follow, to comply with; quick.

徇情 *Hsün⁴ ch'ing².* To comply with the wishes ..... of another, to be partial to, to curry favor, *to favor.*

投帖 *T'ou² t'ie³.* *To send up a card or scroll,* ..... to present compliments.

通報 *T'ung¹ pao⁴.* *To report,* to announce; ..... general information.

NOTES.

2 一概 here comes to mean "anything." If the order were changed to **他所說的不可一概憑信**, it would mean, *You must not believe all he said.*

4 In mathematical language a **萬萬** is an **億**, but in the language of common life **萬** is the highest numeral used, being duplicated one or more times to express higher denominations. **三萬萬** *Three times ten thousand times ten thousand;* i. e., *three hundred millions.*

8 下了四十天雨 *There came down a forty days' rain.*

10 刑名 is an assistant whose business it is to examine all criminal prosecutions and prepare the **批** or official reply, also to prepare drafts of all dispatches and reports. They are employed in all Hsien and Fu yamêns. In higher yamêns the office is called by a different name. It is a remarkable fact that the scholars of Shaohsing have a monopoly of this office in the whole empire. The reply to the **呈子**, or accusation, is, in civil suits, prepared by a different assistant, called **幾穀**.

12 火砲 *Fire cannon.* **砲** is more frequently used alone. The Chinese speak of firing so many *cannon,* we of firing so many *shots.*

13 比限 *To compare the term or limit.* Taxes in China are collected by constables or collectors called in different places **鄉約, 鄉保** and **地方**. The collection covers

Digitized by Google

第一百六課

我[1] 各 太 一 那 現 羊 ○ 天[9] 種
和 人 的 流 的 在 裏 淨 盡[8] 主 雀
他 的 是 的 能 都 是 兒 是 主 子兒、
是 一 輩。 歲 的 人。 結 山 和 三 我
一 段。 ○ 一 心 ○ 成 羊、 核 位 從
輩。 ○ 丁[3] 大。 家[5] 呢。 一 一 桃 一 來
○ —[2] 先 ○ 他[4] 人 知 ○ 黨 隻 不 體 沒
樣 的 米 和 都 多 你 沒 道 也 例 ○ 過。 見
麪、 丁 是 了、 們 羣 有。 一 沒 數。 這[10] 這[11] 一

Translation.

1 I am of the same generation with him.
2 Though the rice and flour be alike, yet much depends on the skill [of the cook].
3 Mr. and Mrs. Ting are of the same age.
4 They all belong to the same set.
5 When there are many in the family, how can they all have one mind?
6 I know that you have now all formed yourselves into one clique.
7 This whole flock of sheep consists entirely of goats, there is not a single sheep in it.
8 Dates and walnuts must not be counted in the same way.
9 The Lord of heaven is three persons in one Godhead.
10 I have never before seen this species [of bird.

three months in the spring and three in the fall. Payments are usually made by the collectors every ten days, at which time all are assembled and their accounts examined. Those who have made prompt payment are complimented and sometimes rewarded, while delinquents are berated and not unfrequently beaten.

16 都 here gives the force of *at all* in English.

18 一塊 is more colloquial and more expressive than 一處, and equally *t'ung hsing*.

21 衣 is used without either of its usual defining words 裳 or 服, being made sufficiently definite by the preceding 穿. 人情 here means the presents which Chinese etiquette requires on occasion of weddings, births, funerals, feasts, etc.

22 There seems to be no *t'ung hsing* term for a highway robber. In Kiukiang all the terms in the text are rejected for 斷路.

24 The use of the term 靈魂 is largely Christian. The Chinese (heathen) usually use 魂 alone, or occasionally 魂靈, especially when speaking of the soul as disembodied. There is practically no distinction of meaning between 靈魂 and 魂靈

26 姜太公, otherwise called 姜子牙, a legendary character of the twelfth century B. C. He is the most important personage in Chinese mythology. He was appointed by 元始天尊, *the most Ancient and Honorable One*, to assign to the gods their several ranks and duties. He is regarded as a sort of provost-marshal over the gods. This story of his bad luck in business is told of him when at home before he entered official life. 斷宰 is an official proclamation forbidding all slaughter of animals for food for a certain time. It is usually done in time of drought in order to propitiate the gods.

27 說, as here used, constitutes a very common idiom for expressing the idea that the thing spoken of is carried into immediate execution.

LESSON CVI.

One, expressing Sameness.

— is joined with a variety of words for the purpose of classification or generalization, and is translated either *one*, or *the same*. The same forms are also used specifically, and when so used, — is rendered *the*, or *a*, or *whole*.

— 輩 One generation,—the same generation.
— 樣 One kind,—the same, alike.
— 模 One pattern,—only used with — 樣
— 模 — 樣 Precisely alike, just the same.
— 般 One manner,—the same, like, equal.
— 流 One current,—the same class or kind.
— 心 One heart,—of the same mind, harmonious; the whole heart.
— 意 One meaning,—of the same mind, harmonious, congenial.
— 黨 One party,—the same party, the same clique or cabal.
— 羣 One flock,—the same flock; the whole flock.
— 例 One rule,—the same custom or way.
— 體 One body,—the same body or substance; the whole body.

Digitized by Google

頭髮長的和囚犯一樣快去薩薩罷。○○你[21]若[22]是買的

生各一一路種肥氣沒有他如意的人。的。

城出類的誰告訴你們不能避將來刑罰。李[20]看成呢。

一上一多叔是夥
有羣匹個。叔。一學
○○○路生、
等在[16]無[15]牲[14]的天
這論口貨。天
裏騾市○從
馬上這[13]我
牛來一門
羊、了位前
好一是過
些羣誰、去。
個騾答○
子、這你[12]
的一大是不
人塊約我用
兒、有一揀、
○謂二家這
世[17]之百的都

11 A company of school boys goes by my door every day.
12 There is no need of selecting, these goods are all of one quality.
13 Who is this gentleman? *Ans.* This is a distant relative of my father's.
14 A drove of some two hundred or more mules has arrived at the horse market.
15 A collection of either mules, horses, cows or sheep is called a herd.
16 Is there no one of your relatives or friends here?
17 There is a class of men in the world who, though unable to bear up under difficulties, are yet given to getting into difficulties.
18 Ye tribe of vipers, who hath told you to flee from the wrath to come.
19 Fei Ch'êng produces a kind of peach called the Fei peach, which is very widely known in Shantung.
20 Li Ch'êng Wên's natural disposition is *sui generis*, he is dissatisfied with everybody.
21 Look at your hair; it has grown as long as a prisoner's. Go and get it shaved at once.

一種 One seed,—the same kind or stock or sort or variety.

一夥 One company,—the same company or set.

一路 One road,—the same kind or quality.

一家 One family,—the same family or clan; the whole family.

一等 One order,—the same class, first class.

一宗 One clan,—the same clan or tribe; a class, a kind; a lot, a deal.

一族 One tribe,—the same ancestry, kindred.

一起 One rise,—the same company or set.

一類 One species,—the same class or category or character.

VOCABULARY.

段 *Twan*[4]. *To push with the hand;* a fragment, a piece, a section.

黨 *Tang*[3]. A gang, a band; a political party, *a faction, a clique;* a class, a sort.

例 *Li*[4]. *A rule,* a bye-law; custom, usage.

手段 *Shou*[3] *twan*[4]. Skill, ability, might.

人口 *Jên*[2] *k'ou*[3]. Persons in a family, household:—Note 5.

山羊 *Shan*[1] *yang*[2]. A goat.

綿羊 *Mien*[2] *yang*[2]. A sheep.

核 *Hê*[2], *hu*[2]. *Kernel,* seed; to scrutinize.

核桃 *Hê*[2] *t'ao*[2]. The walnut.

雀 *Ch'iao*[3], *ch'ioa*[4]. A bird, a small bird.

謂 *Wei*[4]. To say, to speak of; to designate, to denominate, *to call.*

擔事 *Tan*[1] *shi*[4]. To bear responsibility, to bear up under difficulties.

杠事 *K'ang*[4] *shi*[4]. The same.

各一路 *Kê*[4] *i*[1] *lu*[4]. Different from others, peculiar, *singular.*

囚 *Ch'iu*[2]. *To imprison,* to incarcerate.

Digitized by Google

呢、可○歇起一能是等一
答彼他[29]歇。的對雙和一的個
必此雖○人雙他例手、風
是打然縂[28]走抱生、一間還箱匣、
秤法罵。在遠乏生、身心罪。能一
有法碼○和强了、量一○不年
大有—[30]樣支盜、又和意中能
有輕有的上、加面的若舉省
小重。豆你雖心貌過不嗎。一好
○餅、們仍不都日信○宗些
赶[31]怎舊一發一子。看窩[24]柴
到麼是樣、慌、模○罷、賊喇。
晚兩然想一樣。在[26]那的○
上樣而找一○鳳個和那[23]
回的一却個女凰女做是
家價宗是地[27]徒街人、賊常
的錢族、一類。方一上、再的、考
不都

22 If you buy a bellows, you can save a deal of fuel in the course of a year.

23 That is a man who always stands in the first class, can he fail to get his [second] degree?

24 One who secretes a thief is regarded as equally guilty with the thief himself.

25 If you don't believe it, wait and see. That woman can never live harmoniously with him.

26 On Phœnix Street there is a pair of twins who in size and looks are precisely alike.

27 Christiana and her company were weary with traveling and also agitated in mind, and sought a place to rest.

28 Although thieves and robbers are not the same, yet they belong to the same class.

29 Although he belongs to a distant branch, still you are of one family stock and should not quarrel.

30 How is it that the same quality of bean cake has two prices? *Ans.* It must be that the weights (scales) are different.

囚犯 *Ch'iu² fan⁴*. . . . . *A prisoner*, a convict.
風匣 *Fêng¹ hsia²*. . . . . A bellows, a blower.
風箱 *Fêng¹ hsiang¹*. . . . . The same.
雙 *Shwang⁴*. To double, to put two together; . . . . . twins. See *shwang¹*.
雙生 *Shwang⁴ shêng¹*. . . . . Twins.
雙抱 *Shwang⁴ pao⁴*. . . . . Same:—Note 26.
縂 *Ch'ie⁴*. *To steal*, to pilfer; clandestine, private; my opinion.
縂賊 *Ch'ie⁴ tsei²*. . . . . A thief, a pilferer.
豆 *Tou⁴*. . . . . Pulse, beans, peas.
法碼 *Fa³ ma³*. Weights for weighing; *standard of weight*. . . . . .
報信 *Pao⁴ hsin⁴*. To announce, *to give notice*, ... to carry news.
旗下 *Ch'i² hsia⁴*. . . . . Bannermen, Tartars.
百姓 *Pai³ hsing⁴*. The people, the common . . . . . people.
看待 *K'an⁴ tai⁴*. To behave towards, *to treat*, ... to regard.
朗 *Lang³*. . . . . Clear, bright, distinct.
明朗 *Ming² lang⁴*. Bright, lustrous; clearly, ... *evidently*, manifestly.
明朗眼見 *Ming² lang³ yien³ chien⁴*. *Evidently*, ... palpably.
逃荒 *T'ao² hwang¹*. . . . . To flee from famine.

NOTES.

2 Lit., *With the same rice and flour, every man has his own skill*,—a ready-made saying often used as a comparison. The dictionaries carefully distinguish 段 from 股 (read chia), but in common usage the latter is often written for the former.

5 There is nothing in this sentence as it stands to show whether it is to be taken hypothetically or not. In 人口 the noun and its classifier have changed places, making a term meaning *member of a family*, but only used, as here, when referring to the number of persons in a family.

7 The translation of this sentence sounds absurd. It is all right, however, in Chinese, because sheep and goats are regarded as essentially one species, all being called 羊.

8 Dates are usually sold by the quantity, walnuts by the piece, thus showing the superiority of the latter. The meaning of the saying is that men must not all be estimated alike.

9 三位一體 is the conventional form adopted in Chinese to express the Christian idea of the Trinity.

Digitized by Google

時候、以撒還沒到家、狗先跑來、
彷彿報信的一般。○天[32]下如同
一家、萬民都是一體、或是旗下、
或是百姓、總是一樣看待。○前[33]
天來了一起逃荒的、明明眼見
是你們一夥的、你怎麼硬說不
是呢。○今[34]天你三叔家有甚麼
事呢、問你怎麼看他有事呢、答
我看見一夥子穿衣戴帽的人、往他家裡去。

31 In the evening when Isaac returned home, before he had reached the house, the dog ran out to meet him as if to give the news.

32 The whole empire is like one family, and all the people belong to one body. Whether bannermen or common people, all are to be treated alike.

33 Day before yesterday a band of refugees came, and it is very evident that you belong to the same company. Why do you persist in saying that you do not?

34 What is going on at your third uncle's to-day? *Ques.* What makes you think there is anything going on? *Ans.* I saw a lot of people in full dress going into his house.

13 一家的叔叔 *A family uncle.* The term *uncle* is here used vaguely for any relative of the same generation, and of the same family name, with the father.

14 牲口市 is a market for the sale of beasts used in farming, including horses, mules, donkeys and cattle. No word in the English language will exactly translate 牲口.

19 肥城 is a *Hsien* city south-west of Chinanfu. The district produces a peach of great size and delicious flavor.

20 各一路 *A way of his own*, that is, a way that is different from others, and hence *singular*.

21 Prisoners in China are not allowed to shave their heads.

23 手 primarily refers to skill of hand, but is often applied to skill of any kind.

25 The use of 再 as in this sentence is anomalous. It means *positively, certainly, in any case.* This usage is *t'ung hsing.*

26 雙抱 is so written, but is universally spoken *shwang[1] pang.[4]*

30 法碼 are used in weighing with scales (天平), and are here referred to as the standard used in gauging the steelyards. Weights and measures are very uncertain in China. It might almost be said that every man has his own. The variations are well nigh endless.

31 的 in the last clause is euphonic and redundant; with 的, the construction is, *like a news bringer*, without 的 it is, *as though bringing news*, but this difference of "construction" is something the average Chinese writer or speaker does not appreciate.

LESSON CVII.

EMPHATIC REDUPLICATION.

Compound adjectives and participial nouns are repeated for the purpose of strengthening the idea, the two words being repeated separately. This is the most common method of emphasizing. Almost any compound adjective may be thus reduplicated. The more common ones are illustrated in the lesson.

For additional list see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

安生 *An[1] shêng[1].* ..... Quiet, orderly. (s.)

睦 *Mu[4].* ..... *Harmony,* concord.

和睦 *Hê[2] mu[4].* Peaceable, *harmonious;* to ..... cultivate harmony.

順當 *Shun[4] tang[4].* Easy, *smooth,* facile, unem- ..... barrassed.

返 *Fan[3].* *To return;* to revert to; on the ..... contrary, but.

從容 *Ts'ung[2] yung[2].* *At ease,* at leisure; in easy ..... circumstances.

叨 *Tao[1].* To talk rapidly and incoherently, to ..... gabble. Also *t'ao[1].*

嘮 *Lao[2].* ... To talk without meaning, to prate.

嘮叨. To clamor, *to talk incessantly and to no point*; to murmur at.

絮叨 *Hsü[4] tao[1].* To talk disconnectedly, *to* ..... *repeat again and again.*

誠實 *Ch'êng[2] shi[2].* Sincere, honest, *upright,* ..... ingenuous, *straightforward.*

虛套 *Hsü[1] t'ao[4].* *Empty compliments,* the lan- ..... guage and forms of etiquette.

Digitized by Google

第一百七課

這[1]是實實在在的事情。○快[2]安老安生實實的念書罷。○在[3]賬目上、總要清清楚楚的。○弟[4]兄們和和睦睦的、那等不樂。○水[5]運歡歡喜喜走到自家屋裏去。○明[6]明白白我吃二百錢的虧。○這[7]書上講的詳詳細細的、你還不明白嗎。○他[8]的衣裳雖然不算好、却是乾乾淨淨的。○若[9]事情順順當當的、不過十天就返回來了。○不[10]用○着急、從從容容的走罷、今天不論怎麼樣就到了。○你[11]這麼嘮嘮叨叨的、眞討人厭。○偺[12]們要安安穩穩的睡覺。○不○必[13]驚動他、叫他安安穩穩的睡實的。○王老爺[14]已經看得的的確確的、你還要乾乾淨淨的睡覺。

Translation.

1 This is a positive fact.
2 Settle down quickly to your books.
3 In accounts clearness is all important.
4 When brothers are harmonious, everything runs smoothly.
5 Shwei Yün went to her own room delighted.
6 It is as clear as noonday that I lose two hundred cash.
7 It is minutely explained in the book, and yet you do not understand it?
8 Although his clothing would not be considered good, still it is perfectly clean.
9 If my business goes off smoothly, I will be back within ten days.
10 There is no need of hurrying; go at an easy pace; we will get there to-day in any case.
11 This repetitious way you have of talking is most disagreeable.
12 Let us be straightforward and put aside empty compliments.
13 Do not disturb him, let him sleep quietly.
14 Wang Lao Yie already knows it perfectly well, what room is there for further disputing?

的 *Ti*⁴ ..... Real, certain; a target. See *ti*¹.
確 *Ch'io̍*⁴ .. Firm, substantial; really, *certainly*.
的確 Certain, true, unmistakeable; in fact.
安頓 *An*¹ *tun*⁴. *Quiet*, at rest; comfortable; ..... *gentle*, staid.
鄙 *Pi*³,⁴ ..... Low, mean; rustic.
鄙俗 *Pi*³ *su*². Common, mean, vulgar; shame-faced, *bashful*.
縮 *So̍*¹,⁴. To draw back; *to shrink*, to contract; ..... to condense.
寒縮 *Han*² *so̍*⁴ ..... Retiring, *bashful*.
官樣 *Kwan*¹ *yang*⁴. Genteel, *well-bred*, gentlemanly; pompous.
大方 *Ta*⁴ *fang*¹. Genteel, *well-bred*; liberal-minded, generous.
痊 *Ch'üe̍n*². ..... Recovered from sickness, well.
愈 *Yü*³,⁴ ..... *Cured*; to exceed the more.
痊愈 Recovered, cured, *healed*.
盅 *Chung*¹. ..... A small cup for tea or wine.
看守 *K'an*¹ *shou*³. To watch over, to guard, ... *to keep safely*.
墓 *Mu*⁴ ..... *A grave*, a tomb, a sepulcher.
墳墓 *Fe̍n*² *mu*⁴ ..... *A grave*, a sepulcher.
懼 *Chü*⁴ ..... *To fear*, to be apprehensive.
懼怕 *Chü*⁴ *p'a*⁴. To fear, *to be affrighted*, to ..... dread, to stand in awe.
兢 *Ching*¹ ..... Fearful, solicitous.
戰兢 *Chan*⁴ *ching*¹. To be alarmed, *to tremble*, ... to quake.
含 *Han*². To hold in the mouth; to contain; to ..... cherish; to restrain.
含糊 *Han*² *hu*². Indistinct, *vague*; uncertain; ..... indefinite; reserved.

Digitized by Google

强辯嗎。○我[15]父親今年八十歲、身體還是結結健健壯實壯實的。○這[16]穩安○穩[19]平的重頓重頓的纔是。○你[18]不好寒鄙寒鄙縮俗縮俗的、叫人看着不[17]女兒家應當大方樣。○安安的回去罷、你的病已經痊愈了。○咱[20]們爽痛爽痛快快的喝幾盅、時候不早喇。○看[21]守墳墓的人懼怕戰戰兢兢、幾乎嚇死。○我[22]必得把家中的事、安排得妥妥當當的、纔能起身。○糊糊的、你[23]到底是願意是不願意、快說決斷快話、老是這麼含含糊糊的、好言口齒、說話有個好歹。○李[24]昌齡好天分、可惜沒有告訴他、叫他看着些零零碎碎的東西、可以裝在箱子裏。○

禿嘮嘮的像什麼呢。○那[26]個孩子一點耳性沒有、必得告訴他、叫他看着些零零碎碎的東西、可以裝在箱子裏。○

小禿嘮嘮的、像什麼呢。○那[26]個孩子一點耳性沒有、必得告訴他、叫他看着些零零碎碎的東西、可以裝在箱子裏。○

小禿嘮嘮的、像什麼呢。○那[26]個孩子一點耳性沒有、必得告訴他、叫他看着些零零碎碎的東西、可以裝在箱子裏。○

15 My father is eighty years old this year, and his health is still quite robust.
16 These odds and ends you may put into the box.
17 Girls [or, young women] should by rights, be quiet and gentle.
18 You should not be bashful or people will think you are ill-bred.
19 Return in peace ; your disease is already healed.
20 Let us quickly drink a few cups, the hour is not early.
21 And those who kept the grave trembled with fear, being frightened almost to death.
22 I must put my home affairs in good order before I can start.
23 Say definitely at once whether you are willing or not, and don't keep vacillating in this unseemly way.
24 Li Ch'ang Ling is quite gifted. It is a pity he has not a better utterance. He mumbles his words so that one can not understand him.
25 I am not going to make a poor mouth to him, and give him a chance to look down on me.
26 That child is very heedless ; you will find it necessary to charge him very straitly.

齒口 *Ch'i*[3]. . . . Front teeth ; *words ;* age ; toothed.
口齒 *K'ou*[3] *ch'i*[3]. . . . . *Utterance*, enunciation.
言談 *Yien*[2] *t'an*[2]. . . . . Speech, *utterance.*
唣 *T'u*[1]. . . . . Thick, tongue-tied, lisping.
嘮 *Lu*[3]. . . . . Indistinct, inarticulate, nasal.
唣嘮 To mutter, to *mumble ;* to ravel out.
禿攏 *T'u*[1] *lung*[3]. . . . . The same.
求告 *Ch'iu*[2] *kao*[4]. To beg, to entreat, *to make a poor mouth.*
耳性 *Êr*[3] *hsing*[4]. Capacity to hear, power of attention.
煞實 *Sha*[1] *shi*[2]. Firm, close, compact ; decided ; forcible, pointed ; *straitly.*
諄 *Chun*[1]. To enjoin, to reiterate; *emphatically,* earnestly.
諄切 *Chun*[1] *ch'ie*[4]. Carefully, emphatically, *straitly.*
吹打 *Ch'wei*[1] *ta*[3]. . . . . To play (as a band).
完全 *Wan*[2] *ch'üen*[2]. Complete, entire; finished; *all.*
正直 *Chêng*[4] *chi*[2]. Straitforward, *upright,* truthful.
彎 *Wan*[1]. . . . . Bent, bowed, crooked, curved.
彎曲 *Wan*[1] *ch'ü*[1]. . . . . Crooked, *tortuous.*
謊詐 *Hwang*[3] *cha*[4]. False, *deceitful,* dishonest, double-tongued.
端正 *Twan*[1] *chêng*[4]. Correct, exemplary ; *upright ;* sedate, respectful.
歪扭 *Wai*[1] *niu*[3]. Awry, askew, crooked ; distorted ; *lounging.*

Digitized by Google

囑咐他纔行。○你[27]的王到你那裏去、和平平的、騎着騾後面跟隨一個騾駒子。○和過[28]公子齊齊整整的備了千金聘禮、又擇了一個吉日、吹吹打打送到水家來。○我[29]在外頭十二年的工夫、現在回家、看見老少都還完完全全的、實在感恩不盡。○這[30]個心經、都是說心要正直、不要彎彎曲曲的、要誠實、不要謊謊詐詐的、要爽快、不要不可歪歪扭扭的、一點兒不穩體重統。[31]人坐着應當端端正正的、要齷齪齷齪的。○

27 Thy King cometh unto thee peacefully, riding upon an ass with its foal following.

28 Kwoă Kung-tsī prepared a full set of very costly betrothal presents, and, selecting a lucky day, sent them accompanied by a band of music to the Shwei family.

29 I have been absent twelve years, and I cannot be sufficiently thankful that now on my return home, I find the family circle still unbroken.

30 This *Classic of the Heart* everywhere requires that the heart be upright and not tortuous, truthful and not deceitful, cheerful and not fretful.

31 When one is sitting, he should sit upright and not lounge in an undignified manner.

Notes.

10 After 怎麼 either 着 or 的 or 樣 is understood.
13 The last clause might also with equal propriety be rendered *Let him go quietly to sleep.*

17 家 is added to 女兒 to generalize it.

19 As the sentence stands in the New Testament, 經 is omitted. Its use adds both to the euphony and perspicuity of the sentence. In Mandarin the 經 is rarely omitted, save in certain fixed expressions. It is never omitted when followed by a double word as here.

23 In Pekingese 老 as here used denotes time. It is not so used in Central or Southern Mandarin:—Les. 127. Sub.

28 吉日 is somewhat bookish. In common conversation 好日子 is nearly always used. For colloquial the 備 of the previous clause should also be expanded to 辦備.

30 心經 is the title of a book exhorting men to the cultivation of propriety and virtue.

Lesson CVIII.

Repeated Action.

屢次. Frequently, constantly, continually, repeatedly. Often reduplicated for emphasis.

時刻 Every moment, constantly, incessantly. Often reduplicated for emphasis.

時時 Every time, always, constantly.

時常 Constantly, always, habitually.

常常 Continually, constantly, habitually.

往往 Frequently, every little while.

不閒着 or 不閒之 Without ceasing, continuously, incessantly, always.

不歇氣 The same. (s.)

不住的 Incessantly, continuously, all the time. A limiting word generally follows 住 (6)(10).

不斷 Continuously, without interruption.

動不動 Again and again, frequently, on every occasion, all the time.

値不値 The same. Widely used but not *t'ung hsing.*

得不得 Again and again, all the time, always, time after time. (N.)

常不常 The same. (S)

好不好 Over and over, again and again, frequently. (C. & S.)

弄不弄 Time after time, time and again, all the time. (C). Read *no⁴ pu⁴ no⁴* or *nung⁴ pu⁴ nung⁴*.

成天家 / 整天的 Constantly, always, all the time, perpetually:—Les. 72. Note 1.

數次 A number of times, several times.

Digitized by Google

第一百八課

好鬧熱喇。喊叫訴往○只着你[1]
人、熱鬧○叫喚、他外他[6]看死要
就得我[12]○數淌流們見嚇時
是很、們你[11]次、膿。不他人。刻
常弄值時雖常得值他○住們○留
不不不時然不不不總你[8]口不五[4]神。
常弄值刻多常得值不這的閒個○
喝刻年的理樣說之着人我[2]
醉有沒張會。不了吃做們
了事、見、着○歇閒半烟。了兩
酒、沒却個孫[10]氣着天○三個
光愛有不火瓢師做話。我[5]天、是
罵安斷盆傅活、○整還常
人。靜的嘴口心不我[7]天看常
○的有哭、口怕脊的家不的
怎[15]時信。早疼、累梁就出見面。
麼候。○晚在壞上是做面。
小○這[13]把家了那好愛的○
小王[14]裏我裏嗎。個替生活他[3]
的成緊哭不○癮古活好動
年山靠死住已[9]子、人在那不不
紀、是大就聲經時擔那好動
動個街、好的告刻憂。裏、拿

TRANSLATION.

1 You should give unremitting attention.
2 We two are constantly meeting each [other.
3 In order to frighten people, she frequently threatens to kill herself.
4 These five men have been working three days, but it does not appear what they have done. It seems as if they were all the time smoking.
5 I am much given to sympathizing with the ancients.
6 They talked without ceasing for half [a day.
7 That boil on my back is constantly discharging pus.
8 Are you not afraid you will injure yourself by working so constantly?
9 I have told him a number of times, but he pays no attention.
10 Mr. Sun is at home crying out incessantly with a pain in his stomach.
11 You are always bawling with your mouth open as big as a dipper (fire-pan); sooner or later your crying will be the death of me, and then you'll be satisfied, will you?
12 Although we have not seen each other for many years, yet we have corresponded without interruption.
13 This place adjoins the great street and is very much crowded; there is always something on hand—never a moment's quiet.
14 Wang Ch'êng Shan is a good enough man, the trouble is that he frequently gets drunk, and then he is given to abusing people.

VOCABULARY.

屢 *Lü*[3]. Often, frequent; successively; constantly, repeatedly.

留神 *Liu*[2] *shên*[2]. *To give attention*, to be on the alert, to be watchful.

生活 *Shêng*[1] *hwoâ*[2]. *Work*, employment, business. (c. & s.)

住口 *Chu*[4] *k'ou*[3]. To stop speaking.

脊 *Chi*[2-3]. The spine, *the backbone;* the ridge or comb of a roof.

梁 *Liang*[2]. A bridge; a *ridge-pole;* a beam, a sleeper: a seam.

脊梁 *The back*, the spinal column.

膿 *Nung*[2], *nêng*[2]. Pus, purulent matter.

歇氣 *Hsie*[1] *ch'i*[4]. To stop, to rest. (s.)

理會 *Li*[3] *hwei*[4]. To regard, *to pay attention to*, to notice.

叫喚 *Chiao*[4] *hwan*[4]. *To cry out*, to yell; to cry or call as animals:—Note 10.

瓢 *P'iao*[2]. A calabash, a gourd; a gourd dipper, *a wooden dipper.*

哭死 *K'u*[1] *sï*[3]. To cry oneself or another to death:—Les. 183.

安靜 *An*[1] *ching*[4]. *Quiet*, calm, peaceful.

Digitized by Google

說你[26]不天家不晚沒念。瘋病。○不
家動可弄得不住答念。○屢人[17]動就
賊不動不得不住手我已經去過數次。○他[20]屢次家跌闖串腰疼
難防、他這樣摸摸緝緝的、誰能時時常防備他呢。○俗[28]語說、想着打人、那一回遭打出禍來、你就後悔不及喇。○從[27]來的什麼伙。○婆婆、生氣。○無[24]論他們怎樣不好、那總是你的公公婆婆、能成

的做活。○香[23]齡子好大飯量、若是由着他的性兒、能早到南京門子、都有時有刻、你是時時刻刻的闖串。○他[18]害癲癇的抽羊角瘋、踢蹬弄壞了傢伙。○

屢次的欺負我、實在叫我過不去。○只[19]從離別以後、心中時常想

15 How is it that one so young is every little while having pains in his back and legs?

16 He has been taking medicine all the autumn without any apparent effect.

17 Other people have certain times for visiting, but you are continually at it.

18 He is afflicted with epilepsy, and frequently falls into the fire, and frequently into the water.

19 Ever since we parted I have been constantly thinking of you.

20 He is constantly insulting me. I really cannot put up with it.

21 Have you ever been at Nanking, sir? *Ans.* I have been there several times.

22 Our oldest brother's wife is a very industrious body, she works incessantly from morning till night.

23 Hsiang Ling-tsï has an enormous appetite, if you should let him have his will, his mouth would never be empty.

24 No matter how bad they are, still they are your father and mother-in-law. You ought not to be all the time vexing them.

25 In making experiments in natural science, it frequently happens that instruments are broken.

26 You are all the time full of the idea of fighting. One of these times you'll get yourself into trouble, and then it will be too late to repent.

27 It has always been said that thieves in the household are hard to guard against. Who can be always on his guard against such a light-fingered fellow as this?

串 *Ch'wan*[4]. To string on a string; *to go or pass through;* to connect, to league together; a string of anything:—Les. 125.

串門子 *Ch'wan*[4] *mên*[2] *tsï*[3]. To call, *to visit*, to gad about.

闖門子 *Ch'wang*[3] *mên*[2] *tsï*[3]. Same.

癲 *Tien*[1]. Crazed, insane; convulsions, fits.

癇 *Hsien*[2]. Convulsions, epileptic fits.

癲癇 Epileptic fits; convulsions.

羊角瘋 *Yang*[2] *chiao*[3] *fêng*[1]. Epileptic fits.

離別 *Li*[2] *pie*[2]. *To part*, to take leave.

想念 *Hsiang*[3] *nien*[4]. To think about, *to keep in mind*, to long for.

南京 *Nan*[2] *ching*[1]. Nanking, the name was given in the Ming dynasty when the capital was moved to Peking.

住嘴 *Chu*[4] *tswei*[3]. To stop eating.

公公 *Kung*[1] *kung*[1]. A woman's father-in-law.

婆婆 *P'oâ*[2] *p'oâ*[2]. A woman's mother-in-law.

驗 *Yien*[4]. To examine officially, to inspect, *to verify;* to hold an inquest.

試驗 *Shï*[4] *yien*[4]. To try, to test, *to experiment.*

家賊 *Chia*[1] *tsei*[2]. A thief in one's own family.

摸 *Soâ*[4]. To feel after; to select, *to take.*

緝 *Ch'i*[4]. To pursue; *to search for.* See *ch'i*[1].

Digitized by Google

久病牀前無孝子、到病的日子久了、雖有孝子伺候、也難時時都對心思。○你[29]們也曉得犯法不好、却不住的犯法、這是甚麼緣故呢。○幫[30]助人不過在那一時、常常如此、誰能幫助得起呢。○東[31]鄰舍那個老頭子、實在不成脾氣、自己在外邊不住手的閒着賭錢、回家還要時刻找事、值不值好不好摔盆摔碗、打老婆罵孩子。○遲[32]雲生屢屢次次來閒拉閒話說閒搗白、閒聒兒話、逢拉開話匣子、就是半天、誰有這麼些工夫陪伴他呢。○明[33]明是個水長蛇蟲、你們都稱他爲大王、給他燒香燒紙、請他聽戲、若他眞眞是神、你們這樣敬奉他、還能屢次被黃水淹了嗎。

28 The saying is, "A dutiful son is never found at the bedside of one who is long ill." When anyone is long ill, it is hard even for a dutiful son always to serve him to his mind.

29 You know it is not right to break the law, yet you are continually breaking it. What is the reason of this?

30 Helping others is only a temporary thing. Who can afford to keep on helping indefinitely?

31 The old fellow who lives to the east of us is certainly a hard case. When away from home he spends his time gambling, and when he comes home he is continually making trouble, ever and anon smashing the crockery, beating his wife and abusing his children.

32 Ch'i Yün Shêng is constantly coming over to gossip. Let him once get started he will run on for half a day. Who can afford the time required to entertain him?

33 Manifestly it is merely a water snake which you address as "The Great King," burning incense and paper to him and inviting him to enjoy theatricals. If he were really a god, would you, who thus worship him, still be flooded again and again by the water of the Yellow River?

摸搽 *Mo*ă[1] *so*ă[4]. To feel after; to feel with the hand, *to finger*:—Note 27.

摸縐 *Mo*ă[1] *ch'i*[4]. The same. (s.)

孝子 *Hsiao*[4] *tsï*[3]. A dutiful son.

找事 *Chao*[3] *shï*[4]. To find fault, to pick a quarrel, *to make a disturbance*, to raise a row; to look for employment.

搗白 *Tao*[3] *po*ă[2]. To gossip, to chat, to talk together. (s.)

聒 *Kwa*[1,4]. *Incessant talking*; loquacity, jabber. Also *kwo*ă[1].

閒聒 *Hsien*[2] *kwa*[4]. Idle talk, *chit chat.*

話匣子 *Hwa*[4] *hsia*[2] *tsï*[3]. "Talk box", a facetious term for the mouth or the faculty of speaking.

伴 *Pan*[4]. A comrade, an associate; *to attend.*

陪伴 *P'ei*[2] *pan*[4]. *To entertain*, to bear one company.

大王 *Tai*[4] *wang*[2]. A rebel chief, a freebooter:—Note 33.

敬奉 *Ching*[4] *fêng*[4]. *To worship*, to serve as men do the gods.

NOTES.

1 Or *You should always keep your wits about you.*

3 Lit., *Takes death* (meaning suicide) *and frightens people.* This is a common threat of Chinese women, and is really their only resort in order to bring their husbands or mothers-in-law to terms, or to get justice at their hands, and it is not unfrequently carried into effect.

5 That is, easily moved by the sorrows and sufferings of historical or fictitious characters.

10 叫喚 is not properly applied to articulate sounds, though sometimes so used derisively. It is used of the call of almost all animals, thus covering many English words, as bark, bellow, bawl, bray, squeal, etc.

11 瓢口 *A dipper mouth*; i. e. a mouth as big as a dipper. 火盆嘴 *A fire pan mouth*; i. e., a mouth as big as a fire pan.

Digitized by Google

第一百九課

若[1]要叫人看明白、必得加上一個小註兒。
這[2]塊手巾、不論怎麼洗也洗不乾淨。註
是一點墨事情、我記得十分清清楚楚。這[3]
○你[4]看這點字、寫的糊糊塗塗、你
先[5]把事情辦停當了、再去聽戲。
○我[6]當是你不論怎麼洗、
我[7]若不帶眼鏡、過於這樣的小字、
眞親確切。
○李[8]姑娘當了、眼的、能看清。
○于[9]先生一句一句講透徹。
○講話點也釘子。我當
呢。看不出來。
○我是你和他說
清楚。
○話說了半天、到底沒說清楚。
○碰罷。
○也[10]講不到題目、半天到底沒講了。

Translation.

1 If you want people to understand it, it will be necessary to add an explanatory note.
2 No matter how you wash this handkerchief you cannot make it clean.
3 There is not the least doubt about it. I remember it with perfect distinctness.
4 Just look at your writing how it is blurred and blotted; who will be able to make anything out of it?
5 First dispose of your business properly, then go to the theatre.
6 I thought you had arranged it with him satisfactorily. You put me in a very embarrassing position.
7 Unless I wear spectacles, I cannot see this kind of print with the least distinctness.
8 Miss Li is entirely too diffident. She has been trying for half a day to get out one sentence, and after all did not speak it clearly.
9 Mr. Yü has been discoursing on this text for ever so long, and after all has not made it clear.

14 喝醉酒 *To drink drunk with wine.* 酒 is added for emphasis. 光 gives the idea of *given to*, but is rejected by the Peking teacher.

19 The style is that of a letter.

24 那 here fills the place of a personal pronoun and is so translated.

26 打出禍來 may mean, *to inflict a serious wound* and so become liable to prosecution, or the payment of damages; or it may mean, as we say, "*to hit the wrong man.*" Note that 那一遭 does not here mean *that time*, but *whichever time*, or *one of these times.*

27 摸摸搽搽的 *Laying hands on whatever is within reach, pilfering, light-fingered.* Only used in this sense when reduplicated. In the South 摸摸緝緝的 is used in the same way.

31 不成脾氣 *Not constituting a disposition;* i. e., wanting in the essentials of a right disposition. There are other phrases on the same model, thus we have 不成材料 *unsuitable for the purpose, worthless,* 不成敬意 *not sufficient to express respect.* 摔 here means *to set or throw down with a bang*, and hence, *to smash.*

33 Snakes that leave the water and come on land during a flood, are regarded as sacred and divine, being possessed by the god who controls the flood. They are often fed up and worshipped with expensive ceremonies by both officers and people. 黃水 is a contracted term for the flood water from the Yellow River. 大王 is a term found in novels and applied to noted robbers and freebooters. It was first conferred as a title on supposed supernatural snakes by Kanghi, the second Emperor of the present dynasty.

LESSON CIX.

Double Auxiliaries.

In addition to the several single auxiliaries already illustrated, there are a number of double words added to verbs to qualify their meaning. Those most frequently used are the following:—

明白 Clear,—added to verbs to express the clearness of the action, or its satisfactory completion.

清楚 Well defined,—added to verbs to express the perfect clearness and distinctness of the action.

完全 Finished,—added to verbs to express the entire completion of the action.

妥當 Satisfactory,—adds its force to the verb it follows. 妥 is also used alone.

停當 is the same as 妥當, but a little more colloquial.

乾淨 Clean,—adds its force to the verb it follows.

Digitized by Google

不知是我沒說明白、可也不知是他沒聽明白。○你[11]看他走起來、搖搖擺擺的、自己覺着很有滋味兒喇。○就[12]是常辦公事的人、也必有個參差不齊、那能樣樣都辦得妥當呢。○無[13]論學綱鑑、學史記、不過記得大關節目、說到那些細微處、誰也記不完全。○先[14]把被套行李、預備妥當、轎子一來、我們就起身。○我[15]和寶興的賬、上月就算清楚喇。○多[16]虧當時我和他立下合同、上面寫的清楚、不然又叫他賴了去了。○學[17]問一道、是大海無邊、怎能

10 I do not know whether it was that I did not say it plainly, or that he did not hear it correctly.

11 See the air with which he struts along. He imagines that he is perfectly stunning.

12 Even one who is constantly transacting business will sometimes fall short. How is it possible to always give entire satisfaction?

13 In learning either annals or history one can remember only the general outline; as to the particulars, no one can remember them all.

14 Get the bedding and luggage ready beforehand, and as soon as the litter comes we will start.

15 My account with Pao Hsing was settled in full last month.

16 It is very fortunate that at the time I had an agreement drawn up with him in which everything was distinctly written out; otherwise he would have imposed on me again.

17 Learning is a great and shoreless sea.

眞切 Vivid,—adds its force to the verb it follows.

親確 Distinct,—adds its force to the verb it follows.

透徹 Perspicuous,—adds its force to the verb it follows.

齊全 Complete,—adds its force to the verb it follows.

將起來 An auxiliary form found in Chinese novels. It is used with verbs of motion and expresses an inceptive, or a progressive idea.

With this lesson we take leave of the subject of verbal auxiliaries; not that there are not more, both single and double, but because in most cases they are each limited to one or two special applications, each of which is best learned as an independent phrase.

VOCABULARY.

註 *Chu*⁴. To define, to explain; *a note*, an explanation, an emendation.

小註 *Hsiao*³ *chu*⁴. A note, *an explanation*, a comment:—Note 1.

黑墨糊眼 *Hei*¹ *mei*⁴ *hu*² *yien*³. Blotted, blurred, defaced.

黑墨烏嘴 *Hei*¹ *mei*⁴ *wu*¹ *tswei*³. . . . The same.

停當 *T'ing*² *tang*¹. *In proper order*, satisfactory, all right:—see Sub.

親確 *Ch'in*¹ *ch'ioä*⁴. *Clear*, distinct, well defined, sharp:—see Sub.

愐 *Mien*³. . . . To reflect; *modest*, ashamed.

腆 *T'ien*³,⁴. . . . Ashamed, *bashful*; to blush.

愐腆 Modest, *bashful*, shamefaced.

于 *Yü*². To proceed; *a surname:* also used as synonymous with **於**.

徹 *Ch'è*⁴. . . . To penetrate; *clear*, perspicuous.

透徹 *T'ou*⁴ *ch'è*⁴. To comprehend; *clear*, perspicuous; thorough:—see Sub.

參 *Ts'ên*¹. Uneven, not uniform. See *ts'an*¹, also *shên*¹.

差 *Ts'i*¹. Having uneven points, rugged. See *ch'a*¹ and *ch'ai*¹.

參差不齊 *Ts'ên*¹ *ts'i*¹ *pu*⁴ *ch'i*². Uneven, irregular.

綱 *Kang*¹. . . . A bond of union, a principle, a rule.

Digitized by Google

把所有的書籍、都學完全了呢。○現[18]在兩鄉社因爲這條河壩、又打起官司來喇、也不知這位大老爺、能給他們斷清楚了不能。○我[19]這樣盤腿坐着、光壓痲了脚、所以坐一會子、必得站起來、活動活動。○你[20]明天可以跟着站將起來、去上工罷、我和掌作尺櫃的已經說明白了。○那[21]間房子還沒收拾嗎、答收拾了一氣、還沒收拾妥當。○分[22]家總要分得清楚、免得分家不明、遺留後患。○他[23]所講究的、不過附會之說、仍舊沒講明白。○追[24]賊追出一大半子、這就

How can one ever learn all the books there are?

18 At present the two townships have gone to law again about this river embankment. It remains to be seen whether this magistrate will be able to settle the matter satisfactorily.

19 This sitting cross-legged always makes my feet numb, so that after sitting awhile I have to get up and move around a little.

20 You may go to work to-morrow with the others. I have arranged it with the manager (foreman).

21 Have you not yet put that room in order? *Ans.* I worked at it a little while but it is not yet finished.

22 In dividing the family inheritance, it is important to secure a clear understanding so as to avoid subsequent difficulties growing out of an unsatisfactory division.

23 His exposition simply runs in the old rut, after all he has not made it clear.

24 If one recovers the greater part of any stolen property, that is con-

鑑 *Chien⁴*. A mirror; an example; a precedent; ..... a precept.

綱鑑 Historical annals, an outline history.

史 *Shi³*..... A historian; *a history*, records.

史記 *Shi³ chi⁴*. A history, a chronological ..... record.

節目 *Chie² mu⁴*. Divisions, heads, classifica- ..... tion, *outline*.

大關節目 *Ta⁴ kwan¹ chie² mu⁴*. The general ..... outline, the principal heads or divisions.

微 *Wei¹*. *Minute*, insignificant; subtle, hidden; ..... slightly; rather:—Les. 177.

細微 *Hsi⁴ wei¹*..... *Minute*, fine, very small.

被套 *Pei⁴ t'ao⁴*. A large bag or wallet for ..... holding bedding and clothing.

行李 *Hsing² li³*..... Luggage, baggage.

籍 *Chi⁴*..... A book, a record. Also *chi²*.

書籍 *Shu¹ chi⁴*..... *Books*, records.

社 *Shê⁴*. The tutelary god of a particular place; ..... a village; *a township*.

壩 *Pa⁴*..... An embankment, a dike.

蹯 *P'an²*... To sit with the legs crossed under one.

蹯腿 *P'an² t'wei³*..... To sit tailor fashion as Chinese women constantly do.

活動 *Hwo² tung⁴*. Loose, moveable; variable, ... *to move*, to exercise.

掌尺 *Chang³ ch'i³*. *A foreman*, a head workman, ... a boss.

掌作 *Chang³ tso⁴*..... The same.

遺留 *I² liu²*. To bequeath, *to leave behind*, ... to transmit.

附 *Fu⁴*. To lean upon, to cling, to attach one- ..... self to; to add to; a supplement.

附會 *Fu⁴ hwei⁴ To echo the words of another*; to ..... gloss over; to speak at random.

成就 *Ch'êng² chiu⁴*. To complete, to finish, *to* ..... *fulfil*.

遵 *Tsun¹*. To obey, to conform to, *to act as* ..... *required*, to follow out. [to keep.

遵守 *Tsun¹ shou³*..... To observe a law,

遵行 *Tsun¹ hsing²*. *To perform what is com-* ..... *manded*, to obey.

Digitized by Google

就然行當他的救等○算
必有完遵都義、主、車貨[25]好、
得罪、全行替凡已來都還
救。若了、的、我律經就預能
肯所他們法成裝。備追
悔以都守當就○齊齊
改我替完遵了我[26]全全
信們我全守律們的了、了
主、雖們了、的、法的只嗎。

sidered very good indeed. Did you suppose it was possible to get it all back?

25 The goods are all in readiness, and as soon as the carts come, we will commence loading.

26 Our Saviour has already fulfilled the righteousness of the law. Everything the law requires us to observe, He has completely observed for us; what it requires us to perform, He has completely performed for us; so that although we are sinners, yet if we will repent and believe in the Saviour, we shall certainly be saved.

NOTES.

1 小註 A *small comment*, is so called because usually inserted in small type and in double columns.

6 碰釘子 *To run against a nail*, which produces a sudden and painful revulsion of feeling, hence, *to be embarrassed, to be nonplussed.*

10 可 as here used, is little more than a mere expletive.

11 搖搖擺擺 *To swing and sway, to swagger, to strut.* The single form of this reduplication is rarely used.

覺着很有滋味 *Delighted with his own self-satisfaction;*
覺着是個景兒 *Thinks he is somebody worth looking at.*

14 轎子 might also refer to a sedan chair, but the mention of luggage implies that a mule litter was intended.

17 學問一道 *This business of learning.* 一道 is added for the purpose of specializing and emphasizing.

18 The use of 這 seems to imply that the officer in question was a new one, different from the former one.

20 There seems to be a great variety of terms for *head workman.* 掌櫃的, which is used in this sense in Peking, *generally* means the responsible man in a business firm, rather than a foreman or head workman.

22 遺留後患 *To leave behind an after trouble*, a phrase borrowed from books.

23 Chinese teachers are much given to repeating over and over again the original word or words with slight variations, and calling that an explanation. In expounding the classics (which is here referred to), they for the most part simply rehearse with slight variations and verbal expansions the words of the standard commentator.

26 凡律法當遵守的 *Whatever* [in] *the law* [we] *ought to observe.*

LESSON CX.

CONNECTIVES.

The more commonly used words of this class were given in Les. 12. This lesson adds others less frequently used, but equally important.

與 To give,—with, to, when joined with 同 it means, *as*, (2)

同 To unite,—together with, in common, and, the same.

連 To connect,—also, even, and. The normal place for 連 is at the beginning of a clause, and it is generally followed, after the subject, by either 都 or 也.

帶 A girdle,—together with, and, including.

連.....帶. Both..... and, between .....and.

並 Two joined together,—together with, and, and also, moreover.

以及 Together with, in addition to, and also.

VOCABULARY.

並 *Ping*[4]. Two joined together, unitedly; together with:—see Sub.; enforces a negative:—Les. 121.

玩笑 *Wan*[2] *hsiao*[4]. To jest, *to joke*, to talk in fun.

惱 *Nao*[3]. *To get angry*, to feel irritated, to be indignant.

夫婦 *Fu*[1] *fu*[4]. Husband and wife.

舛 *Ch'wan*[3]. *Opposed to*, perverse.

舛錯 *Ch'wan*[3] *ts'oŭ*[4]. An error, *a mistake.*

Digitized by Google

第一百十課

誰[1]我們、非。今
好意思與你爲
仇呢。○是帶
我[2]與你與
你玩笑父
親同
年歲。○
連[3]他帶
我[4]們、不[9]量。們[11]起與
○議都
論受
傷。與
○我咱
他、我咱
他類
相應
該也不
過是
○
夫[10]着上
了。與
人。○
有○我[6]
福我[8]
同與天
亨、他必
有素過
差連
錯錯。賂罪不
同相同
○膊
都受。識。他○他
腫○○商他[5]帶
兒[15]以手
後上
生長
痞、
姪
婦
年是
以
了、
○
兆
白
○
明
必
事。
○
娘、
姜
論
大
不
得
與[14]
如
是
我咱
安
[12]
[13]
若
自
匪
見
連
傷。
己
類
他、
方
相
應
便。
交。
該
○
○
同
帶
過
呢。
講
○
○
謝
[16]
千
了。
方
他
再[7]
論
受
意
思
與
你
爲
仇
不
我[4]
們
就
他
便。
也
不
過
呢。
帶
上
是
○
與
我[2]
與
你
玩
笑、
父
親
同
年歲。
○
去
了
○
得
他、
了
傷。
○
我咱
○
們
我
誰[1]
好
意
思
與
你
爲
仇
呢。
是
○
○
他[5]
帶
連[3]
他
○
他
都
受。
識。
他
○
他
與[14]
得
與
我咱
腫
○
○
商
他[5]
帶
連[3]
他
○
他
都
受。
識。
他
○
他
與[14]
得
與
我咱
腫
○
○
商
他[5]
帶

Translation.

1 Who would have the face to act as your enemy?
2 I am of the same age as your father.
3 He and I were both wounded.
4 You ought not to get angry when I was merely joking with you.
5 In criticizing him they also implicated [us.
6 I shall certainly go over to-morrow and consult with him.
7 When you go again to see him, you should take some one else with you.
8 I was not acquainted with him previously.
9 Do not allow him to associate with [the profligate.
10 Husband and wife enjoy their blessings and bear their sorrows in common.
11 To accommodate others is to accommodate oneself.
12 Shie Chao Nien has a boil on his hand which has caused the swelling of his whole lower arm.
13 If you do not have a distinct understanding with him, I fear there will afterwards be some mistake.
14 It is better not to meddle with that which does not concern us.
15 A son should not contest a question of right and wrong with his parents.
16 My whole family, together with my flocks, are all getting along very well.
17 Chiang Ta Hsing has taken to gambling, and has lost both his house and his land.

差錯 *Ch'a¹ ts'o⁴.* An error, *a mistake*, a misunderstanding, a blunder.

無干 *Wu² kan¹.* No part in, *no concern of.*

丈母 *Chang⁴ mu³.* A man's mother-in-law.

虛度 *Hsü¹ tu⁴.* To live in vain, to waste or *squander* (time).

日月 *Jï⁴ yüe⁴.* Time.

傢具 *Chia¹ chü⁴.* Fixtures, furniture, *effects.*

罄 *Ch'ing⁴.* Exhausted, emptied; entirely, *wholly*:—Les. 149.

罄淨 *Ch'ing⁴ ching⁴.* Entirely finished, quite used up, *all gone*:—Les. 149, Sub.

白丁 *Pai² ting¹.* *A man without a degree*, a common man.

清吉 *Ch'ing¹ chi².* Perfect felicity, entire good fortune. (w.)

福安 *Fu² an¹.* Peace and happiness. (w.)

性命 *Hsing⁴ ming⁴.* *Life*, the vital principle, existence.

伯 *Pai³.* A father's elder brother. Also read *poa²* in this sense, and in Shantung *pei⁴*. See *poa²*.

大伯子 *Ta⁴ pai³ tsï³.* A husband's elder brother:—Note 28.

小叔子 *Hsiao³ shu² tsï³.* A husband's younger brother.

擄 *Lu³.* To plunder, *to take or carry captive.*

使費 *Shï³ fei⁴.* Outlay, *expenses.*

費用 *Fei⁴ yung⁴.* The same.

酬 *Ch'ou².* To pledge a guest; to recompense, *to requite.*

應酬 *Ying⁴ ch'ou².* *To reciprocate friendship or kindness;* to entertain; intercourse, reciprocity; to give a fee to a superior.

Digitized by Google

大 河、與 也 淨。失 度 去 沒 個
人、連 天 沒 ○ 了 日 同 小 秀
並 人 地 有。今[23] 火、月、生 的、才、
合 帶 爭 ○ 天 把 連 同 連 秀
家 牲 是 父[24] 黃 糧 我 死、丈 才
清福口、非 就 福 食 也 却 母 却
吉安。都 呢。是 財 衣 白 投 都 與
○ 跌 ○ 天、請 裳、費 那 要 秀
—[27] 在 有[25] 母 了 並 了 裏 笑 才
犯 水 個 就 三 大 工 去。了。不
了 裏。騎 是 桌 小 夫 ○ ○ 同。
案、○ 牲 地、客、傢 咯。不[21] 今[20] ○
連 敬[26] 口 那 連 具、○ 但 若 你[19]
身 請 的 有 一 都 李[22] 是 不 這
家 李 女 爲 個 燒 三 你 隨 個
性 先 人 人 白 得 元 們 哥 沒
命 生 過 敢 丁 罄 家 虛 哥 大

18 Do not depend upon his being a graduate; there are graduates and graduates.
19 You presumptuous fellow; cracking coarse jokes even with your mother-in-law!
20 If I do not go with you now for life or for death, where shall I go?
21 Not only have you squandered your time, but I also have spent mine in vain.
22 A fire broke out in Li San Yüen's home, and his grain and clothes, together with all his effects, were entirely burned up.
23 Hwang Fu Ts'ai invited three tables of guests to-day, and there was not a single one without a degree.
24 The father is Heaven and the mother is Earth; where is the man who would dare to contest a point of right and wrong with Heaven and Earth.
25 A woman was fording the river on an animal, when the animal stumbled, and both woman and beast fell into the water. [and his family.
26 My best wishes to his honor, Mr. Li,
27 If once you commit a crime, your own life and the lives of your family are all endangered.

簿 *Pu*⁴. A register; an account book; *a blank book*, a memorandum.
緣簿 *Yüen*² *pu*⁴. A subscription book for religious or charitable purposes.
賭博 *Tu*³ *po*²... To gamble.
娼 *Ch'ang*¹... A singing woman, a courtesan.
妓 *Chi*⁴... A courtesan, a prostitute.
娼妓 A prostitute, a strumpet.
賊盜 *Tsei*² *tao*⁴. *A robber*, a thief, a highwayman.
賊盜 *Tao*⁴ *tsei*²... The same.
急忙 *Chi*² *mang*². Quickly, hurriedly; promptly, *suddenly*, for the time being.
樹林 *Shu*⁴ *lin*²... *A wood*, a grove; a forest.
躥 *Ts'wan*⁴. *To leap*, to jump; to prance; to spurt out.
廊 *Lang*²... *A verandah*, a porch, a gallery.
廈 *Sha*⁴... A projecting roof, a shed.
簷 *Yien*²... The eaves of a house.
廈簷 Projecting eaves; *a projecting roof supported on pillars.*

花消 *Hwa*¹ *hsiao*¹... *Expense*, outlay.
酬謝 *Ch'ou*² *hsie*⁴. To reciprocate in kind, *to return a favor by a present.*
賀喜 *Hê*⁴ *hsi*³... To offer congratulations.
酒飯 *Chiu*³ *fan*⁴. Food fit to be eaten with wine, a feast.
廝 *Si*¹... *A servant*, a menial attendant.
小廝 *Hsiao*³ *si*¹. *A serving boy*, a waiter; a little boy, a son.
鬟 *Hwan*². The hair dressed in a knot on the top of the head, *a tuft.*
丫鬟 *Ya*¹ *hwan*². A slave girl, *a waiting maid.* Note 35.
僕 *P'u*³,². *A servant*, "your servant."
僕婦 *P'u*² *fu*⁴... *A slave woman*, a nurse. (w.)
册 *Ts'ê*⁴... A list, *a register;* records.
花名册 *Hwa*¹ *ming*² *ts'ê*⁴. A general roll or *register*, a list of adherents.
卯 *Mao*³. The fourth of the twelve branches; 5 to 7 o'clock A.M., *morning.*
卯簿 *Mao*³ *pu*⁴. A muster roll,—so named because called in the morning.

Digitized by Google

都保不住。○[28]我們當家的叫賊殺了、大伯子同小叔子、也都叫賊擄了去喇。○[29]我家中的使費太重、吃米燒柴、人情應酬、連經戲緣簿、費用得要五百多吊錢。○[30]這些賭博場、並娼妓園子、正是賊盜出沒的所在。○[31]那獅子見他要跑、急忙驅出樹林、樸在他身上、連撕帶咬、把他傷了個不堪。○[32]今天我要拾掇客堂、可以將裏頭的椅子、和桌子、連小牀、帶書架子、以及所有的零碎東西、都搬到廊子厦簷底下去。○[33]我的孫子今年進學、花消太多喇、連學

28 My husband was killed by the robbers, and his elder and younger brothers all carried away captives by them.

29 The expenses of my family are quite too heavy. What with rice and fuel, friendly contributions and social reciprocities, together with assessments for prayers and theatricals, I require over five hundred strings of cash each year.

30 These gambling dens and brothels are the rendezvous of robbers and thieves.

31 The lion seeing he was about to run, leaped suddenly out of the wood and pounced upon him, and what with tearing and biting, wounded him dreadfully.

32 I want to clean up the parlor to-day; you may carry out to the verandah the chairs, tables and sofas, also the bookcase, together with all the smaller articles.

33 My grandson getting his degree this year

Notes.

3 連他帶我 The double conjunction emphasizes the fact that *both* were wounded, as if one ought to have escaped.

8 素不相識 *Previously not acquainted*, a ready made phrase.

11 A common saying answering to, "A kind act is never thrown away."

18 秀才與秀才不同 Lit. *graduates are not the same as graduates*, or, as we say in English, "*there are graduates and graduates.*"

19 沒大沒小 A very expressive phrase, meaning that the person disregards, or is insensible to, his relation to those above and below him.

24 父就是天母就是地, presents a stock sentiment of Chinese philosophy. The understanding of the common people takes the impersonal pantheistic terms of the learned, in what is practically a personal sense. To the common Chinese mind 天地 means God.

25 Note how 跌 is predicated of both the woman and the animal.

26 This is the stereotyped polite phraseology with which a letter opens.

27 犯了案 *To sin a suit*; i.e., to transgress the law so as to incur a prosecution. **身家性命** In letters, legal documents and books, 身 is used pronominally for the person speaking and sometimes, as here, for the person spoken to or about; *chia* is not an enclitic but is used in its primary sense. The combination is decidedly *Wên.*

28 孩子爹 Women address their husbands, and also speak of them to others, as *the children's father* or as *so and so's father*, using the name of the eldest son, or if there be no son, of the eldest daughter. Other persons also often take up and use the term used by the wife. Men also speak of their wives as the children's mother, etc. **當家的** "*the man of the house*," is more frequently used in the North than in the South. It is a curious fact that while 伯 or 伯伯 or 伯父 means a father's elder brother, a paternal uncle, 伯子 or 大伯子 means a husband's elder brother, a brother-in-law; and that while 叔 or 叔叔 or 叔父 means a father's younger brother, a paternal uncle, 叔子 or 小叔子 means a husband's younger brother, a brother-in-law. 姑 and 舅, and in some localities 姨, follow the same rule; thus 姑 or 姑姑 or 姑母 means a father's sister, a paternal aunt, while 姑子 (大姑子 and 小姑子) means a husband's sister, a sister-in-law.

29 經戲緣簿 A subscription book for raising money to pay for reciting prayers and holding theatricals. These subscriptions are practically *assessments* by the priests.

30 出沒的所在 *Place of appearing and disappearing*; i. e., *hiding place*,—a book expression.

33 送學 Shortly after the examinations are over and the degrees awarded, the magistrate of each district issues a notice, calling the new graduates to meet him on a certain day and be presented to the 老師. They go dressed up in conventional uniform to the magistrate's office, where he

Digitized by Google

規帶酬謝先生、以及送學時所用的藍衫靴帽、吹手、並賀喜的客。吃的酒飯等項、一共花了三百多吊。這這十吊錢、是我[34]借給王雲山那裏的、如今他死、把我的錢連本帶利全丟了。這三年一個利錢也沒得、如今他家[35]中上下的所有的一切小厮、以及丫鬟僕婦的名字、一總記在花名冊子上、管中兵丁的名字、一總記在卯簿上。

cost a great deal. His graduation fees and present to the teacher, together with the blue coat, boots, hat, musicians, and the feast for those who came to offer congratulations, etc., which were required on the occasion of his matriculation, involved, in all, an expense of over three hundred thousand cash.

34 During these three years I have not received a single cash of interest on that thirty thousand cash that I lent Wang Yün Shan, and now that he has died, my money, both principal and interest, is all lost.

35 The whole family, including stewards and servant boys, together with slave girls and serving women, are all to be entered on the general register; and the names of all the soldiers in the barracks are to be recorded on the muster roll.

treats them to wine, and then goes with them to the 老師, whose official residence is either in, or attached to, the temple of Confucius. They first go into the temple and worship the Sage, and are then formally presented to the 老師 as his pupils (in theory). When dismissed, each one mounts his horse, and, accompanied by musicians and banners, goes round the city or country to call on his friends; after which he is expected to entertain his friends at a feast. These formalities are not, however, compulsory, and those who are too poor to bear the expense, do not go at the invitation of the magistrate, and of course lose the glorification they might otherwise have had.

35 丫鬟 is probably derived from a special manner of wearing the hair indicative of servitude. Both 丫鬟 and 僕婦 are book terms. The colloquial terms are 丫頭 and 老媽.

LESSON CXI.

SIGN OF THE PERFECT PARTICIPLE.

既 is the sign of the perfect participle. It precedes the verb and is usually rendered *having* or *seeing*, sometimes *since* or *inasmuch as*. It is closely allied in meaning to 已經, but differs in that it is only used in a subordinate or participial clause, and implies a principal verb to follow.

既然 } The same meaning as 既 alone, 然 and
既是 } 是 are added for the sake of rhythm, serving also to strengthen slightly the force of 既

既自 Substantially the same as 既然 alone, but more colloquial, and also sometimes local.

既已 A contraction of 既然已經.

VOCABULARY.

既 *Chi*[4]. . . . To finish; since, seeing:—see Sub.

不算 *Pu*[4] *swan*[4]. *To count oneself out*, to refuse, ... to disclaim; to go for nothing.

岳 *Yo*[4], *yüe*[4], *yao*[4]. A wife's parents. A con- . . . . . traction of 嶽.

岳父 *Yüe*[4] *fu*[4]. . . . . A wife's father.

養傷 *Yang*[3] *shang*[1]. To nurse a wound; *to* . . . . . *defray the expense of recovery from a wound.*

管理 *Kwan*[3] *li*[3]. *To rule over*, to govern, to . . . . . control, to manage.

Digitized by Google

第一百十一課

他[1]既走了、由他罷。○我[2]既說出來、就不能不算。○既[3]然打了這個頭、去也就是了。○自是他[14]既是哥哥、大事都不管、小事上既有主意、定了、你們商量定了、我要交給你辦、還是你的親戚、肯○幫我、把知道○你[11]丈人父去拜年呢。○你[7]既不嫁、就該寫庚帖、吧、拿刀來、割這顆頭去、我主意

○ 日 然 ○ 麼 有 正 個 這 麼
他[26] 月 是 他[23] 不 近 是 錢 一 多
既 如 個 既 去 憂。多 了。次 說
是 梭、男 自 是 考 ○ 事、○ 罷。話
欺 光 子 心 呢。若[21] 人 你[18] ○ 做
軟 陰 漢、裏 ○[22] 是 家 既 那[17] 什
怕 似 大 難 我 咱 沒 本 沒 一 麼。
硬 箭、丈 受、們 有 主 親 日 ○
的 光 夫、你 不 學 既 眼 沒 既[16]
東 陰 辦 又 要 問、然 看 有 然
西、既 事 去 走、也 願 見、費 是
就 過 說 找 他 還 意、怎 用、我
不 去 話、他、既 可 他 麼 既 在
用 的 不 他 擺 上 說、還 知 有 這
理 這 好 還 上 既 用 道 費 裏兒、
他、麼 婆老婆 能 了 然 不 的 用、看
你 快、婆老婆 對 酒、有 肯 這 就 着
若 還 媽婆娘 你 還 這 嗎。麼 一 我
去 可 媽婆娘 說 能 樣 ○ 誆 日 的
俯赶 一 的。好 不 的 既[20] 細 也 面
就攏 刻 ○ 的 預 學 無 呢。少 上、
他、疎 俗[25] 嗎。備 問、遠 ○ 不 饒
他 忽 語 ○ 飯 爲 慮、他[19] 得 過
就 嗎。說、既[24] 嗎。甚 必 這 這 他

15 Seeing you stammer, why do you talk so much?

16 Seeing I am here present, forgive him this once for my sake.

17 What day is there when you have no outlay? This being the case, you cannot do even a single day without money.

18 Not having been an eye-witness, how do you come to know it all so minutely?

19 This is a pure impertinence of his. Seeing the original party is willing, what business has he to dissent?

20 Since you have no care for the future, trouble will be sure to overtake you soon.

21 If he had no literary attainments, there would be some excuse; but seeing he has the scholarship, why not go and compete?

22 Don't let us go; having set out the wine can he fail to have food ready?

23 Is it likely you will get a favorable response, seeing you are applying to him when he is already worried?

24 As you boast of being a man, you should not speak and act in an effeminate way.

25 The saying is, "Days and months fly like a shuttle; time speeds by like an arrow." Since time passes so quickly, we should not waste a single moment.

26 Since he is a fellow who insults the weak and cringes to the strong, it

警戒 *Ching³ chie⁴. To warn*, to caution; to threaten; to exhort.

省 *Hsing³*. To examine, to inquire into; to watch; *to awaken*. See *shêng³*.

悟 *Wu⁴. To arouse*, to awake; to perceive, to understand, to reflect.

省悟 *To awake to a sense of*, to become aware of, to become sensible of.

頑 *Wan²*. Stupid, heedless, *immovable*.

愚頑 *Yü² wan²*. Thick-headed, *obtuse*, stupid; heedless; mulish.

NOTES.

3 When one man wounds another in a fight, it is customary to require him to defray the expense of medical treatment, and in some cases pay for loss of time also, while the wound is healing.

7 與 is used for 給, see Les. 25.

9 Custom requires a son-in-law to pay his respects and carry a present to his father-in-law at the new year for three successive years, after which it is optional.

10 主意 may here be regarded as a compound verb and 定 as its auxiliary; or if taken as a noun, it is to be regarded as transposed for rhetorical effect from its usual position. The common order would be 我主意既定了.

13 The phrase 把刀來 is probably elliptical for 把刀拿來, for 把 does not ordinarily take 來 alone as an auxiliary. 也 serves to connect the refusal to forgive and the beheading,—*since you will not forgive me, you might as well also cut my head off.*

17 這個 here refers back to the subject of discourse.

Digitized by Google

更長了價錢兒喇。○材[27]料既然都辦置就了、做起來也爽神。○他[28]這箇欠帖、到底是箇假的、從前要錢的時候、叫他蹧蹋的家裏老少不安、如今既已知道是假的、咱能叫他安穩嗎、總得照實告他一狀、叫他受點刑罰、纔能出我這口氣喇。○王[29]蘭堂眞是糊塗人、我警戒過他好幾次、他總不省悟、他既然這麼愚頑、吃虧是免不了的。

is best to pay no attention to him. Once begin to coax him, and he will presume all the more.

27 Having the materials all ready, it can be made very quickly.

28 This note of his after all is forged. When he was pressing for payment, he worried us so that neither old nor young got any rest. Now that we know it is false, shall we allow him to take his ease? Only by entering suit according to the facts, and giving him a taste of punishment, can I satisfy my resentment.

29 Wang Lan T'ang is a very foolish man. I have warned him several times, but he cannot be aroused [to a sense of his danger]. Seeing he is so obtuse, he will just have to suffer the consequences.

19 人家 and 本主 are in apposition, referring to the same person.

20 This sentiment is from the Confucian Analects, inculcating the wisdom of planning well for the future.

21 A full translation of 也還可說 would require, *there would then still be some excuse.*

22 In the entertainment of guests, wine is first set forth by itself and subsequently the food is brought on.

24 男子漢 expresses physical qualities, and 大丈夫 mental qualities. The two phrases together express very strongly the qualities of a vigorous manliness. 婆婆娘娘 is the reduplication of a noun after the manner of the adjectives in Les. 107, making a very expressive descriptive adjective.

26 欺軟怕硬的 is used as a compound adjective descriptive of the "fellow" here referred to. 長了價 *Raise his price,*—a figure taken from buying and selling.

LESSON CXII.

Antithetical Particles.

A number of different words are used to connect clauses used in apposition or antithesis, of which the principal are the following:—

倒 To invert,—on the contrary, yet. 倒 is often used when it cannot be translated. It serves to intimate that the thing asserted is contrary to expectation; thus in the seventh sentence its use intimates or at least suggests, that a commonplace style was to have been expected.

反 To return,—on the other hand, on the contrary, contrariwise, and yet.

倒反 or **反倒**, On the contrary, etc. Joined together, the two words serve to strengthen each other. In some places the one order is more used, and in other places the other order.

偏 Inclined,—bent on, determined—generally indicates a trace of perversity or contrariness. The English language affords no real equivalent for this word.

轉 To turn,—on the other hand, it came to pass, it turned out.

乃 An antithetical book particle, often used in Mandarin. It expresses a mild opposition to something preceding either expressed or implied. It may sometimes be rendered,—but, yet, moreover, etc., but more frequently goes untranslated, having no proper equivalent in English.

Vocabulary.

乃 *Nai*[3]. But; doubtless; moreover, in fact; to .....wit, then:—see Sub. See *ai*[3].

長子 *Chang*[3] *tsi*[3]..... The eldest son.

志向 *Chi*[4] *hsiang*[4]. *Will*, purpose, determination; inclination.

雅 *Ya*[3]..... Elegant, *genteel;* refined, polished.

Digitized by Google

第一百十二課

己藝。是、說不不我少○你[1]
不○我的怎和偏子。明[3]打
正這[13]倒他麼你要○明算
經、就忘不樣、計來。你[5]是害
倒是了說、就較、○人你、人、
說於這反是你聽[7]兒你倒
人人一說他倒反他雖反害
家有着。了的反倒說小、拉了
不益○許血和的志扯自
乾的、你[12]多心、我話向別己。
淨反轉做的乃計很倒人。○
哩。於這廢是較雅不○我[2]
○人把話。人嗎。致、小。他[4]想
都[15]有鉗○所○倒○不不
說損子、二[11]不他[9]不你[6]愛到
無了。倒嫂及的俗不長的
子○有子的。才氣。讓子、倒
女你[14]些說○學○我反得
也自手得當[10]倒我[8]來、愛了。

TRANSLATION.

1 You thought to injure another, but on the contrary you have injured yourself.
2 I obtained what I had not anticipated.
3 Clearly it was you, and yet you put it off on others.
4 He did not love the eldest, on the contrary he loved the youngest.
5 Although you are small of stature, your will is not small.
6 I am determined to come in spite of your prohibition.
7 His conversation appears to be quite elegant, and not at all commonplace.
8 When I do not dispute with you, you turn about and dispute with me, eh?
9 There is nothing special in his talents and learning, but his warm-heartedness is unequaled.
10 He did not say what he should have said, but on the contrary said a great many irrelevant things.
11 What you say is so, sister-in-law. I had quite forgotten this move.
12 You have shown considerable skill in making these pincers.
13 This is a case in which what was to have been beneficial, has turned out to be injurious.
14 You yourself are not free from reproach, yet you turn about and accuse others of dishonor.
15 Everybody says if you have no sons, daughters are as good; but it is not

---

致 *Chi⁴*. To induce; *to regulate;* a *Wên-li* causative; in order to; extreme, in the highest degree; to the extent of:—Les. 191.

雅致 *Genteel*, stylish, refined, elegant.

才學 *Ts'ai² hsüe²*. *Talent and learning;* learning, acquirements.

血心 *Hsie³ hsin¹*. Heart, affection; *warm-heartedness*, sympathy.

廢話 *Fei⁴ hwa⁴*. Empty words, useless verbiage, *irrelevant talk.*

矯 *Chiao³*. To feign; to usurp; martial; obstinate, deceitful.

矯强 *Chiao³ ch'iang²* *To make false pretences;* unreasonable.

咬扯 *Yao³ ch'ê³*. To evade, *to trump up a case;* to incriminate others.

正派 *Chêng⁴ p'ai⁴*. Respectable, *exemplary*, well-behaved, modest.

半吊子 *Pan⁴ tiao⁴ tsi³*. *A half-witted fellow*, a simpleton, a lackwit, a numskull.

撒村 *Sa¹ ts'un¹*. To blackguard, to vilify, *to retail scandal.*

按 *An⁴*. To press with the hand, *to hold down;* to repress, to grasp; to examine:—see *an¹*.

揉 *Jou²*. To bend, to twist; to supple up, to bring into subjection.

揉搓 *Jou² ts'o¹*. *To knead*, to twist and gouge; to crumple in the hand.

官 *Hwan⁴*. One who serves, a courtier; *a dignitary.*

官宦 *Kwan¹ hwan⁴*. ..... *Officials*, gentry.

Digitized by Google

好、那知道養了兩個女兒、乃是一對冤家、叫人難受不難受呢。○你[16]明明沒有理、偏要混咬矯强、○咱[17]們明明待他是厚、他反說是待他薄。○王[18]愼終乃是正派人家、不是那等半吊子、好撒村的人、所以說他怎麽來怎麽去的、我就是不大敢信。○怕[19]讀書做文章、倒愛說閒話、管閒事。○我[20]所願的我偏不做、我所恨的我倒去做。○你[21]年紀雖輕、聽你的話、倒很有大人的見識。○打[22]倒沒打喇、就是叫他按在地下、好一頓揉搓。○八[23]戒道、若是背着師傅浮水、轉連我墜下水裏去了。○他[24]是官宦人家、你要用錢謝他、倒不大官樣喇。○我起[25]先看那布很好、打算兩疋都要他的、後來細看看、乃是用洋線織的、所以一疋我也沒要。○若[26]照你的話去做、不但不能就救

so, for I brought up two daughters and they have turned out to be my enemies. What a grief of heart it is!

16 You are plainly without a case, yet you persist in trumping up false issues.

17 Clearly we treated him generously, yet he says we treated him meanly.

18 Wang Shên Chung is an exemplary man, and not one of those half-witted fellows who are given to retailing scandal; therefore when all sorts of stories are told of him I am not inclined to believe them.

19 Disliking to study and write essays, he on the contrary relishes idle talk and meddling in affairs that do not concern him.

20 What I would, that I do not; what I would not, that I do.

21 Although you are young in years, your conversation indicates that you have quite a mature judgment.

22 He did not strike me, it is true; but he held me down and gave me a good shaking.

23 Pa Chiai replied, "If I try to swim with you on my back, master, the result will be that we shall both sink to the bottom."

24 He belongs to an official family, so it will not be in good taste for you to return the favor in money.

25 At first I took that cloth to be very good and proposed to buy both pieces of him; but afterwards upon closer examination, I found that it was woven of foreign thread, hence I did not take even one piece.

26 If we do as you say, not only will we

大氣 *Ta⁴ ch'i⁴*. . . . . Genteel, aristocratic. (s.)
織 *Chi¹*. . . . . To weave.
救急 *Chiu⁴ chi²*. To save from the emergency, ... *to remove embarrassment*, to tide over the difficulty.
就急 *Chiu⁴ chi²*. To suit the emergency, to . . . . . meet the case.
脫空 *T'oa¹ k'ung⁴*. To have time or opportunity; . . . . . to lose time; to lose a chance or opportunity.
半憨子 *Pan⁴ han¹ tsi³*. *A simpleton*, a half-witted fellow.
豐收 *Fêng¹ shou¹*. . . . . A bountiful harvest.
蝗 *Hwang²*. . . . . The locust.
蝗蟲 *Hwang² ch'ung²*. . . . . The locust.
攔 *Lan²*. *To hinder*, to stop; to obstruct; to . . . . . screen off.
阻 *Tsu³*. . . . . To hinder, to impede, *to oppose*.
攔阻 To hinder, to interfere with, *to oppose*.
貧 *P'in²*. . . . . Poor, destitute.
貧寒 *P'in² han²*. . . . . *Poor*, destitute.
折乾 *Chê² kan¹*. *To substitute*, to commute, to . . . . . exchange for.
乾折 *Kan¹ chê²*. . . . . The same.
淡薄 *Tan⁴ poâ⁴*. Weak,—as a solution or an . . . . . emotion.

Digitized by Google

急、倒反加憂愁了。○我[27]不脫空的兒、整月家替他當差、反倒有了不是嗎。○那[28]個不識人的老剝皮、使了許多心機、反害了自己。○張[29]家那個孩子、從小我看他很聰明、後來念書念的、倒成了半憨子獃子喇。○都[30]指望今年必要豐收、誰知以後來了蝗蟲、倒把莊稼都吃盡了。○你[31]不攔阻他們、反倒順着他們的口氣說、這是甚麼意思呢。○王[32]老四欠周老大的情、要謝他些東西、周老大如今貧寒的很、我看倒不如折乾折乾、謝他幾兩銀子好。○別[33]的學生都聽戲去了、你爲什麼不去呢。答先生派我看屋子、我倒想着去呢。就是撈不着去。○王[34]先生上回來的信、說在這個月初三要到、今天倒十四咯、還沒有來、大約是有甚麼講究啊。○古[35]人交友很淡薄、今人交友很親熱、但是用着朋友的時候、古人乃是一片眞心、今人乃是一片假意。

fail to remove the embarrassment, but on the contrary will rather make the matter worse.

27 I never lost any time, but served him month in and month out, and am I still to be found fault with?

28 That old skinflint tried a great many tricks, yet injured himself after all.

29 From a child I regarded that boy of the Chang family as very bright, but afterwards he became imbecile from overwork at his books.

30 All hoped this would certainly be a bountiful year, when, all unexpectedly, the locusts came and ate up all the crops.

31 You do not oppose, on the contrary you chime in with them; what is the meaning of this?

32 Wang the Fourth is under obligations to the elder Chou and is proposing to express his thanks by some presents; but as Chou the elder is very poor at present, I think it would be better to substitute a few taels of silver instead.

33 All the other scholars have gone to hear the play, why do you not go? *Ans.* The teacher has appointed me to watch the room. I would like to go, but have no opportunity.

34 In this last letter Mr. Wang said that he would be here by the third of this month. This is the fourteenth and he has not yet come. The probability is that something has occurred [to prevent].

35 In ancient times friendships were quite cool, in these days they are very warm; but in the time of need the ancient friend was true, while the friend of these days is false.

NOTES.

4 少子 is not a common combination. It is used here as the correlate of **長子** alone. A more colloquial form of the whole sentence would be, **他不愛大兒子倒愛小兒子.**

8 In order to bring out the proper force of the sentence, the first **你** and the last **我** should be emphasized.

11 這一着 *This move or trick*,—a figure taken from chess playing. Read chao[1] in Peking, but tsoă[3] in Shantung.

14 乾淨 is here used figuratively of character or conduct.

18 半吊子 *A half string* [of cash] that is, *a half-wit*,—chiefly used as a term of reproach. **說他怎麼來怎麼去的** *Saying this and that about him, telling stories about him.*

20 倒 is here very forcible, but no English word will translate it. **倒** might be rendered *on the contrary*, but its force is more elegantly left to be implied in the relation of the clauses.

22 打倒沒打 *As for beating, he did not indeed beat me*,—a common idiom for expressing this special form of idea.

Digitized by Google

第一百十三課

先[1]生和你怎麼說在上海拍賣買的呢。○南[2]北二京我都到過了。○初[3]三那天、你不是給我的麼。答、却又來說我不知道。○只[4]是我圖甚麼呢着。○預[5]備了來着。你呢着。○姥姥○婆婆姥姥去拜年告訴他、也不來着，咯來。○還[7]沒有。○老[6]婆婆姥姥不預[5]先去、反倒自己來着。○他○○裏○○罷。嗎。

兄送我的、這箇時辰表、原是孫友梅[11]送你的、你昨天怎麼[10]這[9]不過是[8]樣的人家來着。○孫兄送○○○

他該我的呢、答却又來、他既然不該你的、怎麼說必得給你三十兩銀子呢。○你[12]怎麼這麼外道、我們從幾時分過彼此的來來呢來着。○別[13]人都沒有動靜兒、你來不來的先不先的、這麼怕、這樣兒那樣兒防備着、還是個漢子氣味兒嗎。○他[14]能多做就多做、不能多做就少做、從來誰和他計較過來呢。○這[15]些米沒用篩子篩一篩嗎、答篩來着、沒篩了喇、還能這麼乾淨嗎。○李[16]老二、赶自是李文山的兄弟、答却又來、你那天爲甚麼說、他們是爺兒兩個呢。○在[17]關東山的時候、那些麅野鹿、狼蟲虎豹、我都見過來。○聽[18]說人長癩痢、若把頭摸上一些癤瘡、了也是不好。○我早[19]說他沒有那股子常恒勁兒、你却不信、你看他這個黏粥、叫狗舔一舔就好了、答我用過這個法子、叫狗舔過來着、舔咯舔

said he owed me anything? *Ans.* Well then, if indeed he does not owe you, how is it that you say he must give you thirty taels?

12 What makes you so offish? Since when have we had separate interests?

13 Nobody else is making any move, and here you are already in a fright, taking this and that precaution: is this the mettle of a man?

14 If he can do more, let him do more; if he cannot, let him do less. Who ever found fault with him about it?

15 Have you not sifted this rice? *Ans.* Certainly I have. Would it be as clean as this if I had not sifted it?

16 Of course Li the Second is Li Wên Shan's brother. *Ans.* There now! why then did you say the other day that they were father and son?

17 When I was in the mountains in Manchuria I saw the musk ox, the spotted deer, the wild deer, the wolf, serpent, tiger and leopard.

18 I have heard it said that if one who has scald head will rub his head with rice gruel and have a dog lick it, it will get well. *Ans.* I once tried this plan of having a dog lick my head, but it did no good.

19 I said from the first that he did not have that amount of perseverance, but you would not believe it: and

VOCABULARY.

姥 *Lao*[3]. Maternal grandmother. Always doubled in use. (N.)

老娘 *Lao*[3] *niang*[2]. Maternal grandmother.

預先 *Yü*[4] *hsien*[1]. *Beforehand*, previously.

係 *Hsi*[1,4]. Belonging to; concerning; the substantive verb in *Wên-li*.

實係 *Shi*[2] *hsi*[4]. Indeed, *really*, in fact.

拍 *P'oa*[4], *p'ai*[1]. *To strike with the open hand*; to pat, to caress; to slap.

拍賣 *P'ai*[1] *mai*[4]. To sell at auction.

外道 *Wai*[4] *tao*[4]. Unfriendly, *offish*, cool, unsocial.

外氣 *Wai*[4] *ch'i*[4]. The same. (S.)

篩 *Shai*[1]. A sieve; *to sift*.

赶自 *Kan*[3] *tsi*[4]. *Of course*, to be sure, assuredly, by all means.

麞 *Chang*[1]. The musk deer.

麅 *P'ao*[2]. A small spotted deer found in North China.

豹 *Pao*[4]. The panther, the leopard.

癩 *La*[4]. Severe, grievous; bald.

癩痢 *La*[4] *li*[4]. *Scald head.*

癆 *T'u*[1]. The scald head.

癆瘡 *T'u*[1] *ch'wang*[1]. The scald head, sores on the head.

黏 *Nien*[2]. *Glutinous*, viscid; rice.

Digitized by Google

來不來的先不先的就想着改行喇、現在你信不信呢。○張价人和他女人打架、把鍋也砸了、屋裏的東西也摔了、還要點火燒房子、大家夥兒勸他、他一口氣就走喇、如今還不知往那裏去喇。答嗐、這不是糊來鬧嗎。○你年前借我的錢、本利一個沒打、今年又推脫不還、我就不能答應你、答你不答應待要怎麼樣呢、來來來、你做甚麼、我就和你做甚麼。○這都是兩個老絕戶、對孤寡却又來呀、他們弟兄兩個、已經頂着爭過繼的、有弟兄幾個呢、答只弟兄兩個、問他父親弟兄幾個呢、答弟兄三個、問都有兒子嗎、答大分兒和二分兒、大房和二房三分子家業、那還有他們爭的分兒呢。

sure enough, here he is already wanting to try something else. Do you believe it now?

20 Chang Chiai Jên had a fight with his wife; he broke the kettle to pieces and smashed the furniture, and was about to set fire to the house; and when all present joined to exhort him, he went off in a fit of passion and no one knows where he has gone. *Ans.* Humph! Isn't that a silly piece of acting?

21 You borrowed some money of me last year and did not pay a cash either of principal or of interest, and this year you still make excuses and won't pay up. I am not going to submit to it. *Ans.* Submit or not, what are you going to do about it? Just come and we'll have it out on any line you choose.

22 How many are there of these brothers who are contending about the privilege of being adopted? *Ans.* There are only two of them. *Ques.* How many brothers were there in their father's family. *Ans.* Three. *Ques.* Had they all sons? *Ans.* No, the two elder are both without sons. *Ques.* Well, well! when they two are heirs to the three portions what is there left to contend about?

黏粥 *Nien² chou¹.* Rice gruel, milled gruel, congee.
舔 *Tien².* *To lick,* to taste.
恒勁 *Hêng² chin⁴.* *Persistence,* perseverance, the gift of continuance.
常勁 *Ch'ang² chin⁴.* The same. (s.)
改行 *Kai³ hang².* To change one's trade or occupation.
糊來 *Hu² lai².* *To act the fool;* to make much ado about nothing.
价 *Chie⁴.* A waiter; good. (w.)
年前 *Nien² ch'ien².* Before the last new year.
繼 *Chi⁴.* To connect; *to succeed;* to add to.
過繼 *Kwoâ⁴ chi⁴.* To adopt as heir the son of a brother or cousin. Note 22.
絕戶 *Chüe² hu⁴.* A man or woman who has no children neither hope of any.
孤 *Ku¹.* An orphan; fatherless; alone, *solitary.*
孤寡 *Ku¹ kwa³.* Widowed and childless. Alone, solitary, *childless.* (s.)

NOTES.

3 Custom fixes the day on which a man and his children should make a new year's call on his wife's parents, but the day differs in different localities. In some places it is the second, in some the third, and in some the fourth day of the new year. The 去 before 拜 might with equal propriety be placed immediately after 沒. In Nanking 婆婆 is used both for mother-in-law and for maternal grandmother; which is intended can only be known from the connection.

7 窩 here refers to a company or set engaged in a common business or enterprise.

10 實係 is stronger than 實在, and is chiefly used in asseverating. 兄 is often used by friends in a complimentary way when addressing or referring to each other. The idea of selling at auction has been introduced into China by foreigners.

Digitized by Google

第一百十四課

爺就逛打可議意吹舉不試大[1]
要就遊溜以商不噓薦。殼驗熱
見。是逛打。去議、願○數、試的
○了。○打繞意你[6]接就驗。天、
孩[12]○出[10]棚能呢。自就搭○坐
子勞[11]門打定○己接就家[3]下
要你那棚。規。現[7]思尋就搭裏涼風
睏睡的能○○在想思罷。有快涼
覺、駕、像在[9]堉[8]還思尋○火、涼風
你進在家路道有想思若[5]快快涼
抱去家裏上我比是進再
抱通裏開那父方有去走
他、報一着些親、有用暖罷。
拍通樣發樹我人人和○
打報、呢、悶、葉必這的、暖你[2]
拍就好不子、得樣煩和若
打說歹如太回待老罷。不
他我將出不家你、兄○信、
就家就去好去你吹舉材[4]可
睏睡老將遊溜看、商願噓薦料以

TRANSLATION.

1 The day is very hot: sit down and cool off a little, and then proceed.
2 If you do not believe, just try it.
3 There is a fire in the house, go in quickly and warm yourself.
4 The material is not sufficient, but try and make it answer.
5 If a vacancy occurs, may I trouble you to speak a good word for me?
6 Stop and think a moment: if, for example, any one should treat you in this way, would you like it?
7 My father is still living, I must go home and consult with him before I can decide.
8 The leaves on the front walk are too unsightly, go and sweep them up.
9 Better go out for a walk than sit idly at home giving way to your low spirits.
10 When on a journey one cannot have things as they are at home. You must put up with things the best way you can.
11 May I trouble you to go in and make an announcement for me, saying that my master wishes an interview?
12 The baby wants to sleep. Hold it in your arms and pat it a little and it will go off to sleep.

11 必 should be emphasized.

12 The ideal friendship is when the parties 不分彼此, *make no distinction of meum and tuum;* that is, each holds all he has at the disposal of the other.

16 爺兒兩個 *Father and son or daughter,* also applied to grandfather and grandson, or even to ancestor and descendant and includes collateral as well as direct relationship.

17 猴蟲虎豹 is a ready made list, in which 蟲 is put for serpents in general.

20 糊來 *A foolish proceeding.* This is an exceptional use of 來, not provided for in the subject of the lesson.

22 The Chinese have a great horror of dying childless, hence couples who are without male children generally adopt a brother's son, or the son of a cousin of the same family name, in order to have some one to inherit their property, care for them when old, and keep up worship at their graves. 大分兒, 二分兒, etc., is a common way of distinguishing brothers and sisters. 分兒 is equivalent to 分位兒, referring to order of age, and consequently of dignity. The Southern equivalent is 大房. The 老絕戶 is rejected by the Nanking teacher, not because it is not used, but because as here used it is too disrespectful.

LESSON CXIV.

REDUPLICATION OF COMPOUND VERBS.

Not only are single verbs reduplicated as illustrated in Les. 33, but also compound or double verbs. The force of the reduplication is substantially the same as in the case of single verbs. An — is never inserted as in the case of single verbs.

Digitized by Google

竿子、拋擲的、必是魚上了鈎的喇。○廚房有人好吃。

就是拋來擲去的、就得[22]你看那個人、[21]你沒有什麼事、[20]先生來客、老爺有甚麼事呢、[19]兩天要來拜望拜望、[18]他該回家去、[17]在那裏多住幾天、好和他們彼此認識認識、[16]頭一次拜家笑話。○○[15]今天過來、[14]大小上下、[13]都要孝敬、[12]我忘了一一的問安。○[11]昨日[10]我記了朝朝暮暮、[9]可以稱斤[8]打幾壺酒、[7]大[6]不到、[5]整理整理、[4]弄髒了、[3]非整理不行喇。○[2]你識頭一次勞[1]今天司都要孝敬、[12]我忘了一一的問安。○[11]昨日[10]我記了朝朝暮暮、[9]可以稱斤[8]打幾壺酒、[7]大[6]不到、[5]整理整理、[4]弄髒了、[3]非整理不行喇。○

[17]犒當。[14]喇。○[13]舖子裏的事情、都弄鬧壞了、非整理整理不行喇。○

13 Affairs in the shop have all been thrown into disorder, a straightening up is indispensable.

14 Superiors of all grades must be feed; wherever you fail to give a fee, there will be trouble.

15 To-day is the first of the tenth month; you may get a few pounds of meat and a few pots of wine and give all hands a feast.

16 I forgot to charge him that he must not let the secret leak out.

17 The first time you go, you should prolong your visit a little so as to get acquainted with the brethren.

18 Let her go and visit her mother and work off her low spirits, and she will be all right.

19 Some guests are coming in a few days; you must clean up the yard, lest they laugh at it.

20 What business have you come on, sir? *Ans.* I have no particular business; I merely came to call on your master and pay my respects.

21 See that fishing-rod how it bobs up and down, it must be that a fish has taken the hook.

22 "With a friend in the kitchen, you can get something to eat; with a

Vocabulary.

風凉 *Fêng*[1] *liang*[2]. . . . . Airy, *cooling.*

搭 *Ta*[1]. *To put or hang on;* to build; to add; to get . . . . . on with; to adapt to; to engage a passage.

就搭 *Chiu*[4] *ta*[1]. *To make a thing answer,* to . . . . . adapt to circumstances.

噓 *Hsü*[1]. . . . . To breathe; *to blow;* to suck up.

吹噓 *Ch'wei*[1] *hsü*[1]. To blow; *to say a good word* . . . . . *for,* to recommend.

尋思 *Hsün*[2] *sï*[1]. . . . . *To consider,* to reflect.

墉 *Yung*[3], *ying*[3]. A raised path or walk in front . . . . . of a house.

墉路 *Yung*[3] *lu*[4]. A raised or paved walk in . . . . . front of a house.

墉道 *Yung*[3] *tao*[4]. . . . . The same.

打掃 *Ta*[3] *sao*[3]. . . . . *To sweep,* to brush up.

溜打 *Liu*[1] *ta*[3]. . . . . To walk for recreation.

拍打 *P'ai*[1] *ta*[3]. . . . . *To pat;* to tap, to knock.

上司 *Shang*[4] *sï*[1]. . . . . A superior officer.

孝敬 *Hsiao*[4] *ching*[4]. To honor and respect (as . . . . . parents); *to give a present or fee to a superior officer:*—Note 14.

犒 *K'ao*[4]. . . . . To reward workmen with a feast.

犒勞 *K'ao*[4] *lao*[2]. A feast given to soldiers or . . . . . workmen:—Note 15.

走漏 *Tsou*[3] *lou*[4]. To leak out; *to let out a secret,* . . . . . to tell, to divulge.

消息 *Hsiao*[1] *hsi*[2]. . . . . News, word; *a secret.*

悶氣 *Mên*[4] *ch'i*[4]. *Low spirits,* dejection, dumps, ... blues, melancholy.

洩 *Hsie*[4]. To leak, to ooze out, to drip; to . . . . . divulge, to tell a secret.

發洩 *Fa*[1] *hsie*[4]. To let out, to give vent to, *to* . . . . . *work off.*

Digitized by Google

飯、朝裏有人好作官、大人現在這樣重用你、你還不能提拔提拔我們嗎。○小[23]兒鹵莽無知、若他遇見什麼爲難的事、望乞先生指教指教。○逢[24]年過節的、你怎麼不上墳去祭奠祭奠、買幾張紙錢燒化燒化呢。答上墳添土、除去墳墓上的荊棘、這個無有不可、若是燒香燒紙的祭祀、那都是無知妄作。○現[25]成的館子、咱們進去喫喝杯茶、坐坐歇息歇息、我的東就是了。答那裏的話呢、今天該是我的東喇。○老[26]兄長了一個好鼻子、嘴巴子也很方正、又滿臉放光、這是主着要發大財。答托福托福、若兄弟當眞發了大財、却是借你老人家的錦言咯。

friend at court, you can obtain an office." Seeing His Excellency now depends so much on you, can't you give us a lift?

23 My son is heedless and ignorant; if he gets into any difficulty, I hope you will help him with your advice.

24 When the annual festivals come, why do you not go to the graves to offer sacrifices, and also buy a few sheets of paper money to burn? *Ans.* Going to the graves to add some earth or to clear away the brambles is all right; but as to burning incense and paper money as a sacrifice, that is all useless nonsense.

25 Here is a tea-house just at hand, let us go in and drink a cup of tea and sit and rest awhile. You are my guest. *Ans.* What are you talking about? It is my treat to-day.

26 You have a good nose and your lower jaws are square and your whole face is bright, all of which indicates that you are to become rich. *Ans.* I am certainly much obliged. If I do indeed succeed in making a fortune, it will be owing to your complimentary words.

釣 *Tiao*[4]. ..... *To fish*, to fish for, to catch.
竿 *Kan*[1]. ..... A rod, *a pole*, a staff.
抪 *Tun*[4]. ..... To shake, to move.
掣 *Ch'è*[4]. To obstruct; to draw (as lots); *to pull*; ..... to grasp.
抪掣 To shake, *to bob up and down*, to dance.
重用 *Chung*[4] *yung*[4]. *To depend upon*, to rely ..... on; to have confidence in.
鹵 *Lu*[3]. ..... Rock salt, alkali; *rude*; insolent.
莽 *Mang*[3]. ..... Thick grass; confused; *heedless*.
鹵莽 Rustic, rude; *heedless*, abrupt.
望乞 *Wang*[4] *ch'i*[3]. ..... I beg, I hope. (w.)
指教 *Chi*[3] *chiao*[4]. To teach, to direct; *to advise*, to ..... counsel.
指點 *Chi*[3] *tien*[3]. To point out, to direct, to ..... guide; *to advise*.
奠 *Tien*[4]. ..... To enshrine; *to offer a libation*.
祭奠 *Chi*[4] *tien*[4]. ..... To sacrifice to.
紙錢 *Chi*[3] *ch'ien*[2]. Paper money, tinsel paper:— ..... Note 24.
燒化 *Shao*[1] *hwa*[4]. ..... To burn, to consume.
祀 *Si*[4]. ..... *To sacrifice to*, to worship.
荊 *Ching*[1]. ..... *A bramble*; thorny, prickly.
棘 *Chi*[4]. ..... *A thorn*, a bramble; troublesome.
荊棘 Thorns, brambles.
方正 *Fang*[1] *chêng*[4]. ..... Full, *plump*; broad.
托福 *T'o*[1] *fu*[2]. I'm much obliged, you're very ..... kind.
錦 *Chin*[3]. Embroidered; elegant, flowery, *com-* ..... *plimentary*.
錦言 *Chin*[3] *yien*[2]. Flowery language; *compli-* ..... *mentary words*.

Digitized by Google

第一百十五課

日不他、事間忘走了、地通防你[1]
爲可一情想記出脾裏的的怎
甚陡點穿不了。二氣、把麼
麼然也的起○三好我忽
突忽就不罷來。他[5]里起嚇然
然說。認咧。○岳路、賭了一敗了
要○得。○新[6]父忽猛博一跳。主
起請[9]○我[7]衣的拉然來喇。○意
行。問勸[8]猛裳名巴想○他[3]呢。
○老戒然是字、○我[4]忽○
咱[10]長人間偶我起把已然猛冒冷[2]
們兄、的看然遽把傘經變過不不
偶今話、見有然傘經變過不

Translation.

1 How is it that you have suddenly changed your mind?
2 Unexpectedly he gave me a fright.
3 He suddenly changed his bent and developed a passion for gambling.
4 I had already gone two or three *li* when it suddenly occurred to me that I had forgotten my umbrella.
5 His father-in-law's name I cannot recall on the spur of the moment.
6 New clothes are only to be worn on special occasions.
7 Seeing him unexpectedly, I did not recognize him at all.
8 In exhorting any one, it is not best to begin too abruptly.
9 Please tell me, my good brother, why you suddenly want to start today.
10 Should we suddenly meet with some

Notes.

1 Said to a passer by, by one who is resting in the shade at the roadside.

5 吹噓吹噓 *Blow a little for me*; i.e., *recommend me.*

8 堋路 properly *yung³ lu⁴*, but in actual use frequently spoken *ying³ lu⁴*. It is also written 甬 by some, and by others 映.

11 我家老爺 *The honored head of our family,*— addressed by the gentleman's servant to the servant of the man upon whom his master has come to call.

14 All inferior officers are expected to send in a retaining fee to their superiors at the new year, as well as on certain other special occasions. If the fee is not sent in, the inferior will presently find his affairs embarrassed with difficulties. The giving of this fee is facetiously called 孝敬, *showing respect*, or 應酬, *making a return.*

15 The first day of the tenth month is a feast-day in honor of 城隍, the god of the city moat. On this and similar feast-days, custom requires that employers should give their workmen a half-holiday and a feast. This is technically called 犒勞, *feasting the weary.*

17 多住幾天 *Remain a few days longer*; i, e., *prolong your visit a little*, for the purpose referred to.

18 The "belly" is commonly regarded by the Chinese as the seat both of the intellect and the affections.

23 The language and style of a letter.

24 逢年過節的 requires 時候 understood to complete the construction. Paper money is burnt for the *use* of the dead. In the case of ancestors it is supposed to express affectionate remembrance, as well as to conciliate them and secure their good offices on behalf of their descendants; in the case of other gods it is a bribe to appease their anger and secure their protection. It consists of tinsel paper, that is, paper, having pasted on it a very thin leaf of tin to represent silver, or of brass to represent gold. It is folded and pasted in the shape of ingots of silver and gold. The poor also use yellow paper with holes punched in it to represent copper cash. 無知妄作 is book style.

25 我的東 *I am host, it's my treat.* 東 is put for 東家. A more colloquial form, at least in the North, is 我的請兒.

LESSON CXV.

Phrases indicating Suddenness.

The superabundance of words for expressing this idea shows that the Chinese language is in some respects richer than the English. A number of the following phrases are more or less local, and sundry of them are practically synonymous, differing only in the connexion in which they are used.

忽然 Suddenly, unexpectedly, all at once. This is the most common and universally used word for expressing the idea of suddenness.

猛然 or 猛然間 Suddenly, unexpectedly, all at once; abruptly. The 間 is added or not as the rhythm suggests. It may also be added to any of the following terms which end with 然.

遽然 Suddenly, abruptly, on the spur of the moment.

陡然 Suddenly, abruptly, all at once.

突然 Suddenly, unexpectedly, abruptly.

Digitized by Google

把人實見一心實丁間丁怕然爾
我的、在人篇。驚、在的他有
嚇正快、家○不急、死猝了
了當一賺馬[16]肯登一霎了、然不
一熱眨轉錢纔告時霎時免來測
跳。閙眼享待要訴。時間時間不到、的
○中的福、要要○滿得就事、
把[20]間、工一跑、韓[15]地常預他
心在夫、時叫先是常備能
已我就間我生水。思想不替
經身過就偷抽做○慮着及咱
放旁去眼冷冷文我[14]難了。們
肆打冷冷了。熱的子章、們過受。○出
慣冷打孤○起一眞若○人[12]力。
了、驚驚丁我[19]來。把是是昨[13]至○
遽放今○楸好突日親應[11]
然了天火[18]住手、然那的當
要三去輪了。霎爽登間場骨及卽
收聲看車○時然時他、雨、肉、早
回大接跑他[17]就他下冷冷猛預
來、砲、大的看是必的然孤孤備、

misfortune, he will be able to help us.

11 We ought to prepare in good season lest he should come suddenly and we not be able to get ready in time.

12 When a very near relative suddenly dies, one cannot help constantly thinking of him and feeling sad.

13 That was a heavy rain yesterday; in a twinkling the earth was everywhere covered with water.

14 If we ask him abruptly, his suspicions will certainly be excited and he will tell us nothing.

15 Mr. Han is certainly skilled in writing essays, he does one up in no time.

16 The horse was just about to run, when I suddenly seized him and held him fast.

17 When he saw men making money and enjoying it, his cupidity was at once excited.

18 The cars run at a tremendous speed; they pass by in the twinkling of an eye.

19 I went to-day to see the reception of His Excellency, and just in the midst of the excitement I was suddenly startled by the firing off of three great guns at my side.

20 Having habitually allowed the mind to wander unrestrained, it is a very difficult thing to bring it suddenly under discipline.

猝然 Suddenly, abruptly, quickly.
爽然 Promptly, in a trice, in no time. (c.)
驟然 Suddenly, in a flash, with a start.
倏然 Instantly, instantaneously, all at once.
偶然 Suddenly, accidentally, without notice.
偶爾 The same as 偶然, but more bookish, at least in most places. Les. 161.
冷孤丁 All at once, suddenly, unexpectedly.
冷打驚 The same. (c.)
打冷驚 The same. (c. & s.)
冷不防 Unexpectedly, unawares.
冷地裡 The same. (s.)
冒不通 The same.
冷然間 Suddenly, all at once.
抽冷子 Suddenly, unexpectedly, unawares. A Peking term.
偷冷的 The same. A Southern term.
忽拉巴 All of a sudden, without warning. A Shantung term.
打不瞧 Before one is aware, unawares. A Shantung term.
一時間 In a moment, at once, at present.
一展眼 In the opening of an eye, } in the
一轉眼 In the turn of an eye, } twinkling of
一眨眼 In the wink of an eye, } an eye.
猛過地裡 Unexpectedly, unawares, suddenly. A Southern term.
一霎時 In a twinkling, in a moment.
霎時間 The same.
登時 or 登時間 In a moment, in a twinkling, in no time. Les. 162.
一旦 Some morning; suddenly, in a moment, as soon as. A book term used by scholars.
頃刻 or 頃刻間 In a moment, in a twinkling. A book term.

Digitized by Google

那公子可是個貴人行動、却不認得。丈夫去了世、丈夫[22]看鐵心在世、和他像沒着落似的、忽然抬頭、驟然裏就起了狂風、把船撞在礁石上、一頃刻間就沉下去了。○今[24]日有個大漢子、和我打架、叫我抽冷子打了一拳、打了一個倫不冷瞧的、仰臥蹬脚。○天[25]有時是無定的、旱澇是常有的、仰臥搬脚蹬脚。○那[21]少年人猛然抬頭、看纔[23]剛行到半路、一頃間時就沉下去了。○忽然丈夫去了世、丈夫[22]看纔剛行到半路、一頃間時就沉下去了。○今[24]日有個大漢子、和我打架、叫我抽冷子打了一拳、打了一個倫不冷瞧的、仰臥搬脚

上半天、我母親還好好的、到下半天出去的時候、偶然間倒在地下、得了個中[27]風不語。○打[28]羣仗、一個人的命、就都在他手裏通了、官人的話、多少地、都拿他當[29]冷冒冷地不孤的嘴、提到他父親種種不是處、數說他一生的不是、指着他的鼻子直眼的罵、你說他漏洩根底、他就急了、拉開架子、要和他拚命。○人家以後正說起頭一旦出了手、纔知道他是個癟三、提不得的人、你到底漏洩了他的根底、他就羞惱成怒、一把揪住了、打了一頓、拉到官人跟前、告他個預備害人的罪名。○官人問他因何打人、他說因爲他說話漏洩了根底、官人說、既是這樣、就該打他四十大板、問他個發遣、他說、小人不過漏洩了些、就該打四十大板麼、小人的罪、還不至於發遣罷、官人說、你既知道你的罪、不至於發遣、就該打四十大板、快快的打、打完了、還要問他個預備害人的罪名、他說、小人的罪、既該打四十大板、還要問個預備害人的罪名、小人的病、豈不是將要減而復明的時候麼、官人說、你既知道你的病、將要減而復明的時候、就該快快的吃藥、不該預備害人、你的病、就該好了、他說、小人的病、雖然將要減而復明、還要吃藥纔好、官人說、既如此、還要吃藥纔好

呀。○他[30]們正在學房、山嚷怪叫的鬧、與叫先生冷抽冷子進去、喝了一聲、就像喜鵲窩裏戳了一棍似的、忽然一點動靜也沒有了。○從[31]前法國有兩個人、坐輕氣球在天空飄蕩、不覺飄到大海之上、可巧看見海中有一隻輪船、他們就赶緊的將氣球落下、既落到海面、二人一齊跳在海裏、那氣球就驟然騰空、彷彿一條箭射到天上去了。

30 They were in the schoolroom just in the full tide of their hilarity, whooping and yelling like demons, when the teacher, coming in unexpectedly, gave one shout: it was like striking a nest of young magpies with a stick; instantly there was not a sound to be heard.

31 Once in France two men ascended in a balloon, and while sailing in the air, were insensibly carried out to sea. Fortunately they caught sight of a steamship and, with all haste, caused the balloon to descend. When they touched the surface of the water, the two men jumped simultaneously into the sea, whereupon the balloon suddenly darted up, like an arrow shot skyward.

15 The peculiar force of 就是 cannot be matched in English.

17 眼熱起來 *To look with longing eyes, to wish for.*

19 Strictly speaking 的, as here used, should limit the seeing to the persons who went out to meet his excellency. This, however, is not the real meaning. A word like 光景 must be supplied after 的 in order to complete the construction. The proper sense is given without 的.

21 鐵公子 The hero of the Fortunate Union.

22 This sentence might also be rendered, *While her husband was alive, he was strongly attached to her*, etc. The sentence was probably made by a foreigner. If a Chinese had made it he would have said, either 二人 or 兩口, instead of 和他.

24 仰臥 *To fall* or *lie on the back*, and 蹬 *to spread* or *sprawl the feet.* The Peking phrase 仰撅脚 is not so readily analysed. Nanking rejects both phrases, and says 仰巴四叉.

27 打羣架 *To fight in a flock*; that is, to engage in a free fight or general row. 出了人命 *There comes out a [loss of] life*; i.e., some one is killed and his life is to be accounted for to the law.

28 一撇 is used in the North and means to twist the lips to one side, 一癟 is used in the South and means to draw up or pucker the lips, both being expressive of contempt.

29 The preparation to be made, is to lift the dying man off the *k'ang* and dress him in his burial clothes. The 理 at the end drops out of the translation.

30 山嚷怪叫 *Hills resounding and hobgoblins howling*, used as a figure to describe the uproarious hilarity of school boys. 與 changes its usual tone, and also requires emphasis to bring out its force.

31 輕氣球 *A hydrogen globe*, that is, a balloon. 可巧 *Fitting the emergency.* In Peking 法 in 法國 is read *fa*[4].

LESSON CXVI.

PHRASES INDICATING CERTAINTY.

定 Certainly, positively. 定 forms a number of combinations, as below, and is the most important word used for the expression of certainty.

一定 Certainly, inevitably; determined, invariable, for certain.

定然 Certainly, positively, surely.

必 Necessarily, certainly.

必定 Certainly, positively, inevitably; very certain; it must be.

必然 The same.

準 Certainly, surely.

一準 Certainly, positively, unquestionably.

定準 Positively, inevitably, assuredly.

着準 Assuredly, unquestionably, unmistakeably. (C.)

準成 Certainly, surely, inevitably. (C. & N.)

準行 The same. (S.)

定準不移 Undoubtedly, unquestionably, absolutely certain.

Digitized by Google

第一百十六課

先[1]生明天一定走嗎。○天[2]下事、有大利必有大
害。○你[3]若[6]不[7]可一定要走、我[10]看定準了、你[9]不能定受。○他偷[12]的。○像[11]的這樣定好、不
定[8]好、我得斷住下。○不是你急賣、準賠本錢。○凡[4]哄騙人必然要
肯去。○不是我留自己在那裏、必然是
讓你。○不是我爲這件事情請我、我要
而○若[6]他[7]是好人。○留[5]他準了、○我一定知道是
人、○我[10]看定準的。○你[9]不能定不留這件事情、我得斷住他。
家着定準了、○必定不留這件事情、不住他。
買個時辰不能定是賠不住他。
的手眼。○看[14]你這個人的樣兒、必然是準時候、的不是王錦芳弄使的手段。○表。○別[13]○他等[12]我的。○新[8]○錢的一[11]這樣定好、不

TRANSLATION.

1 Will you certainly go to-morrow, sir?
2 In everything, that which affords large profits necessarily involves [the risk of] great loss.
3 If you urge a sale, you will certainly [lose money.
4 Whoever deceives another is certainly not a good man.
5 If you leave him there by himself, he will certainly not stay.
6 If I had known that it was on account of this business that he invited me, I should assuredly not have gone.
7 He is determined to go, I cannot detain him.
8 That he who does right fares well, is an invariable law.
9 I will positively not let you off unless you get me a new one.
10 I am quite satisfied that he must have stolen it.
11 He will assuredly not submit to this [sort of coercion.
12 When I get the money, I will certainly go and buy me a watch.
13 This is unquestionably one of Wang Chin Fang's tricks; no one else could do it.
14 Judging from your condition, it must be you have caught cold.

定而不可移 Fixed and unalterable, morally certain, invariable.
一定不移 The same.
堅定不移 Positively, incontestibly, assuredly, unmistakeably.
堅定着一 The same. (c.)
斷 Assuredly, positively.
斷斷 The same. Repeated for emphasis.
斷乎 Certainly, positively, undoubtedly, assuredly, absolutely.
斷然 The same.
確乎 Assuredly, undoubtedly.
確乎不移 Indisputably, assuredly, without the least doubt.
鑿鑿可據 Demonstrably, undoubtedly, indisputably. Bookish.
着準可據 The same. Colloquial. (c.)
絕 Absolutely, utterly.
絕然 The same.
決 Positively, unequivocally.
決然 The same.
萬 or **萬萬** Utterly, absolutely, positively,—always used with a negative.

VOCABULARY.

移 *I*[2]. To transplant; *to move*, to shift, to ... migrate; to graft.
鑿 *Tsoa*[2]. A chisel; to chisel out, to dig; to ... brand; *to verify;* secure.
賠本 *Shê*[2] *pên*[3]. To lose on an investment. (c.)
轄 *Hsia*[2]. To govern, *to rule;* to regulate.
轄制 *Hsia*[2] *chi*[4]. To rule over, *to coerce*, to ... constrain, to keep under.
手眼 *Shou*[3] *yien*[3]. Device, manœuvre, *trick*, ... bribe, corruption.

Digitized by Google

凍着了。○論[15]到他的口才、確乎不在衆人以下。○雖[16]有千萬好的話、他若[18]是絕然不聽。○我[17]若不看他老了、斷乎不能白饒了他。○這[19]是凡[22]都有的的確確的事情、斷然沒有差錯。○但[20]凡是個男子、○這[19]是個清雅私通、斷不肯私自逃走。○這[24]是準定不移的主意。○他[23]若一點私弊沒有、○現[22]在我左右兩難、沒有一定的志向。○事情這麼一來、○一年富似一年。○漢、更改。○人[25]死了以後、○事情沒有定準、○斷不可不移的章程、○他[26]們兩個不能私通、的通、去這處、是決鑿確然鑿乎沒可不移有據妖的精。○我[28]已莫[27]不經要仔亂細說、訪那林間了、內一着定定準準不可不移據雅

15 As to fluency, he is certainly not inferior to others.
16 Although all the arts of persuasion [have been exhausted], he utterly refuses to listen.
17 If I had not regarded his age, I should certainly not have let him off scot-free.
18 If China were willing to build railroads, it is very certain that she would grow richer year by year.
19 This is an undoubted fact; there is absolutely no mistake about it.
20 Every true man ought to have some decision of character.
21 Under these circumstances, the business will unquestionably be difficult to settle.
22 Just now I am in a great dilemma and cannot come to any settled conclusion.
23 If he had been guilty of no corruption at all, you may be sure he would not have secretly fled.
24 This is the invariable rule which absolutely cannot be changed.
25 There is positively no transmigration after death.
26 That they two have had some secret intercourse is an indisputable fact.
27 Do not talk at random. That grove is a quiet place where there are positively no ghosts.
28 I have already made careful inquiry;

鐵路 *T'ie³ lu⁴*. . . . . A railroad.
但凡 *Tan⁴ fan²*. *Whoever*, whatever; whenever; . . . . . if at all, if in any case, if indeed:—Les. 157.
私弊 *Si¹ pi⁴*. Bribery, *corruption;* fraud, ... embezzlement.
私自 *Si¹ tsi⁴*. Privately, *secretly*, clandestinely, ... surreptitiously.
逃走 *T'ao² tsou³*. *To flee*, to run away, to . . . . . abscond.
脫生 *T'o¹ shêng¹*. To transmigrate; to be born . . . . . into the world.
廻 *Hwei²*. To come round to the starting point, ... to revolve.
輪廻 *Lun² hwei²*. Transmigration, the doctrine . . . . . of metempsychosis.
私通 *Si¹ t'ung¹*. Clandestine communication, ... *secret or illicit intercourse.*
清雅 *Ch'ing¹ ya³*. *Quiet*, tranquil, still, retired.
妖精 *Yao¹ ching¹*. *A spectre*, a goblin, an elf, ... a satyr.
訪問 *Fang³ wên⁴*. . . . . *To inquire*, to look for.
罪惡 *Tswei⁴ ê⁴*. . . . Wickedness, *sin*, evil deeds.
橫 *Hêng⁴* Perverse, mulish; unreasonable, out- . . . . . rageous; contrary, sinister. See *hêng²*.
流淚 *Liu² lei⁴*. . . . . To shed tears, to weep.
失和 *Shi¹ hê²*. To disagree, to fall out; *to* . . . . . *declare war.*
漱 *Shu⁴*. . . . . *To rinse*, to wash.
粗蠢 *Ts'u¹ ch'un³*. . . . . Rustic, *boorish;* stupid.
粗笨 *Ts'u¹ pên⁴*. . . . . The same.

Digitized by Google

他是個有德行的人。○這[29]罪惡的報應、一定要受、斷乎免不了。○我[30]看他一臉橫肉、定然不是好人。○神[31]是神、人是人、不能成神、斷斷沒有這個理。○等[32]他要飯的時候、給他頓飯吃、倒可以、叫我保他做什麼、萬也不能。○看[33]他那樣流淚、和他所賭的咒、鑿鑿可據是屈他。○現[34]在這兩國打仗、是確乎不移的事、但不知是爲甚麼失和。○我[35]的父親每頓飯後、必要漱漱口、刷刷牙、這是一定之規。○我[36]若是當堂說這樣的話、準成是要挨嘴巴子。一定要受、斷乎免

he is unquestionably a good man.

29 This retribution for sin is something that will inevitably come, and there is positively no escape.

30 I noticed that his face had a sinister expression; he is certainly not a good man.

31 Gods are gods and men are men. To say that a man may become a god is assuredly contrary to reason.

32 When he comes to want I will give him a meal, but recommend him for a place, I positively will not.

33 Judging from his weeping and his protestations, he is undoubtedly wronged.

34 That these two kingdoms are now at war is an indisputable fact, but how the peace was broken I do not know.

35 It is my father's invariable custom to rinse his mouth and brush his teeth after each meal.

36 If you use such language as this in the presence of the magistrate, you will certainly get a beating on the face.

我[38]個人、若是當堂說這樣的話、準成是要挨嘴巴子。一定要受、斷乎免不了。○我[37]楊本義○那[38]個人、生的過於粗蠢、舉止想叫他行是要漱口、刷刷牙、這是一定之規。○我[35]的父親每頓飯後、必要漱漱口、刷刷牙、這是一定之規。○我[36]

是天靈決不見了。○仵[39]作說、在右踝怎鐵傷傷一處、處、他左處、是是少成沒了
決拐子磨傷老下前一
不扔骨知道○爺呢。黠年個
見了上、上有有木木定一[40]六刀的月二日却不子、十木兩一傷處、多準月記
上、

第一百十七課

請[1]記年○客兒天一個
先生喇。下[6]僱了去店
把我上月的工錢給
我。○大[2]後天是老大
天前是安息日、你
別忘
今[14]年下雨、我得
幫忙。
你[13]家人多、若
昨[9]答
昨在拉
忙。
今[4]
忘

TRANSLATION.

1 Will you please, sir, give me my last month's wages?
2 Two days after to-morrow is the sabbath. Do not forget.
3 Did he not come day before yesterday? *Ans.* No. He came the day before that.
4 How many hands did you hire this year? *Ans.* I hired four.
5 Thursday of last week was the twenty-eighth of last month.
6 Wednesday of next week, my second brother is to be married.
7 When you went to the capital last year, where did you lodge? *Ans.* At an inn.
8 I am going to-morrow, and will return by the twenty-fifth or twenty-sixth of next month.
9 Is he sick to-day? Why, yesterday he was quite well.
10 My elder brother has gone to track for a man who hired him, and cannot return before next week.
11 I have this year forgotten the greater part of the books I studied last year.
12 Day after to-morrow I am coming to make a birthday call, and the next day I am coming to the feast.
13 If you continue diligent in your work, next year I will increase your wages.
14 There has been too much rain this year, the crops will certainly be poor.
15 Day after to-morrow the patriarch of the family is to be buried. I must go and help them.

去年 or 舊年 Last year.
前年 Year before last.
明年 Next year. 明 is never applied to 月.
過年 Next year, after the new year.
來年 Next year, the coming year.
轉年 Next year, the following year.

後年 Year after next.
大前年 The year preceding year before last.
現前年 The same. (s.)
大後年 The year following year after next.
老後年 The same. (s.)

VOCABULARY.

工錢 *Kung*[1] *ch'ien*[2]..... Wages.
縴 *Ch'ien*[4]..... A tow-rope, a tracking line.
拉縴 *La*[1] *ch'ien*[4]. *To track;* to lobby for; to act the drummer.
拜壽 *Pai*[4] *shou*[4]. To make a birthday call:—Note 12.
叨 *T'ao*[1]..... To desire; to receive; *to enjoy.* ..... See *tao*[1].
叨擾 *T'ao*[1] *jao*[3]..... To enjoy an entertainment.
翁 *Wêng*[1]..... Venerable; *an old man.*

Digitized by Google

他們去。○今[16]朝有酒今朝醉、明日愁來明日當。○前[17]年上省赶考、我們兩個走了一路。○舊[18]年是閏七月、大前年是閏三月。○你[19]昨兒夜來不是這麼說的嗎、答是這麼說的。○現[20]在沒有錢贖、到轉年春分的時候再贖罷。○依[21]我的意思、叫他明年再上一年學、到後年下來做買賣。○我們[22]已經定規、於本月二十四日起身。○他[23]是大上上禮拜六來的、到這個禮拜二、一共是十一天。○下[24]月初五、又到了會期喇、又得拿四吊錢的會股子。○登[25]州是仗着吃關東糧、關東既然歉收、明年的糧食是必貴的。○他[26]去年佔我的地、今年又佔我的地、若是過年再這個樣兒、我定然要不依他。○知[27]府已經卸事、新官還

16 While we have wine, let us drink our fill; the troubles of to-morrow let to-morrow bear.

17 Year before last when we went to the provincial capital to the examinations, we traveled in company.

18 Last year there was an intercalary seventh month, and three years ago, an intercalary third month.

19 Is not this what you said yesterday? *Ans.* It is.

20 I have no money to redeem it at present. I will redeem it in the spring of next year.

21 According to my idea, let him still go to school next year, and the year after leave school and go into business.

22 We have already decided to start on the twenty-fourth of this month.

23 He came week before last on Saturday. By Tuesday of this week it will be eleven days in ail.

24 The fifth of next month the meeting of the company comes round again, and I must make another payment of four thousand cash.

25 Têngchow depends on Kwantung for grain. Since the crops in Kwantung are short, grain will certainly be dear next year.

26 Last year he encroached on my land, and again this year he encroached on it. If he does the same thing next year, I am determined to resist him.

27 The prefect has vacated his office, but the new incumbent has not yet arrived.

老翁 *Lao³ wêng¹*. An old gentleman, *a patriarch*, ... a graybeard.

葬 *Tsang⁴*..... To inter, to bury.

下葬 *Hsia⁴ tsang⁴*. To inter, to consign to the ..... grave.

春分 *Ch'un¹ fên¹*..... The vernal equinox.

登州 *Têng¹ chou¹*. A Fu city in Shantung fifty-..... five miles west of Chefoo.

歉 *Ch'ien⁴, chien⁴*. Scanty, deficient, scarce:— ..... Note 25.

歉收 *Ch'ien⁴ shou¹*. A scant harvest, *short* ..... *crops*, scarcity.

卸事 *Hsie⁴ shi⁴*. *To vacate an office*, to relin-..... quish a trust.

文書 *Wên² shu¹*. *A dispatch;* an official docu-..... ment; a deed.

二府 *Êr⁴ fu³*..... A sub-prefect.

朦朦亮 *Mêng² mêng² liang⁴*. Break of day, ... morning twilight.

走水 *Tsou³ shwei³*. To take fire, to have a ..... conflagration:—Note 29.

宴 *Yien⁴*..... A banquet; rest, repose.

點心 *Tien³ hsin¹*. Cakes, candies and nuts, ... *delicacies*, dessert.

丙 *Ping³*. The third of the ten stems or 天干字, ... bright.

寅 *Yin²*. The third of the twelve branches or ..... 地支字, 3 to 5 A.M.

乙 *I⁴*. The second of the ten stems; curved; a .... pedantic form of 一.

丑 *Ch'ou³*. The second of the twelve branches; ..... 1 to 3 A.M.

Digitized by Google

沒有來到、昨兒個來了文書、叫二府代任。○幸虧去年冬裏、下了三四場大雪、所以麥子雖然都種晚了、今年還能收成。○聽說上禮拜二、朦朦亮的時候、費縣當舖走了水、把房子一總都燒了。○王宴平現在熬到分兒喇、今早上我上他家裏去、正碰見他的兩個孫子、一個端着茶、一個端着點心、送給他吃。○我今年二十九歲、是甲子年丙寅月乙丑日己卯時生的。○大前日到老大後日、是七天的工夫、大前年到老大後年、是七年的工夫、但是上大上禮拜到下大下禮拜、却只有五個禮拜的工夫。

Yesterday a dispatch came authorizing the sub-prefect to act as his substitute.

28 Fortunately last winter there fell three or four heavy snows, so that, although the wheat was all sown late, there may still be a full crop this year.

29 I hear it said that on Tuesday of last week, just at the break of day, the Fei Hsien pawn-shop took fire and the whole establishment was burned up.

30 Wang Yien P'ing has reached the goal of life. When I went to his house this morning, I met his two grandsons, one carrying a cup of tea, and the other some delicacies for him.

31 This year I am twenty-nine years old, having been born in the year *chia tsï*, in the month *ping yin*, on the day *i ch'ou*, and the hour *chi mao*.

32 From the day previous to day before yesterday, to the day subsequent to day after to-morrow, includes a space of seven days ; from the year previous to year before last, until the year subsequent to year after next, is a space of seven years ; but from week before last until week after next is only five weeks.

NOTES.

10 僱給人家 *Hired himself to some one.*

12 拜壽 *Worship age,*—to pay respects on the occasion of a birthday. It is only practiced in the case of persons of some age and distinction. Sometimes it is carried to the length of a prostration, but more generally it is simply a bow.

16 Notice how 朝 is used instead of 日 to avoid repetition, and then how 朝 and 日 are both repeated to add force and beauty to the saying.

24 會期 *The appointed time for the meeting of the company.* The Chinese are much given to forming small joint stock companies of a peculiar kind. Some man who wants to raise a sum of money, secures the consent of a number of friends to enter the company, and fixes the amount of the shares. He then makes a feast for the shareholders and each man pays over to him one share, which is always such an aliquot part of the whole stock as there are members in the company. At the end of a month or of two months, as the case may be, another meeting is held (but no feast given) and again each member pays in a share to the man who offers to accept the largest discount in order to get the money. The party who gets the money is said to 把 the 會. The same thing is done at each subsequent meeting until the number of meetings equals the number of members, when the company expires. The discounts apply only to those who have not yet used the money, those who have already done so always paying a full *share*.

25 歉 has the same meaning whether aspirated or not, but the two are used in different connections,—thus 歉收 is aspirated, but 歉年 is unaspirated.

26 There being no hedges or fences in China it is no uncommon thing for one man in ploughing to encroach on the land of another, and such encroachments often give rise to quarrels and lawsuits.

29 走了水 *The water left;* i.e., *a fire broke out.* This phrase sounds like slang, but is not so regarded by the Chinese. It is explained by saying that the reason the fire exceeded its bounds was because water was absent.

30 熬到分兒 *To endure to the full,* that is, to bear the toils and responsibilities of life until the coveted end of life is attained, which, in the average Chinaman's eye, consists in having an easy competence with children and grandchildren to wait on him. The Southern form 苦出來 has practically the same meaning. 苦 is used as a verb.

31 The Chinese reckon years in cycles of sixty, the years of the cycle being indicated by the combination of the ten stems, or 天干字, viz., 甲乙丙丁戊己庚辛壬癸, with the twelve branches, or 地支字, viz., 子, 丑, 寅, 卯, 辰, 巳, 午, 未, 申, 酉, 戌, 亥. The branches are applied to the stems six times in order, (not twelve times as would have seemed natural). See Williams' Dictionary, page 355. Months, days and hours are designated by the same sixty combinations taken in the same order.

The months begin with 丙寅 for the first month of the first year (甲子) of each cycle, and count in order to the end of five years, which exhausts the sixty combinations. The next five years begins with 己巳 for the first month, and repeats the cycle in the same order, and so on. Thus in

Digitized by Google

第一百十八課

你[1]怎麼到這早晚子兒纔來。○現[2]今人情太薄了。○那[3]個我老母鷄、現在不想喫。○我[4]有別的、現今不當下大財。○那[5]個初成萬、現時發了不必題。○這[6]年多會兒有事、沒有現今不時興起來。○現[7]今時候我[8]這時候天氣不好、一陣風雨、就要黑了。○這[9]會子、我[10]肚子疼的利害。○目[11]下我[12]的話、你聽[13]見了麼。○這[14]一陣疼的已經落了。○目[15]下我的肚子、疼的利害。○

TRANSLATION.

1 How is it that you have not come until this time?
2 At the present day, the generous impulses of humanity are greatly degenerated.
3 That old hen is just now sitting.
4 There is something else which I cannot at this moment recall.
5 This style is not in fashion at present.
6 I hear that Ch'u Ch'êng Wan has now become very wealthy.
7 That is a matter of many years ago; there is no occasion for mentioning it now.
8 I am engaged at present, and have no leisure.
9 The days are very short at present, it is dark in a twinkling.
10 Just now the price of grain has fallen.
11 My belly aches severely just now.

the case of all years designated by 甲 or 己, the first month is 丙寅, the second 丁卯, etc.; in the case of all years designated 乙 or 庚, the first month is 戊寅, the second 己卯, etc. Intercalary months are not counted, but half of the month is attached to the previous and half to the succeeding month. The days are not derived from the months, but are taken from official lists in a printed almanac or book. They profess to have begun with 甲子, when the cycle was introduced in the 61st year of Hwang Ti, and to have repeated the cycle regularly until the present time.

The hours are derived from the days in the same way as the months are derived from the years, beginning, however, with 甲子, for the midnight hour of the first day of the cycle, and repeating every five days. The person in question was born in 1864 on the twenty-third of the first month between 5 and 7 o'clock A.M.

LESSON CXVIII.

PRESENT TIME—GENERAL.

今 Now, in present circumstances,—when used alone it is generally followed by 有 and serves to introduce a subject or sentence.

現今 Now, at present, at the present time, now-a-days,—not appreciably different from 現在.

現時 At present, at the present time, just now.

現下 The same. (Shantung.)

時下 At present, just now.

目下 At this moment, at present, just now, now, just at this present time.

刻下 At this moment, at the present time, just now.

當下 At this moment, just now, now.

脚下 At present, now; in the presence of.

眼時下 At present, just now, at this present time.

眼時間 The same.

此刻 At this moment, at present.

目今 At this present time, at present, just now. A book term.

眼前 At present, just now.

馬上 Just now, at this present moment. (Pekingese.) See Les. 162.

這噌 At present, at this time, just now.

這噌子 The same. (S.)

這噌個 The same. (C.)

這早晚 The same. (N.)

這會兒 At present, at this time, now.

這一陣 At this moment, just now.

這個時候 At this time, at the present time, now.

這個當兒 At this time, at this juncture, now. (N. & C.)

這個當口 The same. (S.)

Digitized by Google

他有四十口人。○這[13]個當口兒、他們已經睡喇。○現[14]今的人、認眞辦事的少。○我[15]打算去、馬上沒有工夫。○直[16]收拾到這會兒、還沒收拾(倒貼)(倒束)(倒擺)。○我[17]眼下(眼時)(眼時間)前[19]上天無路、入地無門。○此[18]刻沒有別的病、就是胸膈中憋氣。○他前幾年不肯用工念書、現時知道錯了。○先[20]生刻下在家裏作甚麼、答在家裏閒着、沒有事情。○你[21]的父母現在還康健哪、答他們從前受過累、所以現下不什麼康健了。○慕[22]太太爲自己不能生育、目下情願叫慕老爺買小婆子(個妾)。○他[23]早走喇、這個時候、大約能走二十里路。○你[24]們妞兒若不丟、現今也有十幾歲了。○馬[25]上我家裏的事太多、要一時之間空也沒有。○刻[26]下的醫生、好的雖有、但是一百裏也不過挑出一個來。○[27]目下今閃

12 At this present time he has a family of forty.
13 By this time they are already asleep.
14 There are few men now-a-days who are truly faithful.
15 I was planning to go, but have not time just at present.
16 Have you been arranging things all this time and are they not yet in order? [dilemma.
17 I am just now in an inextricable
18 I have no other ailment at present save a feeling of oppression in my breast.
19 During the previous years he was unwilling to study. He now sees his mistake.
20 What are you just now doing at home? *Ans.* I am at home idle; having no employment.
21 Are your parents still hale and hearty? *Ans.* In former years their strength was overtaxed, so that at present they are not very vigorous.
22 Mrs. Mu, because she herself has no hope of bearing children, is now quite willing that Mr. Mu should procure an inferior wife (a concubine).
23 They started some time ago; by this time they have probably gone twenty li.
24 If your daughter had not died, she would now be in her teens.
25 My home affairs at present are too numerous; I can't get a moment's leisure.
26 Although there are some good doctors at the present time, yet you could not

VOCABULARY.

苞 *Pao*⁴. ..... To incubate, to brood.
苞窩 *Pao*⁴ *wo*¹. ..... To incubate, to sit.
苞蛋 *Pao*⁴ *tan*⁴. ..... The same.
時興 *Shi*² *hsing*¹. ..... Fashionable, in vogue.
擺 *Lo*³. To pile up, to lay in a pile, *to arrange in order;* a pile, a parcel.
俐擺 *Li*⁴ *lo*³. In order, ship-shape, *satisfactory;* finished. (N).
俐束 *Li*⁴ *shu*⁴. ..... The same. (C.)
胸 *Hsiung*¹. *The breast*, the bosom; the feelings, the heart.
膈 *Ké*². *The diaphragm;* a thin membrane; the mind.
胸膈 *The breast;* the diaphragm; the feelings.
憋 *Pie*¹. Irritable; restrained, *oppressed;* sad, melancholy.
憋氣 *Pie*¹ *ch'i*⁴. Unable to breathe, *oppressed*, smothered.
康健 *K'ang*¹ *chien*⁴. ..... *Hearty*, vigorous.
慕 *Mu*⁴. To love ardently, to be fond of, to long for; *a surname.*
育 *Yü*⁴. ..... *To bear;* to nurture, to rear.
生育 *Shêng*¹ *yü*⁴. ..... To bear children.

Digitized by Google

得我前不[27]歸巴村、後不着巴店、往那裏去投宿呢。○往[28]大衙門投手本、必遞門包、這是現今通行的規矩。○你[29]想他從正月就病、一直病到這早晚、什麽人能架得住呢。○王[30]老三的買賣已經關歇喇、目下艱難的很、連吃的都沒有。○近[31]來郭文彬的兒子、吃喝嫖賭無所不爲、所以他如今的愁腸、比那些年倒更多了。○現[32]今的世代、若沒有點刁鑽古怪的本事、還想着站立得住、那可不用打算。○已[33]經十五六歲的姑娘、成天家淨玩兒、也不學點針線、你這個當娶兒不學、等到幾時纔學呢。○我[34]見告白上說、今有東關孫榮泉、於初三日晚間、在關帝廟聽戲、因不小心、失去牛角圖書一包、大小五塊、若有送到者、必謝錢五百文、決不食言。

pick out more than one in a hundred.

27 I am now left all alone, with no village in front and no inn behind; where shall I go to find lodgings?

28 In sending your card to any large yamên, it is necessary to fee the gatekeeper; this is now the universal custom.

29 Just think of it; he took sick in the first month and has been sick ever since; who could stand it?

30 Wang the Third has already closed up his business; at the present moment he is in great straits, not even having enough to eat.

31 Recently Kwoŏ Wên Pin's son has become dissolute and reckless, so that at present his troubles are still greater than in those former years.

32 If you think to hold your own in these days without some craft and exceptional skill, you will soon find out your mistake.

33 A girl fifteen or sixteen playing all the time and not even learning to sew! If you don't learn now, when will you learn?

34 I saw a placard which said, Sun Jung Ch'üen of the east suburb, while at the temple of Kwanti on the evening of the third listening to a play, lost, through carelessness, a parcel of horn seals, consisting of five in all. Any one returning them will receive a reward of five hundred cash. Positively no backing out.

妾 *Ch'ie*⁴.....A concubine, a secondary wife.
妞 *Niu*¹. A lass, a girl, *a daughter*. An unauthorized Pekingese character.
投宿 *T'ou*² *su*⁴. To find lodgings, to rest for the night.
手本 *Shou*³ *pên*³. A folded ceremonial card :—Note 28.
門包 *Mên*² *pao*¹. A doorkeeper's fees or perquisites.
近來 *Chin*⁴ *lai*². Recently, of late.
郭 *Kwoŏ*¹.....An inner wall; *a surname*.
彬 *Pin*¹. Chaste, elegant.
腸 *Ch'ang*². The intestines; *the feelings*, the affections.
愁腸 *Ch'ou*² *ch'ang*². *Trouble*, worry, anxiety, sorrow.
世代 *Shi*⁴ *tai*⁴.....The world, *the times*.
刁鑽 *Tiao*¹ *tswan*¹. To manœuvre, to intrigue, to scheme; *crafty*, cunning.
告白 *Kao*⁴ *pai*². An unofficial notice, *a placard*, an advertisement.
圖書 *T'u*² *shu*¹. *An unofficial seal*, a stamp, a signet.
食言 *Shi*² *yien*². To eat one's words, *to back out*, to retract.

Digitized by Google

第一百十九課

他[1]沒財主。備早已的老人家。前頭有個人[2]從來沒該[3]我[4]。早前[5]不喜歡[6]他[7]。他[8]病了。好幾天。[9]我先前[10]先洗臉。朝早飯[11]我先來。

TRANSLATION.

1 He has come several times before.
2 I have never before heard this expression.
3 He was formerly a wealthy man.
4 You should have made preparations before the emergency arose.
5 He has never liked me.
6 If I had anticipated it beforehand, I could have provided for it.
7 He has changed all his former ways.
8 He was taken sick some time ago, and he has not yet recovered.
9 Let it be as it was before.
10 Before breakfast, every one is to comb his hair and wash his face.
11 We once before fell into this kind of a trap and endured a deal of suffering.

NOTES.

12 The force of 說話 does not appear in the translation. It is as if we should say, *At the present speaking he has a family of forty.*

14 認眞辦事 *To be faithful and earnest in regard to engagements or responsibilities relating to others.*

17 上天無路入地無門 *No road to ascend to heaven nor any door to enter the earth;* i.e., *no possible way of escape, utterly helpless.*

22 The occasion of a man in common life taking a second or inferior wife, is generally the barrenness of the first wife. In these circumstances she oftentimes not only consents to it, but even urges it. This inferior wife or concubine is generally called 小婆子 in the North, though 妾 is the proper term, and is sometimes used. A man who takes an inferior wife always has to take her from a lower rank of society than his own, and also has to pay for her, more or less according to circumstances. Though socially inferior to the first wife, the inferior wife has nevertheless bettered her circumstances both socially and financially.

27 閃 does not here indicate whether the person has been left alone by mistake or by some trick. The phrase 前不歸村後不着店, is frequently used figuratively of any one in embarrassing circumstances.

28 手本 is a folded red paper (ten folds) with black back, containing merely the name and style of the individual. It is used as a card of ceremony, but is always returned to the bearer.

31 無所不爲 *Nothing that he will not do, given to every vice, reckless.* The use of 那些 implies a knowledge on the part of the party addressed, of trials endured in previous years.

34 This is the usual form of notices put up offering a reward for lost articles. As usual in such cases, though professing to be colloquial, it still contains some *Wên-li* words and idioms. 送到者 is book style for 送到的. The 牛角 referred to is the horn of the water buffalo, of which the best stamps are made.

LESSON CXIX.

PAST TIME—GENERAL.

早 Early,—some time ago, long ago; in season.
早已 Formerly, some time ago, beforehand.
早裡 Formerly, of old, old, heretofore. (C. & N.)
早頭 The same. (S.)
早前 Once, once upon a time, previously, some time ago.
早先 The same.
早年 In former years, in ancient days, long ago.
頭裡 Formerly, some time ago, heretofore, before; with a negative,—never. (C. & N.)
頭前 or 前頭. The same as 頭裡.
先前 Once, once upon a time, formerly, before, a while ago; with a negative,—never.
先頭 or 先頭裡 The same.

Digitized by Google

些苦難。○[12]早先前爲這個雨字、我叫先生打了
戒板尺子。○○[13]像如今的時症、頭前頭都沒經過。
洪水以前的那些人、都活八九百歲。○他[15]○
在[14]一從來沒受過逼迫。○你[16]以前所念的書、還該
常常温習。○○二[17]姑娘在那裏、答先頭我見他
在客堂裏。○○這[18]是他早頭裏的老毛病、現在又
發作了。○氣[19]派還是往年的家道了。○他[20]頭裏借我四吊錢去、不
是往年的家道了。○是[21]先前咱們在第一
到如今一個也沒還我。○[22]早先前的人、比如一
樓茶館裏會過、你沒忘了我。
嗎。○

12 I once received a stroke of the ferule from my teacher on account of this character yü.

13 We have never before experienced an epidemic like the present one.

14 The antediluvians all lived to be eight or nine hundred years old.

15 He has never suffered persecution.

16 The books you have already studied you should frequently review.

17 Where is the younger miss? *Ans.* I saw her a little while ago in the parlor.

18 This is an old failing of his, which has now broken out anew.

19 The style is still that of former years, but the rate of expenditure is not what it once was.

20 He borrowed four thousand cash from me some time ago, and to this date has not repaid a single cash.

21 We met each other once in the Ti-i-lou Tea-house; have you forgotten?

22 The men of former times were all

先年 In previous years, former times.

從來 Heretofore, formerly; with a negative,—never.

從早 For a long time, for some time, for a great while.

從先 Once, formerly, a while ago.

以前 Before, heretofore, already, formerly.

以頭 The same, but much less current.

以先 Before, former, previous.

向來 Same as **從來**, but less current.

一向 All this time, from some previous time to the present.

古 Ancient times, generally joined with other words save where correlated with **今**.

古時 Anciently, ancient times, in olden time.

古年 The same.

太古 Primeval times.

上古 Primitive times, olden times.

中古 Mediæval times.

往日 In former days or times, in the past, heretofore.

往年 In former years or times, in bygone years.

老老年間 In old times, very ancient times, long long ago.

老輩子年間 In the times of our forefathers, in olden times.

VOCABULARY.

時症 *Shi*[2] *chêng*[4]. A prevailing disease, an epidemic.

迫 *P'oă*[4]. To urge, *to harass*, to force, to drive to extremity.

逼迫 *Pi*[4] *p'oă*[4]. *To persecute*, to harass.

氣派 *Ch'i*[4] *p'ai*[4]. *Style*, air, pomp, pretension, show.

家道 *Chia*[1] *tao*[4]. Style of living, pecuniary circumstances, *rate of expenditure.*

茶館 *Ch'a*[2] *kwan*[3]. A tea shop, a temperance saloon.

慨厚 *Han*[1] *hou*[4]. *Generous*, liberal.

渾厚 *Hun*[2] *hou*[4]. The same.

璺 *Wên*[4]. A crack, a flaw.

Digitized by Google

管還是是石、老不呢、早今
的、間早一是兄如答前先的
所我先塲早做古、我却一人
以要得官年伴按們一都
我嗎。的司。老兒、西以點更
摸○呢。○輩實國前沒渾憨
不這[30]○你[28]子在說、作留眰厚。
着些我[29]這立於是過意睬。○
根底事的個的、我古鄰街○看[23]
底細。情、房症你大不舍坊。你[24]樣
○早向錢候、如有如○怎兒
古[31]裏來早是今益今。按[25]麼是
年時都已剛拔處。○中認早
有是変纔了、○我[26]國識碰打
名我足得咱那[27]一說、這的
的父了、的們個向是個裂璽
聖親你呢、就界得今人我

more generous than those of the present.

23 Judging from its appearance it is an old crack, but I had not previously noticed.

24 How do you come to know this man? *Ans.* We once were neighbors.

25 According to Chinese ideas, the present is inferior to ancient times; according to Western ideas, ancient times were inferior to the present.

26 It has indeed been of great benefit to me that I have had you for my companion all this time.

27 That boundary stone was put up long ago by our forefathers. Your having now removed it, simply means a lawsuit for us.

28 Is this disease of yours a recent thing? or did you contract it some time ago?

29 I paid up my house rent in full some time ago. Why are you dunning me again?

30 These affairs were formerly all looked after by my father, hence I am unable to go into particulars.

留意 *Liu² i⁴*.....To pay attention, *to notice.*

界 *Chie¹,⁴*. *A boundary*, a limit, a terminus; a .....sphere, a condition.

界石 *Chie⁴ shi²*.....A boundary stone.

根底 *Kên¹ ti³*. Origin, ground, occasion; facts, ...*particulars.*

聖人 *Shêng⁴ jên²*. A man pre-eminent in wisdom .....and virtue, a sage.

禹 *Yü³*. The founder of the Hia dynasty:— .....Note 31.

鞦 *Ch'iu¹, yiu¹*. A breast strap, a crupper, a .....trace; *a swing.*

韆 *Ch'ien¹*.....A swing; to swing to and fro.

鞦韆 *Yiu¹ ch'ien¹*.....A whirlwheel, *a swing.*

燈草 *Têng¹ ts'ao³*. The wick of a lamp,—so .....called because it is the pith of a species of grass or reed.

温和 *Wên¹ hê²*. Genial, *affable;* peaceable, ... quiet.

起先 *Ch'i³ hsien¹*. At first, originally, at the .....outset:—Les. 126. Sub.

機關 *Chi¹ kwan¹*. Trigger, handle; trick, *arti-*.....*fice*; turning point, clue.

馬脚 *Ma³ chiao³*. An underhand trick or scheme; ....."the cloven foot":—Note 34.

狐 *Hu²*..... *A fox;* suspicious.

狸 *Li²*..... *A fox;* a raccoon, a wild-cat.

狐狸 The fox.

尾 *Wei³, i³*. *The tail;* the end, the last of; the ..... hinder part, the stern of a ship.

尾巴 *I³ pa¹*. *The tail*, the hinder part, the stern .....of a ship:—Note 34.

誌 *Chi⁴*.....To remember; to record; a mark.

誌石 *Chi⁴ shi²*. A stone used as a test of .....strength:—Note 35.

制石 *Chi⁴ shi²*..... The same.

弓 *Kung¹*..... *A bow;* curved; five feet.

近日 *Chin⁴ ji⁴*..... Recent times, now. (w.)

盤古 *P'an² ku³*.... The first man:—Note 38.

闢 *P'i⁴*. To burst forth, to open up, *to set in* ..... *order;* to develop.

開天闢地 *K'ai¹ t'ien¹ p'i⁴ ti⁴*. Opening .....heaven and setting in order the earth,—a stereotype phrase for the creation or formation of the world.

氣 *Hsi¹*..... Breath, vapor:—Note 38.

農 *Nung²*. To cultivate, to farm; agriculture: .....—Note 38.

孟 *Mêng⁴*.....Eminent; senior:— Note 31.

Digitized by Google

人、就是堯舜禹湯文武周公孔子。

○你[32]姐姐是堯舜禹湯文武周公孔子。了頭、現在好從鞦韆上掉下來、跌破了。關、他的樣兒、後來你說話、起先很有温和老實的人和你說話、頭裏很有温和老是了。

○從[33]早先招呼着叫我點燈、一點燈草沒有、我怎麼點呢。○我[34]看見你那脚馬來了、我往年的刀、害就露出狐狸尾巴的機關、他的樣兒、後來你說話、起先很有温和老是了。

喇。○現在好了沒有、答從早就好了。實的人和你說話、頭裏很有温和老實的人和你說話、起先很有温和老是了。那人草沒有、我怎麼點呢。○我看見你那脚馬來了。

燈喇。了○人、就是堯舜禹湯文武周公孔子。頭、現在姐姐從鞦韆上掉下來、跌破了。關、他的樣兒、後來你說話、起先很有温和老實的人和你說話、頭裏很有温和老是了。

31 The noted sages of ancient times were Yao, Shun, Yü, T'ang, Wên, Wu, Chou-kung, K'ung-tsï.

32 Your sister fell out of the swing and cut her head; is she well yet? *Ans.* She has been well for some time.

33 He has been calling out to me for some time to light the lamp. But how can I light it when there is not a particle of wick?

34 I noticed that in talking with you he had at first a very affable and inoffensive manner; but by and by when you exposed his tricks, his evil purpose disclosed itself.

35 To handle the great sword, lift the standard stone and draw the stiff bow; these were the feats of bygone years, but now I can not essay such exercises.

Notes.

8 至今 is slightly bookish, though often used. 到如今 is the more common spoken form.

9 Or, *it is just as it was before.*

10 In the South 梳頭 is only used of women and children, not of men, who have queues.

12 The pupil probably mistook 兩 for 兩 or 丙, and got a stroke of the ruler to assist his memory. Striking on the hand with a ruler is almost the only mode of punishment used by Chinese teachers. 戒尺 is the more proper and general term for the ferule, though it is sometimes called 板子, especially in Peking. The bastinado used by magistrates is called 板子.

17 二姑娘 *The younger of two sisters.*

21 第一樓 The name of a two storied tea house in Shanghai. The 第一 means first in excellence, *first-class.*

29 The direct interrogative is here best rendered into English by an indirect interrogative.

31 We have here the stereotype enumeration of Chinese sages. They are arranged in the order of time.

堯 The first Emperor of reputed Chinese history. He is the great model of wisdom and virtue in a sovereign. His reign began B.C. 2357.

舜 The second Emperor of reputed history. He was chosen by 堯 and associated with him for thirty years in the government. He mourned for his predecessor three years and then formally assumed the government B.C 2255.

禹 also called 大禹, *The Great Yü*, or 神禹, *The Divine Yü.* He is reputed to have been a descendant of Hwang Ti. He was chosen as his successor by 舜, and succeeded to the throne B.C. 2205, and became the founder of the Hia dynasty. The great achievement which procured for him the throne, was the draining of the land from a great flood, at which he labored incessantly for nine years.

湯 A wise and virtuous prince who overthrew the tyrant 桀 Chie, the last of the Hia dynasty, and became the founder of the Shang dynasty.

文 The Duke of 周. His original name was 昌, and his title 西伯, *Chief of the West.* He lived from 1231 to 1135 B C., and after his death was canonized as 文王. He was renowned for virtue and wisdom. He revised the Book of Changes and wrote comments on it.

武 The son of 文王, to whose dukedom he succeeded B.C. 1169. His real name was 發, and he was canonized as 武王. His great achievement was the overthrow of the tyrant 紂辛, the last of the Shang dynasty, whose throne he took and became founder of the (周) Chou dynasty.

周公 The fourth son of 文王, and brother of 武王. He materially assisted his brother in obtaining the throne, and throughout his reign was his most valued counsellor. He drew up a code of laws for the empire, and is reputed as the inventor of the mariners' compass.

孔子 Confucius, the last and greatest of Chinese sages. His real name was 孔丘, and his title 仲尼. He lived from B. C. 557 to 479. He was neither emperor nor prince. His greatness was in his virtue, his wisdom and his learning. 孟子 Mencius, is not ranked as a sage (聖人) by the Chinese, but as a 大賢, *a great worthy.*

34 In this sentence, which is taken from the Pilgrims' Progress, 頭裡 is used in sense of *at first*, which is not its proper meaning, though said to be sometimes so used in Peking. 起先 is the better word for the connection. 露出馬脚來 *To reveal unawares some concealed character or design.* The figure probably comes from the discovery of some ambush or stratagem in war by the footprints of the horses. 尾巴 is spoken both *wei*[3] *pa*[1] and *i*[3] *pa*[1], but the reading *i*[3] does not generally extend to the derived sense of 尾.

35 拿大刀 *To flourish aloft the heavy cutlass or halberd.* 抱誌石 This 誌石 or 制石 is a heavy oblong stone with niches cut in it for handles. The feat consists in lifting it up by main force on the knee, and then taking it in the arms and standing erect with it. 拉硬弓 *To draw a stiff bow*

Digitized by Google

藝、都試不得咯。○我[36]與你
往日無冤、近日無仇。○傳[37]
說在老輩子年間、人活到
六十歲不死、就要活埋。○
盤[38]古開天闢地的時候、爲
太古、伏羲神農黃帝的時
候、爲上古、從堯到武王的
時候、爲中古、在孔孟前後
數百年的時候、都渾而言
之爲古時。

36 I never was, and am not now, at enmity with you.

37 There is a tradition that in old times if a man did not die before he was sixty years old, they buried him alive.

38 The time when P'an Ku opened the heavens and divided the earth was primeval time. The times of Fu Hi, Shin Nung and Hwang Ti were primitive times; the times from Yao to Wu Wang were mediæval times, and the times preceding and following Confucius and Mencius are spoken of, in a general way, as ancient times.

to the point of the arrow. These are the three chief athletic exercises of the Chinese.

38 盤古 The Chinese first man. He is a mythical character alleged to have been the first development out of chaos, and to him is attributed the setting in order of heaven and earth. Various wonderful stories are told concerning him.

伏羲 Also called **庖羲氏**, the first Emperor of Chinese legendary history. The period commonly assigned to the beginning of his reign is B.C. 2852. He instructed the people in the arts of hunting, fishing and pasturage. He invented the eight diagrams, established the laws of marriage, and constructed musical instruments.

神農 *The Divine Husbandman.* He was the second legendary emperor and successor of **伏羲**. He is reputed to have reigned from B.C. 2737 to B.C. 2697. He made ploughs, and taught the people agriculture. He also taught the people the use of plants for medicine, and instituted the holding of markets. He is now worshipped as the God of Agriculture.

黃帝 *The Yellow Emperor.* He was the third and last legendary emperor. He regulated the customs of the people and taught them how to make utensils of wood, pottery and metal, also how to build boats and construct wagons.

LESSON CXX.

FUTURE TIME—GENERAL.

後 Afterwards, subsequently; when directly following a noun,—after.

往後 Hereafter, henceforth, in future, since.

過後 Afterwards, subsequently, by and by.

以後 Afterwards, hereafter, after, in future, subsequently.

日後 In the future, at a future time, by and by, sometime. A book form, sometimes used in colloquial.

之後 A book form of **以後**, but not unfrequently used in colloquial.

向後 In future, hereafter, henceforth. (L.)

然後 Afterwards, and then, then, subsequently.

隨後 At once, forthwith, thereupon, afterwards, following.

久後 Ultimately, eventually, by and by, ever.

末後 At last, finally, ultimately.

後來 Afterwards, hereafter, henceforth.

後頭 Afterwards, in future,—heard occasionally in this sense, but more commonly and properly used of *place* than of time.

後日 Properly *day after to-morrow*, but sometimes used indefinitely, especially in books,—in future, by and by, hereafter.

往前 or **這往前** Henceforth, from this time forth, after this. The Chinese seem quite at sea with reference to the use of **前** and **後** joined with **往**.

往下 or **這往下** Henceforth, from this time forth.

往下去 The same. (N.)

改日 Some other day, again,—only used at parting where we would say good-bye.

底下 In the future, at some other time, by and by.

從今以後 or **從今後** or **從今之後** Henceforth, in future, from this time forth.

從此以後 The same.

Digitized by Google

第一百二十課

讓[1]人不算癡、過後得便宜。○往[2]後怎麼樣、現在還不知道。○再[3]往下去天就漸漸的長了。○往[4]後你的閒事、我再不管。○這往下、先[5]試一試、不行然後再說。○我[6]要走喇、咱們改日再會罷。○○萬[7]不可起先頭殷勤、後頭來懶惰。○現[8]在貧賤、要求後日的富貴。○今[9]日是我家女兒、後日是別人家媳婦。○你[10]別看他當時生氣、過後還是一樣。○我先換上衣裳、隨後就去。○你[12]以後上街、要先告訴我。○[13]再往前去天暖和了、爐裏不用生火。○這往前些不要緊的小事情、過後誰還記在心裏。○午[15]飯之後、二人又敘談了半天。○我[16]雖然不如人、還指望孩子們往後如那[14]人。○從[17]今以後你要小心、不可任口胡說。○[18]向後他若再來

Translation.

1 To yield to others must not be considered foolish; the advantage of it will appear by-and-by.
2 How it will be hereafter we do not yet know.
3 From this time forth the days will gradually become longer.
4 Hereafter I will not trouble myself about your affairs.
5 Try it first, and if it will not do, we will then talk about it again.
6 I must be going. We'll meet again some other day.
7 It will never do to be diligent at first and afterwards grow lazy.
8 Those who are now in humble circumstances should aspire to be wealthy by and by.
9 To-day she is our daughter, to-morrow she will be somebody else's daughter-in-law.
10 Don't mind his getting angry at the time; he will be all the same afterwards.
11 I will first change my clothes, and then go at once.
12 Hereafter when you go on the street, I want you first to tell me.
13 From this time on the weather will be mild; you need not make a fire in the stove.
14 Who can afterwards remember those trivial matters?
15 After dinner they talked together again a long while.
16 Although I am not equal to others, I want my children hereafter to be equal to others.
17 From this time forward you must be

Vocabulary.

貧賤 *P'in² chien⁴.* *In humble circumstances,* poor, indigent.
敘 *Hsü⁴.* *To talk,* to converse, to discuss.
敘談 *Hsü⁴ t'an².* *To talk together,* to converse, to chat.
任口胡說 *Jên⁴ k'ou³ hu² shwo¹.* To speak recklessly or extravagantly, to talk at random.
信口胡言 *Hsin⁴ k'ou³ hu² yien².* The same:— Note 17.
攪鬧 *Chiao³ nao⁴.* To act in a disorderly manner, *to raise a row,* to bluster.
蹧鬧 *Tsao¹ nao⁴.* The same. (s.)
過失 *Kwo⁴ shï¹.* *A mistake,* an error; an offence.
鑑戒 *Chien⁴ chie⁴.* *A warning,* an admonition.
隨手 *Swei² shou³.* *At once,* without delay, while one's hand is in.
層次 *Ts'êng² ts'ï⁴.* *Order,* arrangement, gradation.
措 *Ts'o⁴.* To place, *to arrange;* to employ.
懊 *Ao⁴.* Vexed; *to regret.*
懊悔 *Ao⁴ hwei³.* To repent, to regret, to reproach oneself, *to rue.*
貼心 *T'ie¹ hsin¹.* *Amiable,* gracious; intimate, affectionate.

Digitized by Google

攪蹧鬧、可以攆[18]出他去。○你[19]這樣好吃懶做、久後怎麼成家立業呢。○今[20]日的過失、就是後日的鑑戒。○花[21]錢該隨手記賬、恐怕過後忘了。○做[22]論必得先鋪排出層次來、然後纔好措詞。○你[23]這個藥是飯前吃呢、是飯後吃呢、答飯前飯後都可以。○這[25]以後你看見楊三來沒有、答從前年我見他一面、往日後再沒見他。○聽[26]說先生娶了一個好媳婦、眞是先生的洪福、答看如今可是貼心貼意的、但不知往下怎麼樣。○莊[27]稼都是先發苗、後長稭、再後秀穗、末後穗上纔結子粒。○張[28]先生今天沒有工夫、等底下再同他商議罷。○你[29]這個瘡若不拿擠一一拿擠、久後結個疤瘌、纔難看喇。○

careful not to talk so recklessly.

18 If in future he comes again to make a row, just put him out.

19 If you are so gluttonous and lazy as this, how will you ever get on in the world? [for to-morrow.

20 The mistakes of to-day are warnings

21 When you spend money, you should at once make an entry of it, lest you subsequently forget.

22 In writing an essay, it is necessary first to lay out the order of thought before proceeding to elaborate the language.

23 If you are so anxious to form a marriage engagement with her, then do so; but be sure you do not afterwards repent of it.

24 Is this medicine to be taken before or after meals? *Ans.* It may be taken either before or after.

25 Did you afterwards see Yang San? *Ans.* I met him once, the year before last, but since that time I have not seen him.

26 I have heard, sir, that you have gotten an excellent daughter-in-law, which is certainly a great blessing. *Ans.* At present she seems to be everything that could be desired, but I don't know how it may be by and by.

27 Grain first puts forth sprouts, then it rises into stalks, afterwards it sends forth ears, and finally it yields the grains.

28 Mr. Chang has no time to-day; wait till some other time to consult him.

29 If you do not press the pus out of this

貼心貼意 *T'ie¹ hsin¹ t'ie¹ i⁴.* Amiable and ..... obliging, everything that could be desired.

苗 *Miao².* The young and tender sprouts of grain; ..... descendants.

稭 *Chie¹.* ..... Stalks of corn or grain.

末 *Mo⁴.* The end, the last; *final;* remnants; ..... powder, dust:—Les. 127.

子粒 *Tsï³ li⁴.* ..... A grain, a seed.

擠 *Chi³.* To crowd, to push; *to press,* to squeeze; .....to milk.

疤 *Pa¹.* ..... *A scar,* a mark.

疤瘌 *Pa¹ la⁴.* ..... *A scar,* a cicatrix.

花用 *Hwa¹ yung⁴.* To spend money, to expend; ..... expenditure.

上任 *Shang⁴ jên⁴.* To enter upon the duties of ..... an office.

貪 *T'an¹.* ..... *To covet,* to desire inordinately.

貪贓 *T'an¹ tsang¹. To covet or take bribes,* venal, ...corrupt.

世界 *Shï⁴ chie⁴.* ..... The world, *the age.*

練武 *Lien⁴ wu³.* To practice with sword and ..... spear, *to fence.*

打拳脚 *Ta³ ch'üen² chiao³.* To practice boxing, ... *to box:*—Note 32.

灰心 *Hwei¹ hsin¹.* To be disheartened, to give up, ... to lose hope, *to lose interest.*

疫 *I⁴.* ..... A prevalent disease, an epidemic.

瘟疫 *Wên¹ i⁴.* ..... An epidemic, *pestilence.*

Digitized by Google

別[30]看他這個時候、典房子賣地的花用、他受罪的日子還在後頭。○鄭[31]太爺纔上任的時候、還有個作清官的樣子、自從送他萬民衣萬民傘之後、反倒顯出貪贓來咯。○從[32]前馬道清很愛練武打拳腳、後來遇見一個會拳腳的、就在衆人面前和他比試、剛一交手、教人家扔出好遠的去、鬧了一個沒趣、從此以後他也就灰了心咯、再也不學咯。○從[33]來說、福不雙降、禍不單來、所以大亂之後、常有荒年、荒年之後、常有瘟疫。

boil of yours, it will ultimately leave a scar that will be very unsightly.

30 Don't be misled by his present reckless extravagance; his time of suffering is yet to come.

31 When His Worship Chêng first came into office, he seemed like an upright officer, but from the time he was presented with the complimentary cloak and umbrella, he began to show an inclination to take bribes.

32 Formerly Ma Tao Ch'ing was very fond of fencing and boxing, but before long he fell in with a skilled boxer and presently engaged with him in a public trial of skill. They had hardly closed before the other man sent him reeling back ever so far, thus turning the laugh upon him. From that time on he lost his interest in boxing, and ceased practising.

33 It has been said that "blessings do not come in pairs, nor do misfortunes come singly"; hence it is that after a rebellion there is generally a year of famine, and after famine, pestilence.

Notes.

1 A proverbial saying.

7 後頭 in the second clause is used to match 先頭 in the first. The sentence is from The Sacred Edict.

9 今日 and 後日 are here used indefinitely, as are the corresponding terms in English. The same is true of (20).

17 信口胡言, 信 here means *to accord with, to follow*, which is a very unusual sense.

19 成家 as here used means something more than simply to get married; it also includes the idea of maintaining a family. 好吃懶做 is a ready made expression.

24 都可以 *All will do;* i.e., *either will do.*

30 典房子賣地的 The addition of 的 turns the phrase into a participial adjective qualifying 花用.

31 萬民衣 is a rich silk robe or cloak presented to a magistrate by the people as a testimony of regard. The names of all the contributors are put on the cloak in gilt letters. 萬民傘 is a large silk umbrella or canopy presented for the same purpose. Sometimes both are presented, sometimes only the latter.

32 打拳脚 In boxing, the Chinese use the feet as well as the hands, learning to kick as well as to strike. 鬧個沒趣 *To provoke a ridiculous* or *shameful discomfiture, to be put to shame* or *confusion.*

LESSON CXXI.

Strong Negation.

無 Destitute of, without, none. When followed by an abstract noun it often answers to the termination *less*, as 無用 *useless*, 無能 powerless, etc.

非 No, not,—a book negative often used in colloquial and stronger than 不.

並 Altogether, at all,—always combines with a negative. 並 is also a copulative :—Les. 138.

無非 Simply, nothing more, for no other purpose. This double negative forms a strong affirmative, which appears in English in the form of the sentence, without any special word to represent it.

無不 Without not,—that is, always, in everything.

並非 Not, not at all, not in the least, by no means.

並不 The same,—but not quite so strong.

並沒 The same,—differing from 並不 as 沒 does from 不.

並無 The same.

Digitized by Google

第一百二十一課

他[1]自己並用不着、却不肯給人用。○今[2]天並沒有外人來、誰能偷去呢。○無[3]緣無故、你[4]這個人只知道吃飯、並不曉得米的好歹。○我[7]叔爺兒們、是無心說的、他却是有意撂了他、算你[9]聽了。○張[8]自己不愛幹了。○我[7]爺兒們、無非是自己並不曉得道無非他就敢打你嗎。○客呢、我自己並不曉得道無非是不合乎中道。○科甲着不着、在[12]乎一般。○我[13]並不在[12]乎你[9]並非摸不着頭腦。○務出身、你[9]並非科甲出身。○營務底子、我[7]並不曉得道無非是不及他[10]。○營

跟底下、並沒打掃乾淨、還出來說嘴喇。○ 並不是[24]他。

並你不會嘍、他的[23]自己[22]脚。

您[21]那兩個、無非古人的兩句話、就在一個尾巴。○ 你[20]不過是掙氣的硬[19]阿他已經當了掌櫃的嗎、○ 手硬。

喜樂。○ 他[18]喜樂、並非從心所發、不過是外面虛浮的力。

嗎。○ 你[16]的[17]袁錫膽子可也不小、並沒同我商議、你就應許了這門親事。○ 他[15]這

一遍來、並非向你借錢、是要給你兒子說個丈媳婦人家兒。

度、無非禁止百姓們爲非、引導百姓們爲善。○

14 The Emperor established these laws for the express purpose of prohibiting the people from doing wrong and leading them to do right.

15 He has come this time, not to borrow money of you, but to propose a father-in-law for your son.

16 Well, you are a bold fellow to promise him without having consulted me.

17 That man Yüen Hsi Kung does his very best in everything that is entrusted to him.

18 Their rejoicing does not come from the heart; it is nothing more than a transient, external rejoicing.

19 Oh! he has been made head-man, has he? That explains why he speaks so positively.

20 That is nothing more than an ancient tradition, having no trustworthy evidence.

21 There is nothing between you two sisters-in-law but a few words—nothing worth coming to blows about.

22 The peacock cannot sing; his excellence is in his tail.

23 You have not swept clean under your own feet, and yet you assume to disparage others.

24 He is not a *lin-shêng* at all, yet you persist in saying he is.

帮腔 *Pang¹ ch'iang¹*. A chorus, an accompaniment; *intrusive talk*.

廷 *T'ing¹,²*. An audience-hall, a court-yard.

朝廷 *Ch'ao² t'ing²*. The imperial audience-hall; *the Emperor*.

法度 *Fa³ tu⁴*. *Laws*, regulations, rules.

禁止 *Chin⁴ chi³*. To forbid, *to prohibit*.

爲非 *Wei² fei¹*. *To do wrong*, to violate the law, to do evil.

導 *Tao³,⁴*. *To lead*, to induce.

引導 *Yin³ tao³,⁴*. *To lead*, to guide, to show the way, to induce.

爲善 *Wei² shan⁴*. *To do right*, to act virtuously, to be free from faults.

袁 *Yüen²*. A robe; *a surname*.

虛浮 *Hsü¹ fou²*. Superficial, unsubstantial; *transient*, fleeting.

硬氣 *Ying⁴ ch'i⁴*. *Positive*, peremptory, emphatic.

硬掙 *Ying⁴ chêng⁴*. Firm, inflexible; *positive*, peremptory; relentless.

錫 *Hsi¹,²*. Tin; pewter; *to confer*, to give.

遺傳 *I² ch'wan²*. *A tradition*, a legend, a fable.

妯娌 *Chou² li³*. The wives of brothers.

嘍 *Sao⁴*. To chirp, *to sing*, to whistle.

脚跟 *Chiao³ kên¹*. The heel; *sole of the foot*.

說嘴 *Shwo¹ tswei³*. To boast, to brag; to exalt oneself and *disparage others*, to run down.

廩 *Lin³*. A government granary; a stipend to an advanced 秀才.

廩生 *Lin³ shêng¹*. An advanced 秀才:—Note 24.

服事 *Fu² shi⁴*. *To serve*, to minister to.

勾當 *Kou¹ tang⁴*. *Business*, job, affair.

素日 *Su⁴ ji⁴*. Commonly, ordinarily; formerly, *in the past*.

瞞哄 *Man² hung³*. *To deceive*, to impose upon, to hoodwink.

干罪 *Kan¹ tswei⁴*. To plead guilty, to own up; *to take the consequences*.

Digitized by Google

個廩生、你偏說他是個廩生。○

哥[25]哥在此、無非是服事人、這並

不是大丈夫男子漢的勾當。○

既[26]然天無二日、民無二王、天地

間還能有第二位上帝嗎。○我[27]

們深準知道他們二人、素日並無

冤仇、實在是相親相愛、如親弟

親兄一樣。○小[28]的實係是不知

道、並不敢瞞哄、小的情願大人、若查出有

一點兒瞞哄、小的情願干領罪。

25 Here you are simply serving others,—which is not the kind of business for a man of any spirit.

26 Since heaven has no second sun, and the people have no second king, do you think that in the universe there can be a second God?

27 We know for certain that in the past these two men have not been enemies; they have, in fact, loved each other like own brothers.

28 Your unworthy servant really does not know. I should not dare to deceive your honor. If you discover that I have practiced the least deception, I will cheerfully bear the penalty.

NOTES.

3 無是無非 *Without right and without wrong*; i. e., *without any cause, or grievance.*

4 你這個人 The use of 這個人 singles out the party addressed as worthy of contempt, as is sometimes done in English by saying the "you" with special emphasis and intonation, and then pausing and beginning the sentence anew.

5 叔姪 *Uncles and nephews;* i. e., *belonging to one family.* A Southern term.

10 營務 does not necessarily mean that the party was a soldier, but that he had employment in connection with military affairs.

11 無過不及 is the standard definition of the "golden mean," which forms the Chinese rule of virtue. 無 applies to 不及 as well as to 過, as if written 無過無不及.

13 Lit., *what accompaniment have you come to play,* implying that what was said was an intrusion in the interest of another.

24 廩生 is the first intermediate grade above the first degree of 秀才. It formerly entitled the possessor to an allowance of grain from the public granary, but now only gives the privilege of standing security for undergraduates, for which a small fee is received. It is of no special service in securing the second degree.

LESSON CXXII.

SPECIAL USES OF 見.

1. 見 is prefixed to many adjectives and nouns in the general sense of to manifest or show,—thus 見强 is to manifest improvement, to be better; 見效 to manifest efficacy, to be efficacious; 見怪 to manifest displeasure, to take offence or be offended. Thus used, 見 has no exact equivalent in English. "Seem" will not translate it, for seem implies doubt, which 見 does not. It is approximately equivalent to the substantive verb. It appears to be put for 現, as it often is in *Wên-li*, where, however, it also takes the sound of 現. This use of 見 is entirely *t'ung-hsing*.

2. 見 is prefixed to verbs in the sense of to bear or to stand,—見穿 to stand wearing, that is, to last; 見做 to stand doing, that is, to be tedious; 見燒 to stand burning, that is, to have the quality (in fuel) of lasting, etc. Some would write 健 rather than 見. This use of 見 or 健 prevails in Shantung, but is not *t'ung-hsing*. In Peking and the North 禁 *chin*[1] (not *chin*[4]) is used in the same way, and with the same meaning. The same usage also prevails in Nanking and the South, but there teachers incline to use 經. Inasmuch, however, as Southern Mandarin confuses the final *n* and *ng*, it is likely that there also the proper writing is 禁.

3. 見 is joined with 天 in the sense of *every*,—見天 day by day, *every day*. In Peking it is frequently expanded into 見天見.

For list of words following 見 and 禁 see Supplement.

Digitized by Google

第一百二十二課

這[1]種洋布就是好看、一點也不經見禁穿。○人[2]過了五十歲、就不經見禁混貴、不是說賤就賤、也是出生花喇。强情說眞多、却經見禁能掙來的錢、纔沒灌上漿、昨天吃了一劑藥、今天見好一點。○凡[12]血汗生的、不論做、這經見禁了。○的做、一一做。○各[3]樣的藥都吃了、一點也不見效。○這[4]件生活計看着不多、却經見禁要見死的、我要去看看他。○聽[6]說眞要活的、我要去看看他。○聽[6]說眞走呢。○人[7]若是有飯吃、有事情做、一百里路、不過。○今[8]天我看他的文章、眞是大見長進、比從前强了。○他[9]這經見禁不甚大、怎麽這麽一點也不像、一點也不像、纔二年實在見老、頭髮白了一半、臉上也有了皺紋喇。○現[10]在他的熱見輕、一點他的病却見重了。○保[11]與子在家裏、不論做

就貴。○我[14]不說、你再三逼着我說、說出來你可別見怪啊。○荆[15]四寶的日子、這幾年怎麼樣、答不見强、還是很巴結。○你[16]看用這些火輪機器作活、多麼見功。○這[17]些柴伙都酗爛了、一點也不經見禁朽燒。○大[18]人不見小人怪過。○你[19]見天見天的淨下棋、也不嫌膩煩嗎。○[20]先生到我們家裏來、可別見笑啊、答好說、我們居家過日子、那家不是這個樣兒呢。○工[21]夫若不間斷、自然一個月比一個月的見强。○都[22]是一樣的糧食、怎麼歉了年、就不經見禁吃呢、答好年頭的糧食、一斗能稱六十斤、荒壞年頭的糧食、一斗只稱四十五斤、差着十五斤的分量、還能經見禁吃嗎。○那[23]年李大人上京引見、不能見景生情、給皇上見了怪、以後他的官運就不見旺了、可見作大官的、也要得上人見喜哪。

14 When I declined to tell, you repeatedly urged me to do so; and now when I tell it out, you must not be offended.

15 How is Ching Sï Pao getting on these few years? *Ans.* About the same as ever. He is still very much embarrassed.

16 Look at these steam machines, how they turn out the work.

17 This firewood is half rotten. It burns up very rapidly.

18 A high-minded man does not take offence at men of low degree.

19 Do you not get tired of playing chess day in and day out?

20 You are welcome to our house, sir, but you must not laugh at us. *Ans.* There is no apology needed. What house where there is a family is not in the same condition?

21 If you work on without ceasing, each month will naturally show an improvement on the last.

22 The grain is all the same: how is it that in a scarce year it does not last? *Ans.* In a good year a bushel of grain will weigh sixty catties, but in a bad year it will only weigh forty-five catties: being less by fifteen catties in weight, how can it last?

23 The year that Li Ta Jên went to the capital to have an audience with the Emperor, he was unable to adapt himself to the circumstances, and the Emperor was not pleased. Since then his official fortune has not been prosperous; from which it is evident that even high officials must have the good-will of their superiors.

朽 *Hsiu³*.... *Rotten*, decayed; putrid; forgotten.
膩 *Ni⁴*..... Greasy, oily; *smooth*.
膩煩 *Ni⁴ fan²*. *Tired of*, disgusted with, sick of. ..... (N.)
絮煩 *Hsü⁴ fan²*..... The same. (c. & s.)
見笑 *Chien⁴ hsiao⁴*. *To laugh at*, to ridicule; ..... laughable :—Note 20.
間 *Chien⁴*. To divide, to separate; to put a space ..... between; *to intermit*; to alienate; occasionally. See *chien¹*.
間斷 *Chien⁴ twan⁴*. To intermit, *to interrupt*; ..... a break, an interval.
歉 *Chien⁴*.... See *ch'ien⁴*. Les. 117 :—Note 25.
年頭 *Nien² t'ou²*. The season, *the year*, the ..... harvest.
分量 *Fên⁴ liang⁴*..... Weight, heft.
引見 *Yin³ chien⁴*. To have an audience with ..... the Emperor.
官運 *Kwan¹ yün⁴*. *Official fortune*, chances of ..... preferment.
旺 *Wang⁴*. Increasing, *prosperous*, flourishing, ... booming; fervid, violent.
可見 *K'ê³ chien⁴*. It appears, it is evident, it is ..... seen :—Les. 180.
上人 *Shang⁴ jên²*. A superior (official or other- ..... wise).

Digitized by Google

第一百二十三課

你[13]歡越做本。十仇[6]越有你[1]
越喜。好。壞○多恨見滋越
讓○○事、前[8]吊越鬼。味。放
他、說[12]人[11]都日現深、○○刁、
他他遇是那錢、忿越[5]小[3]我
就胖、見越塌索怒怕孩越
越他意做雪、性越人子打
往大就外越越再大。的是你。
前蔓越的貪。往劉○事越○
赶。兒越好○東上我[7]情、慣這[2]
○發發事、兵[10]越幾已越越本
越[14]了喘就是大。十經傳壞。書
急喘必越○吊、輸得○越
越喇。越雄凡[9]撈了快。越[4]看
做○發壯人撈二○窮越

Translation.

1 The more obstreperous you are, the more I will whip you.
2 The more I read of this book, the more interesting it becomes.
3 The more children are indulged, the worse they are spoiled.
4 The poorer one is, the worse his luck.
5 The more anything fears exposure, the faster it spreads.
6 The deeper the enmity, the greater the anger.
7 I have already lost over twenty thousand cash. I might as well stake a few more tens and recover my money.
8 The snow that fell the day before yesterday—the farther east you go, the deeper it is.
9 The more any one gives rein to his lusts, the more he longs for their gratification.
10 The stronger and braver a soldier is, the better.
11 When any one meets with some very unexpected good fortune, his rejoicing is all the greater.
12 Speak of his being fat, and he pants all the more.

Notes.

2 不見混 *Cannot stand the wear and tear that flesh is heir to.*

12 血汗 *Bloody sweat*, expressive of severe toil. The same idea is more fully expanded in the saying, **這是一滴血一滴汗掙來的錢** *By drops of blood and drops of sweat has this money been earned.*

13 見神見鬼的 A figure drawn from the sudden and unexpected manner in which gods and demons are supposed to appear and disappear. **說賤就賤說貴就貴** is a very common idiomatic form, somewhat analogous to the English phrase, "no sooner said than done."

18 大人不見小人過 *The great man does not notice the offence of one beneath him.* As thus used, **見** does not illustrate the idiom of the lesson as does the reading with **見怪**.

20 別見笑 A common form of apology, which seems rather embarrassing to a foreigner. **見笑** *To manifest laughter*, that is, *to laugh at*. *In Wenli* **見笑** means *to be laughed at*, but not so in Mandarin. **好說** *You speak too well*; that is, *you exaggerate, your apology is quite unnecessary.*

21 的 in this sentence is to be regarded as possessive to some noun understood, such as **學問** or **樣子**.

23 見景生情 *To perceive the state of affairs and adopt a [corresponding] course of action*; that is, *to adapt one's actions or conduct to the varying circumstances of the case.*

LESSON CXXIII.

The Progressive Degree.

越 To pass over,—serves as a sort of progressive copula. It is generally used in pairs in correlative clauses, and gives the force of the English form,—the more . . . . . the. . . . . .

越發 All the more, yet more, still more. Sometimes used singly, and sometimes in pairs in correlative clauses. **越** without **發** is not used singly.

益發 A book form equivalent to **越** . . . and sometimes used in speaking, especially in . . . . . .

大蔓 Great store or lot,—still more, all the more. (c)

索性 To restrain or curb the nature or inclination, to stretch a point and do what would not otherwise be done; may generally be translated by the phrase, *might as well*; sometimes, *go ahead*, or *let us just*, will approximate the idea. It nearly always includes the idea of a venture.

Digitized by Google

在 結 這 一 罪 就 麼 發 越 不
標俊 越 些 點 了 該 樣、有 學 好、
緻俏、大、筷 風 他、越 以 人 越 實
叫 情 子 絲 索 發 後 在 糊 在
人 誼 碟 兒 性 拿 越 眼 塗。叫
越 越 子、也 和 出 長 前、○ 人
看 交 就 沒 他 眞 越 他 從[16]發
越 越 越 有、分 心 有 就 那 躁。
愛 深。發 越 個 來。出 越 個 ○
看。○ 覺 喝 高 ○ 息。發 時 人[15]
○ 他[24]得 凉 低 —[20]○ 逞 候、家
齊[25]的 肚 水 就 不 人[19]能强。我 是
云 兩 子 越 是 做、家 ○ 就 越
方 姨 餓 渴。了。二 既 他[18]越 學
從 姊 了。○ ○ 不 然 小 發 越
小 妹、○ 我[22]今[21]休、敢 時 小 明
就 生 寬[23]一 天 已 靠 也 心。白、
不 的 仇 看 過 經 咱、不 ○ 你
怎 實 越 見 熱、得 咱 怎 越[17]倒

13 The more you yield to him, the more presumptuous he becomes.
14 The more excited I grew, the worse I did. Dear me, but it was vexatious!
15 The more others learn, the wiser they become; but the more you learn, the more stupid you are.
16 From that time I was still more [careful.
17 The more that spectators are present, the more strenuously he exerts himself.
18 There was nothing special about him when young, but afterwards the older he grew, the more promise he gave.
19 Since he trusts us, we ought all the more to deal sincerely with him.
20 "Either don't begin at all, or else don't quit till you have finished." Having offended him, I might as well settle once for all which is the better man.
21 It is excessively hot to-day; there is not even a breath of air; and the more cold water one drinks, the thirstier he becomes.
22 When I saw these chop-sticks and plates, I felt all the more hungry.
23 The more enmity is cherished, the greater it becomes: the more friendship is cultivated, the stronger it becomes.
24 His cousin is a very handsome girl; the more one looks at her, the more he appreciates her beauty.
25 From his youth Ch'i Yün Fang was not very bright, and during these

VOCABULARY.

越 *Yüe*[4]. To pass over, to exceed, to transgress; ... ...to pass by, to skip:—see Sub.

蕩 *Tun*[3]. An overplus; a depôt, a storehouse; ... ...wholesale, by the lot:—see Sub.

索 *Soă*[2]. To bind; to restrain, to curb:—see Sub. ... ... See *soă*[3]. Also *soă*[4].

放刁 *Fang*[4] *tiao*[1]. To grow perverse or re- ... ...fractory or *obstreperous*.

仇恨 *Ch'ou*[2] *hên*[4]. ... *Enmity*, hatred; revenge.

忿怒 *Fên*[4] *nu*[4]. *Anger*, violent anger, indigna- ... ... tion, resentment.

撈本 *Lao*[1] *pên*[3]. To come out without loss, *to* ... ...*get one's money back*.

雄壯 *Hsiung*[2] *chwang*[4]. *Brave and strong*, ...sturdy, stalwart.

意外 *I*[4] *wai*[4]. *Unexpected*, unthought of, sur- ... ...prising.

逞能 *Ch'êng*[3] *nêng*[2]. To try with all the might, ... to do one's level best, *to exert to the utmost*. (s.)

風絲 *Fêng*[1] *sï*[1]. *A breath of air*, a very gentle ... ... breeze.

碟 *Tie*[2,4]. ... ... *A plate*, a saucer.

云 *Yün*[2]. ... ... To speak, to say. (w.)

靈俏 *Ling*[2] *ch'iao*[4]. Quick-witted, clever, *smart*, ...sharp, gifted.

背晦 *Pei*[4] *hwei*[4]. ... Childish, imbecile, *doting*.

羸 *Lei*[2]. ... ... Lean, emaciated; feeble, *infirm*.

Digitized by Google

錢、○語悟天付撓。越罷、麼
索今[33]說、罪我藥、○饞、你伶靈
性年差的要大越明[29]越越俐俏、
多山之心一蔓發明閒發表這
花紬毫壓早兒是越表二
兩很釐、制、走、病陽懶。白明、年
吊、貫、謬益叫得症、○人大越
截扯截扯之發他利他生[28]家蔓
個個千覺來害當瘡疥倒兒發
綿袍里、得的喇。作長越老
綢料就罪越○陰癬、發贏背
的兒、是重、早你[30]症到疑堆晦
多總越壓越去治癢惑了。
麼得差制好。告了、起喇。○
局冒怙摸越不○訴所來、○你[26]
面。冒怙摸遠住若[31]赶以越人[27]啞悄
的着着的了。想脚從擺撓是密悄
三意○把的、吃越越密兒
吊思。俗[32]省明那刺吃的

two years, he has all the more become an old dotard.

26 Keep quiet. The more you explain, the more they suspect you.

27 The more [dainties] you eat, the more you long to eat; the more you lounge, the lazier you become.

28 When one has scabies or ringworm and it becomes itchy, the more one scratches, the worse it itches.

29 It is clearly a *yang* disease, yet he treated it as a *yin* disease; hence from the time that he took that medicine, he has grown steadily worse.

30 Go and tell the muleteer that I want to start early to-morrow morning and that the earlier he comes the better.

31 If you try to repress your convictions of sin, you will all the more realize the weight of your sins. These convictions cannot be repressed.

32 The saying is, "A miss of a hair's breadth becomes a mistake of a thousand li;" which means that a mistake once made grows greater and greater.

33 Pongee is very dear this year; enough for a gown will cost very nearly three thousand cash. How much better to spend another thousand or two for fine silk and have a genteel garment.

贏堆 *Lei² twei¹*. Wearisome, laborious, tedious. ..... Infirm, feeble; *doting*. (s.)

啞密密的 *Ya³ mi⁴ mi⁴ ti¹*. *Quietly*, silently; ..... on the sly:—Les. 154.

饞 *Ch'an²*. To love good eating, *to hanker after dainties;* greedy, gluttonous.

癬 *Hsien³*.....Tetter; *ringworm;* scaldhead.

癢 *Yang³*..... To itch.

擺 *K'wai³*..... To rub; *to scratch.*

撓 *Nao²*. To disturb, to worry, to vex; *to scratch,* ..... to irritate.

刺 *Ts'i⁴*. A prickle, a thorn; *to prick;* to stab; ..... to pole a boat; to criticise, to lampoon.

刺撓 *Ts'i⁴ nao²*.....*To itch,* to tingle.

壓制 *Ya⁴ chi⁴*. *To repress,* to keep in subjection. .....Read *ya¹ chi⁴* in Peking.

毫 *Hao²*. An atom, a mote, a particle; the ten .....thousandth part of an ounce.

釐 *Li²*. A grain, a small particle, the thousandth ..... part of an ounce.

謬 *Niu⁴, miu⁴*. *A mistake,* an error; false, ... fallacious.

山紬 *Shan¹ ch'ou²*..... Undyed silk, pongee.

怙 *Hu⁴*..... To rely on, to presume on.

摸摸着 *Moŏ¹ moŏ¹ choŏ²*. *Very nearly,* about, ...approximately.

怙怙着 *Hu⁴ hu⁴ choŏ²*..... The same.

冒冒的 *Mao⁴ mao⁴ ti¹*..... The same.

綿綢 *Mien² ch'ou²*..... Fine silk, colored silk.

局面 *Chü² mien⁴* Correct in the style, *genteel,* .....presentable.

Digitized by Google

第一百二十四課

今[1]天起天打、都大○實起天
燈在年你[5]在點的。來。俏俊。去酷場摔今摔南
那來。俊。俏去酷場摔今摔南
裏○○給好去打天打上
打[3]這叫[4]我。打了。給穿摔打
尖個打打人○誰着打閃、
新來。水一的動[8]看兩的、有
○媳婦的、點。的高典不呢。件揚八
快[2]婦子快糊。糕典頭動○好氣成
打打打火
你[9]○衣得是
他[7]○。水粉就看。裳、很要

TRANSLATION.

1 Where did you stop at noon to-day?
2 Strike a fire [with flint and steel] at once and light the lamp.
3 This bride is dressed very beautifully.
4 Tell the water carrier to bring some water quickly.
5 Go and make a little paste for me.
6 Tiao Ta Nien delights in spoiling other people's fun.
7 They are all out thrashing.
8 You are all the time dashing things down [and breaking them]; for whose benefit are you doing it?
9 Look at Wang T'ien Hsi. He has got on a suit of fine clothes to-day, and goes strutting along fairly bursting with conceit.

NOTES.

2 Or, *The oftener I read this book, etc.*

4 To see a demon is not a good omen, and hence is put for bad luck.

9 Or, *The more a man indulges in evil practices, the stronger his evil propensities will become.*

14 實在 is here very emphatic, and very difficult of translation.

20 一不做二不休 *Do not act in the first place, or in the second place do not give over. It is better not to begin, than to begin and not finish.*

22 越發覺得肚子餓了 *I all the more felt my belly to be hungry.*

24 兩姨姊妹 *Cousins by maternal aunts;* i.e., the children of sisters, each of whom calls the other's mother 姨.

27 The idea of dainties is implied in the word 饞.

29 陽 and 陰, having no equivalents in the English language or thought, cannot be translated. Chinese medical practice is largely founded on a division of diseases and medicines into two classes, distinguished as 陽 and 陰.

LESSON CXXIV.

VARIOUS USES OF 打.

The word 打 has a wide range of use. It resembles in this the words *turn* and *take* in English. It is joined with both nouns and verbs to express a great variety of actions. Several examples of its use have already occurred.

打尖 To stop for refreshment when traveling, as opposed to stopping over night.

打火 To strike a match, to strike a light.

打扮 To dress, to array; dress, costume, toilet.

打水 To draw or bring or carry water.

打糊 or 打糊子 To cook or make starch or paste.

打高典 To take down, to spoil the fun, to take the wind out of one's sails.

打典頭 The same. (s.)

打塲 To thrash out and winnow grain.

打閃 To lighten, to flash as lightning.

打憚 To dread, to shrink from. (c.)

打影子 The same. (s.)

打鞦韆 To swing.

打喳喳 To whisper.

打耳喳 The same. (s.)

打草稿 To draw out a rough draft, to write the first copy.

打賭 To wager, to bet.

打勝 or 打勝仗 To gain the victory.

打敗 or 打敗仗 To suffer defeat.

Digitized by Google

我 仗東賭。謄耳喳 ○ 的。學 窮。下
只 不 ○ 清。喳喳 您[15] ○ 算 ○ 雨。
會 打 勝[18] ○ 呢說。二 世[14] 法。別[12] ○
個 敗 敗 你[17] ○ 位 上 ○ 的 喫[11]
小 仗 是 若 我[16] 有 有 打[13] 我 不
九 呢。兵 不 剛 甚 三 更 都 窮、
九。○ 家 信、纔 麼 宗 有 不 穿
○ 你[19] 的 我 咱 打 怕 險、打 打 打發 不
打[20] 會 常 們 們 起 人 坐 梆 影 僥悵 窮、
人 打 事、兩 草 的 船 子 子 、打算
休 算 那 個 倆 稿 話、騎 的、就 算計
打 盤 能 可 來、這 馬 也 是 不
臉、不 單 以 還 樣 打 有 打 打悵 到
罵 會、打 賭 打 沒 打 鞦 打 影 僥着 一纔
人 答 勝 個 個 有 着 韆。鑼 子 世受

10 It is lightening in the south-east; most likely it will rain.
11 It is not food nor clothing that makes a man poor; but failure in managing will do it (keep him poor all his life).
12 I do not dread anything else save mathematics.
13 Some watchmen strike a *pang-tsi*, and some, a gong.
14 There are three dangerous things in the world; traveling by ship, riding on horseback and swinging.
15 What secrets have you two that you must speak in a whisper?
16 I have just now finished writing the rough draft, and have not yet made a clean copy.
17 If you don't believe it, we will make a bet (bet a treat).
18 Victories and defeats are the common experience of soldiers. How can you expect to be always victorious and never suffer defeat?
19 Can you reckon on the abacus? *Ans.* I only know how to add.
20 When you strike a man, do not

打算盤 To reckon on the abacus.
打點 To arrange; to equip, to fit out; to provide for; to smooth the way with money, to bribe.
不打緊 No matter, of no consequence. 打緊 is not used without the negative.
打把勢 To box, to fence.
打八式 The same.
打拳 To box, to fence, to fisticuff.
打獵 To hunt game.
打量 To suppose, to estimate, to consider.
打盹 To nod; to doze, to be sleepy.
打哈息 To yawn.
打呵欠 The same. (s.)
打包 To bud, to pullulate.
打躬 To make a profound bow with the hands joined and subsequently raise them to the head.
摔[1]打 To throw down forcibly, to dash down.
摔[3]打 To fling the arms, to strut; to fling abroad, to scatter.
呼打 To flap back and forth, to flutter; to palpitate, to throb.
喪打 To frown at, to scowl at; to snub.
撐打 The same.
掄打 To fling, to swing, to flourish.
For list of examples of the use of 打 see Supplement.

Vocabulary.

扮 *Pan*[4]. . . . To dress up, to rig out; to beautify.
酷好 *K'u*[4] *hao*[4]. *To have a passion for*, to desire ardently; addicted to.
高興 *Kao*[1] *hsing*[4]. Elated, exulting, jubilant, *merry*.
興頭 *Hsing*[4] *t'ou*[2]. Elation, exultation; merriment, *fun*.
摔 *Shwai*[1]. To wrestle; to throw down forcibly, . . . to dash or fling down. See *shwai*[3].
揚氣 *Yang*[2] *ch'i*[4]. . . . *Conceited*, puffed up.
八成 *Pa*[1] *ch'êng*[2]. Eight parts in ten, most likely:—Note 10.
怵 *Ch'u*[4]. . . . Timorous, fearful, *shrinking*.

Digitized by Google

○ 子 打 人、咕呼 ○ 罷。們 就 休
劈[28]叫 走 人 嘟打 這[24] ○ 今 是 揭
臉 誰 獸、都 的 幾 莫[23]天 挨 短。
打 打 總 不 直 天 妙 來 到 ○
了 喇、名 願 跳、不 於 打 你 若[21]
一 你 叫 意 光大 大 白 攪 的 是
個 看 打 和 景約 疼 天 喇、缺、不
耳 水 獵。他 是是 喇、念 答 也 用
巴瓜 直 ○ 說 作鼓 就 書、這 沒 幾
子、往 媽[27]話。膿 是 晚 不 有 百
回 下 啊、○ 喇。覺 上 打 你 銀
頭 滴 我 或[26] ○ 着 學 緊、的 子
就 打 們 打 他[25]裏 着 請 官 打
跑。滴 的 飛 光 頭 打 再 作。點
○ 打 水 禽 樽喪堵咕呼 八把坐 ○ 打
我[29]的。鑼 或 打打喪嘟打 拳式勢坐 我[22]點、

strike his face; and when you berate a man, do not cast his short-comings in his teeth.

21 Even though you do wait till your turn comes round, without spending a few hundred taels to pave the way there will be no office for you.

22 Our coming to-day has incommoded you. *Ans.* That is no matter: please sit a little longer.

23 The best way is to study in daytime, and practice boxing at night.

24 It does not pain me much these few days, but I feel it throbbing constantly; pus is probably forming.

25 He is given to snubbing people; so that no one likes to talk with him.

26 Whether hunting birds or beasts, the common name is hunting game.

27 Mamma, somebody has broken our water-pot: see how the water keeps dropping down.

28 Aiming at his face, he gave him a blow on the cheek, and then turned and ran.

29 I should not mind making you a

發怵 *Fa*[1] *ch'u*[4]. *To dread*, to shrink from, frightened.

僬 *Ch'u*[4]. Rough; timorous, *shrinking*.

梆 *Pang*[1]. A hollow wooden block on which watchmen strike the hours.

坐船 *Tsoâ*[4] *ch'wan*[2]. *To travel by boat or ship*, to travel by water.

喳 *Ch'a*[1]. To whisper, to chatter. See *cha*[1].

耳喳 *Er*[3] *ch'a*[1]. A whisper in the ear.

稿 *Kao*[3]. Straw; *a first draft*, a rough copy, a sketch; a proof.

草稿 *Ts'ao*[3] *kao*[3]. *The first* or *rough draft of a paper*; original copy.

謄清 *T'êng*[2] *ch'ing*[1]. To make a clean copy, to copy out.

把勢 *Pa*[3] *shï*[4]. The art of boxing or fencing with sword or spear.

八式 *Pa*[1] *shï*[4]. The same:—Note 23.

咕嘟 *Ku*[3] *tu*[1]. A bubbling, gurgling or murmuring sound; to rumble; to throb.

堵喪 *Tu*[3] *sang*[4]. *To snub*, to bluff off.

飛禽 *Fei*[1] *ch'in*[2]. Birds.

走獸 *Tsou*[3] *shou*[4]. Beasts, quadrupeds.

獵 *Lie*[4]. To hunt wild animals, the chase.

劈臉 *P'i*[1] *lien*[3]. To stand square in front and strike.

耳瓜子 *Er*[3] *kwa*[1] *tsï*[3]. The cheek bones, the side face.

耳巴子 *Er*[3] *pa*[1] *tsï*[3]. The same.

掄 *Lün*[1]. To whirl or swing around, to flourish. Also *lun*[2].

舞 *Wu*[3]. To gesture, to fence, to pantomime; *to flourish*, to brandish.

舞弄 *Wu*[3] *nung*[4]. To befool, to play tricks on; *to flourish*, to brandish.

聖徒 *Sheng*[4] *t'u*[2]. A saint, a Christian.

哈 *Ha*[1] To open the mouth wide, to gape. See *ha*[3], also *k'a*[1,4].

哈息 *Ha*[1] *hsi*[2]. A gape, a yawn.

呵欠 *Ha*[1] *ch'ien*[4]. The same. (s.)

約束 *Yüe*[1] *shu*[4]. *To control*, to restrain, to keep in order.

希奇 *Hsi*[1] *ch'i*[2]. Wonderful, surprising, *remarkable*, strange.

Digitized by Google

站 束 人 見 問 己 的 別 忘 賞
的 他、不 這 沒 哄 過 在 記 你
地 叫 希 花 斃打 自 失、家 帶 三
方、他 奇 纔 眩 己。還 裏 來。五
坐 學 人。打 怎 ○ 能 舞搶 ○ 兩
的 禮 ○ 包、麼 你[32] 殼 弄打。你[30] 銀
位 貌、人[34] 今 打 們 有 ○ 拿 子、
次、打 有 天 呵哈斃打 罷 他[31] 你 也
都 躬 子 就 欠息 眩 徒 打 的 不
叫 作 弟、開 呢。了 的 量 棍 打
他 揖、從 喇、○ 嗎、德 人 予 緊、
曉 倒 小 你 昨[33] 答 行、去 出 可
得 茶 就 說 天 沒 正 學 去 惜
方 裝 要 希 我 斃打 是 罷 玩 今
向。菸、約 奇 看 眩、自 徒 罷、日

present of three or five taels of silver, but unfortunately I forgot to bring any along to-day.

30 Take your stick out of doors to play, and don't flourish it about in the house.

31 He deceives himself in thinking that if a man imitates the faults of Christians, he will of course have their virtues.

32 Have you been taking a nap? *Ans.* No, we have not. *Ques.* If you have not been taking a nap, why then are you yawning?

33 Yesterday I noticed that this flower had just put forth a bud, and to-day it is in full bloom. Isn't that remarkable?

34 When a man has children and nephews, he should control them from their childhood, requiring them to learn to be polite, to bow and courtesy, to pour tea and light a pipe, and also teach them to keep their proper places both when standing and when sitting.

禮貌 *Li*[3] *mao*[4]. . . . . *Politeness*, etiquette.
躬 *Kung*[1]. . . . . The body, the person.
揖 *I*[1]. A bow with the hands to the breast; a . . . . . salutation.
作揖 *Tsoh*[4] *i*[1] To make a bow with the hands . . . . . to the breast.
倒茶 *Tao*[4] *ch'a*[2]. . . . . To pour out tea.
裝菸 *Chwang*[1] *yien*[1]. . . . . To fill a pipe.
位次 *Wei*[4] *ts'i*[4]. Position, rank, order of prece- . . . . . dence.
方向 *Fang*[1] *hsiang*[4]. Direction, bearing; posi- . . . . . tion, place.

NOTES.

3 Properly speaking, 俊 refers to natural looks, and 俏 to dress.

10 八成 is a contraction for 八分之成. 十成 is a common expression to denote completeness; hence, 八成 is *eight parts in ten*, that is, *for the most part, most likely*. Other numbers are also used; as 五成, 六成, etc.

11 一世 *One world*; i.e., *a generation, a life time*. The term is derived from the idea of transmigration. So also are 出世, *to be born*, and 去世, *to die*.

17 賭個東 *To bet a treat*, 東 being put for 東家, the moneyed partner or party.

19 小九九 is the Chinese multiplication table. Each line stops when it reaches the square, so that no multiplier is ever greater than the multiplicand, and every process of multiplication is carried on in conformity with this idea. In the present case the numbers of the 小九九 are spoken of as an exercise in addition.

23 把勢 The postures of offense and defence taken in boxing. Others would write, 八式, the eight standard positions of arms and feet assumed in boxing.

LESSON CXXV.

CLASSIFIERS.

朵 A bunch or cluster,—classifier of flowers, clouds, etc.
文 A vein or band,—classifier of cash and coins.
軸 An axle,—classifier of maps and scrolls.
角 A corner,—classifier of dispatches.
封 To seal,—classifier of letters, dispatches, packets of silver, etc.
尾 The tail,—classifier of fishes.

Digitized by Google

第一百二十五課

看[1]一文這朵雲彩、好像是是有兩的樣子。○不[2]受十分苦、難得
界、這○連人可○昨[4]天文錢。○這[3]張畫像、
只步他[10]一扛着以你[5]那來錢。軸畫是張
要時早條領去那來了○角封文書、說七月二十二、丹、他要十兩銀子。
多運上晨席一買對了一封書、是張敬畫的牡
有實吃都面幾頭、一條尾也有一段話說。
幾在了沒大條尾來。有文書、說七月二十二、丹、他要十兩銀子。
串不一有。柳。○○○一段話說。○
銅濟、片○○○一段話說。○
錢、半頁兒這[9]那[8]我[7]今天見了哥[6]哥既學臺從省裏起馬。○
這年饅是一天我到他家裏去、見他炕上、
就死頭、誰天我到他家裏去、見他炕上、
有了喝家的一所宅子、好大氣派。
了三個四一件奇事、想鯉魚吃、你
勢個孩兩所房子、好大氣派。
力孩兩牛房宅裏去、見他炕上、
喇。子。牛奶。子、好大氣派。
○○我[13]如[12]今王[11]之東世

TRANSLATION.

1 This cloud looks as if it had rain in it.
2 It is hard to get even a little money without great labor.
3 This picture is a shrub peony painted by Chang Yü. He wants ten taels for it.
4 Yesterday there came a dispatch saying that the Literary Chancellor would start from the provincial capital on the twenty-second of the seventh month.
5 Your opponent has also something to say.
6 Since our brother longs for some carp to eat, you may go and buy him a few.
7 I saw a remarkable sight to-day. I saw five men wearing one large cangue.
8 The other day when I went to see him, I noticed that he did not have even a sheet of matting on his k'ang.
9 Whose residence is this? It is a very pretentious building.
10 This morning he ate a slice of bread and drank four ounces of milk.
11 Wang Chï Tung has had a run of exceedingly bad luck; within a half year three children have died.
12 In these times it is only necessary to have a little hard cash and you will have influence.

段 A section,—classifier of stories, sections of a book, plots of ground, etc.

面 The face,—classifier of drums, mirrors, gongs, saddles, etc.

領 A collar,—classifier of sheets of matting, window shades, and upper garments.

所 A place,—classifier of dwellings, houses, etc.

片 A flake,—classifier of sheets or patches, also of short spaces of time.

頁 A leaf or sheet,—classifier of things in sheets as leaves of a book, boards, panes of glass, slices of bread, sheets of foil or tinsel paper.

串 To string together,—classifier of cash, strings of beads or pearls, etc.

處 A place,—classifier of houses, places, etc.

步 A step,—classifier of circumstances.

貫 A string of one thousand cash,—classifier of sums of cash.

樁 A stake,—classifier of affairs. (L.)

扇 A fan,—classifier of gates, doors, windows, shutters, etc.

架 A frame,—classifier of clocks, scales, philosophical instruments, etc.

丸 A pellet,—classifier of medicines in pills.

味 A taste,—classifier of medicines.

頂 The apex,—classifier of hats, sedan chairs, state umbrellas, etc.

幅 A roll,—classifier of maps, pictures, scrolls, leggings, etc.

簍 A basket,—classifier of things in baskets or crates; as tea, oranges, etc.

Digitized by Google

來一封信、還有一封銀子、可以請他親自來取。○別[14]說他還有地、就是這三處房子的房租、五口人也吃不了。○到[15]兩軍對敵的時候、並看不見別的、就是看見一片烟。○雖[16]有萬貫的家財、死後連一文也帶不了去。○我[17]看這樁事情、心裏就是不平、那有欺負人、欺負到這步田地的呢。○男[18]人能掙、還得女人能過、若是外頭掙一塊板、家裏丟一扇門、雖然能掙、也是白費。[饒]忙上了。○郭[19]子彬的鐘表店舖、昨天晚上、叫賊偷了一架鐘、兩個掛表去。○可[20]以把這五味藥、研細末、做成三十顆丸藥子、每天晚上吃一顆丸。○這[21]幾天上、可以找着買一面鑼、預備吃飯的時候好打。○就[22]是蓋街、可以找着買一面鑼、預備吃飯的時候好打。

13 I have brought for him a letter and a bundle of silver. Ask him to come in person and get them.

14 Not to speak of the land he has, the rent of these three houses alone is more than sufficient for the support of a family of five.

15 When the two armies joined battle, nothing could be seen but a cloud of smoke.

16 Although you have a fortune of ten thousand strings [of cash], yet when you die you cannot take with you a single cash.

17 When I saw this affair I felt very indignant. How could any one wrong another to such a degree as this?

18 Not only must the husband be able to earn, but the wife must know how to save. If, while the husband earns a board in the fields, the wife runs through with a door at home, his being able to earn money will be of no avail.

19 Last night one clock and two watches were stolen by a thief from Kwoă Tsï Pin's watchmaker's shop.

20 Take these five ingredients, grind them into a fine powder and make them up into thirty pills,—of which take one every evening.

21 Within the next few days, when you go on the street, you may look for and buy a gong to be struck at meal times.

Vocabulary.

軸 *Chou*[2]. An axle, a pivot, axis of motion; a ..... roller:—see Sub.

貫 *Kwan*[4]. A string of cash; to string; to go ..... through, to penetrate:—see Sub.

頁 *Yie*[4]. The head; a leaf of a book or folio; a ..... slat, a slice, a leaf:—see Sub.

幅 *Fu*[2]. A strip of cloth; a hem; a border; a ..... roll:—see Sub.

敔 *Yü*[3]. .... An ancient musical instrument. (w.)

鯉 *Li*[3]. ..... The carp.

枷 *Chia*[1]. A cangue or wooden collar:—Note 7.

宅 *Chai*[2], *chê*[2]. A dwelling, a residence, *a private* ..... *house;* a location, a site.

對敵 *Twei*[4] *ti*[2]..... *To join battle*, to confront.

鐘表 *Chung*[1] *piao*[3]. *Clocks and watches*, a clock, ... a striking clock.

研 *Yien*[2]. To grind, *to rub fine*, to powder; to ..... search into.

桄 *T'oa*[2]. A tie-beam or girder between pillars; ... the triangular frame over each partition, consisting of a girder, two rafters and an upright.

樑 *Liang*[2]..... A beam, *a girder;* a mast.

檁 *Lin*[3]. The poles or beams which extend from ..... one rafter to the other:—Note 22.

擱木 *Kê*[1] *mu*[4]. The wooden plate above a door ..... or window. (c. & n.)

托板 *T'oa*[2] *pan*[3]..... The same. (s.)

Digitized by Google

三間房子、也得買兩架樑、二十一根檩、再加上門窗、搁
木、板還不得成文的錢嗎。○樑[23]有一天下小雨、我見放牛的、
頭戴一頂斗葦笠、宗身披一件蓑衣、手拿一根棍子、遠遠的
望着、眞像一幅好畫圖。○那[24]是天生的一段材、無論怎
樣管他、總斷不了那宗風流氣。○前[25]兩天、一位朋友送
給我一封筆、十錠墨、一簍茶葉、今天必得預備一點禮
物送給他。○東[26]面那四幅畫屏、像是鄭板橋畫的、却沒
落欵。○古[27]來拿賊的方法、是一個村堡蓋一座樓、樓上
安一面鼓、若一家有了事、把鼓擂起來、人家都聽得、就
將緊要的出路堵住、那賊往那裏跑呢。

22 Even if you build but three rooms, it will be necessary to buy two sets of beams, twenty-one rafters, and in addition, the doors and windows with the supporting plates over them. Will it not cost a lot of money?

23 One day when it was drizzling, I saw a cowherd wearing a straw hat on his head and a rush coat on his back and holding in his hand a long staff. Looking at him from a distance, he looked just like a well drawn picture.

24 That disposition is born in him. No matter how you control him there is no getting rid of that propensity to dissipation.

25 A few days ago a friend made me a present of a bunch of pens, ten sticks of ink and a basket of tea. To-day I must provide some present for him.

26 Those four sets of scrolls to the east look like the painting of Ching Pan Ch'iao, though his signature is not subscribed.

27 The ancient method of catching thieves was to build in each village a tower with a drum in it, then if any family missed anything the drum was beaten, and all hearing it at once closed up all the chief ways of exit, so that the thief had no means of escape.

成文 *Ch'êng² wên².* A great many, a lot of ..... [cash]. (Pekingese.)

放牛 *Fang⁴ niu².* To herd cattle; to pasture ..... cattle.

葦 *Wei³.* ..... A rush, a reed; tall coarse grass.

笠 *Li⁴.* *A rain-hat made of coarse grass or* ..... *bamboo splints;* a hamper; a crate.

葦笠 A coarse conical rain-hat.

篷 *P'êng².* *Coarse matting;* an awning, a ..... booth; a ceiling.

斗篷 *Tou³ p'êng².* A coarse conical rain-hat ..... made of straw. (s.)

蓑 *Soū¹.* .... A cloak of thatched leaves or grass.

蓑衣 *Soū¹ i¹.* ..... The same.

畫圖 *Hwa⁴ t'u².* ..... A painting.

風流 *Fêng¹ liu².* *Dissipated,* dissolute, rakish; ..... gay, fast; stylish, refined.

茶葉 *Ch'a⁴ yie⁴.* ..... Tea leaves, tea.

屏 *P'ing².* A screen; *a set of scrolls;* an ..... ornamental tablet.

欵 *K'wan³.* To respect; *a signature,* an inscrip- ..... tion; a kind; a section, an article.

落欵 *Lo⁴ k'wan³.* *To affix a signature,* to attach ..... an inscription or stamp.

古來 *Ku³ lai².* Of old, for a long time, *ancient,* ..... from ancient times.

方法 *Fang¹ fa³.* Plan, *method,* expedient, ... arrangement; prescription.

村堡 *Ts'un¹ p'u⁴.* ..... *A village,* a town.

擂 *Lei².* ..... To rub fine; *to beat,* to drum.

緊要 *Chin³ yao⁴.* Important—same as 要緊, ... but savors of book style.

有事 *Yiu³ shi⁴.* To have business, engaged; ..... *to meet with something unusual,*—an accident or misfortune.

Digitized by Google

第一百二十六課

養[1]兒原爲防備老。○我[2]起根兒以來
原底子的○事。的就厭惡他。○起[3]先你是這麼說
原起根兒的姑娘。文池頭這[4]本不是他所該管的
起根兒王[6]○文起[5]○頭難些、久後就容易了。
起根兒付裏、沒○有沒[7]有出息呢。○當[8]初他
本來託你、你就不該應承。○我[9]本來
我[10]本來是浙江人、在這本原裏入籍○戶
曉得他借的時候、本原來本來就沒○。

Translation.

1 The primary idea in bringing up sons is to provide against old age.
2 I abominated him from the first.
3 Is this what you said at first?
4 This affair does not properly come under his jurisdiction.
5 At first it was rather difficult, but by and by it became easy.
6 Wang Wên Ch'i's wife originally belonged to a rich family.
7 There is no help for it: whose fault is it [but my own] that I have amounted to nothing?
8 When he first came to ask your good offices, you should not have promised.
9 Originally a Chekiang man, I have taken up my residence here.
10 I know that when he originally bor-

Notes.

3 張敔 was a noted Chinese painter,—specially noted for painting peonies.

4 Both 封 and 角 are *t'ung-hsing* as classifiers of dispatches.

6 As a classifier of fish, 條 is much more common than 尾, which is *Wên*.

7 A cangue is a heavy board or block of wood, about three and a half feet square, with a hole in the centre large enough to admit a man's neck. It is made in two halves, and is bolted together and locked around the neck. Culprits are usually sentenced to wear it a number of days, sitting at the gate of the yamên—sometimes at the gate of the person they have sinned against. Generally each culprit has his own cangue, but in some cases the board is made long, with two or more holes, and those who have been guilty of a like offense are locked in together.

8 那一天 at the opening of a sentence, is used much as the colloquial English, "*the other day.*"

12 幾串銅錢 *A few strings of copper cash*—a facetious amplification.

13 Broken silver is usually tied up in packets of fifty taels each, so that a packet *ordinarily* means this sum. A less amount is however also called 一封.

17 那有 is here very emphatic. It expresses both the surprise and the indignation of the speaker. The translation falls short of the Chinese.

22 A Chinese house has, properly speaking, only one pair of rafters over each partition. The 檩 extend between these rafters, the number of them usually being seven, one over the top of each wall, one at the comb, and two between. There is considerable confusion in the application of 桁 桡 and 檩 in different sections. Arches are not built over windows and doors, but the superincumbent wall is supported by a heavy wooden plate, for which each locality has its own name.

26 鄭板橋 was another noted painter.

LESSON CXXVI.

Beginning.

原 Originally, primarily.

原來 Originally, from the first; the fact is, properly, in the nature of the case.

原起 Originally, primarily; always.

原先 At first, primarily.

原本 Originally, primarily, at the outset, in the nature of the case:—Note (16).

原根兒 Originally, at first, in the first place. (C. & N.)

原起根兒 The same.

原底子 The same. (s.)

起先 At the first, at the outset; heretofore.

起頭 Originally, at first, in the beginning.

起首 The same.

起前 At first, from the first. (s.)

起初 Originally, primarily, at first, in the first place, in the beginning.

起初頭 The same. (N. & C.)

Digitized by Google

小就好這他會這知○打
名是直絕麼不了。麼是原[12]算
叫神。絕勸好○的。咱來還。
巧○不揹養。那[15]○們世○
雲。原[19]理呢。○個鄭[14]給上、他[11]
○來他。○這[16]孩福他姓們
這[20]那○他[17]原子德弄張倆、
塊婦太[18]本本太起原壞姓起
地人、初情是精先起了、王初
本是有是人靈細不也姓相
來七道、對家喇、會不李好、
是月道不掙我滑逃知的近
姓七與住到起起根學、原最來
張生神你、的前根起如底根多。絕
的、的、同你錢、就今子兒○了
如因在、却那看却就也[13]交
今此道不好着學是不咯。

rowed it, he did not intend to return it.

11 They two were originally good friends, but recently they have cut each other's acquaintance.

12 In point of fact, Chang, Wang and Li are the most common surnames in the world.

13 It is hard to say whether we spoiled it for him, or whether it was so originally.

14 Chêng Fu Tê was not originally given to playing truant, but he has now learned to do it.

15 That child was too precocious. I thought from the first he would not live to grow up.

16 This is money which he has worked for. It is wrong to hold it back in this way.

17 He has treated you badly it is true, yet it is not right for you to utterly disregard him.

18 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

19 That woman was born on the seventh of the seventh month, hence her little name is Skilful Cloud.

起根 From the first, in the first place, primarily, always.

根起 The same,—but less general.

根兒裏頭 Primarily, in the first place. (N.)

底起根裡 Originally, at first, in the first place. (N.)

底根兒裡 The same. (N. & S.)

本 Originally, properly.

本來 Originally; properly, the truth is, in fact.

本情 Original state of the case, in the nature of things, really, it is true, of course.

開頭 At first, beginning from, in the first instance.

開先 The same. (S.)

太初 In the beginning, at the birth of time.

當初 At the beginning, at the first, in the first place.

以來 From the first; heretofore.

自來 Heretofore, ever, all along, always,—with a negative, never. Also naturally.

從根 From the first, from the beginning,—with a negative, never. (N. & C.)

從頭 The same.

一起頭 In the first place, at the outset.

一開手 At first, at the start, at the outset.

一上手 The same.

VOCABULARY.

託付 *T'o[1] fu[4].* *To ask the help or services of,* ..... to entrust to, to depend upon.

浙 *Ché[4].* A stream in Chekiang from which the ..... province is named.

落戶 *Lao[4] hu[4].* To reside, *to make one's re-* ..... *sidence,* to settle.

籍 *Chi[2].* ... A list, a register, a docket:—see *chi[4].*

入籍 *Ju[4] chi[2].* To be enrolled as a resident, to ..... acquire citizenship.

滑學 *Hwa[2] hsüe[2].* ..... To play truant. (C.)

精靈 *Ching[1] ling[2].* *Bright,* smart, precocious, ... quick-witted; ethereal.

同在 *T'ung[2] tsai[4].* At the same place, together, ... *with,* in company with.

Digitized by Google

典在姓王的手裏。○從[21]明天起開頭、午飯後要兩點鐘上學。○我[22]起根兒臉軟、自來心軟架不住人央求。○他[23]原來就臉皮薄、這是我知道的。○他[24]起首只有五千銀子的本、現今賺了有五十萬。○你[25]根兒裏頭是多少錢買的、答那時候有錢、買的貴。○我[26]的書、原起根兒就沒念好、如今荒疎的、更不像樣兒了。○這[27]些律法本原本來是爲不孝不弟的人設的。○[28]起頭開先教訓人種莊稼的、是神農。○你[29]不信打聽打聽、從根頭來我在酒飯館子裏、沒有賬。○你[30]別說是價錢大、東西本情也就是好啊。○起[31]初連我也不信、以後仔細訪問、纔知道是有憑有據的事情。○原[32]打算要買

20 This piece of land belonged originally to one Chang, but is now mortgaged into the hands of a man named Wang.
21 Beginning from to-morrow, school will open in the afternoon at two o'clock.
22 I have always been tender-hearted and unable to resist entreaty.
23 I know he has always been bashful.
24 He had originally only five thousand taels of capital, but he has now cleared about five hundred thousand.
25 For how much did you buy it in the first place? *Ans.* I was rich then, and I paid well for it.
26 My scholarship was imperfect in the first place, and now by neglect it has become still more indifferent.
27 These laws were made primarily for the unfilial and unfraternal.
28 It was Shên Nung who first taught men to cultivate the earth.
29 If you do not believe [just go and] inquire. I have never had any account at a saloon or restaurant.
30 Do not suppose the price is high, for the goods are really first class.
31 Neither did I believe it at first, but afterwards, upon making careful inquiry, I found out that it was a veritable fact.
32 I originally intended to buy a pound of oil of peppermint and half a pound of olive oil, but subsequently, because

掯 *K'ên³*. To oppress, to wrong, *to grind down;* ..... to vex, to obstruct.
勒掯 *Lê¹ k'ên³*. To oppress, to squeeze, *to keep* ..... *back what is due.*
臉軟 *Lien³ juen³*. Unable to resist entreaty, ... *tender-hearted*, lenient.
心軟 *Hsin¹ juen³*. ..... The same.
臉皮 *Lien³ p'i²*. The face as expressive of ..... emotions or character.
臉皮薄 *Lien³ p'i² poâ²*. Shamefaced, *bashful,* ..... diffident.
嫩 *Nên⁴, nun⁴*. ..... Delicate; weak, soft; *tender.*
臉嫩 *Lien³ nên⁴*. ..... *Bashful*, diffident.
荒疎 *Hwang¹ su¹*. ..... *To neglect*, to disuse.
像樣 *Hsiang⁴ yang⁴*. As it should be, passable, ... very fair.
不像樣 *Pu⁴ hsiang⁴ yang⁴*. Inferior, *indiffer-* ..... *ent;* out of bounds.
飯館 *Fan⁴ kwan³*. An eating-house, *a res-* ..... *taurant.*
磅 *P'ang¹*. ..... A pound,—used for the sound.
薄荷 *Poâ⁴*. ..... Peppermint. See *poâ²*.
荷 *Hê²*. ..... The small-leaved water lily.
薄荷 Peppermint.
橄欖 *Kan³ lan³*. ..... The olive.
輪流 *Lun² liu²*. *To take turns;* one by one in ..... order.
元勳 *Yüen² hsün¹*. A distinguished patriot, ... especially one who aids in founding a kingdom or dynasty.
江山 *Chiang¹ shan¹*. Land, *territory,* realm, ... domain.
紳 *Shên¹*. A sash; those who are privileged to ..... wear sashes, *literati.*

Digitized by Google

一磅薄荷油、半磅橄欖油、後來因爲錢不彀、就每一樣買了半磅。○當[33]初分家的時候、他定規要跟着小兒子過、現在却是三家輪流着。○姚[34]期、原是東漢開國的元勳、一起頭打江山的就是他。○原[35]先紳士們、打算保舉他、給他立一座節孝牌坊、以後聽說他不大穩當、就擱下了。○增[36]福小時節、還有點精氣神兒、後來越長越獃、答他原從頭根來的。○無[37]論是交友、是交財、若是一向佯睖、如同沒有魂兒似的。○自然越交越厚、就是有點不開手、上手能交到好處、以後自然越交越厚、就是有點不開手、上手能交到好處蓋掩了。

my money was insufficient, I bought a half pound of each kind.

33 Originally, when the family was divided, he decided to live with the youngest son, but now he lives by turns with the three.

34 Yao Ch'i immortalized himself in the founding of the Eastern Han dynasty. It was he who, in the first place, subjugated the land.

35 In the first place the literati intended to recommend the erection of a monumental arch commemorating her virtue, but afterwards, hearing that her reputation was not the best, the project was dropped.

36 When Tsêng Fu was still young, he showed some little vigor of mind; but as he grew, he became more and more stupid. *Ans.* From the first he was not bright, and he had all the time a vacant stare as if he had lost his wits.

37 Whether in the intercourse of friendship or of business, if a good foundation is laid at the outset, afterwards, as a matter of course, the longer the intercourse continues the more cordial it will become; so that even if some little difference should arise, it is covered over by the former goodwill.

紳士 *Shên¹ shï⁴*. . . . Gentry, *literati*; head-men.
舉保 *Chü³ pao³* . . . . . Same as 保舉.
節孝 *Chie² hsiao⁴*. Chaste and faithful widow-
. . . . . hood.
牌坊 *P'ai² fang¹*. A commemorative arch:—
. . . . . Note 35.
佯 *Yang²*. . . . . To feign; *unreal*, feigned; dreary.
佯向 *Yang² hsiang⁴*. To look blank, *a vacant look;*
. . . . . to dream, to muse. (L.)
睖 *Lêng⁴*. To stare, to look intently, to gaze; *a*
. . . . . *vacant look, a stare.*
發睖 *Fa¹ lêng⁴*. To stare, to look daft; *vacant,*
. . . . . dazed, stupified.
開手 *K'ai¹ shou³*. To begin; at first, *at the*
. . . . . *outset.*
上手 *Shang⁴ shou³*. . . . . The same.
蓋掩 *Kai⁴ yien³*. *To cover up*, to conceal, to
. . . . . hide from view.

NOTES.

1 This sentence no doubt expresses the chief idea in the desire of the Chinese for sons, though the wish to have some one to offer sacrifices to them after death is also very potent.

9 落戶 means simply to reside or locate, while 入籍 means to be registered as a citizen. There seems to be no established rule in regard to this registry.

12 原來, as here used, is not to be understood as referring to the state of things in ancient or former times, but rather as giving emphasis to a fact both past and present. These are by far the most common family names in China.

15 好養 *Good to rear;* that is, *possible to rear,*—predestined to live and grow up to adult years.

16 原本 is used to add assurance to the fact stated, somewhat as we use the phrase, *in point of fact.* 掙到 means that the labor has been performed and the money is due.

19 巧雲 The star Atair in Cygnus. The mythological story is that 巧雲 is the seventh daughter of 玉皇上帝, and the wife of 牽牛郎 (Denab), and is wonderfully skilful in needlework and all feminine accomplishments. 牽牛郎 borrowed money from 玉皇上帝 for the expenses of his wedding. He failed to repay it, and 玉皇, to punish him, took 巧雲 home, and ever since allows

Digitized by Google

第一百二十七課

你[1]的上孟子還沒念到底嗎。○我[2]再三問他。到底說有末[4]了、我依了他。○善[3]惡到頭終終有報。○我[2]再三問他。到底說有末[4]了、我依了他。○罷[5]了根期齊誰[6]個法子、○○罷[5]了要使了、不終久有報。○你[7]你○懶、還己、飯吃。○你[10]究[9]罵歸罷[5]了要使了、你[8]這樣自己。飯吃。○你[10]究[9]罵歸罷[5]了要使了、你[8]這樣是畢竟好呢。○是好的自樣○瞞是畢竟好呢。○是好的自樣○瞞得壞是是力。○這[6]個法子、○○罷[5]了要使了、不終久有報。○能壞期終說有末[4]他、你[1]的上孟子、還沒念到底嗎。○我[2]再三問他。到底說有末[4]了、我依了他。○善[3]惡到頭終終有報。○能壞期終說有末[4]他、你[1]的上孟子、還沒念到底嗎。○我[2]再三問他。到底說有末[4]了、我依了他。○善[3]惡到頭終終有報。○能瞞是畢久不眼末到底沒問明白。○○念到底嗎。○我[2]再三問他。到底說有末[4]了、我依了他。○善[3]惡到頭終終有報。○能瞞是畢久不眼末到底沒問明白。○○念到底嗎。○我[2]再三問他。到底說有末[4]了、我依了他。○善[3]惡到頭終終有報。○能瞞是畢久不眼力。○這[6]個法子、○○罷[5]了要使了、不終久有報。○能瞞是畢久不眼力。○這[6]個法子、○○罷[5]了要使了、不終久有報。○能壞是畢竟不是力。○這[6]個法子、○○罷[5]了要使了、不終久有報。○能壞是畢竟不是罵。○這[6]個法子、○○罷[5]了要使了、不終久有報。○能壞是畢竟不是罵我、

曉是的不重毛疲頑終講便。
得我分誠用求頑疲久情、○
他給兒。實。他、疵、了、不他用[14]
往他○○到期到歸究歸大都現
那上—[22]事[21]臨畢了眞竟根大明不錢
裏起雙情了必結期兒白、准、買
去來鞋雖要鬧不請畢竟西、
了。的。上然出出能先竟西、
○○了不葛故一成生是始到
以[24]他[23]兩全縢事。塲人。再你終
撒母天、在○大○講老必了
雖親也你他[20]漏亂他[18]一先便賤
盡總老沒身名子。們遍。生的宜
力沒上上、爲○整○的一
要回起歸終聖我[19]天這[17]臉點。
與家、來、實久徒、怕的家、個面○
他也末却究你彼孩大。多[15]
和沒了有竟這此子○少
好、人還你心樣吹太我[16]人

what friend would have exerted himself in this way?

13 Although this road is a little longer, yet in the end it is more convenient.

14 Buying for ready money, certainly is a little cheaper in the end.

15 Ever so many have tried to conciliate him but in vain; after all, honored sir, your influence with him was the greatest.

16 After all I do not quite understand: please, sir, explain it once more.

17 This boy is too ungovernable; he will never make a man.

18 They are constantly carping at each other; ultimately they are sure to get up a big quarrel.

19 I fear, if you continue to depend so much upon him, there will finally be trouble with him.

20 He is called a Christian, but after all he is not sincere.

21 Although the matter does not entirely rest with you, yet after all you have a share in it.

22 She worked two days at putting the soles on this one pair of shoes, and then did not get done. Finally I had to finish them for her.

歸究 In the end, finally, ultimately, after all.
歸實 The same. (s.)
歸眞 The same. (s.)
歸根兒 In the end, finally, after all, the upshot of it.
歸結 The same. (s.)
終 The end, at last, finally.
終久 In the end, to the end, sooner or later, after all.
始終 First or last, in any case, in the end, sooner or later.
至終 At the last, after all, in the end. (w.)
末了 At last, finally, in the last place, in conclusion.
末末了 The same. Doubled for emphasis;
老 After all, at all, with a negative, never. (N.)
總 After all, at all, in any case.
末尾 At the tail end, at the bottom, lastly.

VOCABULARY.

畢 *Pi*⁴..... Finished, ended; the last, final.
竟 *Ching*⁴. To finish; the end, the utmost; at ..... last, finally, after all.
眼力 *Yien*³ *li*⁴. Power of vision; *discernment*, ... shrewdness, judgment.
講情 *Chiang*³ *ch'ing*². To speak on behalf of, to ..... intercede, *to conciliate*.
疲 *P i*²..... Lassitude; *remiss*, careless, callous.
頑疲 *Wan*² *p'i*². Mischievous, *ungovernable*, ... perverse; obstinate.
疲頑 *P'i*² *wan*²..... The same. (s.)
疵 *Ts'i*¹·²..... A scab; a failing, *an imperfection*.
吹毛求疵 *Ch'wei*¹ *mao*² *ch'iu*² *ts'i*². To magnify ..... trifling faults, *to carp*, to cavil.
以撒 *I*³ *sa*¹..... Isaac.
批評 *P'i*¹ *p'ing*². To criticise; to berate, *to* ..... *overhaul*.
屍 *Shi*¹..... A corpse.

Digitized by Google

却是至終不能。○李[25]德隆至今還沒得缺、究竟要作一輩子候補老爺。○起[26]頭我沒作聲、末了叫我好一個批評。○媒[27]人誇獎我們偕親家、怎樣財主、究竟一無所有。○你[28]依你的法子、我依我的法子、我想到了兒、大家都能得好處。○劉[29]三起頭並不是個無賴流人子、只因有些無二鬼、常勾引他、竟成了一塊大滾刀肉筋。○這[30]宗族、譬如一股水、流出去、分作幾十條、究竟都是這一股泉裏的水。○考人[31]得功名、眞是一時的僥倖、你看林有能、府縣考考

23 Her mother never returned home, and no one knows where she went.
24 Although Isaac tried his best to keep at peace with him, yet after all he was not able to do so.
25 Up to this time Li Tê Lung has not obtained an office. He will finally be an expectant official all his life.
26 At first I said nothing, but finally I gave him a good overhauling.
27 The middleman vaunted about how wealthy our relative was, and here it turns out that he has nothing at all.
28 You follow your way and I'll follow my way, and I fancy that in the end we shall all come out right.
29 Liu San was not originally a dissolute fellow, but being constantly led astray by a set of renegades, he at last became a regular desperado.
30 This ancestry is like a stream of water which, flowing forth, divides into several branches or several tens of branches, nevertheless they all come from one source.
31 A man's getting a degree is in truth a mere accident of fortune. Look at Lin Yu Nêng; at the *Fu* and *Hsien* examinations he stood at the tail end, yet at the recent collegiate examination he

無賴子 *Wu² lai⁴ tsi³*. A vagabond, a tramp; a knave, *a dissolute fellow.*
馬流 *Ma³ liu²*..... *Dissolute,* profligate. (c.)
流屍 *Liu² shi¹*. A vagabond, a tramp; *a dissolute fellow.* (s.)
只因 *Chi³ yin¹*. Only because, inasmuch as, but since, *but*:—Les. 181.
無二鬼 *Wu² êr⁴ kwei³*. A rascal, a knave, a sharper, *a renegade.*
勾引 *Kou¹ yin³*. *To lead astray,* to entice, to decoy, to inveigle; to draw on.
滾刀筋 *Kun³ tao¹ chin¹*. A reckless and obstinate villain, *a desperado,* a wretch.
滾刀肉 *Kun³ tao¹ jou⁴*. The same:—Note 29.
分作 *Fên¹ tsoâ⁴*. *To divide,* to separate; to parcel out.
僥 *Chiao³*..... To do, to act; *fortunate,* lucky.
倖 *Hsing⁴*..... Unusually fortunate, very lucky.
僥倖 *Good fortune,* luck, a happy chance.
院考 *Yüen⁴ k'ao³*. The literary examinations held in each prefecture by the 學院, or Literary Chancellor:—Note 31.
宋 *Sung⁴*..... To dwell; *a surname.*
撒 *Sa³*. To scatter, to sow, *to put forth,* to spill, to leak:—See *sa¹*.
撒潑 *Sa³ p'oâ¹*. To do with one's might, *to make a strenuous effort,* a spurt.
放潑 *Fang⁴ p'oâ¹*..... The same. (L.)
趲 *Tsan³*..... To urge forward, to hasten.
趲勁 *Tsan³ chin⁴*. To do with one's might, *to make a strenuous effort.* (L.)
餻 *Kao¹*. A raised sweet cake, either baked or steamed.
雞蛋餻 *Chi¹ tan⁴ kao¹*..... A sponge cake.
攪和 *Chao³ hê²*..... To mix, to stir.
蛋黃 *Tan⁴ hwang²*..... The yolk of an egg.
蛋清 *Tan⁴ ch'ing¹*..... The white of an egg.
蛋白 *Tan⁴ poâ²*..... The white of an egg.
烤 *K'ao³*.... To toast, *to bake;* to dry at the fire.

Digitized by Google

名秀才。○ ○我[32]好意勸他、他總老不聽、咱們不如回去罷。○這[33]件衣裳、我已經用熱水、加胰子搓了、又上河裏攞過了、到歸齊還不乾淨。○都[34]說宋成仁、挑不了二百斤柴伙、他撒放了了發發、竟是從三里橋挑來了。○福[35]田啊、點心已經沒有了、今天可以做個雞蛋餻、你不會我教給你、怎麼做呢、

問

答

用雞蛋九兩、白糖九兩、白麪五兩、先把蛋黃和糖、使勁攪和起來、後加上麪、攪和勻了、末尾再把蛋白清、打起沫來、都合在一塊兒、輕輕攪和起來、立時就烤。

happened on the right theme, and after all graduated in the fifth place of honor.

32 I exhorted him with the best intentions, but he quite refuses to hear. The best thing is for us to go back.

33 I have rubbed this garment with hot water and soap, and have taken it to the river and rinsed it, and after all it is still not clean.

34 Everybody said that Sung Ch'êng Jên could not carry two hundred catties of firewood, but by making a strenuous effort, he after all carried it from the three li bridge.

35 Fu Tien, the dessert is all used up; you may make a sponge cake to-day. If you do not know how, I will teach you. *Ques.* How do you make it? *Ans.* Take of eggs nine ounces, white sugar nine ounces, and flour five ounces: first, thoroughly mix the yolks of the eggs and the sugar, then add the flour and stir till quite smooth: lastly, beat the whites of the eggs into a froth, and mix all together, stirring lightly, and bake at once.

NOTES.

1 The works of Mencius are for convenience divided into two parts, called 上 and 下, which are usually bound in separate volumes. 到底 is here used in its primary sense, and, properly speaking, does not illustrate the subject of the lesson.

3 This is a very useful and important saying. It is not drawn from classical sources, but is found used by Buddhist and Taoist writers, and is very ancient. 到頭 qualifies 善惡, meaning that when good and evil conduct have reached the limit set to them by fate, or by the gods, there will then be a recompense. 終 is the usual writing, though 總 is sometimes found, and would seem more forcible. If it be used the sense is *certainly*, rather than *finally*.

9 A more literal rendering would be, *after all when one does good, the one who gets the good is himself, and when one does evil, the one who suffers the evil is himself.*

11 The use of 報 implies that the person referred to had been the recipient of favor. The translation gives the approximate force of 竟 without any special word.

15 臉面 is the "face" that the other party felt constrained to give to the party interceding, hence it is practically equivalent to *influence*.

22 To 上 a shoe, is to sew the sole fast to the upper.

25 得缺 *To get a vacancy;* that is, to get a position which has been made vacant by death or otherwise. 候補老爺, a humorous appellation which defies literal translation into English.

27 As soon as a betrothal is concluded the families begin to call each other 親家. It is not an uncommon trick for the go-between to deceive one party (or both) in regard to the circumstances of the other.

29 滾刀筋 or 肉 *Turn-knife-tendon* or *muscle*, that is, a piece of tendon or muscle so hard and tough that the knife glances off it, (some say so soft and flabby that it rolls under the knife),—a fellow so depraved that no appeal to virtue or reason, or even to force, makes any impression on him. 一塊 is applied contemptuously.

31 The candidates for literary degrees in each district are first examined by the district magistrate (縣考), and the best noted and reported. All the candidates in each prefecture are then assembled and examined by the prefect (府考), and the best noted. All this is preparatory to the examination by the 學院, who makes the circuit of his province twice in three years, and holds examinations in each Fu city, and confers the degrees. 碰着題 *To hit the theme.* It is a common thing for candidates to write out, in miniature hand, copies of superior essays on standard themes and conceal them on their persons, or to commit a number of such essays to memory, in hope that the theme given may prove to be one of these. When by such means a candidate finds himself in possession of a first class essay, on the required theme he is said to 碰題.

Digitized by Google

第一百二十八課

他[1]一見了家信、就歡喜的了不得。○這[2]兩
句書、是一反一正。○先[3]生一來、學生就
靜好、看了。○你[4]這麼一來、一往的、不
好、看喇。○嗎。○我[6]的記性一不濟、一
年多、忘記了。○咱[5]們一個冷一個熱、
近[7]來天氣作怪、鼓脹、還不能走、還
要正經整整的一天。○他[8]帶的人、是
他所以的人、大妻小妾。○若[9]不是的
話、倒不要緊。○若[9]是的話、疼得很。
○嗎。○我[10]們若是一見了、就知道
對的不對的。○你[11]們若是一對了、
就是一雙。○人[12]

Translation.

1 As soon as he saw the letter from home, he was wild with joy.
2 These two texts are diametrically opposite.
3 As soon as the teacher comes, the scholars are quiet.
4 When you plant them in rows this way, do they not look much better?
5 Without realizing it we have had intercourse for upwards of ten years.
6 My memory is poor: in a twinkling I have forgotten.
7 The weather has been changeable recently, hence there is much sickness.
8 One of the two women he has with him is his wife, and the other a concubine.
9 If pus were not forming, would it be a throbbing pain?
10 I knew at a glance that she was a bad character.
11 It will be more orderly for you to go in pairs.
12 When men begin to grow old, the marrow in their bones gradually dries up.

LESSON CXXVIII.

— IN COMPOSITION.

Although 一 has already served as the basis of three lessons, it requires still another.

When 一 is joined with a verb it marks the exact point of time of the action, and may be rendered, just as, the moment, etc. It is usually followed by a 就 in the next clause, and the two are together equal to, as soon as, whenever, etc.

When 一 is repeated with words of opposite meaning, it denotes alternation, transition, or enumeration: as,

一反一正 One the wrong, the other the right side, the reverse of each other, opposite sides; negative and positive.

一來一往 Coming and going, back and forth, intercourse.

一冷一熱 Cold and hot by turns, alternations of temperature, changeable.

一妻一妾 A wife and a concubine, the one a wife and the other a concubine.

一大一小 The same; also applied to other distinctions of rank, and of size.

一男一女 A man and a woman; male and female.

一漲一退 Advancing and receding by turns; ebbing and flowing; fluctuating.

一興一衰 Flourishing and declining by turns, progressing and receding, changing.

一紅一白 Red and white by turns, alternations of color.

一起一落 Rising and falling by turns; bobbing up and down; heaving. These are but specimens of many others like them.

When 一 is repeated with the same word, it denotes order of arrangement or succession: as,

一行一行 Row by row; in rows, in ranks.

一握一握 One grasp or compression after another, by throbs, pulsating.

一掘一掘 One dig or thrust after another, by throbs, lancinating. (c.)

一掣一掣 One pull after another, by jerks, by throbs; twitching, palpitating. (s.)

Digitized by Google

一一上了年紀、骨髓就漸漸的枯了。○就[13]怕下大了、這麼一陣一陣的下、還攔不住走。○天[14]主起初造人、是造一男一女。○世[15]道一興一衰、好像海潮一漲一退似的。○他[16]年一年的攢下去、自有富厚的日子來到。○他[17]不讓我說話、我一說話、他就別[挑眼]字眼。○今[18]天眞晦氣、○我[19]的魂往外流、[流淚]○身[20]體是大疙瘩。○[消眼淚]○他[21]肚子裏、必是有積聚、因此一塊一塊的。○這[22]人做事情、不是有靈魂得活、就是行屍走肉。○[23]我見他臉上、一紅一白、多[22]不[23]是見不得風、一見風就流淚。○他肚子裏、必是有積聚、因此一塊一塊的。○這人做事情、不是有靈魂得活、就是行屍走肉。○我見他臉上、一紅一白、多不

的、很喫不住。○你[24]聽他一層一層的、說的那個理、眞是扎實。○此[25]地的人、很欺生、一聽見口音不對、價錢就要的大大的。○這[26]必是鬼火、不能是燈籠、因爲人拿燈籠、不能這樣一起一落的。○鴛[27]鴦都是一對一對的、永沒有拆散的時候、所以姑娘們做媳婦、娘家都陪一對鴛鴦枕頭。○不[28]打官司則已、一打起官司來、我必帶着你的干証。○別[29]看他把耳朶耷拉着、很老實、可就是不讓女人騎、女人一上去、他就打蹄蹶子。○我[30]在外頭、心裏是清清楚楚的、一進了這個大門、就轉不過向來喇、轉了向了、你說奇不奇呢。

face showing that he felt very much annoyed.

24 Listen to his arguments as he advances step by step; certainly they are quite conclusive.

25 The people of this place are much given to imposing on strangers. Whenever they notice that a man's dialect is strange, they at once ask a high price.

26 This must be a Will o' the wisp; it cannot be a lantern, for no one carrying a lantern would move it up and down in this fashion.

27 Mandarin ducks always go in pairs and never forsake each other; hence when young ladies get married, their mother's family always present them with a pair of mandarin-duck pillows.

28 If there is no lawsuit, that is the end of it; but if a lawsuit results, I will of course require your testimony.

29 Don't suppose from his drooping ears that he is entirely gentle, for he will not suffer a woman to ride him. Whenever a woman mounts him, he begins to kick.

30 As long as I am outside, I am all right [in regard to the points of the compass]; but as soon as I enter this great door, I lose my bearings. Isn't it singular?

鬼火 *Kwei³ hwo³*.....Ignis-fatuus.
鴛 *Yüen¹*.....The drake of the mandarin duck.
鴦 *Yang¹*.....The hen of the mandarin duck.
鴛鴦 The mandarin duck,—noted for conjugal fidelity.
拆散 *Ch'ai¹ san⁴*. To separate, to sunder, to .....scatter, *to forsake*.
媽家 *Ma¹ chia¹*.....A wife's mother's family.
干証 *Kan¹ chêng⁴*.....*Testimony*, witness.
則已 *Tsé² i³*. *That is the end of it*, so be it:— .....Note 28.
耷 *Ta¹*..... Lop-ears; dragging, drooping.
耷拉 *Ta¹ la¹*. *To droop*, to drag, to hang down; .....to move in a slouching way.
蹶 *Chüe³*.....To kick, a kick. Also *chüe²*.
踢蹶子 *T'i¹ chüe³ tsi³*. *To kick*, to kick up .....the heels.
打蹄子 *Ta³ t'i² tsi³*..... The same,
轉向 *Chwan⁴ hsiang⁴*. *To lose one's bearings*. .....to become confused.

Notes.

8 妻 and 妾 are the proper words for *wife* and *concubine*, but they are not generally used in conversation, 大 and 小 being used instead, either alone as here, or joined with 老婆 or 婆子.

10 正經東西 *An orthodox thing*,—only used with a negative, and to express contempt.

19 見 as here used means *to endure* or *withstand*, which in fact is one of its regular mandarin meanings, and is the meaning which forms the basis of the second usage illustrated in Les. 122.

23 一紅一白 *One red one white; that is, red and white* or *flushed and pale by turns*.

25 This sentence was written in Nanking, (as might be inferred from the use of 此地,) but the fault of which it speaks is just as true of the Chinese elsewhere.

28 則已 is a book term used colloquially in the South but not in the North, save occasionally by educated men. Its colloquial equivalent is 就罷, or 便罷.

30 The Chinese always indicate direction and position by the points of the compass, and generally keep these points in their minds with remarkable accuracy.

Digitized by Google

第一百二十九課

去[1]年新安的電線、是從上海起、到北京止。○既[2]不爲名、又不爲利、你想他到底是爲甚麼呢。○人[3]的主意、不可忽然而天、忽然而地的、應當起初這樣、以後這樣、末了還是這樣。○若[4]單買一斤、要四十個錢、成包的、只管合三十六個錢、到底成趟總的買、勝似零買。○地[5]球上的南北線、名爲經線、就是從南極起、到北極爲止。○那[6]些好花、末了錢的人、起初也是捨不得、以後越花越肯花、末了就是顧意花、也沒有甚麼花了。○你[7]既不能又不顧學手藝、到底打算怎麼度日呢。○

Translation.

1 The new telegraph line put up last year, extends from Shanghai to Peking.
2 If he is seeking neither reputation nor money, what then do you suppose he is seeking?
3 A man's purpose should not be subject to great and sudden changes, but what it is at first, it should continue to be, and remain the same to the end.
4 If you buy only one catty it costs forty cash; in whole packages the price is only thirty-six cash; in the end it is better to buy at wholesale than at retail.
5 The lines running north and south on the globe are called meridians. They extend from the south pole to the north pole.
6 Those who are so free with their money were also loath to part with it at first, but afterwards the more they spent the more lavish they became, until at last they found their desires ahead of their means.
7 Seeing you cannot get an education, and are not willing to learn a trade, what do you propose to do for a living?

LESSON CXXIX.

Correlative Particles.

Ability to use a language effectively, and especially ability to use it for the expression of complicated thought, depends largely on the ready and effective use of correlative particles. They are the framework upon which the clauses expressing connected thought are hung. Such particles have of course been introduced to some extent in previous lessons, but for the purpose of aiding the learner in finding and acquiring their ready and accurate use, I have arranged a number of lessons on this basis, of which this is the first and simplest. The others, twelve in all, will follow at intervals :—

從...起...到...止, From ... to.
到底...强似 After all ... better than.
到底...勝似 After all ... better than.
既不...又不...到底 If not ... nor ... really; or, since not ... nor yet ... after all; or, seeing not ... and not ... then.
起初...以後...末了 At first ... afterwards ... at last; or, at first ... then ... finally.

These translations are only approximate; they will vary somewhat with the subject and the connexion.

Vocabulary.

成包 *Ch'êng² pao¹*. By the bundle or package, ... *wholesale*.
成趟 *Ch'êng² tun³*. By the lot, by the quantity, ... *wholesale*. (c. & s.)
成總 *Ch'êng² tsung³*. ... ... The same.
勝似 *Shêng⁴ sï⁴*. Superior to, *better than*, more ... ... advantageous.
零買 *Ling² mai³*. To buy at retail, or in small ... ...quantities.
地球 *Tï⁴ ch'iu²*. ... ... The earth; *a globe*.

Digitized by Google

官府設立粥廠、是從今年十一月初一起、到來年二月初一止。○用汽機、雖然多買本錢、然而折算起他所做的活來、到底用汽機勝似用人力。○每禮拜派一個管事的、就是從這個禮拜一起、到下禮拜一爲止。○太太聽說老爺遇見了强盜、嚇的臉上起初紅喇、以後青喇、末了又黃喇。○李玉春的舅子、在家裏發瘧子、天天從半夜起、到天亮爲止。○有一個賣肉包子的、三天賣一屜、能掙一百錢、又有一個人、一屜只掙三十個錢、一天却能賣十屜、這麽比較起來、到底少貪利强似多貪利。○他看着我是個老實特爲來找我的、晦氣起初說些好話、跟我借一吊錢、我不

8 The soup kitchen provided by the officials, opens on the first of the eleventh month of this year, and continues to the first of the second month of next year.

9 Although steam power costs more at first, yet if you take into account the work it does, it is better in the end to use steam than to use hand labor.

10 A monitor is appointed each week, beginning with Monday of this week and ending with Monday of next week.

11 When the lady heard that her husband had met with robbers she was so frightened that her face at first became red, and then turned livid, and finally pale.

12 Li Yü Ch'un's brother-in-law is at home suffering from ague. [He has an attack] every day, lasting from midnight until daylight.

13 A certain seller of meat dumplings sold one platter in three days, on which he cleared one hundred cash; another cleared only thirty cash on each platter, but in one day he could sell ten platters; from which it appears that after all it is best to be satisfied with small profits.

14 He thought I was a saphead (green), and came on purpose to victimize me. At first he spoke plausibly and wanted to borrow a thousand cash of me, but I refused to lend it to him. Afterwards he only wanted five hundred.

經 *Ching*⁴. The warp; what runs lengthwise; ..... *meridians*. See *ching*¹.

經線 *Ching*⁴ *hsien*⁴..... Meridian lines.

度日 *Tu*⁴ *ji*⁴..... To live; *to make a living*.

官府 *Kwan*¹ *fu*³..... An officer, officers.

設立 *Shê*⁴ *li*⁴. To set up, to establish, to institute; .....to open; *to provide*.

廠 *Ch'ang*³. A shed; *a depôt*, a storehouse; a ..... manufactory.

粥廠 *Chou*¹ *ch'ang*³. A soup kitchen where gruel ..... is dispensed to the poor.

汽 *Ch'i*⁴..... Steam, vapor.

汽機 *Ch'i*⁴ *chi*¹..... A steam engine.

舅子 *Chiu*⁴ *tsi*³..... A wife's brother.

肉包子 *Jou*⁴ *pao*¹ *tsi*³. A steamed mince ..... dumpling.

脾寒 *P'i*² *han*²..... Ague.

倭 *Wo*ā¹. A name for Japan; zinc; crumpled; ..... soiled; *weak*.

儾 *Nang*⁴..... Slow, *dull*, irresolute.

倭儾 Dirty, slovenly, squalid; weak, *soft*.

倭儾廢 *Wo*ā¹ *nang*⁴ *fei*⁴. A silly goose, *a sap-* ..... *head*, a mooncalf.

特爲 *T'ê*⁴ *wei*⁴. Specially, *on purpose*, expressly. ..... See Les. 159.

撮擁 *Ts'o*ā⁴ *yung*³. To coax and drag away, *to* ..... *hustle off*.

眞實 *Chên*¹ *shi*². ..... True, real, *genuine*.

交情 *Chiao*¹ *ch'ing*². The mutual affection of ..... friends, *friendship*.

盛 *Shêng*⁴. Abundant, exuberant; *prosperous;* ..... flourishing; excellent. See *ch'êng*².

Digitized by Google

借給他、以後只借五百、我還是不借、末了就放起刁來了、說我該他一百吊錢、叫我打了一頓、旁邊的人、好歹把他撮攏拉扯着走喇。○往[15]年間交朋友、到底有點眞實滋味、强似如今的人交友、淨是嘴裏的交情、心裏並不實在。○這[16]場雨下的到底不大、却仍舊强似一點不下。○國[17]家强盛的根本、既不在乎設立砲局、又不在乎多買鐵甲船、到底是在什麼呢、就是在乎振興學校、因爲學校若能振興、人才自然衆多、國家自然就强盛了。

but I still refused. At last he grew outrageous and declared that I owed him a hundred thousand cash, upon which I gave him a sound drubbing, the bystanders hustling him off as best they could.

15 The friendships of former times were better than those of the present; they had something genuine in them, whereas now-a-days friendship is merely in words without any reality in the heart.

16 After all the rain was but slight, still it is better than that it should not have rained at all.

17 Since the source of a nation's prosperity is not in the establishing of arsenals, nor yet in the purchasing of many ironclads, in what then is it? It is in the advancement of education; for if education is advanced, of course men of ability will abound, which will necessarily make the nation prosperous.

强盛 *Ch'iang*[2] *shêng*[4]. Flourishing, *prosperous; ... ...* vigorous, puissant.

在乎 *Tsai*[4] *hu*[1]. ... ... Same as 在:—Note 16.

砲局 *P'ao*[4] *chü*[2]. ... ... An arsenal.

鐵甲船 *T'ie*[3] *chia*[3] *ch'wan*[2]. An iron armored ..... ship,—an ironclad.

振 *Chen*[4]. To shake; to stir up, *to excite;* to ... .restore; to alarm.

振興 *Chên*[4] *hsing*[1]. To cause to flourish, *to ... ...advance*, to promote.

校 *Hsiao*[4]. ... ... A school house. Also *chiao*[4].

學校 *Hsüe*[2] *hsiao*[4]. A school, a seminary; *educa- ... ...tion*, learning, science, (w.)

人才 *Jên*[2] *ts'ai*[2] *A man of ability*, a gifted ... ... man; talent. (w.)

衆多 *Chung*[4] *toa*[1]. Very many, numerous, ... *abundant*.

NOTES.

2 According to the translation, 爲 here *seems* to mean *to seek*. It really means *for the sake of*, and a verb must be supplied to complete the sense.

3 忽然而天忽然而地的 The 而 has here approximately the force of 就:—See Les. 138. 天 and 地 are used figuratively to express strong contrariety.

5 The south pole takes the precedence in China.

8 In scarce years, and in many places every year, the officers open kitchens in the winter, where rice or millet gruel is given out daily to the poor.

11 老爺 is rendered husband, because the connection shows that the person spoken of was the woman's husband.

12 脾寒 is a *t'ung-hsing* term for ague, but in Central Mandarin 瘧子 is more frequently used, and in the South 瘧疾.

13 The article referred to as a 屜 or 籠, is in Peking called a 籠屜, and in Chinanfu and elsewhere a 簟子. Different forms have probably given rise to different names. It is primarily a slotted bamboo frame fitting closely in the kettle and resting on its sides; bread and cakes are spread on it to be cooked or warmed by the steam from the water or food which is boiling beneath. This is a 簟子. A hoop is sometimes added which gives the article the form of a sieve, and it is then called a 屜. This hoop is sometimes attached to a matting top (or bottom if you please), instead of to the slotted 簟子, for which it serves as a cover, and the whole is called a 籠 or 籠屜. As many cakes or dumplings as this platter will hold for cooking is called 一籠 or 一屜.

14 老實 here means *green, pliant, spiritless*, but falls far short of the force of the expression with which it is mated.

16 在乎 is a book form, frequently used in colloquial. The 乎 is a mere euphonic particle, having no effect on the meaning of 在.

Digitized by Google

第一百三十課

人[1]的好歹、我許品得出來。○那[2]句話、行也許他是無心說的。○許[3]說起那個人來、管占許你必認得。○孩[4]子這麼直咳嗽、許在那裏。是喫的鹹菜多喇。○這[6]條手巾、多半是先[5]頭他在棧房、如今也許還在那裏。○許[7]是我記錯了。○這[6]條手巾、多半是先[5]頭他在棧房、如今也許還在那裏。○許[7]是我記錯了、我却總覺着不能。○用[8]一個攔渡、也許就更重過去了。○今[9]天英子沒來上學、想許還是家[10]裏有白糖沒有、答應不還許還有豈是他母親病的多。○莫[11]不是尹先生來了、別人敲門、想許還是還許橫豈有這樣急。○這[12]第二番託他、莫非他又忘記喇。○你[13]們兩個能這一點却不能。○我[14]於世事上、再經過幾

嗎。誰[21]完提了麼在已經過了我、我託人透說、莫不是明白
○喜歡全過、罷。事已經過了我託人透說、莫不是明白
兄[22]喜我我○情經過了我託人透說、莫不是明白
弟喫學却他[19]罷。○了我託人透說、莫不是明白
你那易記不光○我託人透說、莫不是明白
心點經不記說利[18]我託人透說、莫不是明白
中冷的得得。辦豐人透說、莫不是明白
有乾工○土家他說、莫不是明白
些糧夫、上[20]貨、怎還透說、莫不是明白
不呢、庶天沒麼沒說、是明白
樂、還幾若說上關來、許醇引麵肥人
莫不乎再辦了了莫他子子肥人
不許可加洋門板非就壞咯。
是是以我貨呢、是不喇。○
家老耗無幾呀、答路生○—[15]
裏鼠子大年答想管上氣李[16]連
有拉過的他必許遭潤好
甚去了。壽好巧是了○田幾
麼了○數像了倒什現[17]錯天、

15 I have not made a loaf of good bread for several days. It must be that the yeast is spoiled.

16 Li Jun T'ien has erroneously taken offence at me. If I get some one to explain to him, perhaps he will not be angry.

17 It is now past midnight and he has not come. It must be that he has met with some mishap on the road.

18 How is it that the Li Fêng firm have closed their doors? *Ans.* It is most likely they have failed.

19 He only spoke of buying native goods, not mentioning foreign goods at all? *Ans.* He may possibly have mentioned them, but I do not remember it.

20 If Heaven adds a few more years to my life, so that I may complete the study of the Book of Changes, I may, perhaps, be free from any serious faults.

21 Who would care to eat that bit of cold bread? May it not be that the rats carried it off?

22 You are unhappy in mind my brother. Something has been said by the family which has wounded your feelings, has there not?

VOCABULARY.

庶 *Shu*[4]. A multitude, all; the mass; nearly, ...it may be, probably :—see Sub.

品 *P'in*[2]. To classify, to distingnish, to discern, ... *to recognize.* See *p'in*[3].

鹹菜 *Hsien*[2] *ts'ai*[4]. Vegetables pickled in salt, ... seasoning :—Note 4.

棧 *Chan*[4]..... *A storehouse;* an enclosed pen.

棧房 *Chan*[4] *fang*[2]. A store-house, *a ware-room,* ... ... a godown, a depository.

渡 *Tu*[4].... To cross a stream or sea, *to ferry.*

擺渡 *Pai*[3] *tu*[4]..... *A ferry-boat;* to ferry over.

載 *Tsai*[4]. To contain; to lade a ship or cart; *to* ..... *convey;* to record; a cargo. Also *tsai*[3].

尹 *Yin*[3]..... To govern; an overseer; *a surname.*

世事 *Shi*[4] *shi*[4]. The affairs of the world, *the* ... ... *affairs of life.*

經歷 *Ching*[1] *li*[4]. To pass through, to meet with, ... *to experience,* to undergo.

麵肥 *Mien*[4] *fei*[2].... ... ... Yeast. (N.)

引子 *Yin*[3] *tsi*[3]. Ferment, barm; *dry yeast:*— ... ... Note 15.

透說 *T'ou*[4] *shwoa*[1]. *To explain* or intercede on ... ... behalf of; to sound.

半夜 *Pan*[4] *yie*[4]..... Half the night; *midnight.*

土貨 *T'u*[3] *hwoa*[4]..... Native goods.

洋貨 *Yang*[2] *hwoa*[4]..... Foreign goods.

易經 *I*[4] *ching*[1]. The Book of Changes :—Note ... ... 20.

乾糧 *Kan*[1] *liang*[2]..... Bread or cakes.

鼠 *Shu*[3]..... A rat, rodents.

老鼠 *Lao*[3] *shu*[3]..... A rat or mouse.

傷觸 *Shang*[1] *ch'u*[4]. To *offend,* to irritate, to ... ... chafe.

觸犯 *Ch'u*[4] *fan*[4]. To offend, to affront, *to wound* ... ... *the feelings;* to sin against.

砍快 *K'an*[3] *k'wai*[4]. Prompt, quick, ready, ... peremptory.

脆 *Ts'wei*[4]..... *Brittle,* short, crisp (as pastry).

Digitized by Google

言語、傷觸犯觸了你嗎。○後[23]天上東莊赴席、您家裏去幾個人、答現在還說不定、大約是去兩個、也許只去一個。○這[24]兩條金魚、我看給他三百錢、就是便宜價兒、他答應的却很(響脆)快、(欽脆)快、敢是我輸了眼色力、出的價錢大倒[25]叫。○剛纔過去一個女人、穿的繡彩花褲子、走起來伶俐險險的、看他那個走像、要想是裏頭跴的蹻、答那個倒伶俐式倒許啊。○此[26]處的人、詭計多端、你雖是十分相投切洽、你有投洽契也難保不中人的反間計、所以你若聽說我待你錯犯、我自去問你、這樣、庶幾可以保全交情、我有待過你錯犯、我自親去問你、這樣、庶幾可以保全交情、不被人賣

23 How many of your family are going to the east village day after to-morrow to the feast? *Ans.* I cannot tell at present. Probably two will go, or possibly only one.

24 I thought that to give him three hundred cash for these two gold fish would not be too much. He replied very promptly however. Possibly I was mistaken and offered him too high a price.

25 A woman just now passed by wearing embroidered trousers and having a very unsteady gait. Judging from her style of walking, I suspect she was wearing false feet. *Ans.* That is not at all unlikely.

26 The people in this neighborhood are very perfidious. Although you and I are very intimate friends, yet it is not impossible that we may fall into some of their traps for estranging us. Therefore if you hear that I have treated you improperly in any way, come at once in person and ask me; and if I hear that you have treated me improperly, I will go in person and ask you. In this way perhaps we may protect our friendship from the deceitful tricks of others.

脆快 *Ts'wei⁴ k'wai⁴.* Brittle; crisp; prompt, quick, ready.

響脆 *Hsiang³ ts'wei⁴.* Prompt, decided. (s.)

仃 *Ting¹.* Alone, unsupported.

伶式伶仃 *Ling² shi⁴ ling² ting¹.* Tottering, staggering, *unsteady;* gingerly, carefully. (s.)

倒倒險險 *Tao³ hsien³.* *Unsteady;* reeling, staggering.

走像 *Tsou³ hsiang⁴.* Mode of motion, gait, *style of walking.*

跴 *Ts'ai³.* *To tread on,* to stamp, to trample.

蹻 *Ch'iao¹.* To elevate the feet; on tiptoe; a high-heeled shoe, *a false wooden support for the foot:*—Note 25.

詭計 *Kwei³ chi⁴.* Stratagem, artifice, trick, deception.

投契 *T'ou² ch'i⁴.* Friendly, *intimate.*

洽 *Hsia⁴.* To blend, to imbue; *intimate.*

切洽 *Ch'ie⁴ hsia⁴.* *Intimate,* cordial, ardent.

反間計 *Fan³ chien⁴ chi⁴.* A device by which to alienate friends.

過犯 *Kwo⁴ fan⁴.* A transgression, *a fault,* a sin.

保全 *Pao³ ch'üen².* To preserve, to render safe, *to protect.*

賣弄 *Mai⁴ lung⁴.* *To betray,* to circumvent, to practice upon.

荷包 *Hê² pao¹.* A purse, *a pouch.*

砲臺 *P'ao⁴ t'ai².* A fort.

洩氣 *Hsie⁴ ch'i⁴.* *To be satisfied,* to be appeased, to put away one's anger.

伏氣 *Fu² ch'i⁴.* *To be satisfied,* to be appeased. (accent on *ch'i⁴.*) Note 28.

選 *Hsüen³.* *To select,* to elect, to vote.

挑選 *T'iao¹ hsüen³.* *To select,* to choose out, to pick out.

措手 *Ts'o⁴ shou³.* To be available, to be practicable; *ready,* at hand.

Digitized by Google